This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

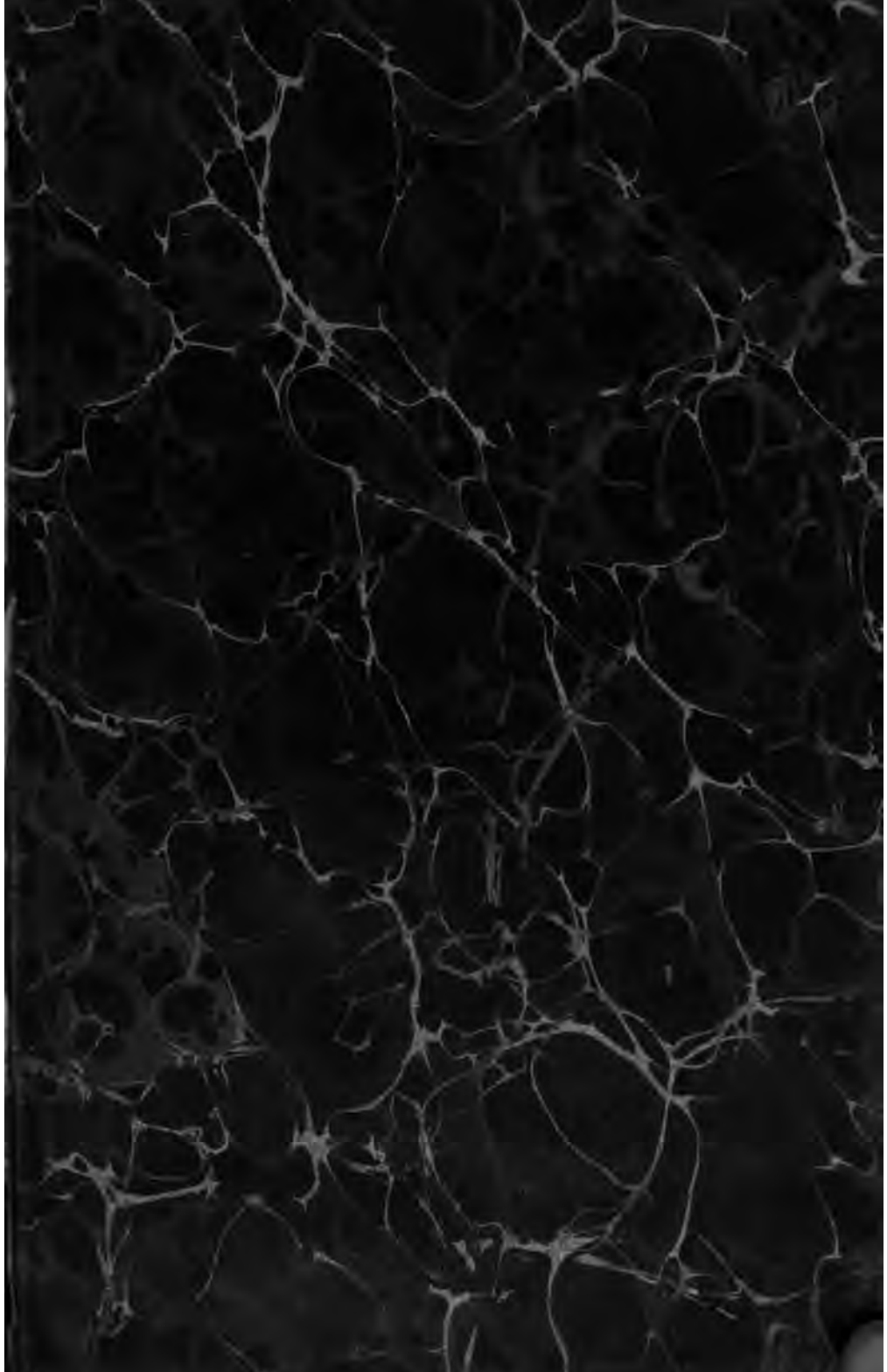
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`



In Memory of
STEPHEN SPAULDING
1907 – 1925
CLASS of 1927
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

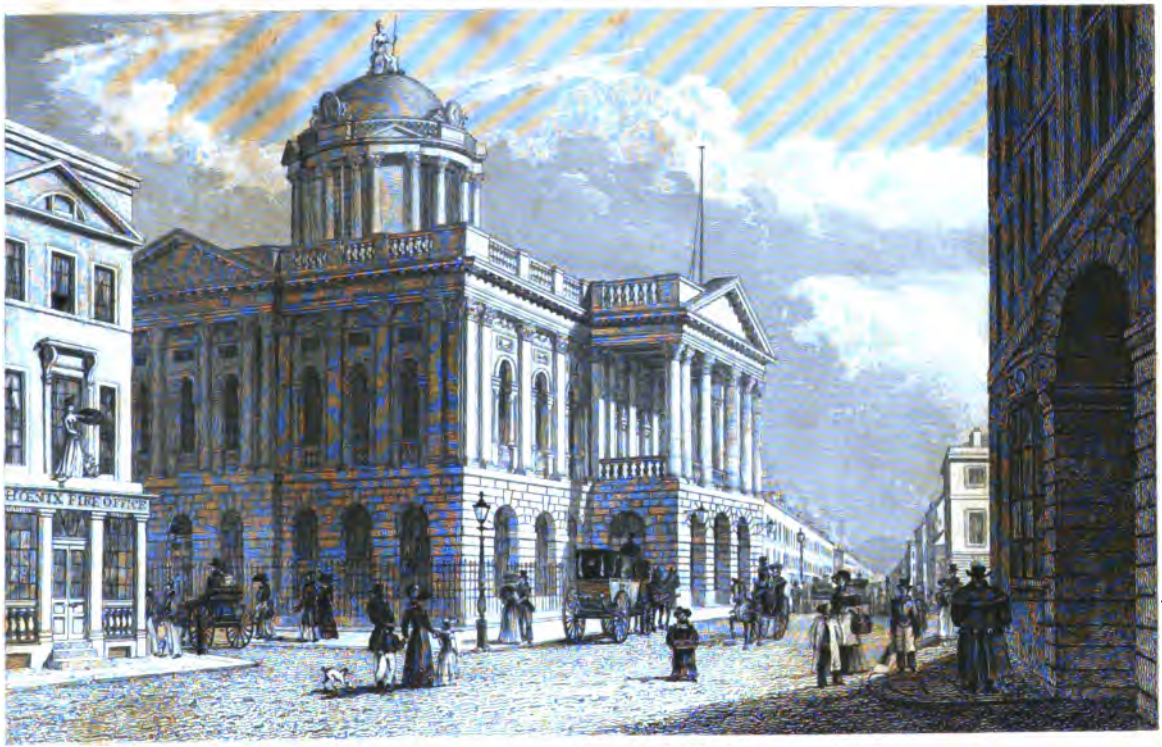
DA
690
.L5
P6

MEMORIALS

OF

LIVERPOOL

VOL. II.—TOPOGRAPHICAL



Drawn by C & C Pyne

Engraved by W. Watkins

TOWN HALL, LIVERPOOL.

TO THE WORSHIPFUL CORPORATION THIS PLATE IS RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED BY THE PUBLISHERS

LONDON, PUBLISHED BY C. & C. PYNE.

MEMORIALS

OF

LIVERPOOL

HISTORICAL AND TOPOGRAPHICAL

INCLUDING

A HISTORY OF THE DOCK ESTATE

BY

J. A. PICTON, F.S.A.

IN TWO VOLUMES

VOL. II.—TOPOGRAPHICAL

LONDON
LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO.
1873

All rights reserved

LOSS

Stephen Spaulding Mem. Coll.
Newberry
9-18-31

CONTENTS

OF

THE SECOND VOLUME.

TOPOGRAPHICAL.

CHAPTER		PAGE
I.	CASTLE STREET AND THE TOWN-HALL	1–36
II.	OLDHALL STREET NORTHWARD	37–57
III.	CHAPEL STREET AND TITHEBARN STREET NORTHWARD	58–87
IV.	WATER STREET TO JAMES STREET	88–111
V.	DALE STREET AND ITS NEIGHBOURHOOD	112–139
VI.	LORD STREET TO SOUTH CASTLE STREET, ETC.	140–163
VII.	CHURCH STREET AND ITS VICINITY	164–195
VIII.	ST. GEORGE'S HALL AND ITS NEIGHBOURHOOD	196–227
IX.	THE DISTRICT OF MOUNT PLEASANT	228–264
X.	BOLD STREET AND ITS SURROUNDINGS	265–303
XI.	DUKE STREET AND ITS NEIGHBOURHOOD	304–339
XII.	FROM LONDON ROAD NORTHWARD	340–380
XIII.	EVERTON	381–414
XIV.	EVERTON (*continued*)	415–448

01-29-31 COPY

CHAPTER PAGE

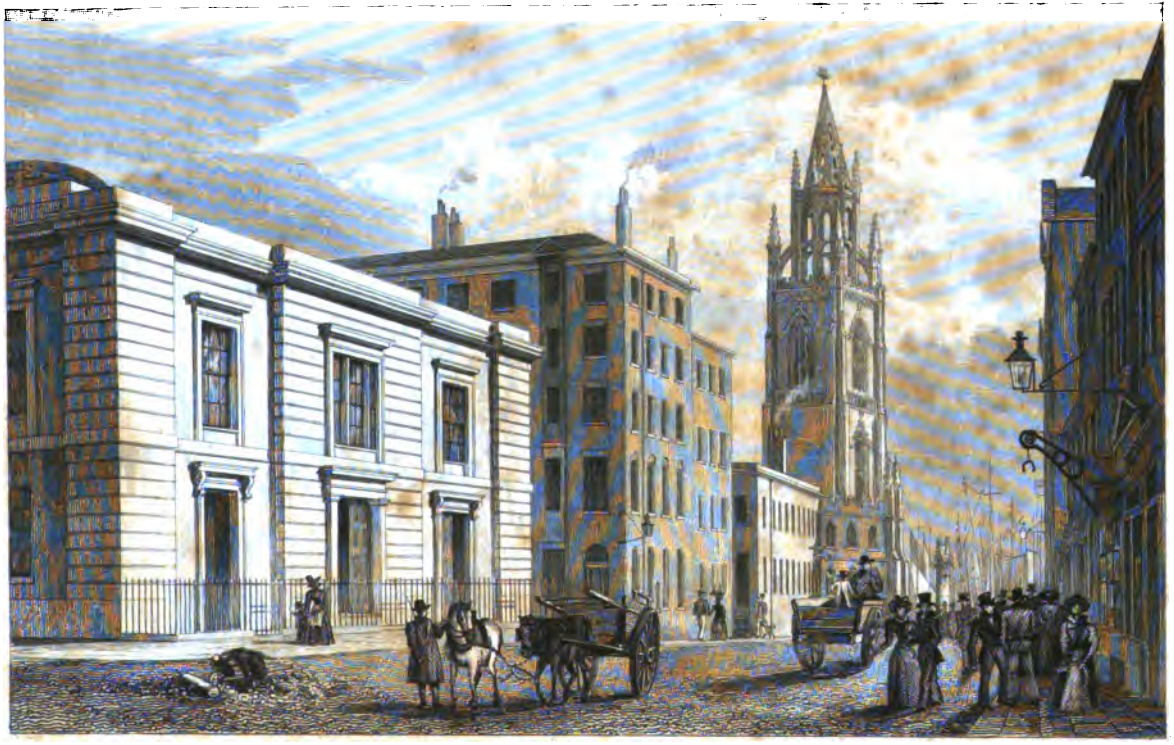
XV. KIRKDALE 449–484

XVI. WEST DERBY (MUNICIPAL PORTION) 485–525

XVII. TOXTETH PARK (MUNICIPAL PORTION) 526–572

APPENDIX, CONTAINING A LIST OF WORKS ON LIVERPOOL, WITH OTHER SOURCES OF INFORMATION 573–588

INDEX 589–605



Drawn by G. S. C. Pyne

Engraved by W. Watkins

SESSIONS HOUSE, CHAPEL STREET.

MEMORIALS

OF

LIVERPOOL.

TOPOGRAPHICAL.

CHAPTER I.

CASTLE STREET AND THE TOWN-HALL.

CHAP. I.

CASTLE STREET is to Liverpool what Cornhill is to the City of London, Market Street to Manchester, Princes Street to Edinburgh, the Corso to Rome, the Strada di Toledo to Naples—the embodiment of its character, the centre of its system, to which everything tends, and from which its influence principally radiates. The genuine 'Dicky Sam'[1] can form no higher idea of wealth and prosperity than that exhibited between the Exchange flags and St. George's Church; and scattered as they are over the wide earth, wherever the exigencies of commerce may have guided their wandering course, from the copper mines of Burra-Burra to

Centre.

Dicky Sam.

> The continuous woods
> Where rolls the Oregon, and hears no sound
> Save his own dashings,

when the hardy pioneers of Liverpool commerce turn

[1] 'Dicky Sam,' the local appellation for one born within the sound of the parish bells; probably from the familiar mode of address of the natives in the olden time.

CHAP. I.

History.

their thoughts homewards, it is Castle Street which presents itself to their mind's eye. The history of Castle Street is the history of Liverpool. Let us endeavour to trace it in its general features.

Site of castle.

Camden.

Courteous reader, take thy stand at the east end of St. George's Church and look around. The irregular circle which extends from the top of Lord Street to the top of James Street, in the centre of which stands the church, is the site of the Castle of Liverpool, the present alignment following pretty nearly the line of the ancient fosse. According to Camden, whose description I have quoted in the historical portion, this castle was built by Roger de Poictou; but for this statement there is not the slightest authority. There is no mention of *Liferpoll* in any Saxon document; nor does Domesday Book, to which he subsequently refers, give any confirmation whatever to the alleged origin of the castle. The probability is, that Camden had never visited the neighbourhood, and took his information at second hand. We shall see, however, that there was some excuse for the mistake, arising out of the confused mode in which some of the documents mix up the Castles of Liverpool and West Derby.

West Derby Manor, A.D. 1086.

If we turn to Domesday Book, we find that the Manor of *Derbei* was formerly possessed by King Edward the Confessor; that it passed by royal grant to Roger de Poictou, along with the rest of the lands between the Ribble and the Mersey. At the time of the Survey it is stated: 'The demesne of this manor held by Roger is worth eight pounds.' It is further stated that 'the thanes by custom built the king's houses, with their appurtenances.'

Demesne, in mediæval language, always implies a residence, manor-house, or 'castle.'[1] That such a castle

[1] *Domaine.*—'A principal fief, manor or manor-house; the place whereof inferior fiefs are held.'—*Colgrave.*

Dominium.—'Terras et prædia quæ Dominus hereditatis non tradit suis tenentibus sed suipsius manibus retinuit.'—*Spelman.*

CHAP. I.

existed in West Derby is a matter of ascertained fact. In the Exchequer Rolls, 24 Edward I. (A.D. 1296), Edmund Earl of Lancaster is found to have held the Manor and *Castle* of West Derby, and the Manor of Liverpool. In an inquisition taken 1 Edward III. (A.D. 1327) at Lancaster before Simon de Grimsby, it is stated that there is at West Derby 'the site of a certain ruinated castle.' After the erection of the Castle of Liverpool, and the incorporation of the borough, the Castle of West Derby seems to have been left to decay. A manor-house was subsequently erected on the site, which in its turn was abandoned, possibly when Croxteth Hall was built. A portion of the ruins remained standing at the close of the last century. The mound on which they stood was subsequently removed, but the site still retains the name of the 'Castle Field.'

West Derby Castle.

A.D. 1327.

Manor-house.

In the fourth year of King John, A.D. 1203, considerable sums, according to the Pipe Rolls, were expended on the King's castles in West Derbyshire; and in the close rolls of 6 Henry III., A.D. 1222, Adam de Jeland has an acquittance for moneys expended on the Castles of Lancaster and West Derby in the reign of King John. Although not mentioned by name, there is some reason to believe that a portion of the moneys in these two accounts was expended in the erection of the Castle of Liverpool.

A.D. 1203.

A.D. 1222.

Castle building.

The eastern shore of the estuary of the Mersey, here extending north and south, was intersected by a little creek running obliquely from north-east to south-west, into which there debouched a small stream from the high lands to the eastward, expanding into a pool at the mouth. The tongue of land thus cut off formed an equilateral triangle, with its base to the north, and its apex at the mouth of the pool, the centre ridge elevated forty or fifty feet above the shore, sloping to the water on both sides.

The Pool.

Site of castle.

The centre of this ridge, in the state of military engi-

CHAP. I.

1222.

neering at the period, constituted an admirable site for a fortress, to protect the landing or embarkation of troops or merchandise. The invasion and partial conquest of

Ireland.

Ireland in the reign of Henry II. had drawn the attention of the Government to the necessity for better provision for communication with the sister isle, and the attention of John was directed to the subject previous to his accession to the throne, while acting as regent.[1]

King John.

After the suppression of John's insurrection against his brother, and the confiscation of his possessions, an inventory was taken of the castles which he held. In this list Lancaster Castle is inserted, but there is no mention of Liverpool.

There is every reasonable ground for supposing that the castle was built by King John at the time when he founded the borough and port.

Plan of castle.

The only existing views of the structure were taken during the seventeenth and the early part of the eighteenth century. They agree in the general aspect, which is that of the usual fortress of the Plantagenet period, the *enceinte* formed by a number of circular embattled towers or bastions, connected by curtain walls with battlements. The entrance gateway was on the north side, facing Castle Street, flanked by two towers. There were three towers on the south side, and two others at the north-west and the north-east angles.

Inspeximus. A.D. 1347.

In an inspeximus roll of 20 Edward III., A.D. 1347, we have a description of the castle differing somewhat from the above. The commissioners report 'that there is a certain castle with *four* towers, a hall chamber, chapel, brewhouse, and bakehouse, with a well therein, also the herbage of the fosse, a certain orchard, dove-cot, &c.'

This difference is accounted for by a reference to the accounts of Thomas Urswick, receiver for the Duchy

A.D. 1441.

of Lancaster, 20 Henry VI. (1441), where charges are

[1] See vol. i. p. 9.

CHAP. I.

entered for the construction of a new tower on the south side, at the cost of 46*l.* 13*s.* 10*d.* The stone was quarried at Toxteth Park, the timber was obtained from the forests of Croxteth and Simonswood, and the lime was imported from the Isle of Man. 1441. New tower.

From a plan lodged in the Duchy Court, made in the thirtieth year of Elizabeth (1587) by order of the Government, the dimensions of the castle within the fosse appear to have been about fifty yards square, and the fosse about ten yards wide. The fosse was excavated to a considerable depth in the solid rock, but from its position it never could have been filled with water. Portions of this fosse have from time to time been met with in excavating for the buildings around. From the west side a subterranean passage (still existing) was excavated in the rock along the line of James Street to the river-side. The alignment of the south side of the castle within the fosse corresponded pretty closely with the south side of St. George's Church as it now stands. The fosse on the north side runs under the site of the National and the North and South Wales Banks. Various scattered notices of the castle are found in the Government records. Plan. A.D. 1587. Fosse. Subterranean passage.

In the sixteenth year of King John (1215) it was provisioned for a siege during the rising of the Barons, which resulted in the Great Charter, but for more than four centuries the tide of battle never surged against its walls, and it met with no enemies more formidable than time and the elements. A.D. 1215. Preparations for siege.

In the year 1323, in the seventeenth year of his reign, Edward II. was a guest at the Castle of Liverpool in passing southwards from the north of Yorkshire. A.D. 1323. Visit of Edward II.

From the Patent Rolls in the Tower of London we learn that on October 2 in that year he issued a mandate dated from Skipton in Craven, to put down certain superstitious reports of miracles having been performed by contact with the dead bodies of two rebel barons

CHAP. I.

executed at Bristol. On the 24th of the same month the mandate is repeated, under the title of 'De fingentibus miracula prosequendis.' This time it is subscribed 'Teste Rege apud *Liverpol* xxiiii die Octobris.'

1323.

Civil war.

During the great uprising of the seventeenth century the tenure of the castle passed from side to side according to the fortunes of the war, as related in the previous pages.

A.D. 1646.

The fabric had received some injury during the sieges, for in 1646 we find an entry in the town's records, 'that the castle bee repaired and fortified, or the works slaighted.'

A.D. 1659.

In the Journals of the House of Commons, under date July 4, 1659, it is recorded that 'Colonel Walton reports from the Council of State that upon a report from the Committee of the Council to whom the business touching the demolishing of Liverpoole Castle was referred, certifying, "that it will be for the service of the State that the said castle be demolished and made untenable together with the walls and towers. That the lead and materials being valued at about 35*l.*, will not answer the charge; that there is a house which, with the site, is worth 100*l.*, which by computation the demolishing will amount to. It is ordered that it be humbly reported to the Parliament as the opinion of the Council that the said dwelling-house and site, which is excepted from the sale, may be conveyed by the trustees (by order, or Act of Parliament if an order be not sufficient) to such person as shall be entrusted with the care of demolishing the said castle walls and towers in recompense of the charge thereof, and the land to be sold for the use of the State. And the Colonel Birch be humbly offered to the Parliament to be entrusted with the demolishing of the said castle and the walls and towers upon the terms aforesaid."'

Proposed demolition.

Restoration.

Before this order could be acted on, events had commenced which resulted in the restoration of Charles II. The Government, however, did not countermand the

CHAP. I.

order for the demolition. In the minute book of the Lord-Lieutenancy of the county, a report is found, not dated, but written between 1662 and 1679, describing the proceedings which had been taken to this effect. The gate-house was pulled down, and the walls reduced in height, but the inner part does not appear to have been much disturbed. 'One little dwellinge house, built by Birch (above alluded to), adjoyninge to the wall, on the west syde the said castle' was left unmolested. These internal buildings were partially occupied as residences. Edward Moore (1667) writes: 'Now of late Captain Fazakerley hath erected a mill in the castle, which he pretends is not in the liberty of the town. Query; if you may not pull it down, since it is none of the King's mill, nor pays him no rent.'

A.D. 1667.

In June 1690, when King William III. passed through the town *en route* for his decisive campaign in Ireland, the old castle received a detachment of his troops.

A.D. 1690. William III.

I have alluded above [1] to the appointment in 1701 of Earl Rivers as constable of the castle, in despite of Lord Molyneux, who claimed the office as hereditary in the family, and to the proceedings arising therefrom.

A.D. 1701. Earl Rivers constable.

We learn from a letter asking for the arrears of rent, that the corporation were at this time tenants of the site. The county of Lancaster was at that period rather disaffected to the Government, and we find that a depôt of arms existed in the castle. Morris writes: 'I hear Mr. Maudit has got the keys where the arms are, which I am very glad of. I desire you will give my humble service to him, and desire him to take great care of the arms.'

Corporation tenants.

In another letter, dated February 10, 1701–2, Morris again writes to the mayor: 'I am now passing my Lord Rivers's patent, both for the castle and prisage, just as my late Lord Macclesfield had it. My Lord Rivers is mighty kind to me, and I make not the least doubt but

Earl Rivers.

[1] Vol. i. p. 175.

CHAP. I. 1701.

to have a deputation from his lordship to act relating to the castle as I did in my late lord's time. There is a whole year's rent due at Lady Day, and I would know from you whether Mr. Mayor will pay me or not, and whether the town will hold the castle any longer, or I must take care to dispose of the rents as my lord shall direct me, or otherwise.'

Sir Thomas Johnson.

In December 1701, when Sir Thomas Johnson was elected one of the members for the borough, one of his first projects was to obtain a grant for the town of the

A.D. 1702.

site of the castle. On February 16, 1702, he writes: 'We have done all we can about the castle. Mr. Tyrer and Mr. Richmond are to make a return according to form, of the castle, then Sir John [1] will procure the grant from the Queen, but find Sir John is resolved my Lord Molyneux and gentlemen of the county should have notice, that if they have anything to object they might be heard; we had best not be sure till we have it.' On December 12, 1702, he writes: 'Mr. Clayton and I waited upon my Lord Derby, and he of himself said he designed to pleasure the corporation with the castle, and would put that into his patent for Lord-Lieutenant.' By a letter dated on the 22nd of the same month, the affair looked rather unpromising. He writes that Mr. Clayton 'has wrote a letter to Mr. Mair, which he showed me, and said he thought not to send it. I advised him not.

Proposed lease to corporation.

He purposes getting a lease for fifty-one years; they ask 21*l.* ground rent—that's too much. We have been several times to wait upon my Lord Derby, but cannot meet with him . . . . . but it is all foul I protest, and it goes not down with me, though I know the advantage the castle would be; but as he manages—he calls it for the church—what will the town be better for it? The rectors will oblige you to make them 200*l.* per annum, and if the Queen gives anything they will have it.'

A.D. 1704.

Perseverance, however, finally succeeded, and in 1704

[1] Sir John Gower, then Chancellor of the Duchy.

a grant was made by the Crown of the site of the castle to the corporation for fifty years, at a ground rent of 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* per annum. The municipal troubles were not yet over, for claims were set up by Lord Molyneux which led to litigation; but in 1707 the cause was won by the town. Steps were then taken towards laying out the site for building.

1704. Grant from the Crown. Lord Molyneux's claims.

After all this energy and success, difficulties still remained to be overcome; the old castle died hard. The nature of the obstruction is alluded to in Johnson's letter of December 22, 1702, that Mr. Clayton 'was managing it for the Church.' The facts, so far as can now be ascertained, were these. After Liverpool was made a separate parish, and two rectors appointed under the Act of 1699, residences appear to have been provided for them within the precincts of the castle walls. After the grant of a lease from the Crown to the corporation in 1704, the parish and clergy were not disposed to budge without a consideration, claiming a vested interest in the tenements they had been occupying. Matters went on for several years in this uncertain condition before any decisive step could be taken; but on May 20, 1715, a vestry meeting was held to receive a deputation from the corporation, when it was mutually agreed that the parish should withdraw their claims on consideration of the corporation building houses for the residence of the two rectors. The two bodies thus reconciled united in an application to Parliament for an Act (1 Geo. I. c. 21) by which the site of the castle was vested in the mayor and corporation for ever, and authority was given to build a new church on a portion of the site, and to make a new market adjoining. Steps were soon after taken towards disposing of the land, and about 1721 the old fortress, after having weathered the storms for five hundred years, was finally improved off the face of the earth.

A.D. 1702. Rector's houses. A.D. 1704. A.D. 1715. Disputes settled. Act of Parliament. A.D. 1721. Final destruction.

The demolition of the castle was the sign and figure of much that was passing away along with it.

CHAP. I.

1721. Changes.

'The old order changeth, yielding place to new.' With the fall of the Stuart dynasty the maxims of feudality and arbitrary government and civil strife, typified by the castle and the tower, came to an end in England. There was much that was picturesque and graceful in the forms of mediæval life; but when its essence had departed, the residuum became foul and noxious, and could no longer be endured.

The commercial spirit succeeded, with its enterprise and industry, which were destined to raise our country to an unprecedented height of prosperity, disfigured, no doubt, by many ugly features, such as selfishness, greed, and envy; but on the whole the balance of good greatly preponderated. Nowhere was the change more manifest or fraught with greater promise than in Liverpool, which now for the first time started boldly in the race of commercial enterprise.

Appropriation of site.

The corporation had now got the site of the castle, and proceeded to appropriate it. The inhabitants were at this time much inconvenienced for want of a proper market-place, the propensity for building narrow streets and utilising every available inch of land having left them scarcely any open space for the purpose. The corn market was held at the High Cross, under the arches of the old Town-hall, and in the street in front, the grain being 'pitched' in bulk. The butchers had shambles opening from High Street, occupying part of the present Exchange area. The pedlars and the potato market occupied the *carrefour* called the White Cross, between High Street and Oldhall Street.

Market-place.

A.D. 1702.

New market.

The scheme for a new market on the site of the castle was one main object of the application for the grant. Johnson, writing within two months of his first return to Parliament (March 17, 1702), thus alludes to it: 'I would propose, and I hope it will looke faire, that the butchers be at the new markett, the butter, cheese, and poultry about the 'Change, as the butchers were . . . .

and if you'll consider we draw most of the people of the town farthest to markett, I pray use your interest to quiet people's minds. I have some complaints; I am afraid the old temper continues.' 1702.

Even before the castle was demolished, building had commenced along the western margin of the castle precincts. This street was called Preeson's Row, from Alderman Thomas Preeson, who built the first houses. Preeson himself lived on the opposite side, fronting the castle fosse. On a stone in front of the house was the inscription frequently found on houses of the seventeenth century—'God's providence hath been mine inheritance. Anno 1660.' A William Preeson was mayor in 1696. Immediately after the buildings of the castle were removed, about 1721, a small square was formed for the new market; and out of gratitude for the service rendered by the Earl of Derby in obtaining the grant, it was called 'Derby Square.' It would appear that even in 1725 some remains of the castle buildings still existed. At a special council held April 15 it is recorded that 'an estimate and sectional plans of a new church to be erected in the late castle, upon the ground where *the old large square stone tower and the stone buildings adjoining the same to the northward now stand*, being now laid before this council by Mr. Thomas Steers and Mr. James Shaw,' &c., directions be given to proceed with the works. St. George's Church was commenced in 1726, and consecrated in 1734. The architect was Mr. Thomas Steers, the engineer of the Old Dock. The original design, though not free from defects, was bold, simple, and effective. The body of the church was proportioned in one order of Doric columns and pilasters, with an attic above, and a single range of semicircular-headed windows. The tower rose boldly and simply from the ground, with two diminishing stages above, crowned with a well-proportioned spire.

Building on site.

Derby Square. A.D. 1725.

St. George's Church.

A.D. 1726 to A.D. 1734.

CHAP. I.

1734. Settlement of building.

By a singular oversight the church was placed on the solid rock and the tower on the old castle ditch. The consequence was a settlement in the building, producing a huge rent from the summit downwards. The spire was taken down in 1809, and subsequently (1819–25) the exterior of the church, with the tower and spire, were rebuilt in a style which, 'not to put too fine a point on it,' may certainly be pronounced no improvement on the original design.

Painting by Hilton.

When the church was rebuilt it was determined to insert an east window in stained glass. The commission for the design was given to W. Hilton, R.A., which resulted in the picture of the Crucifixion, now in the Public Museum, from which the window was executed. The picture is without controversy one of the finest compositions of the English school—free from affectation, simple, noble, and grand. The council paid the artist 1,000*l.*—a considerable sum, but not a third of the present value of the picture. It is more than questionable whether a municipal council, elected by popular suffrage, would have ventured on such an expenditure for a similar purpose. It is not often we have to record munificent encouragement of the arts in the proceedings of town councils. Let this stand to their credit.

Alteration of levels.

The original level of the castle site was considerably higher than the present surface. From Derby Square to Preeson's Row the communication was by a long flight of

Kenyon's Steps.

stairs, called 'Kenyon's Steps.'

No sooner was the church erected than it began to be closely surrounded by a dense mass of houses, hemming it in on the north, south, and west, and leaving a very small area for the market square on the east. At the south end of Castle Street, just beyond the church, the road was contracted by a projecting mass of buildings

Temple Bar.

into a footway, which went by the name of Temple Bar. From the east side of Castle Street eastward to the old fosse the site was covered with buildings, the road out-

side the fosse being called the Potato Market, but subsequently Castle Ditch.

1756.

The shortsightedness and folly of this arrangement began very soon to show itself, and in 1756 the area on the south side and part of that on the west side of the church were cleared of buildings and the surface lowered. To accommodate the altered level, arcades were formed under the churchyard, crowned with a balustrade, and finished by an octagonal-domed building at each end.[1] The arcades were used for market purposes, and one of the octagons for a lock-up.

Castle Ditch.

Removal of buildings.

Arcades.

The space thus obtained was devoted to an extension of the market, and called the 'Stocks Market,' from a pillory and stocks which stood on the site. These were removed in 1763 by Mr. John Tarlton, mayor, who erected in their stead a lofty obelisk, covering a cistern and pump. This useful structure long perpetuated the memory of its founder by its appellation, 'Tarlton's Obelisk.' At what precise period it was removed I have not been able to ascertain.

Stock's market.

A.D. 1763.

Tarlton's obelisk.

In this condition matters remained until 1786, when, in connection with other improvements hereafter to be mentioned, the whole area was cleared, and the church left isolated as it now stands.

A.D. 1786.

Improvements.

It is handed down traditionally that, during a great part of the eighteenth century, the Stocks Market was frequently used for the popular amusement of bull-baiting, the elevated churchyard and the windows of the surrounding houses affording commanding positions for viewing the so-called 'sport.'

Bull-baiting.

I have to apologise to the courteous reader for lingering so long about the neighbourhood of the old castle. I can only plead the interest I have always felt in the early history of the locality. The site of the castle was the central point, the *omphalos*, of old Liverpool, and its

[1] See Plate XVIII. vol. i. of Herdman's 'Ancient Liverpool,' in which the whole arrangement is shown.

CHAP. I.

1786.

story exhibits in a strong light how 'the whirligig of time brings in his revenges.'

Let us now take a survey of Castle Street proper. The burgage tenures referred to in the original charter of King John were probably for the most part situate in Castle Street, but we have no record of them. The

Earliest mention, A.D. 1315.

earliest mention of the street by name occurs in the 8 Edward II. (A.D. 1315), in a grant from John de Kirkby to Adam de Chorlate of a piece of land with the building thereon, 24 feet in front and 65 feet in depth; to have and to hold of the chief lord in fee, 'with all liberties to such a tenement in the town of Liverpool pertaining.' The consideration money was fourpence-halfpenny in silver to the lord, and several sums to other persons, amounting in all to fourteen pence in silver.[1] This was in fact a burgage tenement.

Constable's house.

In the reign of Edward III. a house in Castle Street, previously in the occupation of Benedict le Stedman, constable of the castle, was leased to Richard de Aynesargh at a rental of 4*s.* in silver yearly.

A.D. 1549.

In the second year of Edward VI. (1549) four shops near the High Cross were demised by Henry Shaw to Henry Tarlton for the sum of 10*l.*, and a life annuity of 11*s.*

Moore rental, A.D. 1667.

In the Moore Rental (1667) we have a pretty full account of the property in Castle Street belonging to the family. The value of land had by this time increased considerably. House rents of 10*l.* and 18*l.* per annum are mentioned, and various prospective improvements

Tenants described.

pointed out. The tenants are cynically described in very unflattering terms. Thomas Row is said to be 'pretty honest, yet trust him not.' Widow Blundell is 'a very cunning woman, and hath to her son-in-law a notorious knave.' Richard Williamson is 'a most notorious knave.' William Mosse is 'an idle, drunken fellow,' and so on. There was a horse corn-mill in

[1] See Baines's 'Liverpool,' p. 314*a*.

CHAP. I.

1667.

Castle Street, for which Moore claimed a monopoly. It was customary at that time to insert in leases a covenant that the corn should be ground in the lord's mill, and Moore is very earnest in impressing on the mind of his successor the importance of strictly enforcing its observance.

Moore rental.

Here is a specimen, and not a very attractive one, of a 'Lancashire witch' residing in Castle Street: 'Widow Bridge, a poor old woman. Her own sister, Margaret Loy, being arraigned for a witch, confessed she was one; and when she was asked how long she had so been, replied, Since the death of her mother who died thirty years ago; and at her decease she had nothing to leave her, and this widow Bridge, that were sisters, but her two spirits; and named them, the eldest spirit to this widow, and the other spirit to the said Margaret Loy. God bless me and mine from all such legacies, amen!' Spirits must surely have been a valuable property when they could be bequeathed in this business-like way.

Widow Bridge.

At this time and down to a much later period Castle Street was very narrow, widening to a funnel shape at the north end, in the centre of which area stood the old Town-hall.

Narrowness of street.

The west side previous to 1786 was laid out very differently from its modern arrangement. The whole space between Castle and Fenwick Streets was covered with a dense mass of buildings, penetrated by a great number of narrow alleys and passages. The south end of the street did not extend so far south as at present, being stopped by the 'Castle Hill,' which originally ran outside the castle wall westward in a line with Moore Street. In 1786 the greater part of this area was cleared of buildings, the west side set back to its present alignment, and a new street called Brunswick Street was carried down to George's Dock. The design for the new front to Castle Street, which is attributed to James Wyatt, was a noble and dignified piece of street archi-

Description.

A.D. 1786.

Improvements.

CHAP. I.

1786.

tecture, in honest brick and stone, without any meretricious attempts at display.

Brunswick Street not coming exactly in the centre, the southern part of the front was extended southwards over the old fosse of the castle and the Castle Hill, which threw the buildings forward to the present line of Derby Square and James Street, the buildings north of St. George's Church already mentioned being cleared away.

Matthew Gregson.

Pictures of Castle Street, A.D. 1786.

We possess some lively pictures of this neighbourhood at a time long gone by. Previous to the improvements in 1786, Mathew Gregson the antiquary carried on business as an upholsterer under the the firm of Urmson & Gregson on the west side of Castle Street, near the south end. At different periods between that date and 1804 he employed artists to make drawings of several of the streets near the centre of business.[1] These have been preserved, and now lie before me. They are very correctly and minutely drawn, and coloured in a very natural manner; and, with the details and figures introduced, present a very graphic portraiture of the 'form and pressure' of the time. I will endeavour to give a slight pen and ink sketch of their contents as we come across the localities depicted.

Description.

We will carry ourselves back in thought to November 30, 1786, when the first sketch was made. We are standing at the door of Messrs. Bolton & Hollingshead's drapers' shop, on the east side of Castle Street, near Harrington Street. The buildings on the west side are in course of rapid demolition. Heaps of bricks and rubbish cumber the ground. Navvies are busy with pickaxe and spade excavating for the new buildings. The partial removal of the west side gives a view of the Exchange as it stood before the fire of 1796, with its sculptured pediment and ugly square dome. The buildings for Heywood's new bank are nearly up to the roof. Masons and bricklayers are actively engaged in their vocation.

[1] See reference to this in the 'Portfolio of Fragments,' p. 171, * *foot-note.*

On a part of the ruins hard by we read a notice, 'Urmson & Gregson removed to Preeson's Row.' The end of Castle Hill, a continuation of Moor Street, is shown, the houses partially pulled down. A post-chaise and pair are approaching with a lady and gentleman inside, but find a difficulty in threading the carts carrying soil and rubbish. A gentleman in a bright-red coat and flowing hair is clearing the way for a handsome stout lady in a fur-trimmed pelisse, with an immense straw hat and drooping feather, and a young girl in a bright-green pelisse, open down the front, wearing a large coal-scuttle bonnet.

Description.

The next day, December 1, 1786, we 'assist,' as the French say, at another sketch of Castle Street. We stand at the north end, in front of the Exchange (Town-hall), and look southwards. We see the same work of demolition going on along the west side, letting in a view of St. George's spire, and in the far distance the masts of ships in the Old Dock, with a glimpse of St. Thomas's spire. The news shop for Mr. Billinge (of the 'Advertiser') is erected in the midst of the ruin, but not completed. Just adjoining this stood the St. George's Coffee-house, a tavern celebrated for public dinners, suppers, and other entertainments. The east side of the street is lined with shops and houses, having a respectable 'bourgeois' look about them, substantial and well-looking, according to the time. The first shop is occupied by Messrs. Gore, removed from the opposite side during the alterations; then Slater's Court, where Mr. Gill Slater carries on his business, having removed his residence to Edge Hill. A print-shop, with attractive engravings in the window, comes next. Henry Fairclough, watchmaker, succeeds; then Swift's hosiery establishment, behind which is Swift's Court. Next comes Billinge's temporary shop; the entrance to Cook Street under an archway; Clarke's Bank previous to its removal to the new premises; and Samuel and Joseph Dutton, iron-

Billinge's shop.

Gore's.

CHAP. I.

1786.

mongers. Beyond these the names become indistinct. In the foreground it is High Change, the front of the Town-hall being the Rialto of Liverpool, 'where merchants most do congregate.' Amongst the assembly we may discern Mr. James Gildart, junior (the mayor for the year), Mr. Thomas Staniforth, Mr. John Sparling, and others of the forty and one 'honest and discreet men' who compose the council. Broad-brimmed low-crowned hats, long over-coats, square-cut under-coats, with Hessian boots or gaiters, appear the order of the day in costume. A gentleman with his hair tied behind in a bag gallantly takes off his hat to two ladies in immense coal-scuttle bonnets. Several persons are watching with interest the progress of pulling down. Two men are carrying a sedan-chair. The bellman, surrounded by a little group, is bawling forth his announcements in stentorian tones.

High Change. Description.

Shops.

By the middle of the eighteenth century Castle Street had become for the most part a street of shops, the resort of the beauty and fashion of the town. One or two old mansions, however, still lingered on. Mr. James Gildart, senior, mayor in 1750, one of a family once very prominent in Liverpool, occupied a large house corner of Cook Street, afterwards converted into a shop kept by Mr. James Swan, who built the mansion at Olive Mount.

Inhabitants.

We cannot associate the locality of Castle Street with any names very distinguished in art, science, or literature, but as it is permitted to us 'to call spirits from the vasty deep,' I will mention a few names, some of which one would not willingly let die out from the memory of the succeeding generations. On the west side, in a building removed to make room for the National Bank, long lived and flourished Mr. Thomas Kaye, the publisher of the 'Liverpool Courier,' which he established in 1807, and conducted for more than fifty years. Although mixed up in the party politics of his day and the conductor of a journal which took strong party views, he

Thomas Kaye.

was singularly mild and unobtrusive in his demeanour, and gained the regard both of friends and foes. His 'Stranger in Liverpool,' many editions of which have been published, contains the largest amount of information ever brought together of the history and topography of the town.

At the time of the establishment of the 'Courier,' and for many years after, Mr. Kaye was materially aided in the conducting of the paper by the Rev. Richard Watson, an eminent Wesleyan minister, author of 'The Institutes of the Christian Religion,' a very able man and a powerful writer. Richard Watson.

About 1816–17, another gentleman of somewhat eccentric character distinguished himself in the columns of the 'Courier.' This was Mr. Thomas Mulock of the firm of Mulock & Blood, merchants. He was an able and original writer and speaker, a great admirer of George Canning, and a Tory to the backbone. His letters in the 'Courier' bore the signature of 'Six Stars,' and excited bitter opposition in the liberal ranks, who held up the name of the firm to ridicule under the sobriquet of 'Bloody Moloch.' Mr. Mulock left Liverpool in 1817. He was the father of Miss Dinah Mulock, now Mrs. Craik, the celebrated author of 'John Halifax.' Thomas Mulock.

A little further north, on the site of what is now the office of the Scottish Widows' Fund, formerly stood the banking-house of Arthur Heywood, Sons & Co. Their first banking-house being taken down for the improvements in 1786, Bank Buildings were erected in the new line, where the business was conducted until 1800, when the present bank in Brunswick Street was completed. The Bank Buildings erected by Messrs. Heywood were taken down in 1864, when the present structure was built for the Mercantile and Exchange Bank, which, after a very short career, was wound up, and the building disposed of. Heywoods'.

The history of this banking-house is closely connected

CHAP. I.

Heywood family.

with the progress of Liverpool, and the family story is fraught with much interest as exhibiting the successful issue of integrity, enterprise, and skill. The Heywoods come of a sturdy Nonconformist stock. The Rev. Oliver Heywood of Halifax, a divine somewhat celebrated in his day, and his brother Nathaniel, Vicar of Ormskirk, were both ejected from their livings by the Act of Uniformity in 1662. Nathaniel had two sons, one bearing his own name, and the other named Richard. Richard emigrated to Drogheda, and carried on business as a merchant there. Having no children, he invited his nephew Benjamin, the son of Nathaniel, then about twelve years old, to reside with him as his adopted son. Accordingly he went; and after being initiated into the art and mystery of the merchant's craft, in due time succeeded to a thriving business. He married Anne Graham, the daughter of General Arthur Graham, of Armagh, and niece to the then mayor of Drogheda, through whom he inherited landed estates in Ireland, still in possession of the family. He died in 1725, in the thirty-eighth year of his age, leaving a large fortune to his family. His widow proved herself a very Cornelia to his children, refusing all offers of marriage, and devoting herself entirely to their welfare. The two sons were named Arthur and Benjamin. Arthur came to Liverpool in 1731, and served an apprenticeship of five years to John Hardman, of Allerton Hall, elected M.P. for the borough in 1754. Benjamin came ten years later, in 1741, and was bound apprentice to James Crosby (mayor in 1753). They entered into business under the firm of 'Arthur and Benjamin Heywood,' in Hanover Street, on the site described in Chapter VII. of this volume. In 1773 they commenced banking operations, and before long removed to Castle Street. Benjamin Heywood removed to Manchester, and established a banking-house there, still flourishing. The bank in Liverpool took the title of Arthur Heywood, Sons, & Co., which it still retains.

The building at the corner of Brunswick Street was long the office of the 'Albion' newspaper, established by Mr. Thomas Bean, who was originally connected with Mr. Kaye, in the office of the 'Courier.'

Thomas Bean.

A little further along the street was the shop of 'Edwards and Penny,' for many years *the* druggist and apothecaries' shop of the town. Several fortunes were made by successive proprietors. At length the concern fell into the hands of the late Mr. John MacGuffie, 'glorious John,' as he might well be called by those who had enjoyed his company. To a fine portly presence he added a magnificent voice and considerable vocal skill, which rendered his company much sought after. He was for some time a member of the Town Council, and at the civic feasts was almost the only amateur vocalist ever called on to show his powers. To hear him sing 'The Friar of Orders Grey' or 'The Pope he leads a merry life' was something to remember.

Edwards and Penny.

John MacGuffie.

On the same side of the street resided for a long period a most active and energetic individual, named Robert Williamson, the publisher of 'Williamson's Liverpool Advertiser,' a weekly paper which was commenced May 25, 1756, and continued for nearly a century, with more than one change of name, ultimately merging into the 'Liverpool Times.' Mr. Williamson seems to have been a man of multifarious occupations. He was a printer, bookseller, stationer, editor, publisher, agent for the State Lottery Office, and in addition carried on business as a general broker, sometimes selling by auction, and at other times offering by private treaty Cognac brandy, Madeira wine, logwood and fustic, indigo and tar, even condescending sometimes upon 'parcels of boots and shoes,' and 'a genteel chaise to be sold.' When to these occupations a house agency was added, it must be admitted that these degenerate times can hardly afford a parallel to such a comprehensive establishment.[1]

Robert Williamson.

[1] A contemporary portrait of Mr. Williamson is hung in the Free Public Library.

CHAP. I.

Rev. John Newton.

Through the early numbers of Williamson's 'Advertiser,' we gain a glimpse of a man very eminent in the religious world, who was for many years connected with Liverpool, the Rev. John Newton, the friend of Cowper and author of 'Cardiphonia.' On November 16, 1759, appeared the following advertisement :—

'In the press, and speedily will be published, Six Discourses as intended for the Pulpit, by John Newton. Price two shillings, octavo. Though the author thinks himself of too little consequence to solicit a formal subscription, he will not be insensible to the countenance of his friends, and if they are pleased to leave their names with Mr. R Williamson, the printer in Liverpool, that the number of the impression may the more easily be adjusted, it will be considered as a further favour.'

Newton's connection with Liverpool commenced about 1747. Having sailed as mate in a vessel belonging to Mr. Joseph Manesty, he was appointed in 1750 master of the 'Duke of Argyll,' and in 1752 of the 'African.' These ships were engaged in the slave trade, and it is a singular illustration of the influence of habit and public opinion on questions of justice and humanity, that a man of earnest piety and thorough honesty like Newton could mingle in all the horrors of the slave trade with scarcely a suspicion that there was any moral wrong about it. In 1754 he quitted the merchant service, and in the following year he was appointed one of the tide surveyors at Liverpool, in which office he continued until he entered the Church in 1764. His subsequent career is known wherever the English tongue is spoken. It must be recorded to his honour that when aroused to the iniquity of the trade in human flesh in which he was once engaged, no man could have been more earnest and zealous in aiding to abolish it. He resided in Edmund Street, out of Oldhall Street, where during the latter portion of his residence he held religious services on Sundays.

Several of the shops in Castle Street have had the

same business conducted in them continuously for many generations.

Messrs. Mawdsley's stationery and printing establishment, formerly Gore's, originated about the middle of the eighteenth century. The concern was commenced by John Gore with the assistance of his friend, Joseph Johnson, to be presently mentioned. 'Gore's Advertiser' was first issued in 1765. The proprietors were William Everard (elsewhere alluded to in these pages), John Gore, Joseph Johnson and his partner John Payne, of the firm of Payne & Johnson, Booksellers, London. The paper afterwards fell into the hands of John Gore alone, and was conducted by his son, Johnson Gore. In 1832 the latter withdrew from business, heart-broken at the premature loss of his only son, and soon after died.

John Gore.

Gore's Advertiser. A.D. 1765.

The first Liverpool Directory was published by John Gore in 1766. The series has been continued to the present time by the Gores and their successors the Mawdsleys.

Directory. A.D. 1766.

The Joseph Johnson mentioned above deserves an honourable place in the list of Liverpool worthies. He was born at Lowhill in 1738 of respectable parentage. His father resided at a mansion at the corner of Brunswick Road and Everton Road, afterwards purchased and rebuilt by Mr. Gregson, banker, in front of which was situated 'Gregson's Well.' At the age of sixteen he went to London, and was apprenticed to Mr. George Keith, bookseller, in Gracechurch Street. His brother, John Johnson, who acted as his guardian, was an extensive brewer in Dale Street, corner of Temple Street. About 1760, Joseph Johnson commenced business in Fish Street Hill, from whence he removed to Paternoster Row, where he entered into partnership with Mr. Payne, under the firm of Johnson & Payne, whose imprint will be found in the title-page of many of the publications of the day.

Joseph Johnson.

In 1770 the whole property of the firm was destroyed

CHAP. I.

Joseph Johnson.

by fire, no part of it being insured. Mr. Johnson was so well known and highly respected, that his friends readily came forward to establish him again in business in St. Paul's Churchyard, where he continued to the close of his career. As a publisher he was distinguished by his discrimination and liberality in dealing with authors, many of the most distinguished writers during the latter end of the last and the beginning of the present century having been introduced to the public under his auspices; amongst these may be mentioned the poet Cowper, Horne Tooke, Dr. Aikin, Mrs. Barbauld, Dr. Priestley, Fuseli, Maria Edgeworth, &c. The 'Analytical Review,' for some time the chief organ of Liberal principles, was commenced by him. This brought upon him the hatred of the Pitt Adminstration, who soon found an opportunity of wreaking their vengeance. For the unconscious offence of selling a pamphlet of which he was not the publisher, and did not know the contents, he was sentenced to an imprisonment of nine months and a fine of 50*l*. As a man of business and a private friend he was highly respected. I have alluded to the aid given by him to his Liverpool friend, John Gore. The same generosity distinguished him through life, exercised in the most modest and unostentatious manner. After a long and prosperous career, he died on December 20, 1809, and lies interred in the churchyard of Fulham, where he resided.

Jones & Sons.

Messrs. Jones & Sons, silversmith's shop, adjoining the last mentioned, also dates its establishment far back in the last century, and has been conducted by a succession of members of the same family to the present time.

Clarke & Roscoe's Bank.

On the east side of Castle Street, the building at the corner of Dale Street was for many years the banking-house of Messrs. Clarke & Roscoe, which after several changes in its style and title finally succumbed to pressure in 1818. Of Mr. Roscoe I shall have to speak here-

Drawn by T. A. Prior. Engraved by Austen.

WATER STREET.

WINKLES, SON & CO. LONDON 1870

after. On the site of the Branch Bank of England, and carried by an archway over Cook Street, stood what was formerly considered one of the institutions of Liverpool, 'Lillyman's Liverpool Arms Hotel.' Its hospitable portals opened wide upon the street,

Liverpool Arms Hotel.

> Nor was the portly alderman e'er driven from the door
> Of this fine old English hostelry all of the olden time.

It was, in fact, the Corporation House. As yet Lynn of the 'Waterloo' was not, and Lillyman's turtle was only rivalled at a subsequent period by that of Horne, of the Mersey Hotel. It was the head quarters of the red or Canning party at election times, as the Golden Lion, Dale Street, was of the Gascoyne Blues. Elections for mayor were also at times very exciting scenes. At the back of the hotel opening from Cook Street was an assembly-room, let occasionally for public meetings, where might have been heard in the present century, Sir Francis Burdett, William Cobbett, William Roscoe, Dr. Crompton, Colonel Williams, Egerton Smith, Edward Rushton, a fiery Irish orator named Casey, and the late venerable William Rathbone on the Liberal side, and on that of their opponents John Gladstone, Adam Lodge, Thomas Mulock, &c. Oratory, however, was not so much the forte of the Tories in those days. Being possessed of the solid pudding, they wisely left the 'chaff' to the digestion of their antagonists, and were content with being masters of the situation.

Another well-known tavern in Castle Street was the 'Millstone,' referred to by Derrick in his Letters (1760), where he says 'for tenpence a man may dine at an ordinary, consisting of ten or a dozen dishes.'

Millstone Tavern.

A wayfarer along Castle Street any time these hundreds of years might have observed, about fifty or sixty yards south of the Town-hall, inserted in the carriage pavement, a flat boulder stone of circular shape, much larger than

Liverpool fair.

CHAP. I.

the square setts about it. As, to the untutored mind of Peter Bell,

Liverpool fair.

> A primrose by a river's brim,
> A yellow primrose was to him,
> And it was nothing more;

so to the uninitiated this flat boulder would appear a paving-stone—and nothing more. It is, however, a great deal more. There formerly existed another such stone in Dale Street, near the top of Stanley Street. These points marked the privileged precincts of the 'Fair' of Liverpool, which, if any of my readers will consult those antediluvian productions, the rural almanacks, is still innocently supposed to be held on July 25 and November 11. For ten days before and after the fair, protection from arrest was secured within the sacred precincts marked by these stones, for all persons coming to the fair on lawful business. This may seem a trifle now, but in the days when any man might be summarily arrested and thrown into gaol on the mere pretence of a debt it was a wholesome provision. The indication of this little Alsatia was a huge hand thrust out in front of the Town-hall, as in the act of blessing, or as a sign of protection. The practice was continued down to the time of the Municipal Reform Act, and then, with many things less innocent, the good old custom expired.

Processions.

According to Troughton the opening of the fairs was formerly celebrated with considerable *éclat*. He says: 'On these days the mayor, bailiffs, and *burgesses* (Qy., common councillors?), in their gowns, went in procession, with a band of music, from the Exchange to the middle of Dale Street, where they passed round a large stone, whitewashed for the occasion, and thence proceeded to another stone in the centre of Castle Street, and back to the Exchange, where they dined. It was the custom for the most respectable ladies in the town to follow in the procession to the church.' The dinners are stated to have been furnished 'in a most superb and luxurious

style' to two or three hundred of the principal inhabitants; but this must be an exaggeration, as no accommodation existed for the entertainment of so large a number. Indeed, the procession seems to have been discontinued soon after the erection of the present Exchange (1754).

Markets.

I have already spoken of the markets and of the efforts made to procure additional accommodation in Derby Square and the neighbourhood. As the town increased, notwithstanding the opening of markets in other localities, the space was found far too small, and the booths and standings gradually encroached more and more along Castle Street, until at length on Wednesday and Saturday they nearly reached the Town-hall. Shopkeepers and the public alike complained of the nuisance, and after long delay the subject was taken up by the Council. St. John's Market was erected and opened in 1822, and Castle Street was abandoned to the dignity of commerce. This removal changed the character of the shops, which, instead of providing for household wants, became more devoted to commercial necessities. In the course of time a further change took place, most important in its influence on the value of property. When the shopkeeper resided on the premises rents were of necessity moderate; but when the insatiable wants of commerce began to elbow out the shopkeeper's family, and to occupy the apartments as offices, rents rose with a rapid bound, and with them the value of the property in fee; so that premises which at one period had sold for 3,000*l.* in a few years realised 10,000*l.* to 12,000*l.* The next and final step was that of eliminating the shopkeeper and converting or rebuilding the property for banks, insurance offices, &c. On the east side we have the Bank of England, a handsome design by the late Professor Cockerel, and the Commercial Bank. The uniformity of the west side has been broken into by the erection of the Mercantile and Exchange Bank (now the offices of the Scottish Widows' Fund), on the ancient site occupied by Messrs.

St. John's market, A.D. 1822.

Commercial changes.

Branch Bank of England.

Mercantile and Exchange Bank.

CHAP. I.

National Bank.

Heywood, and more recently by the National Bank, erected partly on the fosse of the Castle. In due time the rest must follow, when it is to be hoped that Castle Street may rival the Via Nuova of Genoa in stateliness of architecture, free from the contraction and gloom of the avenues of 'La Città Superba.'

Exchange.

From this point our direct progress northward is blocked up for all but pedestrians by the huge pile of the Exchange Buildings. Previous to 1803 this was not the case. Up to that time the line of Oldhall Street was continued through to Castle Street along the east side of the Town-hall. If from the S.E. corner of Oldhall Street a line be drawn to the N.E. corner of the North-Western Bank, curving slightly to the east, it will give tolerably correctly the alignment of the ancient Joggler Street, afterwards called High Street.

High Street.

This was originally the main street of the town, having the High Cross at its southern extremity, and the White Cross at the northern end. About midway along the east side of the street, within the portion still remaining, there stood, before the erection of the Liverpool and London Insurance Chambers, the Police Offices and Court of Requests. Previously the land was occupied by butchers' shambles, extending back to what is now Exchange Street East. Here was the site of the original Town-hall of Liverpool. There is not much known about its history, but a few glimpses are obtained from the town records and other sources. Previous to the Reformation it was called St. Mary's Hall. Originally it seems to have been a thatched building, as there is an order for its being covered with slates in the year 1567. It was used not only as a Town-hall, but as a Custom-house, a lock-up for prisoners, the Mansion-house—the mayor being required to keep the glass in repair at his own expense—and as a banqueting-house, the St. George's Hall of its day.

First Town-hall.

A.D. 1567.

A.D. 1571.

In the town records A.D. 1571 there is the following

Harwood H Wallis

ST. GEORGE'S CRESCENT & CASTLE STREET.

entry: 'We fynd necessarie for the upholdyng better and long continewyng of oure comyn hall of this towne in good order of reperacion of the same, that noe licence be or shall be granntyd and gyvyn to make any weddyng diners or pleyes of dawnsyng therein to the damagyng, decayng, or falling of the floore of the same, and if it chaunce upon any urgent cause, or earnest request not deniable, any licence to be gyvyn therein, that thereby the same licence the partie or parties soe obteyning licence shall pay to the comyn cooffer for everie such licence fyve shillings, usual money.' 1571. Orders of Council.

In 1579: 'Forasmuche as yt is considered that greate inconvenience doe in sundriewise growe, that hitherto this comyn haule hath bene and is of neceesitie used as a prison howse for the receipt of all persons here committed for or by reason of anie cryme, or for debte, which is not a fitte place for yt purpose, and therefore it was moved by Mr. Maior that some other place myght be provided and appointed for a comon gaole, whereunto Alaien Gayney made answer and proffered unto Mr. Maior and the towne, a certain howse by him latelie builded near unto the sea syde.' A.D. 1579.

Here the civic banquets of the time were held, the cost of which is duly recorded. About twenty shillings sufficed for an ordinary corporation dinner; but on a great occasion, such as entertaining the Earl of Derby, a grand display was made, costing the town twenty-four shillings. Civic banquets.

I dare say the sayings and doings generally of the 'forty honest and discreet men,' as the councillors are styled in the old charters, would possess no more interest, perhaps not as much, to the present generation as those of their successors on the opposite side of the street; but public spirit and ability and pluck are always worthy of commemoration. 'Vixêre fortes ante Agamemnona multi;' which may be rendered, that eminent town-councillors flourished amongst us before the days of the Municipal Reform Act. Common Council.

CHAP. I.

1667. Leaving the old Town-hall, we will now enter Juggler Street and take a survey a century later than the date of the last quotation, say A.D. 1667.

Alderman Lurting. One house in the street was occupied by Alderman Peter Lurting, mayor in 1663. Moore, in his 'Rental,' calls him 'a very knave;' his knavery, however, consisted principally in electioneering differences with the Moore family, which in the eyes of Edward Moore constituted the unpardonable sin. The line of buildings seems to have been rather irregular, as there is said to be 'a stately room betwixt the house and the street to build on.' The primitive and rural condition of the community may be gathered from the statement that in front of the house 'there is a place walled in with Perpoint ashlar, where *most of the street lay their dung;* so that it is of great advantage!'

State of buildings.

Moore asks a question in regard to this street which, I fear, must for ever remain unanswered: 'Query, how the town came by the little shops where the women now sell apples and the cobbler works? Because, in an exchange from Sir Richard Mullineux, I find them granted to my great-grandfather, John More.'

A.D. 1671. The last mention of the original Town-hall is in 1671, when a levy or tax was assessed on the inhabitants for a variety of purposes, including 'the repayre of bridges and of the Town-hall.'

Second Town-hall. Soon after this time the building of the second Town-hall was commenced on the open space at the north end of Castle Street, in front of the site of the present Town-hall. It is described by Blome, who wrote a description of the town in 1673, as then building. He calls it 'a famous town house, placed on pillars and arches of hewen stone, and underneath is the publick exchange for the merchants.'[1]

Description, A.D. 1673.

The erection of this building marks an important

[1] Views of the building are given in Herdman's 'Ancient Liverpool' and in Troughton's 'History.'

CHAP. I.

1673.

epoch in the progress of the town. The original Town-hall represented Liverpool, in its vassalage and dependency, cringing to the Chancellor and sheltering itself under the protection of the Stanleys and Molyneuxs. The next seventy years, the period of the existence of the second Town-hall, was one of struggle and self-assertion. The lingering remnants of the feudal yoke were shaken off, the lords paramount were set at defiance, the new parish was constituted, the foundations of the magnificent corporate estate were laid, and the commerce of the port entered upon the career which has been crowned with such successful results.

Second Town-hall.

It was in the upper chamber of this building that most of these schemes were matured. I have already described most of the leading townsmen of that day. They combined an amazing amount of sagacity and enterprise. Whilst developing the colonial trade with America and the West Indies, they were diligent in the improvement of the town by every available means.

The second Town-hall, after being the centre of Liverpool life for seventy-five years, began to exhibit symptoms of decay. The town within this period had made considerable advances in commerce, wealth, and population, and it was determined to erect a new building more suitable to the altered circumstances of the times.

New building.

The following is from a contemporary account: 'On the 11th July, 1749, an agreement was entered into by the Corporation with Mr. Wood, of Bath, as architect, to be paid 5 per cent. commission; and on the 1st September another agreement was made with Alderman Brooks, for excavating and executing the work necessary for the foundation.

Laying first stone.

'The foundation-stone was laid on the 14th September, at the south-east corner, with this inscription thereon only; though the learned of the town had been racking their brains to find out a suitable one in Latin, Greek, or Hebrew, on which they could not agree;

CHAP. I.

whereupon the Corporation, to quiet them, chose the following:

Laying the first stone.

JOSEPH CLEGG, Esq., Mayor.
OWEN BRERETON, Esq., Recorder.
JAMES CROSBIE, Gentleman } Bailiffs.
RICHARD CRIBB, Gentleman }

Sept. xiv. A.D. MDCCXLIX.

JOHN WOOD, Architect.

'The gentlemen of the Common Council, in their gowns, attended Mr. Mayor in the hall; and the corporate body from thence, about one o'clock at noon, went in procession, with their regalia and officers, with musick preceding them, to the new work, where the Worshipful Joseph Clegg, Esq., mayor, addressed himself to the burgesses in a handsome speech on the occasion, and struck down and laid the first stone of this noble work, and gave the workmen money on the occasion, which example was followed by the rest of the Council and merchants present, and was proclaimed by the loud huzzas of all the vast concourse of freemen and others present.

'After which Mr. Mayor and the Council, with the merchants, returned in like manner into the hall, where they were entertained by the Corporation with wine and cake, and prosperity to the new building was drunk by all the company; upon which the ceremony concluded.'

Opening.

In 1754 the building was opened with great rejoicings. The town for a whole week abandoned itself to festivities; public breakfasts every morning, boat-races during the day, and balls and concerts every evening. In its original condition the Town-hall, though handsome, and for the most part in good taste, differed materially from the structure of the present day. The east and south fronts alone were visible. On the north and west the adjoining buildings abutted directly upon it. The projecting portico and arcade on the south front were wanting. The north wing, containing the ball-room,

1772.

Description.

formed no part of the original design. The following is the description by Enfield, who wrote about fifteen years after the completion. It must be premised that both this and the preceding Town-hall were designated 'the Exchange,' being intended quite as much for commercial as for municipal purposes:—

'The principal entrance into the Exchange is by three arched doorways, ornamented with handsome ironwork; these lead to a spacious covered piazza, surrounding a square area in the middle. This covered walk is supported by couplets of Doric columns, without pedestals. The under part of the entablature and the body of the building under the piazza are crowded with a variety of ornaments, except the ceiling of the chief or south wall. The area is so small as to have somewhat the appearance of a well, and to give a gloomy cast to the walks that surround it. The four sides, or internal fronts in the area consist of the before-mentioned couplets of Doric columns, upon which is a range of Corinthian columns, the whole order complete, and at each corner handsome pilasters. Between these are seven arched windows in each front, decorated with another complete range of Corinthian columns, a size less than the former. The spaces under the window are minced into useless balustrades, and the whole is garnished with a redundancy of childish ornament. Above the centre of the grand front is a massy dome, covered with lead, which encumbers the building, and disgraces the Corinthian architecture which supports it; upon this, however, is erected a light turret, which affords an agreeable view of the town and its environs.'

A spacious staircase led to the upper floor, which contained the Town-hall—'a large and handsome room, well lighted, and elegantly fitted up with a semicircular range of seats, &c., all of mahogany. Behind the Town-hall was the council-room, and adjoining this the assembly-

CHAP. I.

room, 65 ft. by 25 ft., everywhere enriched with carving and ornaments.'

1787.

About 1787 the parasitical buildings were cleared away from the west and north sides, and the north wing added, for the purpose of a mansion-house for the mayor.

Clearing buildings, north wing.

On Sunday, July 24, 1795, the whole interior was destroyed by fire. The restoration was completed by the year 1797, when the interior was arranged much as it now exists. The present dome and cupola were added about the year 1802. The projecting portico and arcade on the south front were constructed in 1811, completing the edifice externally as we now see it. The ball-room and suite of state apartments were not finally completed until 1820.

Fire.

Portico, &c.

Let us place ourselves for a few moments under the portico. This is the old Hus-ting, or place of election of our ancient and loyal borough. Here the candidates for the 'most sweet voices' of the free burgesses have made their profession of political faith. 'Great men have been among us.' Not to mention Sir William Meredith and other worthies of the eighteenth century, we have had within the last two generations Roscoe and Brougham, Canning and Huskisson, addressing from this platform not merely the people of Liverpool, but the nation at large. Here, too, was enacted the drama of that school for political scandal, the election of 1830, which filled up the cup of political corruption to the brim, and contributed materially to the conviction in the public mind that the time for reckoning was come.

Hustings.

Let us now leave the hustings and take a final glance round the exterior. At the time that the north and west sides were cleared of buildings the street called Exchange Street West was formed, and in the middle of this stood the famous Exchange Alley, the *locale* of many eminent merchants, conspicuous amongst whom during the first thirty years of this century stood the wealthy firm of Ewart, Rutson, & Co., afterwards Ewart, Myers, & Co.

Exchange Alley.

Drawn by J. Wilson

Engraved by W. Miller

LIVERPOOL

THE TEMPLE OF MORTALITY, FROM PARADISE LOST.

"SATAN HIS FLIGHT DIRECTED STRAIGHT AGAINST THAT PORTAL, NOW UNGUARDED LAY."

The name of William Ewart is perpetuated in the Right Hon. William Ewart Gladstone, his godson, and William Ewart, his son, some time M.P. for Liverpool. In 1864 these constructions were swept away and replaced by the pile called Brown's Buildings and the Phœnix Fire Office.

Exchange.

The Town-hall was originally intended as a mercantile exchange below and a municipal hall above; but, from whatever cause it arose, the merchants preferred meeting in the open air in Castle Street, in front of the building. The markets from an early period had clustered about this spot. From a letter written by Johnson, in 1701, it appears that the corn market was held in Castle Street, which, he says, 'is the properest place for it; the stones are there laid, and there's room enough to unload the carts.' The butchers had just been removed to the new shambles north of the Exchange; the butter, cheese, and poultry about the 'Change, where the butchers were before. After the destruction of the Castle the retail market was removed to the other end of the street.

Corn market, &c.

After the widening of Castle Street and the surrounding improvements under the Act of 1786 it was felt that the commercial community required better accommodation for the transaction of business. So strong was this feeling, that when the project for the erection of a new Exchange on a scale commensurate with the wants of the times was brought publicly forward in April 1801, the subscription list of 80,000*l.* was filled up in three hours, although no individual was allowed to hold more than ten shares.

New Exchange.

The first stone was laid on June 30, 1803, and the Exchange was opened to the public on March 1, 1808.

First stone laid, A.D. 1803.

The quadrangle of the New Exchange as an architectural design possessed considerable merit. Pitched in the key of the older structure, it harmonised thoroughly with it, whilst in its distinctive features it exhibited a dignity and repose which approached if it did not reach

Description.

CHAP. I

to grandeur of style. The entire group from Castle Street to Oldhall Street, as a combination of municipal and commercial buildings, has never been surpassed.

Rebuilding.

The New Exchange had scarcely been opened more than fifty years when it was found that in the race of progress the wants of commerce had outstripped the accommodation. The proprietors of the existing Exchange declining to promote a larger scheme, a new company was formed in 1862, and an Act of Parliament obtained to buy up the old company and to pull down and re-erect the building on a larger scale. The sum paid to the old proprietors under an award was 317,350*l.*, and 60,000*l.* was also paid for the site of the old Sessions House, to extend the buildings westward. Mr. T. M. Wyatt obtained the first premium in the competitive designs, and subsequently carried out the buildings at an expense of 220,000*l.*

A.D. 1862.

The style may be called a sort of Flemish Renaissance, well calculated for the purposes of the minute division into numerous storeys and offices, but not especially adapted for architectural effect. Those who remember the stately dignity and quiet repose of the former building will be inclined to sympathise with the Jews who wept in comparing the second Temple with the first. The news-room is a noble apartment, free from all obstructions, and well adapted for its purpose.

Drawn by Harwood

Engraved by R. Wallis

INTERIOR OF THE EXCHANGE NEWS-ROOM.

THIS PLATE IS RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED TO THE MERCHANTS OF LIVERPOOL

BY THE PUBLISHERS

FISHER, SON & CO. LONDON 1829

CHAPTER II.

OLDHALL STREET, NORTHWARD.

THE name of Oldhall Street indicates the existence of an old hall, and the epithet *old* points to the idea of a new one at some time or other. The history of the locality may serve to illustrate the origin of the name. Old hall.

The family of More, or De la More, established themselves in the neighbourhood some time in the thirteenth century. In the 20th Henry III. (1236), Sir John de la More occupied a dwelling in Liverpool. It stood on the east side of Oldhall Street, a little to the north of Union Street. The mansion was then called More Hall. About A.D. 1280 the Mores became possessed of lands in Kirkdale, and erected Bank Hall, which thenceforth becoming the family seat, More Hall fell into the second place, and was called the Old Hall, being usually occupied by the dowager of the family as a jointure house. The declining fortunes of the Moores[1] and the progress of the Liverpool men of trade led in time to its being let on lease. In 1667 it was in the occupation of Thomas Andow, or Ayndoe, mayor in 1665, of which civic functionary his landlord, Sir Edward Moore, writing to his son, thus irreverently speaks: 'In the name of God be careful of him, for he is one of the lurkingest knaves in all the town: he is worse than my pen can express; and when he makes the greatest show of friendship, then he hath the most deceit at heart.'

More family.

More Hall.

A.D. 1280.

A.D. 1667.

Thomas Andow.

[1] The spelling of the name varies. Anciently it was written *More*, but from the seventeenth century it took the form of *Moore*.

CHAP. II.

1712. Old Hall.

The Old Hall continued to flourish, patched up, repaired, and partially rebuilt, though cribbed and shorn of its pleasant fields by the progress of building. About 1712 it passed, with the remainder of the Moore estates, into the possession of the Earl of Derby, and down to the early part of the nineteenth century it was always occupied by some branch of the family. In 1766 it was the residence of the Hon. and Rev. John Stanley, one of the rectors, and after his decease was occupied by his widow to the time of her death, about 1804.

A.D. 1766.

A.D. 1769.

In Perry's map of 1769 it is shown as a large house, with centre and wings set back from the street; and though built up on the north and south sides by the houses fronting Union and Queen Streets, still possessed of a pleasant garden at the back. Thirty-four years later, in 1803, according to Horwood's map, it had undergone little change. When the street was widened under the Improvement Act of 1820 a portion of the Hall was taken down, and some years afterwards the remainder was leased and demolished, to be rebuilt for commercial purposes.

Improvements, A.D. 1820.

Ancient ramparts.

Not far from the Old Hall, somewhere about the corner of Queen Street, the ancient fortifications crossed the line of Oldhall Street.

The walls or earthworks of Liverpool were not merely extemporised at the time of the civil wars; they had existed for ages previously. They are mentioned in the records of a trial in the reign of Philip and Mary; and a public officer, termed a murager, was appointed to take charge of them. At the time of the sieges the rampart consisted of an earthwork, probably faced by a wall, with a fosse twelve yards wide and three yards deep.

In the latter part of the seventeenth century building began to extend from the White Cross along Oldhall Street northwards. Fazakerley Street, originally Rosemary Lane, takes its name from the owners of the land.

The Fazakerleys of Walton and Fazakerley, about four

miles north of Liverpool, are a family of ancient descent, settled here from a very early period. In 1379 Thomas de Fazakerleigh held the coronership of the county, then a very important office, having to issue the pleas of the Crown. His successor, Robert, married, about 1400, Helen, heiress of Robert de Walton, by which the ancient mansion called Spellow House and a moiety of the Walton estates passed to the family. Roger Fazakerley was mayor of Liverpool in 1531, and held various lands in the town by burgage tenure. Nicholas Fazakerley married, in 1591, the daughter of John More, of Bank Hall. Her mother was the daughter of Sir Richard Molyneux, of Sefton. Samuel Fazakerley filled the office of town clerk of Liverpool from 1664 to 1678. Nicholas, a barrister of the Inner Temple, sold a a portion of the estates in Walton, including Spellow House, to the Earl of Derby about 1730. A portion of the property still remains in the possession of the family.

Fazakerleys.

Queen Street marks the reign of Queen Anne. Union Street commemorates the union of the two kingdoms in 1707; George Street derives its name from Prince George of Denmark, the husband of Queen Anne; and Ormond Street is named after James, the second duke of Ormond, one of Queen Anne's statesmen.

Queen Street, &c.

At this time, and for long afterwards, the north end was the aristocratic part of the town. Whilst windmills and potteries began to dot the surface of the eastern slope beyond Dale Street, and the land to the south of Hanover Street was still occupied with fields and gardens, Union Street, Virginia Street, Earle Street, St. Paul's Square, and the neighbourhood, were laid out with the substantial commodious mansions of the merchants of the day. Nor is this to be wondered at. Under the circumstances of the town at that period, the northern suburb was the pleasantest and most salubrious. The descent from Oldhall Street to the river was steep and rapid, open to the sea breezes. On a bold bluff at the end of

Virginia Street, &c.

CHAP. II.

Ladies' Walk.

the street projecting riverward, there was formed the once celebrated Ladies' Walk, with its fourfold avenues of umbrageous elms, overlooking the river and commanding a splendid prospect from the Rock Point to Eastham, with the Welsh mountains in the background. We may still identify the site, which is marked by the sheet of water forming the western canal basin, with the yards and temporary erections surrounding it. Let us enter and survey the locality. The atmosphere is grimy, redolent of coal-dust and smoke. Everything around smacks of the earth—earthy; of the most repulsive character which commerce can assume; but no matter, we have a dispensation 'to call spirits from the vasty deep.' We will for this occasion resemble Wordsworth's 'Poor Susan,' who enveloped in the roar of London streets—

> Sees
> A mountain ascending, a vision of trees,
> Bright volumes of vapour through Lothbury glide,
> And a river flows on through the vale of Cheapside.

A century shall roll away backward; 1871 gives place to 1767. It is a summer evening; the gentle zephyr is blowing from the river and rustling the foliage over our heads. The tide is flowing, and several ships are seen in the offing slowly making their way to the anchorage ground. Stately ladies in hoops and farthingales, and gentlemen in bag-wigs and swords, with scarlet-flowered and velvet coats, are promenading about, amongst whom we recognise Mr. Thomas Johnson, the mayor. Having some knowledge of this gentleman, we are introduced by him to some of the leading merchants of the day; Mr. Matthew Stronge,[1] Mr. John Sparling,[2] Mr. Ralph Earle,[3] Mr. William Rathbone.[4] The topics of

[1] Treasurer to the corporation. He resided in Paradise Street.

[2] Mayor in 1770. He resided in Paradise Street, and afterwards built St. Domingo House.

[3] Mayor in 1769. He resided in School Lane.

[4] Great grandfather of Mr. William Rathbone, M.P. for Liverpool.

conversation are the election for members about to take place, the addresses of Sir William Meredith and Colonel Pennant having just been issued. Another subject of great interest is the scheme of a projected canal to connect Leeds and the West Riding of Yorkshire with Liverpool, for which it is stated that Mr. Brindley, the Duke of Bridgwater's engineer, had been making surveys. The question is discussed as to the locality of the terminus of the canal. One of the company jocularly suggests the Ladies' Walk as a convenient site, but is instantly rebuked by the unanimous voice of the company as too absurd an idea to be entertained. After parting with my friends, I sit down on a bench to read the newspaper of the day; 'Williamson's Liverpool Advertiser, Friday, August 28th, 1767.' I read the addresses of the candidates for the representation of the borough. I see that at our Liverpool Drury Lane Theatre there is to be this evening a comic opera, 'The Maid of the Mill,' to conclude with a dance called the Fingalian. I run my eye over the advertisements, and find that 'flying machines' now run in three days from Manchester to London, performed (if God permits) by John Handforth and others, with much other interesting information. There is a story of two lovers, Eumenes and Fidele, so touching that at the *dénouement* I burst into a flood of tears. With this shock the vision is dispelled; I open my eyes and find myself seated on a log of timber in a grimy coal-yard.

The shadowy reminiscences of the past give way to the squalid realities of the present, but the association of ideas is such that we cannot separate them. Not long after the visionary interview at which we have had the honour to be present, the projected canal became an accomplished fact. It was opened with great rejoicings on St. Luke's-day, 1774. The Ladies' Walk lingered on for twenty years longer in a shabby-genteel sort of existence, until it was finally dismantled in 1796. Once,

CHAP. II.

Ladies' Walk.

and once only since that time, has the site of the Ladies' Walk witnessed a flickering return of something like its ancient glory. On August 12, 1821, when the opening of the Prince's Dock was celebrated in honour of the birthday of King George IV., the 'good old town' fairly ran riot in the exuberance of its display. As the site of the Ladies' Walk commanded a splendid view of the procession and ceremony, every 'coign and point of vantage' was occupied by a gay assemblage, the ladies decked with

Flowers of all hues, and without thorns the rose.

Flags and banners floated from the lofty terrace, and the old Ladies' Walk gleamed as benignly as a good old dame of eighty winters at the wedding of her granddaughter.

Strange are the fluctuations of human affairs, whether civic or national. It has been of late seriously propounded to fill up this portion of the canal and convert it into a railway station. No doubt it does give out occasionally as Trinculo would say, 'a most ancient and fishlike smell;' but filled up or not, no return to the verdant glades of the olden time will recur, until the visit of Lord Macaulay's celebrated New Zealander, who I fear is likely to be exterminated long before the time of his promised advent.

Maidens' Green.

Before the construction of the canal, a large meadow opposite the Ladies' Walk, extended eastward from Old-hall Street, flanked by another shady walk called the 'Maidens' Green.' If anyone is sufficiently curious to wish to identify the site of this lovers' resort, he will find it in a narrow dingy alley still called by the same name, extending from Ray Street to Highfield Street.

Canal.

The canal and its basin were for a long time quiet, solitary, and entirely unprotected. About fifty years ago, Mr. W—— B——, a respectable gentleman of the

neighbourhood, in returning from a pleasant evening party, had to cross the bridge at the end of Leeds Street, then very steep and narrow. The night being dark, gas not having been yet introduced, he missed the turn at the corner of the basin, and walked into the canal, where he was unfortunately drowned. The authorities were then for the first time moved to fix posts and chains for protection.

Canal.

Oldhall Street at present is no great width for the incessant stream of heavy traffic of all kinds which slowly courses along its pavement from morn till night; but the time is not so far in the distant past when two carts could with difficulty pass, and when foot passengers had to step into a doorway to avoid being ground against the wall. Notwithstanding this, Oldhall Street and its neighbourhood contained the abodes of the respectable mercantile class in the days when the merchant had his establishment complete on the spot where he resided. Here, for instance, is an advertisement of July 15, 1760:—

A.D. 1760.

'To be let in Oldhall Street, a large commodious house now tenanted by Mr. Matthew Strong, merchant, containing four rooms on a floor, with a compting house; and a warehouse wherein may be laid 70 hogsheads of sugar on a floor, and a large commodious yard with a coach or cart road to it.'

Union Street down to the early part of the nineteenth century was a street of considerable pretension, quiet and retired, the houses commodious and occupied by solid, well-to-do burgesses.

Union Street.

Although Queen Street was commenced in the reign of Queen Anne, it was very little built on in the middle of the eighteenth century. A large tract of ground north of Queen Street was occupied as brickground for many years by Mr. Joseph Brooks, grandfather of the late Archdeacon Brooks. This land remained open and un-

Queen Street.

CHAP. II.

built on until the second quarter of the nineteenth century. One of the adjoining streets was called Brooks Street, after its original owner. Barton Street takes its name from Mr. James Barton, who established a brewery on the spot about 1760.

Brooks Street.

Edmund Street was one of the first streets built in the neighbourhood, having been completed before 1725. There is a small chapel behind the houses on the south side of Edmund Street approached by a passage from the street. It was erected towards the close of last century by a Mr. Hobery, or Hoberow, who had seceded from the Wesleyan Methodists. It has been subsequently occupied by a succession of various religious denominations.

Prussia Street.

Prussia Street was so called from the alliance between England and the great Frederick of Prussia in the middle of the last century.

The land east of Oldhall Street and north of Edmund Street belonged for many ages to the Moores. When their estates were broken up about 1712, a considerable portion of the land in this locality was purchased by the Earles and laid out for building. To this circumstance

Earle Street.

Earle Street owes its name. Virginia Street is doubtless so called from the Virginia tobacco trade which has flourished in Liverpool from the seventeenth century.

St. Paul's Church.

St. Paul's Square was laid out soon after 1760. The church was commenced in 1765, and completed in 1769, from the designs of Thomas Lightoller. For some reason or another this building seems to have been always under a cloud. A church of large dimensions and imposing appearance, and in the midst of a dense population, it has, except for short intervals, few and far between, been attended by the merest handful of a congregation. The causes of this would be an interesting subject for enquiry.

The external appearance of this church is marred by the friable nature of the yellow sandstone of which it is built. It has been unfortunate likewise in its critics.

Whether misled by the name or not, it has been usual to suggest a resemblance to its magnificent namesake of the metropolis, and to condemn it as a paltry attempt to produce a model in miniature of its great prototype. Now, in point of fact there is about as much resemblance between St. Paul's of Liverpool and St. Paul's of London as Fluellen discovered between Macedon and Monmouth. There is a dome and cupola in each, and there begins and ends the likeness. Once getting rid of any foolish fancies of this kind, and examining the building on its own merits, we shall find much originality in the conception, and some noble effects in the execution. The interior, with its circle of columns rising the full height of the building, carrying what was originally a lofty dome, open internally and lighted by eight circular windows in the vault, was decidedly the finest which the town could boast.

St. Paul's Church.

St. Paul's Square was during the latter part of the eighteenth and the early part of the nineteenth century the residence of many of the local aristocracy. The locality was quiet and suburban, and the houses large and comfortable.

St. Paul's Square.

On the north side, some fifty years ago, lived George Syers—glorious old George—a Dicky Sam of the Dicky Sams; a Tory of the Tories, in the days when Toryism had a purpose and a meaning, when as yet the 'Adullamite' was not, and the 'Cave' was unknown. George was great in electioneering strategy. Canning and Gascoyne, the Blue and Scarlet, had no more staunch partisan —none who could feel the pulse or touch the palm of an old freeman more adroitly, or complete a 'tally' more dexterously from the 'Golden Lion' or 'Lillyman's Hotel'; and then, when the fight was over, when the 'Jacobins' were routed, when the 'chairing' of the successful candidates had been duly performed, to see George at the symposium of the Canning or Backbone Club, with his jolly red face beaming with fun, telling

George Syers.

CHAP. II.

George Syers.

his stories, and exchanging jokes with Doctor Morris or 'General' Ackers, setting the table in a roar, was something to cheer the heart of a Tory. Gentle reader, hadst thou been there, philosophical radical as thou mayst be, even wert thou Beales, M.A., himself, thou couldst not have resisted joining in the chorus—

> Long live the king, and happy may he be,
> And success to his forces by land and by sea,
> His enemies to triumph we never will permit,
> Britons aye have been victorious, and so will they yet.

Honest George got his reward for his political services. He was promoted to a surveyorship in the Customs, and continued in that useful occupation until his death about 1850. One of his sons obtained an Indian cadetship and rose to the rank of general.

Leigh Richmond.

In a commodious house at the corner of St. Paul's Square and Virginia Street was born, in the year 1770, the Rev. Leigh Richmond, Rector of Turvey, Bedfordshire, the distinguished author of 'The Dairyman's Daughter,' perhaps the most popular tract ever written, the touching effect of which is somewhat marred when we come to the knowledge of its being a fictitious narrative. Be this as it may, it has reached the heart of hundreds of thousands of readers, and tended to promote a quiet simple piety, not often met with in this age of fast life.

Mr. Richmond's father was a physician, Dr. Henry Richmond; his grandfather one of the rectors of Liverpool. His relative, Silvester Richmond, the witty author of so many electioneering squibs, has been mentioned frequently in the preceding chapters.

Rigby Street.

Rigby Street was laid out about 1770. It was at first called North Street, but eventually took its name from Mr. Gilbert Rigby, merchant, who resided at the corner of Oldhall Street.

Leeds Street.

Leeds Street was formed about 1790, so called from

the Leeds and Liverpool canal, which here has its terminus. Some of the earlier houses were on a large scale. The Blundell-Hollinshead family had here their town residence, and remained in the locality until about the year 1820. A large Methodist chapel was built in Leeds Street in the year 1799, with extensive school-rooms behind. About 1840 this building was taken down, and the school-rooms behind disposed of to the Roman Catholics.

Leeds Street.

Going northwards along Oldhall Street, the land slopes rapidly towards the beach, terminating originally in a steep scar of clay with a flat margin of sandy shore. From Chapel Street northward, a sea-wall was built in the early part of the eighteenth century, and called the 'New Key.' Edward Moore in his 'Rental' (1667) writes of this locality: 'Remember to build a wall all along the bank-side till you come to the town field, otherwise in time I am afraid the sea will wear away the whole bank. Remember, that if the town prospers you may either build houses or warehouses all along this wall.'

New Quay.

By the middle of the century this wall had been carried as far as the west end of the Ladies' Walk. A street was formed parallel therewith, and houses built on both sides. At a subsequent period further extensions were made into the river and ship-building carried on by Mr. John Naylor Wright in the early part of the present century. At the north end of this embankment baths were erected about 1765 by the same gentleman or his father. From this the street previously called the 'North Key,' took the name of Bath Street. In 1794, these baths were purchased by the corporation for the sum of 4,000*l.*, and about 1,000*l.* was expended in improvements. Although convenient and well adapted for their purpose, they were not very much frequented, owing to the great facilities offered for bathing along the shore. About 1817 they were removed to make room for the

Baths, A.D. 1765.

CHAP. II.

Prince's Dock. After their destruction no means were adopted to supply their place until 1826, when the baths on George's Pier were commenced, which were completed in 1829.

Fort.

Between 1777 and 1781 a fort and battery were erected on the shore a little to the northward of the baths just described. This is a conspicuous object in all the maps of Liverpool for the ensuing forty years. It consisted of a breast wall of masonry, enclosing a semi-circular area projecting into the river, having embrasures for cannon, with a brick wall on the land side. Within the area were small barracks and a powder magazine. As a piece of fortification it was almost contemptible, but it served as a place of public resort, and its little garrison contributed to the enlivenment of the town. It was taken down in 1817 and the site absorbed into the Prince's Dock.

Decline of neighbourhood.

The quiet and respectability of the northern part of the town received a rude shock from the opening of the canal. Up to this time the poetry and sentiment of the town seem to have attached themselves to the north end. The leafy avenues of the Ladies' Walk, the pleasant promenade of Maidens' Green, the shady recesses of Love Lane, by their very names call up associations of rural beauty which were fully borne out by the landscape as it then existed. The opening of the canal changed entirely the whole aspect of affairs. The zephyrs became redolent of coal-dust. Merchandise and traffic, with their sordid requirements, soon absorbed the pleasant nooks and corners. Fashion and comfort took their flight to more congenial regions, and the neighbourhood was left to the bustle of active industry. The character of a locality does not, however, change all at once. St. Paul's Square, Earle Street, and Union Street, long maintained a struggle before their dignity was finally shorn of its beams. Some now living can remember in their juvenile days a few old-fashioned equipages which

emerged from these regions, the driver seated postillion-like on the near horse with antique jockey-cap and flaxen wig, the inmates looking as if, though amongst, they belonged not to the coaly tribe around them. But alas! all earthly glories must have an end. The Ladies' Walk, after a sickly decline, was broken up for brick ground and converted into coal yards. Love Lane is still a shady avenue, but it is with the shadows of huge piles of warehouses and the viaduct of the railway.

Dutton Street.

A little to the north of the Ladies' Walk, about 1760, Mr. William Dutton built a house and established a boat-building yard. About 1780 a street was cut from Mill Lane (now Great Howard Street) down to the shore and called Dutton Street. Gibraltar Row and Gibraltar Street, commemorate the siege of Gibraltar in 1783.

Denison Street.

Denison Street dates from about 1790.

Borough gaol.

The line of Oldhall Street was continued beyond the canal basin by a narrow rural road called Mill Lane, which terminated in the fields at a short distance. In this line, far removed from the town, the borough gaol was erected about the year 1786. John Howard, the philanthropist frequently visited Liverpool, and had much to do with the construction of the new prison, which led to the street being subsequently called by his name.

The erection of this new gaol did not escape severe criticism. A small volume was published in 1793, containing a description of Liverpool, in which the writer, a Mr. Moss, thus moralises on the new gaol: 'This temple of the goddess Laverna is situated at the northern extremity of the town, where it rises in all the glare of ostentatious majesty. A stranger, on being informed it is the common jail, must be immediately prejudiced by a very indifferent opinion of the honesty or reputed wealth of a place which requires a building for the reception of villany and insolvency that covers more than twice the ground occupied by the prison of Newgate, and on fair calculation will hold half the

CHAP. II.

Borough gaol.

inhabitants of Liverpool. It is the remark of a French wit, that a prison always looks best on the outside. This idea seems to have influenced the corporation, for such is the external appearance, that a distant view indicates a magnificent castle. The pile is enormous; the materials of which it is composed would build a village. An impartial observer must be divided in opinion whether it is more deserving of ridicule or reprobation.'

The prison was not appropriated to its original purpose for more than twenty years after its erection, having been occupied during the war as a depôt for French prisoners.

French prisoners.

At the Peace of Amiens, in 1802, above 1,100 prisoners were liberated from the Liverpool Gaol and restored to their native land. With the usual readiness and adaptability of Frenchmen, many of the prisoners carried on a variety of manufactures in trinkets and toys. Occasionally they performed plays in an extemporised theatre, to which the public were admitted, and have taken 50*l.* in a single night for admissions.

Charles Domery.

One of the prisoners, named Charles Domery, a Pole by birth, presents one of the most extraordinary instances on record of voracity, caused probably by disease. The case is recorded by a physician in the town, Dr. Cochrane, from his own personal observation. Almost everything came alike to his insatiable appetite—dogs, rats, cats, or candles; raw meat was his special *bonne bouche*. It is said that he was daily supplied with the rations of ten men, yet was constantly 'asking for more.' The doctor, on one occasion, wishing to test his powers, invited a party to witness the exhibition, when Domery consumed in their presence fourteen pounds of raw meat and two pounds of candles, which moderate repast he washed down with five bottles of porter. There was nothing ferocious or brutal about the man's appearance or bearing. He stood six feet two inches high, well-proportioned, but rather meagre; pleasant in manner, and obliging and inoffensive in his disposition.

In 1811 the borough prisoners, criminals and debtors, were removed from the Old Tower, in Water Street, to the new establishment. The 'impartial observer' of 1793 would have been surprised to find, that after being occupied for forty years, and enlarged from time to time, it was at length found absolutely necessary to erect a much larger structure for the same purpose at Walton, to which the prisoners were transferred in 1855, and the old prison pulled down. The site was sold to the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway Company, and now forms part of their goods station.

1811.

A.D. 1855. Removal of gaol.

Looking at the vast extent of the docks and dock works northward, which requires a drive of nearly four miles from the Exchange to get a glimpse of the open shore, it would surprise many of the present generation to be told that Liverpool formerly enjoyed a high reputation as a sea-bathing place. Yet such was the fact for many years. During the first quarter of the present century, from the old fort northward a fine sandy beach offered excellent facilities for a marine plunge. During the summer season the beach was a very favourite resort. Long lines of bathing 'machines' stood in readiness to accommodate the visitors, while stalwart bathing-men and women—amphibious creatures whose days were spent up to their knees in water—the terror of the juveniles, were in attendance, like Tritons and mermaids waiting the behests of Neptune. The shore at high water, during the months of July and August, presented a very animated appearance, being crowded with visitors from the manufacturing districts, 'coom fur t'ha a dip i' th' saut weytur.' The bathing was conducted in a very primitive fashion. There was a sort of conventional separation between the sexes, but the male bathers entered the water and disported there 'in puris naturalibus,' the spectators promenading and looking on with the sentiment probably of 'Honi soit qui mal y pense.'

Sea-bathing.

The sandy shore was interrupted at a point near the

CHAP. II.

site of the Clarence Dock by a low, shelving promontory, covered at high water, called the Mile House rocks, on which many a gallant ship has gone to pieces in days gone by. The shore was lined in one part by a row of fishermen's cottages; in another stood an ancient hostelry of considerable antiquity, with mullioned windows and ornamental gables. This was occupied for some time by a Dutchman, named Vandries, who gave his name to the house, which is commemorated in the nomenclature of the adjoining street. There were several other taverns, to each of them a spacious bowling-green being attached, and in some cases a wooden cabin overlooking the sea, where the customers could sit and smoke and enjoy the prospect.

Mile-house Rocks.

Vandries.

Along the margin at intervals occurred four or five windmills, advantageously situated for catching the western breezes. The remains of one of these windmills are still in existence, at the bottom of Formby Street, converted into a tavern, called 'The Rotunda.' Most of these erections were situated so inconveniently near the advancing tide at high water as to indicate that the sea had been gradually making inroads on the land. This idea was further strengthened by the existence of a submarine forest, called 'Wycherley Wood,' consisting of a large number of stumps of trees, principally oak, standing *in situ*, and covered with the water at every tide.

Windmills.

Submarine forest.

About the end of the eighteenth century several streets were laid out near the margin of the river—Hill Street, Neptune Street, &c.—but very little building took place for some years, the only erections being a few lodging-houses for the bathing visitors. About 1827, after the completion of Prince's Dock and the prospective extension of the dock works northwards, speculative building commenced, and was continued with more or less activity as the dock system progressed northwards. Stewart Street was so called from the name of the builder. Oil Street took its name from the oil-crushing establishment

Building northward.

of Messrs. Earles and Carter. This was originally a slitting-mill, erected about the end of the last century, and converted into an oil-mill about 1810. Porter Street was named after Mr. T. C. Porter, mayor in 1827–8, who had a white-lead manufactory in Mill Lane, now a continuation of Great Howard Street. Love Lane has already been mentioned. It was a pretty rural road, leading northward into the fields, and so continued until about 1825, when its quiet was first encroached upon by the erection of dwellings. The turn into Great Howard Street at the south end was first built on and took the name of Chadwick Street from the proprietor of lime-kilns in the immediate neighbourhood. Between this and the canal formerly stood Pickup's windmill, with a pretty garden attached, overlooking the canal bank. About 1832 a church, dedicated to St. Matthias the Apostle, was erected at the corner of Chadwick Street and Love Lane, principally through the exertions of the Rev. Augustus Campbell, then joint rector of Liverpool. The construction of the Liverpool and Bury Railway, commenced in 1846, necessitated the removal of this structure. A new church was accordingly erected, under the same name, on the west side of Great Howard Street, between Vulcan and Porter Streets. It is a neat Gothic structure, designed by Mr. Arthur Holme, and built in red stone, with a tower and spire. Whilst this was proceeding the old church accidentally took fire and was completely destroyed on April 10, 1848. The site is now absorbed into the railway station.

Love Lane.

St. Matthias' Church.

After the completion of the Prince's Dock, in 1821, and the preparation for docks further northward, by carrying out embankments into the river, the old shore road took the name of Waterloo Road. Previous to this a new road, called Regent Road, was constructed by the corporation, commencing at the bottom of Regent Street, in continuation of Waterloo Road, and passing across the promontory formed by the Mile House rocks, coming out

Waterloo Road.

Regent Road.

CHAP. II.

upon the shore at the Mile-end Mill, still existing at the turn of the road opposite the Nelson Dock. When the Clarence Dock was opened in 1830, for the rapidly increasing steam trade, large depôts were erected by the City of Dublin Steam Packet Company, the St. George's Company, and others, and boiler and steam-engine works began to spring up in the neighbourhood. Dublin Street was named after the steam-packet company, and Williams Street after its energetic manager, Mr. Charles Wye Williams. Carlton Street was called after a leading member of the direction. Dixon Street was so named after Mr. Dixon, of the firm of Mather, Dixon & Co., who established a large foundry hard by. From that time the dock system has advanced northwards with steady progress, accompanied *pari passu* with the extension of building. Another and most important element has been

Railway.

the introduction of the railways at the north end. The first stone of the Liverpool and Bury (now the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway) was laid on August 20, 1846, and from that time forward there has been a constant aggregation of lines, stations, viaducts, and warehouses, which have swelled out to gigantic dimensions, and give promise of still further increase. I have mentioned elsewhere that at the close of the eighteenth century Mr. John Leigh, an attorney in Liverpool, and a member of the Town Council, made very extensive purchases of land round the town, and especially in the northern districts, to such a degree as greatly to cripple his resources. That he had a keen foresight beyond most of his contemporaries into the coming greatness of Liverpool there can be no doubt, but the actuality far exceeded his most sanguine anticipations. The railway demands formed an element altogether outside of his calculations, however shrewd. He did not live to realise the result of his speculations, and his son, Mr. John Shaw Leigh, had to struggle for many years ; but at length the tide came

Mr. Leigh's land.

Which taken at the flood led up to fortune.

The first purchase, for the Liverpool and Bury line, took land from Mr. Leigh to the amount of 250,000*l.*, and enhanced materially the value of the other portions which have since come into the market for commercial purposes, extensions of the railways, and general use, opening a mine of wealth to the fortunate proprietor.

Progress of building.

By the year 1851 the docks had been completed as far as the boundary of the old borough and beyond; and the locality between the docks and the Leeds and Liverpool Canal had been pretty nearly covered with building, with the exception of those portions purchased and reserved by the Dock Board for future use. The great features of the quarter are the docks, the railways and stations, the manufacturing establishments, and the warehouses. The docks I have treated of in a separate chapter. The railway accommodation has for many years been panting behind the wants of commerce and never able to overtake them. The Lancashire and Yorkshire line was the first to penetrate the district, which it cuts through at a high level as far as the Exchange station for passengers. The goods stations of this company are very extensive. On the east side of Great Howard Street the station occupies nine acres, including the site of the old Borough Gaol. Between Regent Road and Great Howard Street another station covers seventeen acres, besides a branch to a high level, with coal-shipping staiths, along the east end of the Wellington and Bramley-Moore Docks. East of the canal, at the Southport Junction, there are also extensive stations and works.

Railway stations.

London and North Western Railway.

The London and North Western Waterloo Station covers eight acres between Waterloo Road and Great Howard Street, communicating by the Victoria Tunnel with the main line at Edgehill. The Regent Road Station covers seven acres, besides nine acres of land for future extension. This is approached by a branch running round the north-eastern suburbs to the main line at Edgehill.

CHAP. II.

Warehouses.

Concurrently with dock and railway extension, warehouses for the reception of imported produce have arisen to a great extent in this neighbourhood. These are principally developed in Waterloo Road and the streets leading therefrom, and along both sides of Love Lane.

Manufactures.

Manufacturing industry also prevails to a considerable degree, in the form of gas works, engine and boiler works, corn and rice mills, oil-mills, saw-mills, &c.

Population.

The population, as might naturally be expected, is exclusively of the artisan class, squeezed in amongst the commercial buildings wherever space could be found. A considerable proportion are Irish. There is not a large amount of squalid poverty; generally speaking the inhabitants are in the receipt of good wages, being principally connected with the docks and the shipping interest; but most of the habitations were erected in the pre-sanitary period, and are huddled up in confined courts and alleys, prejudicial to the free circulation of air, and hostile to decency and refinement.

Churches.

The church accommodation is very limited, consisting of three churches only, St. Augustine's (Roman Catholic), Great Howard Street; St. Alban's (Roman Catholic), Athol Street; and St. Matthias's (Church of England), Great Howard Street. The only public institution is the Northern Hospital, in Great Howard Street.

General character.

As a whole the district under consideration, lying between the Canal and the docks from east to west, and extending from Tithebarn Street northwards to the boundary of the old borough, has a very marked and decided character. It is Liverpool intensified, in its commerce, its manufactures, its prosperity, and its neglect of every pursuit beyond the mere means of existence. It is true this is not the case with all Liverpool. There are elsewhere aspirations after the 'true and the beautiful,' but in this quarter all remains earthly, commercial, and prosaic. 'Sweetness and light' have scarcely penetrated the hard enveloping crust of surrounding associations.

Let us hope a time will come when the intellectual torpor will be thawed, and knowledge and culture penetrate the industrial masses who here contribute so largely to the progress and prosperity of the port.

Progress.

The completion of the Huskisson Dock in 1852 and the Canada Dock in 1859, drew forward the business and population northward. Beacon's Gutter, the ancient boundary, the rubicon of Liverpool, was soon overleaped, and building rapidly pushed on through the township of Kirkdale, and created a new town and borough in Bootle. A portion of this I have treated of in another chapter. The rapidity of this progress is almost unexampled. In 1825, with some trifling exceptions, all beyond the Prince's Dock was open shore westward, and green fields eastward. An enterprising Liverpool youth leaving home, as many have done, for the east, and returning after forty-five years' absence, would have found, in 1870, such a metamorphosis as is seldom met with, except in the United States. The rural glades in which he had disported, the quiet shore where he had got a view of the distant town and watched the sun set far away in the ocean, he would search for in vain. In their stead he would find forests of masts, mile upon mile of dock walls and quays, labyrinths of densely crowded streets resounding with the clink of the hammer and the busy hum of active industry, a population

> as bees
> In spring-time, when the sun with Taurus rides,
> Pour forth their populous youth about the hive,
> In clusters.

Let us hope that on the whole he would find the sum of human happiness increased, and some impulse given to the great ultimate result of the designs of Providence.

CHAPTER III.

CHAPEL STREET AND TITHEBARN STREET, NORTHWARD.

CHAP. III.

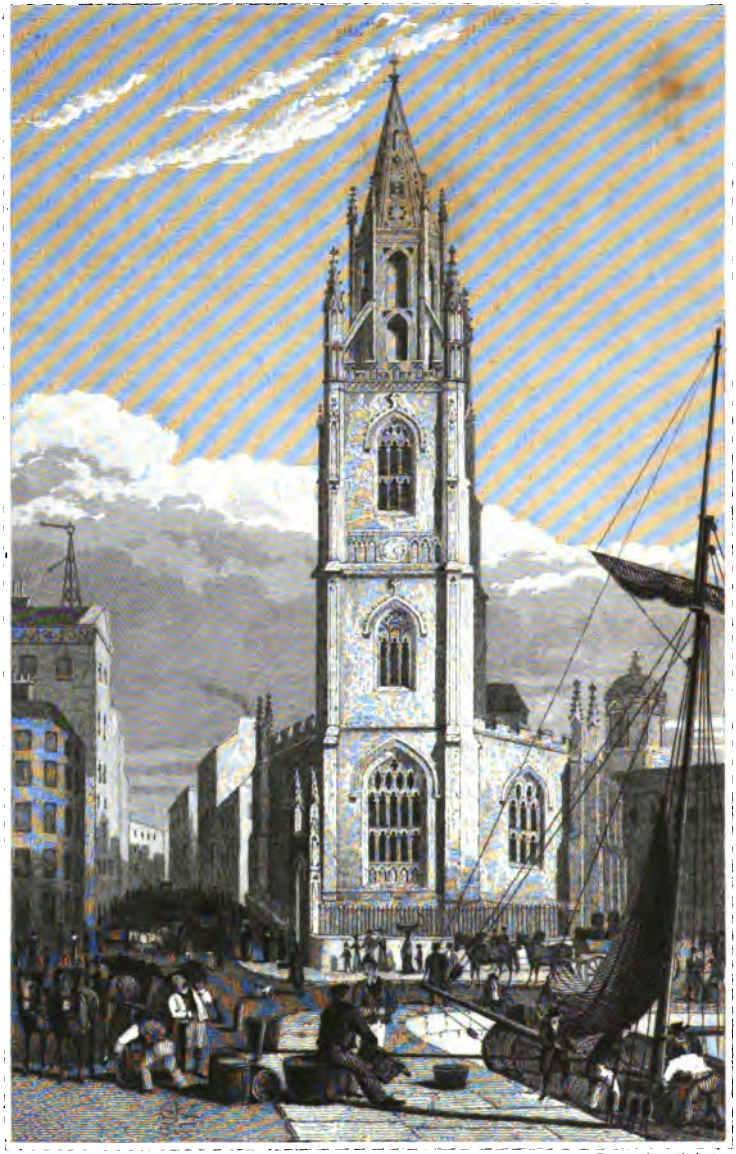
WE will commence our survey at the bottom of Water Street.

Prison Wient.

The narrow lane called Prison Wient,[1] running along the west side of Tower Buildings, was originally the terrace flanking the walls of the old tower, up to the edge of which flowed the tide. This remained partially open until the construction of George's Dock, between 1760 and 1770, when the west side of the street became occupied by warehouses. At the end of this alley we pass through a gate and enter the churchyard of 'Our Lady and St. Nicholas.' Let us pause a moment and look around. There is nothing very inviting in the aspect of the immediate surroundings. The trees, whose umbrageous foliage once spread a grateful shade around, have long since disappeared. The quiet Sabbath calm which should distinguish the house of prayer has departed never to return. Even the names and years of the past generations here gathered to their fathers, are already for the most part illegible, and will ere long be entirely obliterated by the passing tread of the busy multitude. The churchyard is now in one part a crowded

St. Nicholas' Church. Old churchyard.

[1] The term 'Wient,' applied to a narrow street or alley, is equivalent to the Scottish 'Wynd,' and is, I believe, in England peculiar to the county of Lancaster. It is probably derived from A.S. *Winden*, to wind or twist, from the tortuous crooked nature of such passages in general.



Drawn by T. A. Prior. Engraved by H. Jordan.

ST. NICHOLAS CHURCH, LIVERPOOL.

FROM AN ORIGINAL DRAWING IN THE POSSESSION OF JOHN GLADSTONE ESQ.

PUBLISHED BY THE PROPRIETORS.

FISHER, SON & Co. LONDON. 1828.

thoroughfare, and in another a lounge for the idle and unemployed, the roar of commerce rising up and surging round the enclosure as if grudging the small space left unappropriated to its all-devouring instincts. And yet, allowing all this and more which might be said, there are many thoughts of a deeply interesting character to a reflective mind, which are suggested by the church and its precincts. In any commercial town, but more especially in Liverpool, where the aspect of everything is modern, and where buildings, streets, and localities are undergoing perpetual change, it is extremely difficult to realise any connection with antiquity. The buildings which our fathers looked upon with such a familiar aspect, are things of the past. The houses where they dwelt have departed with their occupants; the streets where their daily life was spent, are pulled down, widened, or improved away. An impassable gulf seems to yawn between the ideas, thoughts, and feelings of even a few generations ago and the present time. We have no common measure, no mutual ground of identity. But the churchyard, 'God's acre,' as our ancestors, with a fine natural feeling of poetry, termed it, partially bridges over this chasm of separation, and preserves the continuity of the past with the present. The churchyard before us, shorn of its rural accessories, squalid, vulgarised, desecrated, is still a tangible inheritance of the past. For at least five hundred years, it has remained undisturbed, receiving the frail relics of humanity age after age, and now this duty being no longer required, it is still an enclosure protected from secular appropriation, contributing to the health and amenity of the town. Access to the river-side, once almost at the door of every inhabitant, has gradually become in the course of time so shut out and fenced off, that the churchyard of St. Nicholas is now the only open space from whence a glimpse of the salt water and of the country beyond can be seen. Even this is beginning to

CHAP. III.

be grudged, and mutterings are heard of vast schemes of so-called improvement, which are to result in leaving the churchyard no longer an existence, except in the pages of such histories as this. My readers, I am sure, will devoutly join in the aspiration, 'A Dieu ne plaise!'

St. Nicholas' Church.

It has been common in the histories of Liverpool to assign to this church a degree of antiquity, which it would be found very difficult to substantiate. One authority says, 'St. Nicholas's Church or Chapel, *it is conjectured*, was erected soon after the Conquest.'[1]

Chapel of Our Lady.

Another informs us that 'the first mention of the Chapel of Our Lady. we find about the date of 1050, but *it is believed* to have been erected long previous to that period.'[2] A third states that 'the original Chapel of Our Lady is *supposed* to have been built at, or a little before the Norman Conquest.'[3] In the Binns collection there is a view, which is copied by Herdman, purporting to represent the church at the date of 1160. For none of these conjectures, suppositions, and beliefs, is there the slightest tittle of authority.

Strong presumptive evidence of a negative character is found in the fact, that previous to the middle of the fourteenth century, no mention of or allusion to the chapel has been found in any document. In 20 Edward II. (1327), on the Earldom of Lancaster passing into the hands of Henry, the son of Edmund Crouchback, a very rigid account was taken of all the public property in Liverpool. The burgage tenements, the castle, the market, the ferry, the windmills and watermills, the fair, &c., are all minutely described, but no reference whatever is made to any church or chapel.

The earliest records in which any mention is made of the chapel, are two documents, which surely ought to have set at rest all controversy as to its foundation. One

[1] Gore's 'Annals.'
[2] Lacey's 'Pictorial Handbook,' p. 252.
[3] Herdman's 'Ancient Liverpool,' pp. 1-31.

is a commission in the year 1361, issued by the Bishop of Lichfield and Coventry, in whose diocese Liverpool was then contained, for 'the dedication of the Chapel of St. Nicholas and its cemetery;' and in the same year a licence was granted for the interment of the dead in the churchyard, in consequence of the great mortality arising from the plague, and the great distance of the parish cemetery at Walton, such licence only to continue until the following Christmas.

Dedication.

Licence to inter.

Now if the chapel had been an ancient foundation, why should it have been—not merely consecrated—but *dedicated* at that date, or even supposing the chapel to have been re-built and re-dedication necessary, why should the churchyard require re-dedication? Again, it is inconceivable that, if the chapel and the yard surrounding it had been in existence for hundreds of years, the inhabitants should not have used it as a place of interment. What else was it for? But supposing it to be newly constructed, it is quite intelligible that some difficulty might arise in dealing with the vested interests of the priest at Walton.

Liverpool appears at this date to have had an impulse communicated to it from some source. The names of Richard de Aynesargh, several times mayor between 1356 and 1380, and of William the son of Adam, or William Adamson, as we should now call him, mayor in 1378, appear in several deeds for the transfer of property about this time. They with others, also take leases of the fee farm crown rents for several terms between 1354 and 1374. The town seems to have been thriving and prosperous.

Richard de Aynsargh.

William Fitz-adam

We now come to the second document, though first in point of time. This is important for another reason, being the first mention made of a mayor of Liverpool. It is a licence from the king, dated May 19, 1356, authorising Richard de Aynesargh, Mayor of Liverpool, to acquire 10*l.* of land belonging to the Duke of Lan-

First mention of Mayor.

CHAP. III.

caster, and to give and assign the said land notwithstanding the statute of Mortmain, to perform divine service every day in the Chapel of the Blessed Virgin Mary and St. Nicholas at Liverpool. Assuming the chapel to be a new erection, this arrangement seems a very natural one for its endowment. Previous to this date we have no records whatever of the chapel, but subsequently the references became numerous. Thus, in 1378, Hugo Botyll or Bootle, vicar, granted one mark to the Chapel of St. Nicholas, and ten shillings to St. Mary's, Walton. In 17 Richard II. (1394), a return was made of the estates of John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, within the county, by which it appeared that his rents in the borough of Liverpool, were chargeable with twelve shillings a year to the chapel at Liverpool.

Grants to the Chapel.

William Adamson.

In the will of William Adamson, or Fitz-adam, who is mentioned above, dated 1380, the testator directs his body to be buried 'in the Chapel of Lyverpull before the white image of the Virgin, which is my perpetual place of burial. I leave to every priest in the Chapel of Lyverpull 4*d.*' In confirmation of the date here ascribed to the erection, it may be added that the earliest endowment recorded is that of the chantry of the high altar, founded by Henry, first Duke of Lancaster, who died in 1361.

Foundations.

Foundations are also recorded by John of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, the Crosses of Crosse Hall, and others.

The earliest views of the church exhibit the style of architecture prevalent at the end of the fourteenth century—the third pointed or perpendicular, having a square west end tower.

None of the existing views present any appearance of a clerestory, but from a sketch in Chadwick's map of 1725 and from other sources, there can be no doubt that the church had three aisles.

Dissolution.

At the period of the dissolution of the monasteries,

the Chapel of Our Lady and St. Nicholas was too poor to suffer much from spoliation; sacrilegious hands, however, were laid on the little there was dedicated to pious uses. The king's commissioners reported that there were four chantries existing, viz. those of the High Altar—of St. Nicholas—of St. John—and of St. Katherine. Each of these had a priest attached, to celebrate masses for the souls of the founders. The total revenues of these chantries amounted to 23*l.* 0*s.* 11*d.* per annum, derived from quit rents and property, amongst which were four burgage tenements, four cottages and twenty-eight acres of land. This income would be equivalent to about 345*l.* at the present time. The ornaments belonging to the chantries were valued at forty-five shillings, besides twenty-eight ounces of plate, in chalices, &c. Connected with the chantry of St. Katherine, founded by John Crosse, there was a provision made 'to distribute att the yearly obiit iijs. iiijd. to poore people, and alsoe to keepe a school of grammer free for all childrenn bearing the name of Crosse, and poore childrenn,' which, the commissioners remark, 'is not observed accordingly.'

Chantries.

Grammar school.

The chantry revenues were of course seized by the king, but the sum of 5*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* was re-granted for the purposes of the school. This sum was vested in the corporation, and continued to be paid down to the decease of the last master, Mr. Baines, who died about the year 1803. The grammar school was then discontinued, but subsequently, probably owing to some tradition of the existence of the endowment, the corporation established schools in the north and south districts of the town, which were conducted with remarkable success for many years, and eventually transferred to the School Board.

School-house.

The original school house, probably erected before the Reformation, stood in the churchyard. It is described by Blome in 1673, as 'a great piece of antiquity, formerly a chapel, now a free school; at the west end thereof,

CHAP. III.

next the river, stood the statue of St. Nicholas, long since defaced and gone.' St. Nicholas, it must be remembered, was the patron saint of mariners.

Chantry rents.

The chantry rents remained vested in the Crown for a long time after the dissolution. In 1564 Queen Elizabeth made a grant out of these rents of 4*l.* 17*s.* 5*d.* per annum to the minister of the chapel, and confirmed the former grant of 5*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* to the school-master.

Sale. A.D. 1608.

In 1608 these chantry rents were finally sold. A list of the purchases and the prices paid is given in Gregson's Fragments, certified by John Hockenhall, mayor in 1610. This list comprises many of the old Liverpool family names, the Secomes, Johnsons, Moores, Crosses, Tarletons, Lurtings, Bixteths, &c.

In 1572 the road or terrace from Water Street along the west side of the tower, now Prison Wient, was completed and faced with stone.

Present-ment. A.D. 1593.

In 1593 a presentment was made by the Grand Jury against the incumbent for cutting down 'the greate thorne in the church yarde without leave or license,' for which he was fined 6*d.*[1]

Bells.

The tower was first furnished with bells in 1628. The first peal of four is recorded to have been brought from Drogheda.

In 1684 an organ was first provided.

Orders of precedence.

In 1685, disputes having arisen respecting the appropriation of the seats, a mandate was procured from the bishop, setting forth the order of precedence as follows: 'That no person under the degree of an alderman shall sit in the alderman's seats, without license from Mr. Mayor and the chapelwardens. That none under the degree of an alderman's wife shall sit in the seat next unto the aldermen without such license; that none under the degree of a bailiff's peer shall sit in the bailive's seat,

[1] In 1612, 'The grand jury agree that the clerk of the church shall weare his surplus, and read the first chapter in the body of the churche, and lykewise shall cause his haire to be cut of a comly and seemely length, in sutch decent manner as best befitteth a man in his place.'

&c. That none but bailiffs' wives and widows shall sit in the seats next the aldermen's wives, &c. That none but housekeepers shall sit in the seat on the north side, betwixt the pulpit and the north door, who are to be seated according to their quality and age. That none but the wives and widows of housekeepers shall sit in the seat betwixt the bailiffs' wives and the font, nor in the seats on the south side under the gallery. That all apprentices and servants shall sit or stand in the alleys according to ancient custom.' Truly the chapelwardens must have had an uneasy time of it every Sunday to place the ladies according to 'their quality and age.'

Orders of precedence.

In 1688 the ceiling, which was boarded, was ordered to be painted and starred and laid in oil, at the cost of the corporation. In 1690 the churchyard was first enclosed with a wall on the east and south sides. In 1718 an additional aisle was built out on the north side with a gallery over it, at the joint expense of the corporation, Sir Thomas Johnson and others.

Decoration. A.D. 1688.

Churchyard enclosed.

In 1725 a new peal of six bells was procured from a foundry in Bristol, the old ones being most probably recast. The weight of the tenor was 15 cwt. 1 qr. 12 lbs.

New peal.

There is an entry in the parish books under date of September 11, 1745: 'It is ordered by this vestry that a spire shall be built on the tower of the parochial chapel of St. Nicholas, and that a plan thereof be in the mean time drawn by Mr. Thomas See, and proposals for building it be delivered in to the present churchwardens, Messrs. Hugh Ball and Samuel Seel, who are to lay them before the next meeting of the vestry.' On April 1, 1746, a contract was made with Messrs. Sephton and Smith to complete the spire according to the design, for 310*l.*, besides 22*l.* 1*s.* 6*d.* for chipping the old tower.

Spire.

In 1749 the churchyard was extended westward by the addition of the part on the lower level. This was consecrated in 1752. In 1759, owing to the depredations committed on the commerce of the port by the French

Churchyard extended.

CHAP. III.

rover 'M. Thurôt,' the town took the alarm and prepared for defence by planting a fourteen-gun battery on this ground.[1] It is stated, but I know not on what authority, that this ground, though forming part of the churchyard, was occasionally used for the noble sport of bull-baiting, a very favourite amusement in Liverpool in the middle of the eighteenth century.

Battery.

Rebuilding.

In 1774 the body of the church was taken down and rebuilt under the direction of Mr. Joseph Brooks, grandfather of Archdeacon Brooks. Gothic architecture, or what passed under that name, was at this period in the lowest stage of degradation, and the present structure is no exception to the general rule. The design is of that peculiar species of pseudo-Gothic invented or brought into note about the commencement of the century by Batty Langley, whose name has become a by-word for this class of abortions.

Fall of spire.

I have described in a former chapter[2] the lamentable occurrence of February 11, 1810, when the spire was precipitated into the church. The cause of the accident was patent. A spire had been injudiciously erected on the walls of the old tower, which had not been designed to support the weight, and in addition to this a peal of heavy bells had been suspended in the tower, the vibration from the ringing of which, by degrees, loosened the cohesion of the materials. As far back as 1789, danger had been apprehended, when a survey was made and repairs effected, costing 20*l.*

New tower.

The present tower and lantern were completed in 1815 from the designs of Mr. Thomas Harrison of Chester. Taken as a whole, though fault might be found with some of the details, it is a noble and dignified composition. The lantern is peculiarly light, elegant, and original, and will bear comparison with any similar structure. The height to the top of the lantern is 120 feet. The cost of the erection was 22,000*l.*

[1] Vide *Sup.* vol. i. p. 218.

[2] Vol. i. p. 332.

Bells.

The splendid peal of twelve bells now in the tower were cast in 1813 by William Dobson of Downham, Norfolk. They are in the key of c, the weight of the tenor being 41 cwt. The peal was opened on June 4, 1814, by fourteen members of the Birmingham and Sheffield societies of change ringers, with a set of 3,000 grandsire cinques.

The inscriptions on the bells are as follows:

1. No inscription.
2. Give no offence to the Church.
3. My voice I'll raise the Lord to praise.
4. W. Dobson, fecit, Downham, Norfolk, 1813.
5. Cast by W. Dobson, of Downham, Norfolk, A.D. 1813.
6. Our voices shall with joy resound.
7. Prosperity to this town. W. Dobson, fecit, 1813.
8. My song shall always be of the loving kindness of the Lord.
9. I will give thanks unto the Lord.
10. Blessed is he that tempereth mercy with justice.
    Samuel Staniforth, Esq., mayor.
    Thomas Hinde and Thomas Case, bailiffs.
11. George Nelson and John Carter, churchwardens.
    John Swainson and Charles Clements, junior sidesmen.
    Antony Black and John Aldersey, overseers.
12. May all that go to the silent tomb,
    Be crowned with glory in the world to come.

It must be admitted that neither poetry nor imagination have had much to do with the concoction of these inscriptions. Be this as it may, it is a glorious peal, full fit to compare with

> The bells of Shandon
> That sound so grand on
> The pleasant waters of the river Lee.

From the margin of the estuary on a calm evening, or on a pleasant Sunday morning with a gentle breeze from the east, their liquid sound diffuses itself over the waters, gradually softening and melting into a dying fall of the richest description.

Monuments.

There are a few good monuments in the church; one to William Clayton, who represented the town in six

CHAP. III.

Monuments.

parliaments, another to Bryan Blundell, the founder of the Blue Coat Hospital. Two of the more modern monuments are by John Gibson, of whom I shall have to speak hereafter.

A brass plate in the south aisle records the memory of Thomas Atherton, bailiff in 1668 (the mayoralty of Lord Strange). The following quaint and somewhat turgid epitaph records his virtues, which seem almost too transcendent for this work-a-day world:

Reader, stand off! he that too high appears,
This monument will melt him into tears;
For know within this hollow vault doth lie,
A splendid emblem of mortalitie.
One so exact and so divinely good,
His worth by mortals was not understood,
Wherefore the case is kept within this stone,
To show the jewel is to heaven flown.
Who, while he lived was known no friend to strife,
But ever was indulgent to his wife.
Good to his neighbours, and unto his end,
A constant lover of his cordial friend.
In heavenly quire he now is gone to sing,
Anthems of praise to his celestial king,
Where angels do rejoice to sing his worth,
While his great loss is mourned here on earth.

The crowning virtue of this worthy seems to consist in the fact that 'he ever was indulgent to his wife,' a qualification which will hand down his memory in grateful remembrance by the fair sex.

Font.

Previous to the catastrophe of 1810, an ancient octagonal font stood in the church, bearing the following inscription:

Nemo potest cœlum, sed Christo marmore fontis nostri scandere.

Round the base was inscribed:

Sit tibi introitu honor esse ovem Christo renovatam. PETER LURTING, mayor,[1] 1644.

[1] There is some mistake here. Peter Lurting was mayor in 1663, to which date it is much more probable that the inscription belonged.

From the extant descriptions, the font must have been of much more ancient date than the inscription.

Tombstones.

In the churchyard very few inscriptions on the tombs are now legible. The custom formerly existing in this part of Lancashire of laying the tombstones flat on the ground has operated by damp and wear to obliterate the records. Two or three alone are worthy of notice. One tombstone, dated 1727, commemorates the decease of Captain Robert Broadneux, who died at the age of 109 years. He was born in 1617, was a lieutenant in the reign of Charles I.; was captain of horse, and gentleman of the bed-chamber to Oliver Cromwell; lieutenant-colonel under William III. He retained his memory to the last, and died January 27, 1727.

Another to the memory of Richard Blore 1789, moralises as follows:

> This town's a corporation full of crooked streets,
> Death is the market-place where all men meets,
> If life was merchandise that men could buy,
> The rich would always live, the poor would die.

The following commemorates the unfortunate fate of the captain of a Welsh coaster, and is a fine specimen of the figure of speech called 'bathos':

> In the morning I rose aright,
> And pursued my business until night;
> Returning to my vessel's stock,
> Death plunged me into the Salthouse Dock.

Merchants' Coffee-house.

Before leaving the churchyard, I would call attention to the tavern at the south-west corner, with a doorway opening upon the churchyard, called the Merchants' Coffee-house. It was erected about the middle of the eighteenth century, at the time of the extension of the churchyard, and was for many years the great resort of the commercial community, the large room entering from the churchyard commanding a fine view of the river. The advertisements of the latter half of the eighteenth

CHAP. III.

century show that it was the principal place for auction sales of property and ships.

I have already mentioned that the churchyard was first enclosed in the year 1690. About that time it is probable that houses began to be built round the enclosure. The old timbered house at the north-east corner taken down about 1850, called Church Stile House, had existed before the enclosure, having been in the occupation of Captain Edward Tarleton, who was mayor in 1682. The first houses were of the quaint gabled character, as may be seen in old prints of the church. To these succeeded buildings of a superior class. The neighbourhood was quiet, agreeable, and open, and was for many years rather a favourite place of residence. Mr. Wm. Pole, mayor in 1778, and Mr. Charles Goore, mayor in 1754, resided here.

Church Stile House.

Buildings.

At a much later period, indeed almost down to the destruction of the houses, there resided on the south side of the churchyard a well-known and most estimable character, Mr. James Bunnell, accountant, a man of varied acquirements and an excellent companion. His neat quaint residence, where he occasionally gave *recherché* little dinners, was much resorted to by some of the old-fashioned *habitués* of the Exchange. His portrait carved in stone may be seen on one of the key stones of Tower Buildings, just over the spot where his house stood.

James Bunnell.

Mr. Pole's residence at the south-east angle, was converted into an inn, long known as 'Horne's Mersey Hotel,' celebrated for its turtle, and much frequented by passengers from America, in the days before the Atlantic had been bridged by steam.

Mersey Hotel.

These are all things of the past. The hotel and houses were swept away about 1845, and their place supplied by piles of offices.

We will now quit the precincts of the old church. Departing by the north side, an entrance gateway will be

seen surmounted by a Gothic arch. This is a standing memorial of the doings of Mr. Churchwarden Dennison in 1817, as recorded in the previous pages.[1] The arch long went by the name of 'Dennison's Gateway.' Previous to the erection of this arch there existed a long narrow flight of steps from the churchyard, adjoining which on the east stood an ancient tavern called 'Hindes,' between the tower and the street. This was removed in 1815.

Gothic arch.

Near the foot of Chapel Street on the strand of the river, stood the 'Mardyke' fort, which is frequently alluded to in documents of the seventeenth century. It formed an outwork at the time of the civil war, and is shown in the view taken in 1650, given in Herdman and elsewhere.

Mardyke fort.

The earliest mention of Chapel Street is in a deed bearing date 43 Edward III. (1370), by which John de Formby mortgages one-half of a burgage tenement in 'le Chapel Strete' to John Amoryson of Wigan, for seventeen pounds of silver; Richard de Aynesargh, mayor in 1377, and William Adamson, mayor in 1378, with others are witnesses.

Chapel Street.

The street became built upon at an early period. In the Moore Rental we have nine tenements described, of which Moore was the freeholder. Several houses of very antique character remained standing to a recent period. Herdman gives a view taken in 1797, which presents a curious medley of mediæval remains and modern mansions, with warehouses interspersed. It was rather a favourite street for the mercantile class, in the days when the merchant conducted his business on the premises where he resided. Mr. William Hesketh, mayor in 1783; Mr. Lawrence Spencer, mayor in 1759, and Dr. Thomas Houlston, a physician of some eminence in the last century, resided in this street.

Moore Rental.

Inhabitants.

The only outlet from Chapel Street on the north side

[1] Vol. i. p. 391.

CHAP. III.

is Lancelot's Hey. This derives its name from one Thomas Lancelot, a lessee of Moore's at the time the rent roll was drawn up, and who is described as 'a drunken idle fellow; to this house he hath a fine large croft on the back side.' Through this croft the street was afterwards carried which commemorates his name.

Lancelot's Hey.

Fisheries.

There also belonged to this house fish guards or stakes, and a free fishing, which Moore says his ancestors had enjoyed above four hundred years, and which maintained the family with fish three days a week. The name 'Hey,' applied to this and several other Liverpool streets is peculiar, and simply implies the field or enclosure through which the street was carried. Some picturesque old cottages, part of the original structures in the street, were cleared away about 1832. Two or three rather imposing mansions formerly stood in Lancelot's Hey; one of them much admired for the beauty of its brick-work was the residence of Mr. John Williamson, mayor in 1761, who afterwards erected Roby Hall. One of his daughters was married to General Gascoyne, so long member for Liverpool, and another to Mr. Jno. Dent, M.P. for Lancaster during several parliaments. The house was afterwards occupied by the Rev. H. Roughsedge, one of the rectors.

Mansions.

Cattle market.

The cattle market was held in Chapel Street as early as 1571. A relic of this continued to exist down to modern times in the pig market, which was held on the site of the present Rumford Place, until removed to Great Howard Street about 1840, and subsequently discontinued.

Courts and alleys.

The south side of Chapel Street was honeycombed with a labyrinth of courts and alleys, communicating by narrow tortuous passages with High Street and Water Street. Amongst these were Johnson's Alley, Pemberton's Alley and Fewter's Wynt. A characteristic view of the latter is given in Herdman's second volume.

A large portion of these were cleared away for the

erection of the Exchange Buildings in 1803. Another considerable part was removed about 1824 to make room for the Sessions House, which formerly stood fronting Fenwick and Chapel Streets. This was a large building of hewn stone, containing two court rooms with the necessary concomitants. Though not a very sightly architectural design, it was commodious and central for its purposes. After the assizes were removed to Liverpool in 1835, the courts were held in this building. Complaints soon began to be made on all hands of the inadequacy and inconvenience of the accommodation afforded, which ultimately led to the erection of the Law Courts at St. George's Hall. Whether any improvement in the arrangements has thereby resulted, is a question on which there is considerable difference of opinion. After remaining for about forty years, the Sessions House was sold to the New Exchange Company and taken down in 1865; its site being occupied by the west wing of the new building.

Sessions House.

Chapel Street has undergone the process of improvement at several different periods.

About 1775 the parasitical buildings adjoining the church were removed. Rumford Street was opened about the time of the erection of the Exchange Buildings. Under an act of parliament obtained in the year 1820, Chapel Street was widened and the alignment straightened. The progress of commerce has led to the conversion of the property first into warehouses, and subsequently into offices. Probably no locality in the town, or in any other town, has experienced so rapid and extraordinary a rise in value as the property in Chapel Street; sites which within no very lengthened period would have been dear at 5*l.* per square yard, having readily found purchasers at 50*l.*

Improvements.

Proceeding in a direct line eastward, passing the site of the old 'White Cross,' we enter Tithebarn Street, one of the most ancient thoroughfares of Liverpool. It was

Tithebarn Street.

CHAP. III.

originally the northern entrance to the town, since superseded by the opening of Byrom Street and Scotland Road. It was anciently called Moore Street, from the family of that name, the principal proprietors of land in the neighbourhood. The change of name came about in this wise. The living and tithes of the parish of Walton were purchased in the reign of Edward IV. from the Abbey of Shrewsbury, by the Molyneuxs of Sefton. In 15 Henry VIII. (1524), Sir William Molyneux, wishing to build a tithe barn for the produce received in Liverpool and Kirkdale, covenanted with the corporation for the purchase of a piece of land lying near the More Green; on which 'he, the aforesaid Sir William Molyneux intends to build a certain barn (*officium*), to be held by the said Sir William Molyneux, his heirs and assigns, in fee farm for ever, paying yearly to the aforesaid mayor and community of the aforesaid town, and to their successors, at the Feast of St. Michael, sixpence sterling, towards the reparation of the Chapel of St. Nicholas in Liverpool.' This tithe barn being the principal edifice in the street leading thereto, naturally gave its name to the approach which has so continued to the present day.

Change of name.

Tythe Barn.

Nine years after this date, we catch a glimpse of the street, which had not yet changed its name, in the return made of the king's rents in the year 1533, where we find the following entry:

King's Rents.

'Item, James Stanley, Esq., for halfe a burgage in Morre Streete of Wm. Morres vj*d.*'

In the Moore Rental (1667), we have very full particulars of the street at that date. One John Hacking, is described as 'a very honest man,' and is stated to have 'belonging to him in this street, one house and a barn with a back side, a pretty croft, all which is worth about five pounds per annum. When this house, barn, and back side falls out of lease, then doth likewise fall out of

John Hacking.

lease a house called Hacking's House in the Dale Street, through the lower end of which I charge you with God's permission, make a street, which will run directly north through the croft belonging to this house and barn, and so will be a most convenient passage for a street from the Dale Street into the Tithebarn Street.' This street was accordingly made in due time and called by its present name of 'Hackins or Hackings Hey.'

Hacking's Hey.

Another entry in this street gives an illustration of the manners of the period. 'Henry Mason; a good honest poor man, but his wife is a most notorious w—— and wicked woman. She hath cursed me and mine without any cause, and much abused me, till I was glad to send her to the House of Correction; since which she hath been much better. She hath been once at Bridewell, twice carted, and *once ducked*.'[1]

Henry Mason.

Tithebarn Street in its primitive condition was tortuous, ill-built, and narrow; in some parts not more than fifteen feet in width. Some of the houses were rather picturesque in their appearance, as may be seen from a specimen given in Herdman's 'Ancient Liverpool' (vol. i. p. 61). The street was widened under the Improvement Act of 1820, but no attempt was made to straighten the alignment, which has had subsequently to be improved at considerable expense.

Improvements. A.D. 1820.

In proceeding eastward from Oldhall Street, the first opening on the left is a narrow avenue, now lined on both sides with lofty handsome offices recently erected. This avenue, called Silkhouse Lane, was formerly an antique-looking close, surrounded by quaint old-fashioned buildings, one portion of which, afterwards converted into cottages, was the original 'Silk House.' This silk

Silk House.

[1] The ducking or cuck-stoole, was a remnant of the old water ordeal, common to all the Teutonic races. It was employed originally for the trial of many offences, but drifted into an instrument for the punishment of cuck-queans or scolds. Like the stocks, it once occupied a conspicuous position in every parish. The last record of it in Liverpool is an order for its repair in 1605. See vol. i. p. 245.

CHAP. III.

manufactory, to which a high antiquity has been ascribed; is not shown in Eyes's map of 1725, nor in Chadwick's of the same date. It first appears in Eyes's of 1765. In 1766 it appears in the first directory, as carried on by Messrs. Thomas Hopkins & Co., Silk Throwsters. It is continued in all the maps down to Horwoods of 1803, where the site is marked as cottages. I have not been able to trace its origin or history.

Bixteth Street.

Bixteth Street, formerly a narrow street of old-fashioned cottages, now occupied by stately offices, and forming one boundary of the railway station, was commenced before 1720, and named after Mr. Thomas Bicksteth, or Bickersteth, mayor in 1701.

Railway station.

A large area, formerly occupied by a dense population extending from Tithebarn Street northward to the canal, and from St. Paul's Square to Key Street, was obliterated by the station and line of the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway, erected in 1850.

St. Matthew's Church.

On the west side of Key Street, a few yards from Tithebarn Street, formerly stood a structure, more venerable-looking than beautiful, originally a Dissenting chapel, the history of which possesses some degree of interest. It was erected in 1706 by the Nonconformists representing the old English Presbyterians. The first minister was Mr. Christopher Basnett, rather a celebrated preacher in his day. A volume of sermons from his pen is one of the earliest books printed in Liverpool. One of the subsequent ministers was the Rev. John Yates, for many years widely known and respected in the locality, the father of Mr. Joseph Brooks Yates of Dingle Bank, Mr. James Yates, F.R.S., and others. In 1791, a new chapel having been built in Paradise Street, Key Street Chapel was sold to the Establishment and consecrated under the title of St. Matthew's Church. The purchase of this church by the Railway Company for the purposes of their station gave rise to a protracted litigation, the decision of which established an important

Litigation.

principle, and forms one of the leading cases in enquiries of the same kind.[1]

Litigation.

The Rev. Dr. Hilcoat had purchased the last presentation, and was himself the incumbent. In addition to the erection of a new church in place of the old one, he made a claim to be paid for the churchyard at the price of commercial land. The matter was left to the decision of the Bishop of Chester and the Archbishop of York, but before the matter was settled, the former had been translated to the see of Canterbury. The decision of the church dignitaries not being satisfactory to the incumbent, he moved to set aside the award, in which he succeeded, and the case went for trial to the Court of Queen's Bench, when a decision was finally given in favour of the claimant, the defendants, nominally the archbishops, but really the Railway Company, having to pay a considerable sum for the land of the churchyard, in addition to the provision of a new church.

Roman Catholic church.

At the extremity of Bixteth Street, immediately adjoining the railway, stands St. Mary's Roman Catholic Church, the oldest site connected with the Catholics in Liverpool.

Before the middle of the eighteenth century the Catholics worshipped in a humble building, part of a warehouse up a gateway entering from Edmund Street. In 1746, during a riot in the town, this chapel was sacked and destroyed. It was subsequently re-erected on a larger scale, but from motives of prudence and for defence in case of need, it was only approachable by three covered gateways, and was entirely concealed by the surrounding houses. Originally it was established by the Jesuits. Between 1780 and 1790, the officiating priests were Messrs. Raymond Harris and John Price.

Raymond Harris.

The former of these gentlemen, a Spanish Jesuit, acquired considerable notoriety by the publication of a

[1] Hilcoat *v.* the Archbishops of York and Canterbury, the principle of which has subsequently been set aside by a more recent decision.

CHAP. III.

Raymond Harris.

pamphlet in March 1788, entitled 'Scriptural Researches on the licitness of Slave Trade, showing its conformity with the principles of natural and revealed religion, delineated in the sacred writings of the Word of God; by the Rev. Raymond Harris.' To this pamphlet and its associations I have referred in the historical portion.[1] A difference having arisen between the two chaplains, Mr. Price withdrew to a small church erected for him in Sir Thomas's Buildings. After the decease of Mr. Harris the church in Lumber Street passed to the Order of Benedictines, who have since possessed it. The Rev. Thomas Fisher was for many years the chaplain, and was distinguished for his benevolence and unwearied activity in his ministrations amongst the poor.

Rebuilding.

The edifice was rebuilt by the late Augustus Welby Pugin, and is a very fair specimen both of his excellencies and defects. It is severe and pure in style, but hard and angular in its outlines.

Ormond Street, &c.

Ormond Street, Bixteth Street, and George Street, the original features of which are now obliterated, formed a kind of Little Britain—a little world in itself—occupied by pilots, captains of traders, and other such amphibious races. The houses were small and the streets narrow, but an air of comfort and cleanliness, of drowsy quiet and careless independence pervaded the whole district, which it was pleasant to look upon. A small public-house, called the Ship, situated at the corner of Ormond and Bixteth Streets, formed the centre of attraction, with

Ship Tavern.

> Its white-washed walls, its nicely sanded floor,
> The varnished clock that clicked behind the door.

But, alas!

> Low lies that house where nut-brown draughts inspired,
> Where grey-beard mirth and smiling toil retired.

In George Street was situated the celebrated chop-

[1] Vol. i. p. 255.

house, the 'Pig and Whistle,' for many years kept by Abraham Ward, and subsequently by his sons to a date quite recent. For a juicy beefsteak grilled to a turn, and a glass of good old port to accompany, no house could be compared with it, and it was, therefore, much frequented by substantial men on 'Change and 'nobby' cotton lords from Manchester. Abraham ruled his gastronomic dominions with a rod of iron, and occasionally was not over-civil to his customers. It is related that on one occasion a gentleman of high position, from Manchester, ventured to complain of something set before him, and was told very unceremoniously that he might go elsewhere and mend himself if he chose. He went away in dudgeon, resolved never again to darken the doors. Somehow or other, go where he would, he found nothing like the Pig and Whistle steaks; and at length, bottling up his pique, he sheepishly presented himself at his old hostelry. Abraham was standing in the entrance; and putting on an air of benevolent patronage, 'Come in, Mr. ——,' he cries, 'come in. I'll not think any more of what's past.'

'Pig and Whistle.' Abraham Ward.

Emerging again into Tithebarn Street, we continue our course eastward. We may notice in passing that Plumbe Street, the continuation northwards of Key Street, and Tempest Hey, a street on the south side of Tithebarn Street, commemorate the family of Plumbe-Tempest. The Plumbes, of Plumbes Hall, Wavertree Road, and Aughton, were long possessed of considerable property about Liverpool. About the beginning of the last century, when the estates of the Moore family were sold, the Plumbes were extensive purchasers. At the beginning of this century they succeeded by marriage to the estates of Sir George Tempest, of Tong Hall, Yorkshire, and took the name of Plumbe Tempest.

Plumbe Street.

The street called Moor Fields was part of the patrimony of the Moores, and is mentioned in the 'Rental' as Moor Croft. It was originally a narrow, miserable alley,

Moor Fields.

CHAP. III.

impassable for wheel carriages at the lower end, and was opened out to its present spacious width under the Improvement Act of 1820.

The district north of Tithebarn Street, extending from Key Street to Vauxhall Road, was laid out for building in the latter half of the eighteenth century. Pownall Square was named after Mr. William Pownall, mayor in 1767, who died during his mayoralty. Early in the present century it was occupied as a market, and so continued for many years; but about 1849, for some unaccountable reason, the town council thought fit to suppress it. The whole neighbourhood (metaphorically speaking) flew to arms. Indignation meetings were held; memorials and remonstrances were poured in; and, forced by pressure from without, the local magnates had to retrace their steps and restore the suspended privilege.

Pownall Square.

Pownall Square is bounded on the west by Highfield Street, and on the east by Smithfield Street. Between these two streets was, and is, the site of an extensive brewery, established by Mr. James Hargreaves about 1780. Having acquired an ample fortune, he wished to build himself a suitable dwelling, and could find no place so appropriate as the spot on which he had earned the means. Here accordingly, in a crowded neighbourhood, with cottages clustering about, the noise of the engine clattering in his rear, and the smell of the hops and grains pervading the circumambient atmosphere, he erected a noble mansion, and lived in style, with horses, carriages, &c., as became his condition. It scarcely need be said that this state of things died with himself. The glory is departed: the house is divided into shops and dwellings, and the story is forgotten. His daughter became the wife of the Rev. Dr. Raffles, the well-known minister of Great George Street Congregational Church.

Hargreaves' Brewery.

From Pownall Square, turning eastward, we enter Cockspur Street, a name sufficiently suggestive of its connexion with a once fashionable means of diversion

Cockspur Street.

now—publicly, at least—prohibited. A cockpit on a somewhat large scale was erected here between 1785 and 1790. How long the building continued to be so occupied there is no record, but at the commencement of the present century it had been converted into a place of religious worship. During its short existence it probably ministered to the wants of as many denominations as any building on record, having been successively occupied by congregations of Scotch Presbyterians, Independents, Episcopalians, New Connexion Methodists, Swedenborgians, Free Church of England, Baptists, Primitive Methodists, and the Christian Society. About 1839 the building was taken down and shops erected on the site.

Cockpit.

Chapel.

The remaining portion of the district to Vauxhall Road was not built on to any extent up to the first quarter of the present century. Early in the century several large breweries (those of Mr. Hargreaves, Mr. H. Orme, and Messrs. Hornby & Co.) were here established. Only one now remains. The whole locality has become a dense mass of cottages and courts—not so remarkable as some others to be hereafter mentioned for absolute destitution, but so crowded as to be seriously injurious to health, and to render sanitary improvement extremely difficult.

Breweries.

Retracing our steps to Tithebarn Street, I may notice that the streets between Moorfields and Cheapside—Bachelor Street, Orange Street (originally Glasshouse Wient, from a glass-work there erected), Vernon Street, and Cunliffe Street—were opened and built on between 1730 and 1760. Cheapside, originally Dig or Duck Lane, is one of the oldest streets in the borough, having been the only cross avenue anciently connecting the roads leading from the town northward and eastward. It is mentioned in the 'Moore Rental' in reference to a house occupied by Richard Rogerson, 'an honest man.' The west side had been densely built up before the middle of the last century. In 1769 the east side is represented as partly gardens and partly occupied by

Bachelor Street, &c.

Cheapside.

CHAP. III.

tanners' and skinners' yards, one of which continued until a few years since, when it was absorbed in the erection of the police establishment. At a subsequent period the family of the Harveys settled here. Samuel Harvey established a soap manufactory, and William and Enoch a brewery on an extensive scale. The Harveys, of whom there were five brothers, were long distinguished as taking an active part on the Liberal side in local politics and in Parliamentary elections. In Roscoe's election of 1806 the five brothers gave each a plumper for the Liberal candidate. In the election of 1820, when Dr. Crompton and Mr. Leyland were brought forward in opposition to Canning and Gascoyne, one of the brothers proposed Mr. Leyland, and another seconded the nomination of Dr. Crompton. In one of the squibs of the day this is thus alluded to. (It must be premised that Dr. Crompton was partner in a brewery):—

Harvey family.

> And when the doctor's sour ale's done,
> Ah! cunning Doctor!
> He will laugh at his foes who have made his tap run,
> And the *Harveys* will join in the excellent fun,
> With their brewing, mixing
> Nutgall and treacle—
> Ah! cunning Doctor!

Both soapery and brewery have been swept away, and the site occupied by warehouses.

Near the corner of Cheapside, on the south side of Tithebarn Street, stood the ancient Tithebarn, erected in the reign of Henry VIII. It had passed from the possession of the Molyneux family, and was converted into shops, the main structure and the old oak roof still remaining. The land behind was for a long period a public bowling-green. In the early part of the present century the Mersey Iron Foundry was established on the site. The principal partner in this concern was Mr. John Cragg, an enterprising man, who had a *penchant* for church-building; and, on the principle of the currier

Tithebarn.

Mersey Iron Foundry.

John Cragg.

in the fable, who believed under all circumstances that there was 'nothing like leather,' Mr. Cragg introduced cast-iron very largely into the construction of his churches. Thomas Rickman, who afterwards became celebrated as a pioneer in the revival of Gothic architecture, resided at that time (about 1812) in Liverpool, and was diligently pursuing his researches. Mr. Cragg obtained his assistance in designing Everton Church; St. Philip's, Hardman Street; and St. Michael's, Toxteth Park, in all of which cast-iron enters very largely into the construction. It would be unfair to the architect to criticize too severely the results of conditions so restricted. It may suffice to observe that the example so set has not been followed generally. Mr. Cragg, after retiring from business, resided for many years at St. Michael's Hamlet, and died on July 17, 1854, aged 87 years.

Thomas Rickman.

Under the Improvement Act of 1820 the Old Tithebarn was included in the schedule, but, by a singular oversight, a portion of it, which had been formed into an entrance to the foundry, was omitted. The consequence was, as the owner and authorities could not come to terms, that this portion—a slice, as it were, cut from the middle of the old barn—remained for years projecting forward into the street.

A little further east, at the junction of Great Crosshall Street with Hatton Garden, there long existed a large pool, called 'The Flashes.' It is shown in the earliest maps as the 'Watering Poole,' and continued down to about the year 1790, when it was filled up. Directly opposite this pool, at the cross-roads, stood St. Patrick's Cross, an ancient structure, the street immediately adjoining being called Patrick's Hill. There exists no information whatever as to the time of erection of this or any of the other crosses; but imagination, as is usual in such cases, supplies the deficiency. It has been gravely propounded that St. Patrick sailed from Liverpool in A.D. 444, on his way to evangelize the Irish,

The Flashes.

St. Patrick's Cross.

CHAP. III.

and that the cross was erected to commemorate the event!

Se non é vero, é ben trovato.

Those who are inclined to believe it have at least the advantage of challenging the incredulous to prove it was not so. The cross remained down to about the year 1775, about which period persons not very long deceased remembered to have seen its remains.

Suicide of Cosgrove.

In the year 1815 a tragical event occurred in this locality. A man named Thomas Cosgrove, residing in Cheapside, probably in a state of insanity, murdered his wife and committed suicide by taking poison. The coroner's verdict was 'Felo de se' as to the suicide; and, in accordance with the barbarous custom of the time, he was buried at midnight at the intersection of the roads between Tithebarn Street and Vauxhall Road (five lane-ends, I believe, the old law required), with a stake driven through his body.

Whilst in the neighbourhood we may make a slight exploration of Vauxhall Road, a neighbourhood somewhat unsavoury, but which has grown up of late years into a very important manufacturing district.

Pinfold Lane.

In its original rural state it was called Pinfold Lane, from a pinfold which stood from time immemorial a few yards from Tithebarn Street, on the site of the present Police Station. Except a few houses near Tithebarn Street, extending to Cockspur Street, scarcely any buildings were erected up to the close of the last century.

Change of name. A.D. 1796.

Pinfold Lane first took the name of Vauxhall Road about 1796. In that year it is called the former in the map, and the latter in the Directory. The name of Vauxhall appears to have been taken from a house pleasantly situated on the banks of the Canal, past which the road led. Between 1796 and 1803 several streets leading east and west from Vauxhall Road were laid out. Freemasons' Row was filled with pleasant gar-

Extension of streets.

dens and suburban residences. Banastre Street (so called from General Sir Banastre Tarleton) was partly built on. A large cotton factory, called the Union Mill, was erected at the latter end of last century, on the east side of Vauxhall Road, by Messrs. Kirkman & Co. The popular name by which this building was known was 'The Welsh Factory,' for what reason I have not been able to ascertain. Various attempts have been made at different times to naturalize the cotton manufacture in Liverpool, but uniformly without success. The reason for these failures is a subject deserving inquiry. There ought to be no incompatibility between the pursuits of commerce and manufacture, for Glasgow has succeeded equally in each department. Whatever may have been the cause, the Union, or Welsh Factory, after being carried on for a few years, was abandoned, and remained closed for some time. Subsequently it was converted into the foundry and engine manufactory of Messrs. G. Forrester & Co. The premises have since been greatly enlarged, and the original building taken down. About the period to which I am alluding, the north end of the town began to be dotted here and there with the manufactories which by their subsequent increase have contributed so largely both to its prosperity and squalidity. Messrs. Pickop & Miles's brewery (afterwards Ackers's) was built about 1800. A white-lead manufactory was in existence near the north shore in 1785. Another (Mr. Porter's) was erected near the canal about 1800. A slitting-mill existed near the Borough Gaol (then the French prison) about the same time. Mr. Eccles's morocco leather manufactory was built in Vauxhall Road about 1801. In 1797 the Bootle Water Company was established. The reservoir and pumping station (now removed) were built near the west side of Vauxhall Road.

Cotton factory.

Forrester's foundry.

Manufactories.

The field lying between this reservoir and Vauxhall Road acquired the name of the 'Pumpfield,' which, though covered with manufactories, it still retains; it is supposed

Pumpfields.

CHAP. III.

by some from being used as the place for boring and preparing the original wooden water pipes, the 'pump trees.' According to other accounts there was a spring well and a pump, from which the name was derived.

Clement Street, Maguire Street, Summer Seat and Gildart's Gardens, were, as some of the names imply, agreeable country retreats, far away from the smoke and noise of the bustling town, with green fields on every side. But this state of things could not last. The position of the neighbourhood, close to the canal, within a short distance of the docks, steadily advancing northwards, pointed it out as eminently adapted for manufacturing purposes. A branch of the canal was extended to Vauxhall Road about 1812. Coal yards and a manure wharf followed. Gas works, mills, distilleries, soaperies, glass bottle works, &c., soon found their location. The greatest change of all, however, was caused by the chemical works. Messrs. Thompson & Hill's and Messrs. Muspratt's alkali works were established about 1820. The benefits to commerce of this class of works are no doubt very great, and to judge from the experience of St. Helens, in a sanitary point of view, they are not injurious; but wherever they are established, verdure, foliage, and amenity, take their flight never to return. A vital change accordingly came over the spirit of the neighbourhood. The large gardens were converted into coal yards or built over, the small ones made into pig-styes. As the manufactories increased, the only human habitations erected there were cottages of the lowest class, and the locality became abandoned to dirt and squalor.

Canal.

Chemical works.

Prosecutions.

In the early part of this change vigorous attempts were made to resist this tendency. Proceedings were taken against Messrs. Muspratt for the abatement of the fumes issuing from their chimneys, and a long course of litigation ensued, which resulted in those gentlemen removing a large part of their operations first to Newton

and afterwards to Flint; but it is in vain to strive against destiny. We are reminded of the Scripture parable, that when one evil spirit is exorcised, and the place swept and garnished, it may happen that seven other spirits, even blacker than the first, succeed in taking up their abode.

Efforts have not been wanting to provide for the temporal and spiritual necessities of the humble population of the district.

Dispensary.

The Northern Dispensary in Vauxhall Road was erected about 1826, and has been a most valuable institution.

Churches.

The Church of St. Martin's-in-the-Fields was commenced in 1825, opened in 1828. It is a large structure in the style of Gothic practised at the time, but the quality of the stone, combined with the effects of the chemical atmosphere, have imparted almost an inky tint to its exterior. This church and its succursal, St. James-the-Less, together with St. Margaret's, are the high places of what is called Ritualism in the Church of England in Liverpool. The Low Church school has for a long period enjoyed the predominance. A fair opportunity is afforded of testing principle by practice, as to which school can bring to bear the most powerful influences for ameliorating the condition of the poor under their care.

Chapels.

The Church of All Souls, situated at the end of Eaton Street near the canal, of which the Rev. Dr. Hume is the incumbent, was consecrated in 1856. The Wesleyans have a large chapel and schools, called Cranmer Chapel, in Vauxhall Road. The Independents have a chapel in Burlington Street; the Roman Catholics a church in Eldon Street; the Presbyterians one in Limekiln Lane.

Corporation cottages.

In the immediate vicinity of Vauxhall Road, the Corporation have purchased land and erected blocks of cottages, intended to provide dwellings for the labouring classes, of a superior description, by erecting them in flats. Should the experiment succeed, it will be a great boon to the working class in the vicinity.

CHAPTER IV.

WATER STREET TO JAMES STREET.

CHAP. IV.

DURING the first quarter of the nineteenth century, a stranger in Liverpool, following the tide of commerce between the Exchange and George's Dock, and arriving near the bottom of Water Street, would have had his attention arrested by a grim-looking pile of castellated buildings, about as much in harmony with the busy roar of traffic surging around as a megatherium of the prediluvial period harnessed to a waterside cart.

Tower.

This was the 'Tower' of Liverpool, in the olden times the fortalice of the Earls of Derby. Its origin is somewhat obscure, no records existing to cast any light on the period of its first erection.

Stanleys of Knowsley.

The history of this building is so closely connected with the fortunes of the great family of the Stanleys of Knowsley, Earls of Derby, that I may be pardoned for going a little into detail. In the fourteenth century the site formed part of the possessions of the

Lathoms.

Lathoms of Lathom House, Lords of Knowsley, Huyton, Roby, and other manors, whose representative, in the reign of Edward III., was Sir Thomas Lathom, a man well stricken in years, with no legitimate male issue, and an only

Sir John Stanley.

daughter Isabel. John Stanley, the founder of the Knowsley House, was the second son of Sir William Stanley of Hooton. Seacome, in his 'History of the House of Stanley,' perpetrates such grotesque blunders

CHAP. IV.

in the matter of dates, that it is very difficult to come at the truth. He states that the hero of our story was born in 27 Edward III., A.D. 1354, and yet in the succeeding paragraph he says that he was 'one of the captains at the famous battle of Poictiers in France, which was fought on September 19, 1357,' he being then about three years of age! It is clear that any legend founded on a statement of this kind must be very mythical in its character. It is tolerably certain, however, that at a tournament held at Winchester, near the close of King Edward's reign, John Stanley greatly distinguished himself, was knighted on the spot, and by his knightly deeds won the heart of the fair Isabel of Lathom, who was present with her father. On their marriage, which was celebrated soon afterwards, Sir John was presented by his father-in-law, amongst other possessions, with the site of the Tower. Although no record exists, it is probable that some sort of residence had already been erected on the spot. Sir John subsequently acquired distinction in the Irish wars; and on the forfeiture of Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland in 1403, the lordship of the Isle of Man was conferred upon him by Henry IV.

Sir John Stanley.

Lordship of Man.

The necessary intercourse with Ireland and the Isle of Man rendered a secure place of embarkation very important, and in the year 1406, a licence was granted by the King to Sir John Stanley to fortify, crenellate and embattle the house he was then building (or extending) by the river side. This worthy knight died in the first year of Henry V. (1413), having by his martial prowess and wise counsels laid a solid foundation for the future greatness of the family.

A.D. 1406. Licence to fortify.

He is said to have been

> Vir illustris in concilio,
> Strenuus in omni prælio;
> Princeps Militiæ in Anglia,
> Et in omni regno ornatissimus.

CHAP. IV.

We will not further pursue the fortunes of the race. For many ages the Tower of Liverpool continued to be the seaside residence and place of embarkation of the Derby family. The ships of the Stanleys are alluded to in our old poetry. Thus in the ballad of 'Lady Bessie' (1484), Lord Stanley promises Elizabeth of York to send her messenger, Humphrey Brereton, to Henry VII.

Ships of Lord Derby.

> I have a gude shippe of mine owne
> Shall carry Humfrey;
> If any man aske whoes is the shippe?
> Saye it is the Earle's of Derbye.
> Without all doubt at Liverpoole
> He tooke shipping upon the sea.

Down to the early part of the eighteenth century, when the estate of the Moores, of Bank Hall, was acquired by purchase, the Derby family possessed but little property within the borough of Liverpool, but the intercourse between the great lord and the loyal burgesses was always of the most friendly character, the civic chair, between the years 1603 and 1707, having been filled no less than eight times by either an Earl of Derby or by one of his sons.

Inter-course with Liverpool.

Views of the Tower.

The existing representations of the Tower differ materially from each other, probably owing to alterations having been made from time to time. The only ground plan which can be at all relied on is that given in Perry's large map of 1769. Comparing together these various authorities, it would appear that the original structure consisted of a large square embattled tower, with subordinate towers, and buildings forming three sides of an interior quadrangle, which were altered from time to time as circumstances required.

No stirring events stand out from the page of history as having occurred within its precincts, but occasional glimpses are caught, from passing notices in documents, of its existence and occupation. Leland, in his itinerary (1547), says, speaking of Liverpool, 'The King hath a

Leland. A.D. 1547.

castelet there, and the Erle of Derby hath a stone house there.'

The rejoicings over the visit of the earl in the year 1577 have been recorded in a previous chapter.

Rebel prisoners

After the rising of 1715 some of the captured rebels were confined in the Tower. There is an entry in the Sheriff's accounts:

'1716. January 2. Paid for brickwork, building up the windows to prevent escapes, 7*l.* 0*s.* 7*d.*'

James, Earl of Derby.

In 1734, James, Earl of Derby, being mayor at the time, gave a grand entertainment in the Tower to the council and the principal inhabitants.

Soon after this the building was sold to the Clayton family, and let to the Corporation for the borough gaol.

In 1740 the chapel and other parts were fitted up as assembly rooms, and continued to be so occupied for many years.

A.D. 1775. Sold to Corporation.

John Howard.

In 1775 it was purchased by the Corporation for the sum of 1,535*l.* 10*s.* In the same year it was visited by John Howard, the philanthropist, who describes it as out of repair, close and dirty. He visited it again in 1779 and 1782, and reports some improvement in its condition. In 1788, two men, Patrick Burns and Sylvester Dowling, were executed in front of the Tower for burglary at a house near St. Ann's Church.

Notwithstanding the erection of the New Borough Gaol in 1786, the old Tower continued to be occupied both by felons and debtors down to July 1811. It then remained unoccupied until 1819, when the building was pulled down and the materials sold by auction for 200*l.* They were purchased by a corn miller, named Barrow, and used in the erection of steam corn mills in Chaucer Street, Scotland Road, called the Castle Mills. A few years afterwards these mills were burnt, and the unsightly ruins remained standing several years. Ultimately they were carted away as rubbish, and a brewery was erected on the site.

Tower destroyed.

CHAP. IV.

So the old Tower passed away, and left not a wreck behind:

> The knights are dust,
> Their good swords are rust,
> Their souls are with the saints we trust.

New erections.

Rebuilding.

The site of the Tower was sold to the great house of Bailey Brothers, ironmasters of South Wales, and warehouses were erected on the site. In 1856, the alignment of the north side of Water Street being set back, the warehouses were taken down, and the present pile of offices, called Tower Buildings, was erected. In the south wall of the inner quadrangle a stone tablet is inserted, with the following inscription:

> Has Aedes
> Situm olim castelli
> Comitum de Derby
> Denuo construxit
> Negotiis, pacisque artibus fovendis
> Dedicavit
> Jos. Bailey, Eq. Aur.
> Anno Salutis MDCCCLVII.
> Architecto, J. A. Picton.

Old Custom-house.

Old coast line.

On the opposite side of Water Street, at the corner of what is now the Back Goree, stood the old Custom-house, a humble-looking low building of two storeys, facing the river. The gentle reader must understand that down to the middle of the last century the edge of the river bank followed the line of the west side of Tower Buildings, and the east side of Back Goree. All to the westward of this has been gained from the foreshore of the river. This line is still distinctly marked in St. Nicholas' churchyard by the breast wall separating the higher from the lower portion of the burial-ground.

Original Custom-house.

Edward Moore.

The original Custom-house formed a part of the old Town-hall in High Street. When this was taken down about 1675, the Custom-house was removed to a building in Moore Street. Sir Edward Moore, writing in 1667,

thus speaks respecting a vacant piece of land at the bottom of Moore Street: 'Here for two hundred pounds you may wall in a place from the sea, and build a Custom-house there. It would draw all the custom of the town into this street. . . . To effect this, agree with some of the customers, and give them a lease and twenty-one years after, and let them do it upon the King's account, because there is no King's Custom-house in this town.' This scheme was not carried out in that situation, but the Custom-house was temporarily located in the street, and in a short time removed to the bottom of Water Street. Views of this building are given in Herdman's 'Pictorial Relics.' From the style of the architecture, and its adaptation to the purpose, it is probable that it was erected at that period for the Custom-house. It is, however, shown in the copy of a rare etching of a view of the town, given by Herdman, and dated 1650; but there is internal evidence that the real date of the view could not be earlier than 1675 to 1680. Here the Custom-house continued until the completion of the Old Dock in 1720, when it was removed to another building, to which I shall have hereafter to refer. The old building remained standing until 1785, when it was taken down, and warehouses erected on the site.

Moore Street.

The Goree warehouses were designed at the time of the construction of George's Dock, the first stone of which was laid April 1, 1767. More than twenty years, however, elapsed before they were built. They were the precursors of our modern dock warehouses, and, for the time when they were erected, were a bold and spirited undertaking. The original erections had a very short-lived history. On September 15, 1802, a fire broke out in the warehouse of Mr. T. France, which soon spread through the whole range, and a conflagration ensued, the like of which has never been seen in the town, and seldom equalled elsewhere. Property to the amount of 323,000*l.* was destroyed. The ruins continued smoulder-

Goree warehouses.

Fire.

CHAP. IV.

ing for three months, and burning flakes and sparks were carried many miles across the country in every direction. The warehouses were soon rebuilt, and have not hitherto been revisited by a similar mischance.

Name of street.

We are now in a condition to ascend the slope of Water Street. Its original name was Banke Street; it is supposed by some that this was a corruption of Blanche Street, after the Lady Blanche of Castile, wife of John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster. This derivation seems far-fetched. It is much more likely that Bank Street simply meant the way to the *bank* of the river.

First mentioned, A.D. 1370.

The first mention of the street is in a deed of the 43 Edward III. (1370), in which a piece of land 20 feet by 17 feet, lying between St. Nicholas' Chapel and the newly-acquired property of Sir John de Stanley, is conveyed by John, the son of Adam le Clerk, to William the son of Adam of Liverpull. From the description of this land, however, it did not front Water Street, but lay behind the Tower.

'Moore Rental.'

We obtain from the 'Moore Rental' a few peeps into the street in the latter half of the seventeenth century. Of a house on the north side adjoining the Earl of Derby's property, Moore writes: 'This very house was formerly the granary belonging to the Priory of Berkett (Birkenhead) in Wirrall, where such corn as they left unsold on the market day was carried up those back stairs of stone into an upper room, and there lay till next market day.' The land above this tenement on the north side of the street was open fields between the street and the churchyard down to about 1721. It was probably glebe land, as it was laid out for building by the then rectors of the parish.

Priory of Birkenhead.

Covent Garden.

Covent Garden, notwithstanding its propinquity to Drury Lane, is not so called from any dramatic associations. It is a corruption of 'Common Gardens,' a piece of land parcelled out in allotments, which so continued to be occupied in 1650. In Chadwick's map of 1725,

it is called Covent Garden, many years before Drury Lane was set out.

Residents.

In the eighteenth century Water Street was a favourite place of residence for the higher class of Liverpool merchants, the names of many old Liverpool families being found in connection with it, such as the Corleses, Formbys, Blundells, Cases, Leighs and Tarletons. The street, though narrow, possessed many good mansions. The last-mentioned family deserves a passing notice. In the seventeenth, and early part of the eighteenth century, when intercourse with London was difficult and tedious, many of the landed gentry of the county palatine possessed town houses in Liverpool, and through some branch of the family were connected with its trade. Such were the Norrises of Speke, the Claytons of Fulwood, the Blackburnes of Hale, the Banastres of Bank, and the family now under consideration. The Tarletons for many generations were one of the most influential families in Liverpool, a Tarleton having filled the civic chair seven times in little more than a century, the last time in 1792. The family were originally settled at Aigburth, having landed estates there and in Liverpool, which, failing issue male, passed to the Harringtons. The younger branch derives from Edward Tarleton, umquhile commander of the Dublin man-of-war, mayor in 1682. He settled at Church Stile House, a quaint black and white timber building situated near the church gate in Chapel Street. The family became very numerous, his son John having seventeen children, who intermarried with some of the best families in the neighbourhood; amongst others, with the Claytons and the Banastres, to the property of which last family they succeeded. John Tarleton, son of Edward, was a merchant in Liverpool, mayor in 1764. He resided at a house on the south side of Water Street, corner of Fenwick Street. Here was born in 1754 one of the few military heroes of whom Liverpool can boast, the future Sir Banastre Tarleton,

Tarletons.

Edward Tarleton.

John Tarleton.

General Tarleton.

CHAP. IV.

General Tarleton.

Bart. He entered the army when young, and served with distinction in the American War of Independence, as colonel of a regiment of irregular cavalry, whose dashing exploits made considerable noise at the time. Returning home in 1782, he was received with great acclamation, and became very popular in the town. His electioneering experiences have been related in previous chapters. He was a gallant, free and easy, frank old soldier, a great favourite with the fishwives and ship carpenters. On the hustings at election time, when hard pressed by his opponents,

> Then would he strip his sleeve, and show his scars,
> And say, 'These wounds I had on Crispin's day.'

and, sooth to say, the manœuvre was frequently successful. This 'dodge' of the General is thus alluded to in one of the election squibs of 1806:—

> My three-finger'd hand I keep constantly showing,
> But the once blind electors are all grown too knowing,
> Of Roscoe and freedom they're constantly crowing;
> O! I fear I shall nevermore say *aye* or *no*.
> O! my poor wounded hand, and all my fine clack, sirs,
> Will serve no more Obi or Three-fingered Jack, sirs;
> For Roscoe and freedom they shout, 'tis a fact, sirs;
> Alas! I shall never more say *aye* or *no*.

He represented Liverpool from 1790 to 1812, excepting a short interval in 1806, when he was supplanted by Mr. Roscoe. After his retirement from Liverpool he obtained the post of Governor of Berwick Castle, and died in 1833, in the eightieth year of his age.

The family of the Tarletons, once so numerous and influential in Liverpool, have passed away like a dream, and the place knows them no more.

Thomas Smith Tarleton.

The last scion of the Tarleton family was gathered to his fathers in May 1868, at the age of three score and ten. This was Mr. Thomas Smith Tarleton, who forty years previously had been a well-known *habitué* of Liverpool. He had been brought up to commercial life,

but it was soon evident that his tastes did not lie in that direction. He belonged to the school of which Beau Brummel was perhaps the most distinguished example. Endowed with a handsome person, he devoted a large portion of his time to setting it off to the best advantage, and exhibiting it in the public promenades of the town. This '*dolce far niente*' style of life would have been beyond his means, but luckily he had formed an early friendship with a kindred spirit, Mr. T. D. Lewis, erewhile lessee and manager of the Theatre Royal, a man of ample means and refined tastes, which were generously placed at the disposal of his friend and companion. For many years 'Tom' Tarleton and 'Dandy' Lewis were a sort of institution in the town, moving in an orbit of their own, quite out of the centre of ordinary Liverpool life. Always dressed in the highest style of fashion, to an extent quite incompatible with the ordinary occupations around, whether parading 'with solemn step and slow' the flags of Bold Street, or slowly driving in the beautiful 'turn out' of Mr. Lewis, they were always the observed of all observers. Liverpool was a very unfavourable theatre for this sort of stage effect, and when the lease of the Theatre Royal expired, the friends migrated to London as a more congenial sphere. Mr. Lewis dying in 1852, left to Mr. Tarleton an ample provision during his lifetime. With some spice of eccentricity and folly, there was much in the character of both which was amiable and good, and those who knew them may breathe a sigh to the memory of the last of the 'dandies.'

CHAP. IV.

T. D. Lewis.

We are now at the corner of Fenwick Street, or Phœnix Street as it was frequently written. Let us take a glance at its origin and history. The estates of the Moore family were confiscated at the Restoration, owing to the part taken by Colonel John Moore as one of the regicides. His son, Sir Edward Moore, married Dorothy, daughter of Sir William Fenwick of Meldon, Northum-

Fenwick Street.

Dorothy Fenwick.

CHAP. IV.

berland, who became to him the realisation of the virtuous woman described by Solomon, 'in whom the heart of her husband doth safely trust, so that he shall have no need of spoil.' Fenwick Street was so named by him in her honour. He shall tell the story himself. It is worth quoting, as showing, that under the hard grinding character, in which the record displays him, he had still a heart to feel the kindly influences of affection.

One touch of nature makes the whole world kin.

Edward Moore's narrative.

In his instructions to his son he gives four reasons for naming this street Fenwick Street; first, that his wife was one of the daughters and co-heirs of Sir William Fenwick of Meldon; secondly, that by her fortune he 'disengaged ten thousand pounds principal money of a debt contracted by his unfortunate father;' thirdly, that the Moore estates being confiscated at the Restoration, his wife petitioned the House of Lords for a reversal, and by her influence and activity, 'the king was graciously pleased, in consideration of her father's merits and her own sufferings, to grant John Moore's whole estate to such feoffees in trust, as she Dorothy Moore, daughter and co-heir of Sir William Fenwick, should name.' The fourth reason stated, is 'that, to add to all these mercies, which God was pleased to make her an instrument in, to sweeten them the more to us, he hath been pleased to bless me with four sons and two daughters out of her loins, and is at this time great again with a live child.' Sir Edward, from his Puritan education, had at command a choice stock of pious exclamations, which, looking at other parts of his memorial, we should be inclined at the present day to stigmatise as cant. He winds up as follows: 'I hope to sing praises to his name as long as the Son of Man endures, because his mercies are great, and endure for ever. Amen, amen, amen, Lord Jesu, amen.'

The street was at first narrow and somewhat tortuous.

Near the south end a small street runs from it westward, called the Old Ropery. Before Fenwick Street was formed, a Mr. William Bushell, a rope-maker, had the lease of a house in Castle Street with a long field behind, which he converted into a rope-walk. In laying out Fenwick Street, this spinning place presented a barrier, which Bushell refused to remove, though offered thirty pounds for ten yards wide, for the street to pass. Eventually, a bridge was constructed over the ropery, and long after the bridge was removed, this part of the street continued to be called the Dry Bridge.

Old Ropery.

I have already mentioned that the space between Castle and Fenwick Streets was percolated by numerous narrow alleys. One of these was called 'Bridges' Alley.' In reference to this Sir Edward perpetrates a joke, the only one to be found in his lengthy rent roll. He says 'the reason why I named it Bridges' Alley was because it lay betwixt two bridges, the one at the west end, where never water runs under, made for to spin under; the other at the east end is my tenant, Thomas Bridge, a drunken fellow; upon which these verses were made as follows:

Dry Bridge.

Bridges' Alley.

> In old, bridges for water were,
> But these are made for other fare;
> The one for spinning, and, it's said,
> The other's for the drunken trade.
> Let this be set to England's wonder;
> Two bridges, and no water under!

Part of the west side of Fenwick Street was taken down about 1850, the street widened and made straight. Of a house still standing on the west side near the south end, converted into offices, there is a tradition, that Nelson's Lady Emma Hamilton, when resident in her youth in Liverpool, went to school there.

Lady Hamilton.

Chorley Street was originally called Entwistle Street; afterwards Squire's Garden, from Mr. William Squire, mayor in 1715, and finally, the name it now bears, from

Chorley Street.

CHAP. IV.

a family long resident in the town. Leonard Chorley was recorder from 1602 to 1620. John Chorley was mayor in 1678.

Drury Lane.

Drury Lane was undoubtedly named from its association with the drama, the Liverpool theatre having been long located in this street on the east side, near what is now the corner of Brunswick Street.

Theatre.

It is stated by Troughton,[1] that 'during the reign of Charles I., a small building for the exhibition of dramatic entertainments stood in a court at the bottom of St. James's Street, but at the time of the civil wars it was shut up, and continued unoccupied until the Restoration.' This is undoubtedly an error, as neither James Street nor St. James's Street was in existence in the time of Charles I. It is also stated, but on what authority I know not, that plays were performed in a building in Moore Street, afterwards used as a cock-pit. This is probably the building referred to in various advertisements of dramatic performances in the newspapers of 1756, 'at the theatre, Liverpool,' without mentioning the locality. However, the new theatre in Drury Lane was opened at the beginning of June 1759, with the tragedy of 'The Orphan.' It is described as a plain neat brick building, about twenty-seven yards in front by sixteen yards deep, with boxes, pit, and gallery. It was kept up for some years with considerable spirit, the principal performers coming from the London theatres.

The following is a specimen of a play bill of the period:—

[1] 'History of Liverpool,' p. 98.

CHAP. IV.

Play bill.

BY COMEDIANS FROM THE THEATRES ROYAL IN LONDON.

AT THE THEATRE IN DRURY LANE,

On Monday next, being the 8th of August, 1768, will be acted

A TRAGEDY CALLED

OTHELLO,

MOOR OF VENICE.

Written by SHAKESPEAR.

Othello . . .	Mr. BENSLEY	*Duke* . .	Mr. WIGNELL
Iago . . .	Mr. PALMER	*Ludovic* . .	Mr. MORRIS
Cassio . . .	Mr. PACKER	*Montano* . .	Mr. FOX
Roderigo . . .	Mr. CUSHING	*Desdemona* . .	Mrs. MATTOCKS
Brabantio . . .	Mr. GIBSON	*Emilia* . . .	Mrs. BENNETT

With Entertainments of Dancing, viz.:

AT THE END OF THE 2ND ACT A NEW SCOTCH DANCE CALL'D

THE HIGHLAND REEL,

By Mr. FISHAR, Mrs. MANESIERE, and Miss BESFORD, apprentice to Mr. Fishar.

AT THE END OF THE PLAY A NEW PANTOMIME DANCE CALL'D

THE VILLAGE ROMPS.

TO WHICH WILL BE ADDED A FARCE CALL'D

HIGH LIFE BELOW STAIRS.

Not any money under the Full Price to be taken during the whole Performance, nor any servants admitted to the Gallery without paying.

Boxes 3*s*. *Pit* 2*s*. *Gallery* 1*s*.

The Doors to be open'd at five. To begin exactly at seven. Tickets to be had at the Golden Lion, in Dale Street; at E. SMITH'S, in Cable Street; at Mr. Cox's, in Fenwick Street, and of Mr. BENSLEY, at Mr. Wright's, Peruke Maker, opposite the Exchange, where places for the Boxes may be taken.

No person whatever can be admitted behind the scenes.

VIVANT REX ET REGINA!

CHAP. IV.

New Theatre.

This theatre flourished for about thirteen years only. On the erection of the new house in Williamson Square in 1772, the old one fell into disuse, though performances are recorded as having subsequently taken place in it. It was afterwards used as a carrier's warehouse and shed for the fire-engine. Under the Improvement Act of 1786, it was purchased along with other property from Mr. Chapman. It is usually supposed that Brunswick Street runs over the site, but in the map of 1796, in which Brunswick Street is shown, the old playhouse still remains, and is so marked as standing at the corner of two streets.

Moor Street.

Let us now pass on to Moore, or Moor Street, as it is usually written.

Sir Edward Moore says, 'the ground whereon this street now stands was a small close of ground, called the Castle St. field, which said field I and my ancestors have for many hundred years enjoyed.' At the time when Fenwick Street was formed, soon after the Restoration, this field was in lease to Mr. William Bushell, before mentioned, who had paid 20*l.* fine for it, to be added to the lease of his house in Castle Street. Moore continues. 'When it pleased God the fancy came into my head of making a street in this field of his, he would not let me have the field again without I would abate him the whole rent of his house all but two shillings a-year, and let him have three lives and twenty-one years in what houses he should take for himself or his friends to build upon this field.'

The street was accordingly made. A great part had to be cut through the solid rock eight feet perpendicular. As soon as the street was formed, 'Captain Fazakerly of the Castle, finding he had so convenient a way to the water side, in one year had many hundreds of loads of coals brought to the Castle.' This led to the erection of posts and chains across the street, which 'made him glad to carry the coals through the Pool Lane to the

ships, for the town made an order he should not carry them through the Water Street to break all the pavements there.' Before 1667, twenty-three houses had been built in the street, by as many lessees. Moore found that selling building land was not without its difficulties and its trials. He describes one lessee, Thomas Galloway, as 'the troublesomest fellow I ever met with.' Another, John Pemberton, 'the apothecary, is a base, ill-contrived fellow.' He roused the ire of his landlord by refusing to build his house four storeys high, the other lessees agreeing to adopt this elevation. 'Not long after,' he says, 'he being in my company in the street, and we were looking up at the house, one of the company demanded his reason why he had such a strange kind of glazing in the windows, neither head nor foot in them for matter of order;' to which in my hearing he answered, 'the house was built in crosses, and he would do everything that belongs to it on the cross.'

Moor Street, in the olden time, presented an appearance very different from its gloomy murky aspect at the present day. Though narrow, it was open to the estuary at its lower end, receiving the pure sea breezes and looking out on a lovely prospect, whilst in the opposite direction, by its prolongation called Castle Hill, it communicated directly with Castle Street.

Specimens of the original architecture of Moor Street remained standing within the last few years, and several are given in Herdman's 'Pictorial Relics.' Most of them were of the gabled, transomed, and dormered style, containing a lingering reminiscence of the mediæval, which continued prevalent in Lancashire and Cheshire down to the beginning of the eighteenth century. One mansion on the south side was more pretentious, having a long front in two storeys with pilasters running up the whole height, carrying an entablature. The windows in the interspaces were large, with mullions and transoms. Another house built in 1665, bore on its front the arms of

CHAP. IV.

Fayreclough impaling Hyde, with this inscription: 'Door, stand thou open to none but an honest man.'

Architecture.

The specimens of a somewhat later date remaining down to a recent period in Fenwick Street and Drury Lane, were by no means discreditable to the taste of the day. They were generally of brick, which were well made and finely set, with stone dressings. The most elaborate attention was paid to the doorways, which were adorned with pilasters and cornices, and frequently covered with sculptured decoration of a very superior character. The district was inhabited during the last century by many of the leading merchants of the day.

James Street.

We will now pass on to James Street, which is of later origin than Moor and Fenwick Streets. In several places in the 'Moore Rental,' we find mention made of one Roger James, who is amongst the very few complimented in the record. He is stated to be 'a very honest man, and has a good woman to his wife.'

Roger James.

Roger James was at that time lessee of a house in Fenwick Street; subsequently he erected premises in Moor Street and James Street, which led to the street being so called in commemoration of the builder. By his will dated October 1701, he bequeaths this property to his wife, with remainder to his son, Captain John James, who dying in 1737, again bequeaths the same property to his wife Isabel. From the style of the specimens of architecture remaining down to a recent period, James Street must have been partially built before the year 1690. It has been so entirely renovated of late years, that every vestige of its original architecture has disappeared.

Mrs. Isabel James.

Mrs. Isabel James, mentioned above, survived until 1750. There is a tradition that she was the first person in Liverpool to keep a close private carriage. The honour is claimed by Troughton for Mrs.—or Madame—Clayton, who died in 1745. Be this as it may, Liverpool

continued long innocent of any splendour or pride in equipages.

Coaches.

'Hackney coaches were in the middle of the last century unknown here, and the only vehicle for public accommodation was a solitary one-horse chaise, with a leathern top, kept for hire by a cowkeeper named Dimoke (in Fenwick Street I believe), for the use of sick or infirm persons who were disposed to take the benefit of the air along the north shore, or any road in the vicinity of the town. During these excursions the owner of the chaise led the horse slowly along, for the greater safety and convenience of the invalid.'

Richard Watt.

Hereby hangs a romantic story, which ought not to be allowed to die. When Dimoke could not attend himself, he occasionally sent a lad named Watt to drive the vehicle. The lad being quick and intelligent, his master placed him at an evening school to learn the common elements of education. The youth afterwards went to sea on the usual African voyage, and remained in the West Indies, all remembrance of him in Liverpool having speedily passed away. About forty years afterwards an eminent merchant, at the head of one of the first West India houses, came over to Liverpool, where a branch of his business had long been carried on. One of his first occupations was to enquire after the family of Dimoke, who had been some time deceased. Finding two maiden sisters alive he sought them out, and settled on each of them 100*l.* a year for life. This was the quondam little Dick Watt, who founded the family of the Watts, of Speke Hall, Lancashire, and Bishop Burton, Yorkshire, and who left to his nephews (having no issue of his own) a fortune of above half a million sterling.

It is recorded in the annals that, during a great storm in the year 1768, the tide rose so high that a vessel, called the 'Wheel of Fortune,' ran her bowsprit through the window of a house at the bottom of James Street.

At the upper end of James Street, extending along

CHAP. IV.

Fish market.

Fenwick Street to Moor Street, formerly stood the Liverpool Billingsgate, the *locale* of the ladies who sold the best fish and spoke the plainest English.

Originally the seat of the fish trade was at the bottom of Chapel Street. Moore, in his 'Rental,' alludes to the fish yards and free fishing in that locality.

Here, and at the High Cross, the fishmarket remained until the year 1764, when it was removed to Derby Square, on the west side of St. George's Church, round Tarleton's obelisk, described above. In 1786, in consequence of the improvements in the locality, the fish market was transferred to the bottom of James Street. Five years afterwards, the building already alluded to at the top of James Street was erected and occupied for the purpose. It was originally an open colonnade closed in with gates, but without a roof. This desideratum was supplied in 1814 by Mr. Thomas Leyland, mayor during that year. A votive tablet was erected in the market by the fair ladies of the locality to commemorate the donation. The fishmarket was removed to Great Charlotte Street in 1823. In 1826 the building was reopened as a general market, but closed in 1839, and the building taken down.

Preeson's Row.

Let us now continue along Preeson's Row, as far as Redcross Street. This in Moore's time was called Tarlton's field. He says: 'Memorandum—first, if possible, to buy Baly Blundells and the field betwixt it and the More Street; it belongs to Mr. Tarrelton's (of Aigburth) heirs. If you have it, you might pull down your house on the Castle Hill, and there have a brave coming of the street end towards the castle.'

Red Cross Street.

The name of the street is somewhat perplexing. I cannot find any authority for any cross or monument in the neighbourhood, except Tarleton's obelisk, which was certainly never called the Red Cross. The street was commenced about the end of the seventeenth century, and contained some large commodious mansions. From

CHAP. IV.

the middle to the latter end of the last century, it had become a street of shops, the Bold Street of its day, interspersed with residences of the leading merchants. Even so late as 1803, Mr. Jonas Bold, mayor for that year, resided in Redcross Street. The Crown Inn, on the north side of the street, was for many years one of the principal coaching establishments, especially for the north road. In the 'Directory' for 1805 not less than sixteen departures in the day are advertised from this house.

Crown Inn.

Benn's Garden.

Entering a narrow court on the south side of the street we come to a more expanded area called Benn's Garden. This takes its name from Mr. James Benn, mayor in 1697, who was the owner of property adjoining Tarlton's field, and most probably lived there. Here was the site for many years of one of the old Nonconformist chapels of the town, erected in 1726–7. The congregation was an offshoot from the ancient chapel in Toxteth Park, which had first been located in Castle Hey (now Harrington Street), where, under the privilege granted by the dispensing ordinance of James II., a small meeting-house was erected in 1687. This being found too small, a more commodious chapel and a parsonage were built in Benn's Garden. Several very eminent men have at different times held the pastorate of this church. Dr. Henry Winder, a well-known writer on Church History was the first minister. In 1763, Mr. (afterwards Dr.) William Enfield was appointed minister, and so continued until 1770, when he removed to Warrington to succeed Dr. Aikin in the divinity chair of the academy there. In 1767 he married the daughter of Mr. Richard Holland, draper, in Lord Street. It was whilst residing in Liverpool that he formed the acquaintance of Mr. Perry, who had made collections towards a history of Liverpool, but died before he could accomplish his purpose. These materials were put into the hands of Dr. Enfield, after his removal from Liverpool, which led to

Chapel.

Dr Winder.

Dr. Enfield.

CHAP. IV.

the publication of the history in his own name. Dr. Enfield removed to Norwich in 1785, and died in 1797. He is probably best known to the world as the compiler of that once all-popular school book 'The Speaker.'

New chapel.

In 1811, a new chapel having been erected in Renshaw Street, the congregation removed thither, and the old building was disposed of to the Welsh Wesleyan Methodists. These continued here until the year 1866, when the premises were sold and converted to commercial purposes.

Sea Brow.

A small street near the bottom of the hill on the south side, called Sea Brow, marks the old coast line running from the church along the margin of the pool. Following this line northwards we soon arrive at the bottom of

Brunswick Street.

Brunswick Street. This street has not much antiquity to boast of, having been a creation of the Improvement Act of 1786, cutting through a dense mass of property between Castle Street and George's Dock. It was completed about 1790. It has now become an important commercial street, but for many years after its formation business did not take kindly to it. A portion of the old houses long remained standing on the south side, raised up on a sort of terrace many feet above the street level. I may here remark that the surface of the ground has been considerably lowered from Castle Street westwards. The site of the castle was eight or ten feet above the present level of Derby Square, and the descent, both southward and westward, was by flights of steps. The natural surface had to be cut down in the solid rock for the streets leading westward. The Castle Hill was a real elevation above the surrounding land.

Corn trade.

Brunswick Street is the chosen seat of the corn trade of Liverpool, a business which has attained gigantic dimensions of late years. The business of the Corn Trade in Liverpool, as in most other towns, was originally transacted *al fresco*, the place of assembly being the open space in front of the Town-hall (then the Exchange),

marked in the old maps as the 'Corn Market.' On the erection of the New Exchange Buildings (commenced in 1803), it was thought desirable by the corn trade to provide a local habitation for themselves. This was accomplished in 1807, when a Corn Exchange was erected on the south side of Brunswick Street, at a cost of 10,000*l.*; the money being raised by one hundred shares of 100*l.* each. It appears that a variety of objections were started to the scheme at the time; for Troughton, writing in 1809, thinks it necessary to enter into an elaborate defence of the plan. He says, 'that ancient systems, established customs, and immediate profit, are remarkably venerable in the eyes of some; but when the great increase of the corn trade, the portion of time and labour which are consumed in visiting the different warehouses for the purposes of buying and selling, and the enormous expense of travelling, which it is intended to obviate, are considered, it will perhaps be pronounced by those who are guided by their understandings more than by their prejudices, an excellent expedient.'

Corn Exchange.

It would seem from this apology that the trade had previously been conducted in an extremely primitive and inartificial manner. The business continued rapidly to increase during the next forty years, and several extensions of the structure took place, until at length, after the repeal of the Corn Laws in 1849, and the consequent increase of importations, the complaints became so loud that a scheme for a rival establishment was brought out, and was only prevented being realised by the prompt action of the proprietors in rebuilding the edifice on a greatly extended scale. The result was, the present edifice, commenced in 1851. There are two ranges of vaults under the whole building, and four storeys of offices in front. The Exchange proper consists of a large hall divided into three aisles by rows of columns, from which spring the cast iron arches of the roof.

Rebuilding.

The Union Bank, Heywood's Bank, and Brunswick

Banks.

CHAP. IV.

Buildings, are handsome stone-fronted commercial structures.

Following the old coast line along the Back Goree, we will conclude our perambulation where we commenced it, at the bottom of Water Street.

General view.

The quarter through which our walk has just been concluded, constituted in the first half of the eighteenth century by far the most important part of the town.

In casting a glance back on this period, one cannot but feel a sort of lingering fondness for what may be called the golden age of Liverpool. The town had just begun to find its proper vocation, commerce was flowing in from all quarters, land was in demand for building, rents were rising, and a steady tide of prosperity had set in.

The population in 1720 amounted to about 10,000, and in 1740 it had increased to 18,000. It must have been a pleasant little place to reside in. It is true the streets were narrow and tortuous, but they were lined by many stately mansions. The noble river flowed almost at their very doors, and, landward, breezy hills arose all around. The air was redolent of the breath of kine and the odour of flowers. At the north end, the Ladies' Walk expanded its umbrageous shades, and the Maidens' Green presented its verdant sward,

> Where all the village train, from labour free,
> Led up their sports beneath the spreading tree.

A little further on Love Lane offered a quiet walk, enclosed with hedges, scented with sweet hawthorn and honeysuckle. On the eastern side, in the early part of the century, the meadows descended in a gentle slope to the side of a purling brook. Crossing this, the great heath spread out its open expanse, dotted with the yellow gorse. This, however, was early in the century enclosed as agricultural land. Higher up eastward, Mount Pleasant, Edgehill, and Lowhill commanded mag-

nificent views over the Mersey and the Dee, and predominating over all rose the Beacon Tower on the summit of Everton Heights.

General view.

The character of the inhabitants at this period—the pioneers of the greatness of Liverpool, seems to have been kindly and pleasant, though somewhat primitive.

Name Dicky Sam.

It is commonly supposed that the sobriquet of 'Dicky Sam' applied to all native-born Liverpudlians, originated at this period from their familiar style of addressing each other as Bill, and Tom, Jack, Dicky, and Sam, which to southern ears sounded somewhat uncouth. A learned Theban, however, in the columns of 'Notes and Queries,' has made the notable discovery that 'Dicky-Sam' is derived from the Greek διχασάμενος, 'divided into two parts, or set at variance, in allusion to the political contests between Whig and Tory that have so often agitated the town.' This picture differs materially from the harmonious unanimity described by Derrick; but it must materially increase our admiration for the attainments of young Liverpool, to be assured that even its nicknames were derived from a classical source.

CHAPTER V.

DALE STREET AND ITS NEIGHBOURHOOD.

CHAP. V.

Dale Street. Name.

We will proceed in this chapter to perambulate Dale Street, the eastern arm of the cross constituting the original Liverpool of King John. The name is probably derived from the dale or dell through which the brook flowed into the pool. It will be observed that beyond Manchester Street the road dips steeply down to Byrom Street, and rises again up William Brown Street. Anciently this declivity and hollow must have been much greater, and sufficiently account for the name of the street.

Earliest mention. A.D. 1330.

The earliest mention of Dale Street is in an ancient mortgage deed quoted by Baines as follows:—

'To all the faithful in Christ who may see or hear this writing. Cecilia, formerly wife of Adam Uttinge, greeting; know that I, in my pure widowhood, and with full legal power, have given, &c., to Richard de Walton, the half of a burgage in the town of Lyverpoll in le Dele Strete, between the land of William Barret on the east, and the land of Richard Teive on the west, to be sold, &c., rendering to Alexander, son of Matthew de Wally, eighteen silver pence. These being witnesses, John de Mora, Adam, son of William, Adam le Clerk, Adam Baron, and others. April 15, 3 Edward III. (1330).' We find no further mention of Dale Street

CHAP. V.

down to the time of the 'Moore Rental' (1667). At that date it was partially built up to the front on both sides; on the north, nearly to Cheapside, and on the south, about as far as Temple Street. A windmill is mentioned, but no clue is given as to its site, and it was destroyed before the date of the earliest existing map. Although houses were built to the front, the lands behind remained in fields and gardens for nearly a century later. In 1758 advertisements appear, such as the following from Williamson's 'Advertiser': 'To be let for a term of years, a commodious dwelling-house sashed, situate in Dale Street near the Exchange, 11 yards to the front, and 150 yards backwards, with a good stable, brew-house, and a garden upwards of 100 yards long.'

'Moore Rental.'

A.D. 1758.

In 1725 the fringe of houses had extended nearly as far east as Fontenoy Street, with open fields behind. About the middle of the century these open spaces began to be filled up, and most of the streets between Dale Street and Whitechapel were laid out and partially built on. On the north side buildings were more sparse. Beyond Hatton Garden down to 1796, the buildings only extended back from Dale Street about 100 yards. The whole space beyond this was open ground until the early part of the present century.

A.D. 1725. Building.

A.D. 1796.

It need not be repeated of any of the earlier streets of Liverpool that they were narrow and irregular. Dale Street was no exception to the rule. Being the principal entrance into the town from Manchester, London, and the greater part of England, it became a busy and populous thoroughfare, and long continued so until changes were made which seriously diminished its importance.

The first attempt at improvement was made between 1786 and 1790, after Castle Street had been widened. A noted public-house, called the Black Horse and Rainbow, at the corner of High Street and Dale Street, was taken down and the street set back. Buildings were

Improvements. A.D. 1790.

CHAP. V.

erected to correspond in character with the architecture of Castle Street, which remained until taken down about 1859 for the erection of the Liverpool and London Chambers. We have a graphic representation of Dale Street soon after this date—say 1794—in one of the Gregson drawings. The view is taken from the corner of Messrs. Jones's shop, top of Water Street. The two corners of Castle Street are shown as altered in 1786, Messrs. Clarke's bank at the east, and Messrs. Jones's shop at the west angle. The new shop corner of High Street is called 'Renshaw's.' A short range of new buildings is continued, ending with the Old Cross Keys Inn—afterwards rebuilt as the George. The view is carried eastward along the narrow perspective of Dale Street. In the foreground a sailor with large buckles in his shoes, dressed in the professional blue, with loose trowsers and black silk necktie, holding a purse of prize money in his hand, is being enchanted by a lady in blue, with a towering head-dress. Another lady in steeple-crowned hat with immense waving feathers is talking to a gentleman in a red coat, purple waistcoat, buck-skins, and silk stockings. A sedan-chair is set down in front of the Exchange, the chairmen in long blue frocks are lounging about, fraternising with the street *gamins*. A water-cart with one woman driving, and another walking, with a bucket in her hand to serve customers. A coach-stand with three coaches, two horses each, the coach bodies raised an immense height from the ground on large C springs. A stage-coach with four horses is careering along Dale Street, with outside passengers in front, and the old basket behind. Messrs. Jones's window is radiant with plate, attracting gazers as at the present day.

View in A.D. 1794.

A.D. 1803. Before 1803, the north side of Dale Street was widened as far as Hackin's Hey. On the erection of the New Exchange and the consequent alterations in High Street, a passage was left from Dale Street to Tithebarn Street.

CHAP. V.

For many years this went by the name of Juggler Street, the vacant land being occupied as a market, and used as the *locale* of wild beast and other shows. About 1821, the land was built on and the name changed to Exchange Street East. Juggler Street.

Another of Mr. Gregson's drawings represents Dale Street in 1804, taken from near the Exchange. The shop at the corner is now occupied by Messrs. Morton and Hesketh, grocers, with several shops adjoining; then the George Hotel just erected, with the statue of the George and Dragon in front. Beyond Hackin's Hey the buildings project forward, leaving the street very narrow. On the right or south side, the site of the north-western bank is occupied by shops—Shaw, Saddler, &c.; a sign board on the gable, 'Nevitt's Printing Office;' further on, the Golden Lion Inn with the statue of the lion in front, his tail turned towards the Town-hall. A little further on, the old Angel Inn, and John Street beyond. Opposite the Golden Lion stands a four-wheeled vehicle, in appearance precisely a modern omnibus, except that there is no provision for outside passengers. There is a volunteer soldier in red swallow-tailed coat, white cross belts, tall shako with immense red and white feather, breeches and gaiters, and a sergeant girt with a heavy silk sash and pendant and sword, with a lance in his hand, and a small drummer in green jacket, with green cap and feather. The pedestrians have powdered hair, tight-fitting coats, blue, green, and red; small-clothes with Hessian and top-boots. The shops have bow windows, with small squares heavily timbered. View in A.D. 1804.

Let us now advance along the street taking notes as we proceed.

In Hackin's Hey, a few yards out of Dale Street, stood the original Quakers' Meeting House, erected in 1706, with a burying-ground attached. About 1796, this building was forsaken for a newly-erected meeting-house in Hunter Street, still so occupied. The old meeting-house Friends' Meeting House.

CHAP. V.

was subsequently turned into a school. About 1863 a new school was erected in Islington, and the premises in Hackin's Hey were sold and pulled down. The site is now occupied by a pile of offices called Batavia Buildings.

Sugar trade.

In describing his property in Dale Street in 1667, Sir Edward Moore speaks of the 'Sugar House Close,' already mentioned (vol. i. p. 129). The particular spot alluded to cannot be identified, but it is certain that the sugar boiling did settle in Liverpool soon after. The progress of the African trade, which brought back in sugar and rum manifold returns for the goods sent out to purchase slaves, contributed also to the success of the sugar-refining business, which became a very important part of the manufactures of Liverpool. Bachelor Street and Orange Street, which must be very near the locality indicated by Moore, have been from time immemorial seats of the manufacture which is still carried on, on a very extensive scale, by Messrs. Macfie and Co.

On the opposite side of Dale Street, behind the houses on the space now occupied by the lower part of Union Court, long stood a large sugar-house belonging to the Tarleton family. Dale Street being the principal

Inns.

avenue to and from the town, inns and taverns, as might be expected, were somewhat numerous. One of the oldest and most important was the Golden Lion on the site afterwards occupied by the Royal Bank, now the Queen Insurance Buildings. This was at election times the head-quarters of the Blue or Gascoyne party, during the many years the borough was represented by the General or his brother. Other inns now removed were, the Golden Fleece, the Cross Keys, the Bull and Punch Bowl. The first of these is noteworthy, as from thence set out the first stage-coach ever issuing from Liverpool, according to the announcement from Williamson's 'Advertiser,' September 19, 1760 (quoted vol. i. p. 234).

Travelling.

It is a fact which might appear almost incredible, that

up to the year 1760 there was no road for wheel carriages into the town of Liverpool. The goods and produce were conveyed between Manchester and Liverpool by the Mersey and Irwell Navigation. What came landward had to be carried on the backs of packhorses. In 1760 the turnpike road to Prescot and Warrington was completed, thus enabling the 'machine' above advertised, to perform its journey. Previous to this, all journeys to and from Liverpool had to be performed on horseback. Thus we find it advertised in 1753, that every Friday morning William Knowles and others, started from the Swan with two Necks, Lad Lane, London, with a gang of horses for the conveyance of passengers and light goods, and reached Liverpool on the Monday evening following.

Travelling.

Again, in 1756, Mr. Benen advertises that he travels regularly post from Liverpool to Lancaster, and that he has two good double horses on the road for the convenience of ladies.

The Cross Keys was rebuilt about 1790 by the corporation, and called 'The George;' a very well executed group carved in wood, representing the slaughter of the Dragon being placed in front. Here were held, as long as the house stood, all the corporation sales of property. These took place in the evening. The company were seated in a large room frequently crowded to excess. Previous to the sale and at intervals during its progress, the expectant bidders were plied with hot punch and strong liquors, to quicken their perceptions as to the value of the lots offered for sale. The results, as might be expected, were occasionally unfortunate, and the scenes enacted somewhat irregular. In 1857 the hotel was sold by the corporation. The buildings were taken down and the Queen Buildings, originally the Queen Insurance Buildings, erected on the site.

George Hotel.

The Bull and Punch Bowl stood at the bottom of Moorfields. At this point the early improvements termi-

Bull.

CHAP. V.

Angel.

nated, and the tavern remained for many years a conspicuous object projecting forward like a promontory beyond the line of the other buildings.

The Angel Inn is one of the old taverns, and was a quaint, primitive-looking structure down to about 1840, when it was cleared away and rebuilt in connection with Bretherton's Buildings.

John Street.

We have now arrived at John Street, one of the most important links of communication for heavy traffic between the north and south. This street was laid out and built on very early in the eighteenth century, as far as Harrington Street. So it remained until about 1780, there being no communication between Harrington Street and Lord Street. About this time it was cut through to Lord Street, the extension being called New John Street, and continued forward by a new cut called Marshall Street towards the Old Dock. There is nothing very noteworthy about the history of John Street. It was narrow and dingy like all the rest. Mr. Richard Hughes, mayor in 1756, resided in this street. He was proprietor of the Copperas Works which gave their name to Copperas Hill.

Post Office.

The Post Office about the middle of last century was situated on the north side of John Street between Dale Street and the opening to Prince's Street. It was a simple dwelling in which lived the postmaster, Mr. Thomas Statham, with a little hole in the window for the delivery of letters. In 1781, the Post Office had been removed to Lord Street, where it remained until 1800, when it was removed to Old Post Office Place, Church Street. In 1775 there was only a single letter-carrier for the whole district, no greater number being allowed for any provincial town. The brother of the then postmaster, Mr. William Statham, was an attorney-at-law who resided at the north-west corner of John Street and Matthew Street. His son Richard and his grandson William successively filled the office of town-clerk, which was continued for another generation in the family by

the marriage of his great granddaughter to Mr. William Shuttleworth, town-clerk from 1844 to 1867. There is an interesting reminiscence of John Street connected with the history of the Liverpool Library—not the Free Public Library, but the proprietary Library now at the Lyceum. About the middle of the last century a few gentlemen were in the habit of meeting for the discussion of literary subjects at the house of Mr. William Everard, a schoolmaster and an eminent mathematician in St. Paul's Square. About 1756 or 7, the 'Monthly Review' was commenced, and the little club agreed to take it in. This led to the purchase of other books which were kept in a chest in Mr. Everard's parlour, and began to be circulated amongst the members. This was found so convenient, that on May 1, 1758, it was determined to establish a general Circulating Library, asserted to be the first of the kind in the kingdom. The first catalogue was issued on November 17, 1758, and contained (including pamphlets) 450 volumes, with 109 subscribers at five shillings per annum each. In 1759 Mr. Everard commenced business as surveyor and architect, and built himself premises on the west side of John Street, a few yards from Cook Street. In this building provision was made for the reception of the library, of which Mr. Everard was the first secretary and librarian. About 1786, the accommodation proving insufficient, a scheme was got up for the erection of a building in Lord Street a little below John Street, on the principle of a tontine, each subscriber nominating a life, the survivor to take the property; the building to be for public purposes and to provide accommodation for the library. In 1787 the library was removed to the new building. It may not be without interest to Liverpool readers to mention the names of a few of the most prominent members of the institution about this period; Mr. William Roscoe, Dr. Currie (the biographer of Burns), Mr. William Rathbone, the Rev. Thomas Dannett (Rector), Dr. Bostock, Dr.

CHAP V.

Liverpool Library.

Brandreth, Rev. John Yates, Dr. Worthington, Dr. Rutter, Dr. Lyon, Mr. Evans (afterwards Sir William David Evans, Recorder of Bombay), Mr. Daulby and Mr. Brooke. In 1803, the institution had become so flourishing that, to provide for its increasing wants, the building called the Lyceum in Bold Street was erected for its accommodation, where on May 13, 1858, the centenary of the Library was celebrated with great *éclat.*

The Temple.

From John Street we are naturally led to the district called 'The Temple,' consisting of Temple Street, Temple Lane, Temple Court, &c., behind the south side of Dale Street. Down to the middle of the last century, the whole of this locality was open unoccupied ground. About 1763, a chapel was erected by a body of seceders from the chapels in Key Street and Benn's Garden, who wished to have a liturgy in their public worship. One of the principal promoters was Mr. Bentley, afterwards well known as the friend and partner of Josiah Wedgwood. The building stood at the angle between Temple Court and Temple Place, surrounded with a burial-ground. Its form was octagonal, hence the congregation popularly went by the name of 'Octagonians.' The designer was a Mr. Joseph Finney, a clock and watchmaker in Thomas Street.[1] The octagonal roof is said to have been curious in its construction, on a principle afterwards adopted elsewhere. The effect of the building in the interior was light, cheerful, and agreeable. The experiment was not a successful one. The Rev. Nicholas Clayton, who was the first minister, preached his farewell sermon on February 25, 1776, after which the chapel was closed. Mr. Clayton removed to Warrington Academy, having succeeded Dr. Aikin as Divinity tutor. He afterwards removed to Nottingham.

The Octagon Chapel.

St. Catherine's.

The building was then purchased by the Rev. William Plumbe, rector of Aughton, by whom it was licensed for

[1] This same Mr. Finney is said to have constructed a watch to be worn in a ring, which was presented to King George III.

the Established worship, and who officiated in it with considerable popularity for nearly ten years. After his decease it was sold to the corporation. In 1792 the Rev. Thomas Bold and the Rev. R. K. Milner were appointed joint incumbents. In 1820 the church was taken down, and the street carried over the site. It is worthy of remark that the Rev. Thomas Bold, who had been minister twenty-eight years when the church was taken down, continued to receive his stipend for thirty-nine years longer, or sixty-seven years in all—an instance almost unparalleled. After the erection of the Octagon the neighbourhood became built on, taking the classic name of 'The Temple.' Temple Court being a *cul de sac*, stopped by the church, a quiet, drowsy aspect naturally attached to the locality, which maintained its dignified, old-fashioned respectability down to a period comparatively recent. A large house at the corner of Temple Court and Temple Street, in a curious bastard Gothic style, was the residence of Mr. Joseph Fowden, an eminent merchant, of the firm of Fowden, Ker, & Berry. The alterations of 1820 let in the tide of public traffic, which disturbed the retirement, and changed the occupation of the buildings. The improvements of 1867–8, by which a new street, called Victoria Street, was carried in the line of Temple Court in the direction of St. George's Hall, completed the metamorphosis. Warehouses and offices cover the sites where the domestic hearth once diffused its genial ray, and the tide of commerce has engulphed in oblivion all the old associations. The name of 'The Temple' now specifically attaches to the Commercial Buildings fronting Dale Street, erected by Sir William Brown, Bart., in 1864; but the streets, though greatly changed, preserve their old appellations.

Improvements. A.D. 1820. A.D. 1867.

Returning to our walk along Dale Street, we come next to Stanley Street, connected, as its name implies, with the Derby family. A large portion of the land in Dale Street belonged to the Moores, of Bank Hall. When their estates

Stanley Street.

CHAP. V.

were sold, about 1712, the Dale Street property passed into the hands of the Earl of Derby, the Plumbes, and others. Stanley Street was laid out about 1740; but the land at the lower end not belonging to his lordship, the street could not be carried through to Whitechapel; hence the zigzag course which it pursues. This street long went by the name of New or News Street. It became at an early date a mart for second-hand or ready-made furniture, to which nearly every tenement was devoted; hence New Street became a byword for everything that was rickety and sham in the way of household goods.

Stanley Street.

Sir Thomas's Buildings.

'Moore Rental.'

We come next to Sir Thomas's Buildings. This street takes its name from the shrewd and versatile Sir Thomas Johnson, who played so important a part in the town's affairs at the beginning of the last century, and of whom I have already spoken somewhat at large. The site was purchased by his father, 'Baly Johnson,' from Sir Edward Moore previous to 1667, under the following circumstances: When Sir Edward was laying out Fenwick Street he wanted a small piece of land which belonged to Johnson as lessee for two lives. After treating with the 'Baly,' he says 'he had the impudence to demand sixty pounds of me for that, when in truth it was worth but ten shillings per annum. And at last all I could bring him to was to take four lands in Liverpool field, which I could have had nearly thirty pounds for. Thus you may see that you must expect no mercy from such rogues; therefore in the name of God make the best you can of your own.' He says further: 'Remember there belongs a great close to this house, lying in the Dale Street, which runs down to the pool. If ever the pool shall be cut so as shipping shall come up on the back of the town, then this will be a most especial place to make a street, the only piece of land you have.' 'Baly' Johnson's four lands descended to his son, Sir Thomas, and he laid out a street and commenced building at the Dale Street end.

Sir Thomas Johnson.

In 1725 the east side was partially built on. The remainder was a rope-walk, with a barn and other buildings at the end next Whitechapel. A considerable portion was left unbuilt down to the end of last century. There is a chapel on the west side, near the top, which was erected soon after 1780 by the Jesuit Father Price, who separated from his colleague, Raymond Harris, at St. Mary's, Edmund Street. Father Price continued as officiating priest until his decease, in 1813. It then ceased to be occupied by the Roman Catholics. It has subsequently been tenanted by the Baptists, Independents, Hebrew Christians, Episcopalians, and was for some time occupied by a German congregation, under the charge of the Rev. Mr. Hirsch.

Roman Catholic Chapel.

I have already alluded to the early improvements in Dale Street, which opened it out to its present width as far as Moorfields. Under the powers of an Act obtained in 1820, the north side was taken down and set back as far as Cheapside. About the same time a new street was opened from the bottom of Hatton Garden to St. John's Lane, and called Manchester Street. Previous to this time all the traffic to and from the east had to pass along Dale Street and up the steep ascent of Shaw's Brow. The inconvenience of this led to the cutting of the new street and the widening of St. John's Lane, by which the hill was ascended circuitously, and a better gradient obtained. Soon afterwards Elliott Street was cut through from Lime Street to Clayton Square. The result of these improvements was unfortunate for Dale Street. A large portion of the traffic was carried by way of Lord Street and Church Street; nearly the whole of the remainder passed down Manchester Street, and the narrow defile of the lower end of Dale Street and the steep brow beyond became almost entirely neglected, much to the detriment of the property there situated. This was in after years to a considerable extent recovered by further improvements, by which Dale Street was widened on the south

Improvements. A.D. 1820.

CHAP. V.

side from Sir Thomas's Buildings to Byrom Street, Shaw's Brow entirely pulled down, the gradient improved, and the street greatly increased in width, so that the ancient thoroughfare resumed many of its previous advantages. In the meantime the tide had set in a different direction. The natural tendency was to draw towards the leading line of Church Street, and Dale Street has never recovered its original importance.

Cumberland Street.

Cumberland Street, narrow and uninviting as it looks, was once the residence of many respectable inhabitants. Mr. Francis Gildart, who was town-clerk from 1742 to 1780, resided here; and in Dale Street, hard by, in 1781, lived Mr. John Leigh, solicitor, afterwards of Sandhills, father of Mr. John Shaw Leigh, of Luton Hoo.

Crosse Hall.

Immediately after passing Sir Thomas's Buildings we enter the precincts of the domain of the Crosses of Crosse Hall, an ancient family settled here from time immemorial, but of whose history singularly little seems to be known. Their Liverpool property extended along the line of the Brook—equivalent to the modern Whitechapel and Byrom Street—from near Sir Thomas's Buildings to Addison Street, and inwards along Cheapside, Tithebarn Street, Marybone, to Addison Street again. Although the family during several centuries occupied a very important position in the borough, so entirely has all knowledge of them passed away, that even the site of their mansion is a matter of uncertainty. According to Burke the family first settled in Liverpool about 1350.

A.D. 1419.

The first glimpse of their history appears in an indenture of 7 Henry V. (1419), by which Richard of the Crosse, one of the executors of Makyn of Kenyon delivers up to the son of the testator a suit of armour, thus quaintly described; 'to wete, a muche maser haftet baslard harnesshet wyth silver, a girdell of silver, barret with lokkes and batches of silver, and another girdell of silver, barret throughoute; a colar all of silver, six bosses for a jak of silver, with foure poyntes of silke and silver,

a tabule, one ymolde of silver in a purse of velvet and a payre of bedes of whyt ambre.' The designation, Richard of the Crosse, may afford a clue to the origin of the surname. Just opposite the centre of the Crosses' estate, stood, on the bank of the stream, the ancient Townsend Cross. Before the adoption of family surnames, any local peculiarity was made use of to identify the party described or signatory, and the then existing Cross was a very natural mark by which Richard and the family generally could be made known.

Crosse Hall.

About 3 Henry VIII. (1512), in the return to the collection of a subsidy of one fifteenth, Richard Crosse is debited with the sum of 'xj*s* viiii*d* p terris suis.' William More is debited with the same amount. As no other landowner in Liverpool is charged with an equal sum, it would seem that Crosse and Moore were the two squires of the day, and about equal in influence. In the king's rent-roll, taken 23 Henry VIII. (1532), Richard Crosse and Roger Crosse, Esquires, pay eighteen shillings per annum for land held under the Crown. I have already noticed that the chantry of St. Katherine, in the Chapel of Our Lady and St. Nicholas, together with a free school, had been founded (date uncertain) by John Crosse. At the time of the dissolution, Humfrey Crosse was the chantry priest, having 'for his salary the proffits thereof, being vi*l* ij*s* x*d*, being fifty yeares of age, and his liveing besides is ij*l*.'

A.D. 1512.

A.D. 1532.

During the reign of Elizabeth the Crosse family appear possessed of considerable influence in the town. 'Magister John Crosse' was mayor in 1565, and again in 1572 and 1581. During the first of these years, Sir Henry Sidney, Lord High Deputy of Ireland, set sail on Saturday, December 22, from Liverpool for Dublin, with a convoy of barks 'all charged with great horses, all fine apparell and other treasures, besides the worshipfull company and servitors, and all their costliness to a great abundant treasure of riches.' On Sunday morning the wind fresh-

A.D. 1565.

CHAP. V.

Crosse Hall.

ened, 'and about ten or eleven of the clock that Sunday at night, suddenly sprung and rose the marvelousest and terriblest storm of wind and weather, that continued about six houres or little less,' which did great damage both on land and water.

Great anxiety was felt for the safety of the Lord Deputy and his company. 'All Christian people called and cryed, praying and making humble prayers unto All Mighty to amend the weather, so fearfull and terrible, and to save the foresaid ships and barks with all the Christian people.' Providentially the little fleet arrived in safety.

A.D. 1571. Licence to enclose.

In 1571, John Crosse, Esquire, made petition to the mayor and council, 'to have license upon his cost, to take in and enclose a small parcel of ground at the lower end of his keys lying to his hall and demesne in this towne, out of the waste of Liverpool, for a foundation of a stone wall, which he meaneth to devise and make there in defence of his keys and closures of land from the seas and waters; and it was granted him; and Mr. Mayor and his brethren appointed and meted out as much as would suffice his interest in that behalfe, and by their wisdoms to be thought reasonable, and not hurtful to any evil example of unlawful encroachments.'

A.D. 1574. Defences.

In 1574, as we have seen, the same John Crosse was one of five who undertook to defray the expense of repairing the defences of the town. He was elected mayor a third time in 1581-2.

Crosse Hall.

We here lose sight of Magister John Crosse, who vanishes into oblivion, nor does it appear that any of his descendants in Liverpool ever emerged into public notice. None of them ever filled the civic chair. In the 'Moore Rental' we find several references to 'Cousin Crosse' and the family property, from which it would seem that they occupied at that time a position very similar to that of the Moores, having land in various parts of Liverpool.

A.D. 1673. Blome.

In Blome's description of the town (1673), we read

that, 'on the east side is an ancient mansion-house called Crosse Hall, where divers worthy gentlemen of that name lived for many generations.' This is the last record we possess of the existence of the hall and the residence of the family in Liverpool. In the maps published fifty years afterwards, the hall is gone, and the front line to Dale Street built upon, leaving no record where the old house stood. There is reason, however, to believe that down to 1860 a portion of the out-houses remained enclosed amongst the buildings between Preston Street and Crosshall Street, adapted to modern purposes. About that date the buildings were all cleared away, and the last relic of the Crosses in Liverpool disappeared.

Crosse Hall.

About A.D. 1700 may be fixed upon as the date when the Crosses removed from Liverpool to Shaw Hill, near Chorley, after which the mansion was taken down and the land laid out for building. Peter Street, Cross-Hall Street, Preston Street, Shaw-Hill Street, &c., were set out and principally built on by the middle of the eighteenth century. A large silk factory was erected on one portion, the street adjoining taking the appropriate name of Spitalfields. The land was let on leases for lives and years, and little or no restriction being exercised, the whole quarter gradually drifted into a squalid, over-crowded, insalubrious district. An Act was obtained in 1854, under the powers of which, and of a subsequent Act in 1861, the whole district between St. Thomas's Buildings and the back of Manchester Street has been cleared away, the streets absorbed and new lines opened. Under the same Act powers were taken to open a new street from North John Street to the bottom of Manchester Street, which runs through the Crosse estate, constituting the present Victoria Street. The site of Manchester Street and the land beyond long remained open behind the houses, first as gardens, then as timber-yards, tan-yards, &c. Messrs. Henry Holmes & Sons' cudbear manufactory and herring houses, were well known for

Peter Street, &c.

Improvements. A.D. 1854, 1861.

Victoria Street.

CHAP. V.

many years as a flourishing concern, which on the decease of the surviving partner in 1854 was found to have been a delusion.

Saracen's Head.

At the top of Peter Street on the south side of Dale Street, stood the well-known Saracen's Head Inn, for many years the seat of the world-famed coaching establishment of Bartholomew Bretherton.

Travelling, A.D. 1766.

Down to the end of the last century the conveniences for travelling to and from Liverpool were meagre in the extreme. In 1760, as related above, the first stage-coach was established from Liverpool. In 1766, from the first Directory published, we learn that 'there are two stage-coaches which go constantly to London, viz., in three days during the winter season, and in two days during the summer season, one from the Golden Talbot in Water Street, and the other from the Millstone in Castle Street.' There was a coach to Kendal, Lancaster, and the North, once a week. Perhaps the greatest evidence of the change made in a hundred years is the fact that in 1766, the intercourse between Liverpool and Manchester by public conveyances was limited to a single vehicle going three times a week in summer, and twice a week during the winter months. We must not omit, however, the stage-waggons, which at that time played a very important part in the facilities for business. Thus we read:

'The London stage-waggons come to and set out from the Nag's Head, Workhouse Lane (now College Lane), every Tuesday and Friday, with goods and passengers to and from London, or any part of the road; Thomas Sutton, bookkeeper, who may be spoke with every day in the week upon 'Change at 'Change hours.'

A.D. 1781.

In 1781 we have advertisements of three coaches to London, one daily in forty hours, two, three times a week in two days, and a diligence every day, taking two days on the road. The latter must have been a superior sort of conveyance, for the fare is 2*l.* 15*s.*, whilst by

coach it was only 1*l.* 11*s.* 6*d.* inside, and 1*l.* 1*s.* outside: The intercourse with Manchester had increased to three coaches and one diligence daily, besides two coaches in connection with the Duke's Canal. There were also two coaches daily to the North, and one three times a week to Wigan. Travelling.

The mails continued to be carried on horseback down to 1785, when Mr. Palmer's scheme for mail-coaches was adopted by the Government. In that year we find the following advertisement in Gore's 'Advertiser' of July 22: 'Golden Lion, Dale Street. The Original Mail-Coach with a Guard all the way, will set off on Monday next, the 25th instant, at four o'clock in the morning, and so to continue every day. To go in 30 hours. Fare 3*l.* 13*s.* 6*d.* Notice is hereby given that all Carters, Chaise Boys, &c., betwixt Liverpool and London, are to observe that when they hear the horn of the Guard to the Mail-Coach, they are immediately to turn out of the road and make way for the same. If this caution is not strictly attended to, they will assuredly be prosecuted, as the law in that case directs.' Mails. A.D. 1785.

In 1796 there were four coaches daily to London (including the mail), two to Manchester, one coach each to York, Bristol, Bolton, and Lancaster. A.D. 1796.

There were also two coaches every morning to Warrington in connection with the packet-boats on the Duke of Bridgwater's canal to Manchester.

This was the extent of the accommodation for travellers. About the beginning of this century Mr. Bretherton, then a tradesman in the town, was sagacious enough to perceive the opening, and enterprising enough to carry it out with perfect success. By ramifying his connections to all parts of the kingdom, and providing a superior style of conveyance at an increased rate of speed, travelling was soon developed to an extent never previously dreamt of. In 1805 the number of coaches leaving Liverpool daily had increased to about fifty, a Bretherton. A.D. 1805.

CHAP. V.

Travelling.

large proportion of which were worked by Messrs. Bretherton & Co. from the Crown Inn, Redcross Street, the Coach and Horses, Whitechapel, and the Angel and Cross Keys, Dale Street.

Not long after this the head-quarters were fixed at the Saracen's Head, Dale Street, the coaches leaving by an archway into Dale Street, and entering by Whitechapel and Peter Street, the latter street terminating in the Inn yard. In 1832 the coaches leaving Liverpool daily were about 100, though nearly the whole of the Manchester stages had been discontinued, owing to the construction of the railway. From this time they gradually decreased as one railway after another became completed, until they have now become—in this quarter—subjects of historical interest only. Mr. Bretherton realised an ample fortune by his spirit and enterprise. In the evening of his days he retired to Rainhill, where he purchased an estate and built a mansion, in which his widow long resided, and died at a very advanced age. His only daughter married first Captain Gerard, brother of Sir Robert Gerard, Bart., and secondly the Hon. Mr. Stapleton, whom she survives.

A.D. 1832.

Proposed hotel.

After the property between Sir Thomas's Buildings and Crosshall Street was removed, a grand scheme was brought out for the erection of an International Hotel on the site. A prospectus was issued, and on the strength of it some individuals were found enterprising enough to pay to the corporation about 1858 1,000*l.* as deposit-money under a contract for the purchase of the land. The scheme, however, would not float, shareholders were scarce, and after a twelvemonth's struggle the plan was abandoned and the deposit-money forfeited.

Public offices.

Soon afterwards a plan for the erection of a building to concentrate the Corporate Public Offices on the site was sanctioned by the council, and the result is the building now occupied as municipal offices. There are some novelties in the design, which is bold and imposing,

with a dominating tower and square pyramidal spire. Having been commenced by one architect, Mr. John Weightman, former Borough Surveyor, and completed by his successor, Mr. E. T. Robson, each gentleman has impressed his own character of design upon the structure, which it may be thought somewhat mars its unity of effect. It is unfortunate that the building approaches so near the line of Dale Street. A recess of fifteen or twenty yards back would have added power to the design, and have contributed materially to the effect of the street.

Improvements.

Let us now return to the north side of the street. We traced the improvements of 1808 as far as the Bull and Punch Bowl at the foot of Moorfields. The narrow part of the street from thence to the Police Court was widened on the north side under the Act of 1820. Near this long existed the coach manufactory of Messrs. Newby and Varty, afterwards removed to Lime Street, near the railway station, and subsequently discontinued.

A.D. 1820.

Hockenhall Alley.

Hockenhall Alley is so called from the family of the Hockenhalls, of Tranmere, who had property in the town, and who intermarried with the Moores. Before Dale Street was widened, a curious gabled brick house stood at the corner. Of this, or a house in the neighbourhood, Moore says: 'I bought this house of my cousin, Henry Hockenhall, of Tranmere.' Thomas Hockenhall served the office of mayor in 1610. The Old White Bear Inn stood near by, and between the two there were several rows of shambles erected about 1765, which continued down to about 1790.

Police Courts.

A little beyond Cheapside we arrive at the front of the Magistrates' Courts and Police Office. This site has had a variety of occupations, and contains a little history within itself. If any of our older maps are consulted, especially Perry's of 1769, the spot will be found marked 'Wyke's Court,' entering by a narrow mouth from Dale Street, widening out within into a tolerably

Wyke's Court.

CHAP. V.

John Wyke.

spacious area, flanked by buildings on each side, a garden at the end, railed off, with pleasant fields beyond. Here lived and died John Wyke, watch and watch tool and movement maker, a man probably little known beyond his immediate sphere, but who within that sphere fulfilled all the duties of a good citizen, and exercised a beneficial influence in his day and generation. He was a native of Prescot, which has been for a long period the seat of watch-tool and movement making.

Watch-making.

The mode in which this trade was introduced into the parish of Prescot is curious and interesting. The copyholders in this parish anciently held under the Barony of Halton, as armourers providing implements of war and armour for their lord. When tenure by military service was abolished, and when armour became less in request, the artificers, casting about for employment, took up the manufacture of files and small tools, which naturally led to clock and watch movements. John Wyke became famous for watch tools, and instruments for the cutting of toothed wheels, chains, mainsprings, &c. On clock-dials made by him his favourite mottoes were: 'On time's uncertain date man's eternal hours depend;' 'Time wasted is existence, used is life.' 'O time, than gold more sacred!' In 1758 he removed to Liverpool, and first established himself in King Street. In 1764–5 he commenced the erection of his premises in Dale Street, on land he had purchased before leaving Prescot; the buildings consisted of workshops, warehouse, and dwelling-house, finished with considerable taste. The house was crowned with an octagonal turret, with lights all round, surmounted with a lion rampant. A semi-octagonal projection, architecturally finished, commanded a view of the whole establishment. The garden behind had a pleasant summer-house, with a room over, having a conical roof, crowned with a pineapple at the top. Here for twenty-three years lived John Wyke, actively engaged in the duties which lay before him; and on

Buildings, Dale Street.

September 10, 1787, he entered into his rest. Now let us see what there was in his life at all worthy of commemoration.

In 1769, the year after the establishment of the Royal Academy in London, a vigorous attempt was made to establish in Liverpool an institution of a similar character. In this John Wyke was one of the most active promoters. In 1778 we find him amongst the philanthropists who established the Dispensary, which was commenced in a building on the east side of John Street. In 1782 the institution was removed to Church Street. In the affairs of the parish also Mr. Wyke did his duty as a good citizen. Induced by his friend Bentley, he had become one of the 'Octagonians' alluded to a few pages above; but when the chapel was abandoned he returned to the communion of the Establishment in which he had been brought up. In his last will and testament he was not unmindful of the charities of his native place (Prescot), and the Blue Coat Hospital, the Infirmary, and Dispensary of Liverpool partook of his bounty. His remains were deposited in the graveyard of Prescot Church, attended by a large company of friends. The Blue School Boys of Liverpool accompanied the *cortége* as far as Low Hill, singing a funeral hymn, and the children of Prescot met the body and took up the strain as it proceeded to the church. In this little life-history there is nothing very stirring, nor perhaps very remarkable; but if Milton's adage be true—

> Rightly to know
> That which before us lies in daily life,
> Is the true wisdom,

the man who by skill and industry in a useful art raises himself to eminence and respectability, and employs his means and influence in promoting objects of public usefulness and philanthropy, surely deserves honourable mention, when the scene of his life and labours comes within our notice.

CHAP. V.

After Wyke's decease the business does not appear to have been carried on. The buildings round the court were converted to various uses, and let in tenements.

Gas-light Company.

About 1820 the premises were purchased by the Gas-light Company, then newly established; the buildings were taken down, and gas-works erected, with offices to the front, presenting a neat elevation of brick and stone, with an arched gateway, over which was the Liverpool Liver, with the motto from Horace, 'Ex fumo dare lucem.' After the lapse of another thirty years a further change took place. The Gas Company removed their offices to Newington, and their works to various parts of the outskirts. The property was sold to the corporation, and now forms part of the site of the Magistrates' Courts and the police establishment.

Hatton Garden.

The street adjoining, called 'Hatton Garden,' it might naturally be supposed, takes its name from its London prototype, but in reality it is not so. The street, now so important a thoroughfare, only dates from the year 1806. About that time Messrs. John and Richard Johnson, bricklayers and builders, who had their premises in the adjoining Johnson Street, purchased a quantity of land which was then open fields and gardens, on which they erected lime-works, &c. The new street formed through this land they named after Hatton, a village near Warrington, their native place. This now forms a most important link of communication from north to south; and, under the powers of the Improvement Act of 1864, it has been considerably increased in width.

Johnson Street.

Johnson Street (so called from the owner of the land), North Street, and Trueman Street were laid out and partially built on from 1775 to 1785.

Bull Inn.

The Bull Inn, corner of Trueman Street, including the adjoining premises, now converted into shops, forming altogether a noble mansion,

John Houghton.

was built, about 1790, by Mr. John Houghton, a distiller or rectifier, who had his works in Trueman Street, adjoining. The same gentleman erected at his own expense

Christ Church, Hunter Street, to be referred to hereafter. The name of Fontenoy Street would be naturally ascribed to the Battle of Fontenoy, fought in 1745, but it was not formed until about 1780. In the map of 1785 it is only built on one side.

North of Dale Street.

The district lying behind the north side of Dale Street, extending from Marybone to Byrom Street remained open fields down to the early years of the present century. It was part of the patrimony of the Crosses. Down to the latter part of the last century it was bounded on the east by the open brook, which ran along the course of Byrom Street into the Pool. After being used as brick yards for about forty years, in 1806 or 1807 building operations were commenced. Great Crosshall Street was laid out as a spacious thoroughfare, connecting Byrom Street, Tithebarn Street, and Vauxhall Road. The streets leading from Dale Street northwards, Fontenoy Street, Trueman Street, &c., were continued forward into Great Crosshall Street. Beyond this street the land was laid out principally for cottages. Some of the leading lines, Adlington Street, Bispham Street, &c., were sufficiently wide; others, such as Lace Street, Henry Edward Street, and Harrison Street, were wretchedly narrow and contracted, but the whole arrangement was essentially vicious in one respect—the crowding together of too many tenements on a given area. The cottages in themselves, perhaps, were not much to complain of, had adequate space been afforded for ventilation and accessories, but the system of courts closed at one end with a narrow passage for access at the other, where the air stagnated, and was additionally poisoned by the open privies and ashpits standing in the courts, was one which the most scrupulous cleanliness could only render endurable, and unfortunately the exigencies of commerce have attracted a class of unskilled labourers, whose normal habits have tended to intensify the evil. Since public attention has been called to the subject, much has

Streets northwards.

Cottage buildings.

CHAP. V.

Cottage buildings.

been done in the way of opening out the entrances to the closed up courts, and providing suitable conveniences for the poor inhabitants, but the only thorough remedy which could be applied would be entire reconstruction. Means are not wanting for the elevation of the toiling masses in the locality, but the provision for religious instruction is somewhat scant. Within the large densely crowded irregular triangle, extending from the Town-hall to Bevington Bush, bounded on the north by Tithebarn Street and Marybone, and on the south and east by Dale Street and Byrom Street, comprising the whole of Exchange Ward, except the offices and warehouses west of the Exchange, there is no English Protestant place of worship. There existed formerly a Welsh Calvinistic chapel at the top of Great Crosshall Street, now closed, and a Welsh Baptist chapel on the south side of the same street. The whole of the English population is left to the care of the Roman Catholics, who have two large churches, one St. Mary's, in Edmund Street, the other, Holy Cross Church, on the north side of Great Crosshall Street, the latter erected by the munificence of a private individual. The Catholic body have also large schools connected with Holy Cross Church, and other establishments at the top of Edgar Street and in Fontenoy Street. There are national schools in Moorfields connected with St. Nicholas's Church, and in Great Crosshall Street connected with St. John's Church. The North Corporation School, in which about 1,500 children are educated, lies on the very edge of this district.

Churches and chapels.

Schools.

Gin-palaces and public-houses abound, but there is great lack of any attempt at the means of popular recreation, or amusement of an innocent, or indeed of any kind, and not a single open space, square, or playground other than the public streets, to which the toiling multitudes can have access.

I have dwelt a little on these particulars, as exhibiting the mode of growth of great cities in modern times.

Here is a district as populous as many a respectable-sized town, the greater part of which has sprung into existence almost within the memory of persons now living, and the growth of which may be aptly described in the language of Holy Writ 'as if a man should cast seed into the ground, and should sleep and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, *he knoweth not how*.' It might be added—'he careth not how.' The ignorance and indifference under which the crowding process has been going forward, is much to be deplored. A more intelligent as well as philanthropic spirit has been gradually developed, the fruit of melancholy experience and stern necessity, and under its influence we have been slowly groping our way with many stumbles and shortcomings into the light of practical knowledge. To redeem the past will be a serious work of time, perseverance, and outlay.

Northern District.

Before closing this chapter, if the gentle reader will accompany me, we will just step across Marybone to make a survey. Turning a few yards up Banastre Street, we come to a grimy-looking brick shed, in and out of which throngs are continually passing, with garments of all colours and textures. The appearance of most of them indicates that,

Marybone.

Paddy's Market.

> Though they are on pleasure bent,
> They have a frugal mind.

Let us enter. We find ourselves in a moderately lofty building lighted from the top, with an earthen floor, and surrounded by a rude wooden gallery. This is Paddy's Market; or, if you prefer the more euphonious and high-sounding title—'St. Patrick's Bazaar.' It smells of the turf—turfy. Milesian to the core, you may hear the brogue in every variety of accent. Rag Fair, in London, is usually supposed to be in the hands of the Hebrew race; in Liverpool the sons and daughters of Erin have it all to themselves. Clothing of all forms,

CHAP. V.

Paddy's Market.

fashions, colours, and textures; silks and satins, velvet and brocade, broadcloth, kerseymere, and tweed, are piled up in assorted heaps for the attraction of customers. Chaffering and bargaining, noise, din, and confusion prevail. There is much to amuse, and, it may be, to turn into ridicule, if we are so disposed; but the scene gives food for reflection of a sadder and, it may be, of a more sentimental kind. If these garments could speak, what histories might they not unfold, what studies of character might they display! Here is a suite of bridal attire of antique cut and pattern; its brightness has faded, its lustre no longer dazzles the eye. But what of the fair form on which it was once displayed? Is the eye still bright, does the cheek dimple with a happy smile in the midst of a dear domestic circle? Or has the brightness of anticipation faded away into gloom and disappointment, and does sadness brood over the domestic hearth? Here is a solemn suit of sables of the most fashionable cut. Were they first put on to follow to the grave the extinguished light of the dwelling, the one dearer than life itself? Or were they only the outward sign of a simulated grief, only half-concealing the joy of an inherited accession to fortune? Look at this elegant bonnet, bright with flowers a little the worse for wear, which this stout, honest-looking Irish servant-of-all-work is bargaining for. Won't Biddy look fine when she goes to mass next Sunday? Won't Paddy *bach* think her prettier than ever? Mistresses may rail as they please at the love of finery in servants, and philosophers may lay down sumptuary regulations as to the dress becoming the different classes of society, but the love of beautiful forms and colours is innate in woman—distorted as it too frequently is—and contributes greatly to the charm of her character. But 'hallo, my fancy, whither wilt thou go?' Whilst we are moralising, an ancient-looking 'cove,' anxious for business, accosts us. 'Buying, sir? What would you like,

sir?' 'Nothing to-day, thank you.' We will not carry away garments, but a peep into a new chapter in human life—

> And at our more considered time we'll read,
> Answer and think upon this business.

And so ends our perambulation of the Dale Street district.

CHAPTER VI.

LORD STREET TO SOUTH CASTLE STREET, ETC.

CHAP. VI.

OUR perambulations have hitherto been confined to the more ancient streets of the town, those of which it may be said 'that the memory of man knoweth not to the contrary.' Before crossing the brook and directing our attention to the more modern part of the town, let us devote a few pages to a quarter which may in one sense of the word be termed the 'mediæval district.'

Castle Hey.

On the east side of the Castle, extending from the fosse to the bank of the tidal stream lay the 'Castle Hey' and the 'Castle Orchard.' These are several times referred to in ancient documents. The members of the

Molyneux family.

Molyneux family, though not hereditary constables of the Castle, were frequently appointed to the office, and from time to time they held leases of the Crown property in the borough.

A.D. 1628.

In 1628 Charles I., as already recorded, sold to a company of merchants in London the fee-farm rents and lands within the Borough of Liverpool. These were again disposed of by the purchasers, and thus the 'Castle Orchard' fell into the hands of the Molyneux family.

A.D. 1668. Castle Orchard.

This was the state of things soon after the 'Moore Rental' was written, say 1668–70. A footpath led down the Castle Orchard to the pool stream, which was probably crossed by a foot bridge, leading to the Great Heath

Drawn by H. Melville

Engraved on Steel by J. Woodcock

PALL MALL EAST, AND SOUTH-WEST ANGLE.

or Common, occupying a large portion of the land east of the pool and south of London Road. The disputes which arose between Lord Molyneux and the corporation respecting the right of way, and its fortunate termination by the lease and subsequent sale of the manorial rights to the corporation, have already been recorded.[1]

Lord Street formed.

After this treaty the street (Lord Street, at first Lord Molyneux Street), was formed and a stone bridge built across the stream. This bridge still exists a few feet under the pavement. In the year 1851 when excavations were being made for the sewerage, the arch of the bridge was uncovered and brought into view. The vault was of hewn stone well put together; the carriage way about 15 feet in width. Lord Molyneux appears to have commenced building before the transactions referred to; for, in 1667, Moore, speaking of the land lying south of Lord Street and of a small close of ground there, says, 'I wish you had given one hundred pounds for it, for had you but this close, then might you build a most brave street or two; all from Lord Mullineux's buildings to the Pool House would be yours,' &c.

Lord Molyneux's house.

The Molyneux family had a house near the top of Lord Street on the north side. It was a handsome mansion with five windows in front, and an arched entrance in the centre, having the armorial bearings over. Commerce Court, now Commerce Buildings, extending back to Harrington Street, occupies the site.

Castle Ditch.

As the Castle Orchard abutted on the Castle Ditch, the fosse became a highway lined with buildings on both sides. This was occupied as the Potato Market, and is so called in Perry's map (1769). The original Lord Street was scarcely wide enough for two carriages to pass, and the way into it from Castle Street was extremely tortuous. As the town extended in the direction of Church Street, Lord Street became an important artery, crowded with vehicles and passengers. For many

[1] Vol. i. p. 134 *et seq.*

CHAP. VI.

years there was no outlet laterally from Lord Street. John Street terminated in Harrington Street on the north side, and on the south there was no opening between Lord Street and Cable Street. This want was supplied about 1780, when John Street was continued into Lord Street, and a new street called Marshall Street, cut through in continuation to Cable Street. During the greater part of the eighteenth century, Lord Street contained many respectable residences. Mr. Thomas Golightly, mayor in 1772, lived in this street. He afterwards became treasurer to the corporation, and survived to a very advanced age, dying about the year 1819. Several eminent merchants, and Mr. Edmund Rigby, comptroller of the Customs, lived here. The property of the last-named gentleman, situated on the north side of the street, still continues in the hands of his descendants, and, having been converted into shops and offices, produces a very large revenue. It has recently been rebuilt in a very handsome style of architecture. In 1781 Mr. Roscoe resided with his father at No. 51, Lord Street. In the latter part of the century, most of the houses were converted into shops or taverns. The most noted of the latter were the Castle Hotel and the Brown Cow Tavern. In 1783 a prospectus was brought out 'For the establishment of a coffee-room, hotel, and tavern, at Liverpool, upon a tontine scheme, with benefit of survivorship.' This was so far successful that a large building was erected at the bottom of Lord Street, corner of Whitechapel, and opened about 1785 as the New Hotel. It afterwards changed its name to the Royal Hotel, or Bates's Hotel, from the name of the landlord, Mr. John Bates. It does not seem to have been very successful, for after a career of about twenty years in 1805, it was purchased by Mr. Elias Joseph, a silversmith in Castle Street, and converted into shops. The hotel itself has been rebuilt and set back for the improvement of Whitechapel, but the stables and outbuildings still remain up an archway from Lord

Inhabitants.

Hotel.

Drawn by Harwood. Engraved by J. T. Willis

PART OF LORD STREET, WITH ST. GEORGE'S CHURCH IN THE DISTANCE.

TO THE MEMORY OF THE LATE J. B. HOLLINSHEAD ESQ. THIS PLATE IS INSCRIBED

BY THE PUBLISHERS

Street, converted into mercantile buildings. Mr. Joseph was a Jewish gentleman, who realised a large fortune by his own industry and enterprise. His property descended to the Barneds, a name which has acquired an unenviable notoriety from the unfortunate bank bearing the name. This bank was really a continuation of the business established by Elias Joseph, and for many years was conducted in conjunction with the business of a gold and silver-smith on the premises north side of Lord Street, where the bank finally came to so disastrous a termination. Another bank existed for many years at No. 16, under the firm of Gregson, Parkes & Clay. Mr. Gregson was the Receiver-General of the Land Tax for the county of Lancaster, and resided at a noble mansion, corner of Brunswick Road (then Folly Lane) and Everton Road, where was the well-known 'Gregson's Well.' Another of the partners was Mr. Thomas Parke, the father of Mr. Baron Parke, afterwards Lord Wensleydale.

CHAP. VI.

Elias Joseph.

Banks.

In the Binns collection in the Free Public Library, there is a coloured drawing of the date of about 1790, giving a portion of the south side of the street at the lower end. The buildings are principally shops with curved bow windows and small squares. On the right side are two of the original seventeenth-century houses with gabled dormers and mullioned windows with lead lights. The buildings are brick, mostly two storeys in height, but at the lower end, adjoining the passage leading to the Brown Cow Tavern, is a lofty four-storied warehouse with a bow-windowed shop below, long occupied by Mr. Ormandy, bookseller. The appearance of the street is quiet. There is the usual sedan-chair and the water-cart, both institutions of the day. The shops shown are those of a printseller, chinaware dealer, a tailor, and a toy dealer.

View in 1790.

Views of Lord Street.

Herdman [1] gives a view of the north side taken in 1798. Bates's Hotel presents a conspicuous appearance.

A.D. 1798.

[1] 'Pictorial Relics,' vol. ii. p. 40.

CHAP. VI.

The buildings higher up the street are brick-built dwelling-houses, two storeys in height, adjoining which are some of the original cottages built of stone, having one low story, and dormer windows in the roof.

A.D. 1820.

A local poet writing in 1820, thus apostrophises Lord Street in mock heroic strain :—

> Thy beauties, Lord Street, next attract the eye.
> (The Corporation should have made thee wider),
> Along its well-trod pavement you may spy
> Cart, carriage, gig, pedestrian and rider;
> Here slumbering mud-beds lend their sullen dye,
> So if you wish to cross, take a good stride, or
> Perhaps your feet by some cursed chance may dart in,
> And soil th' unrivalled jet of 'Day and Martin.'

Improvements, A.D. 1826.

The inconvenience of the narrow and tortuous access to the eastern part of the town led to the obtaining of an Act of Parliament in 1826, by which, along with many other improvements, Lord Street was widened to at least four times its original breadth, and the street carried direct through to Castle Street. The new buildings erected on the south side were according to designs prepared by the then corporation surveyor, Mr. John Foster. The result can scarcely be called satisfactory. At that time Roman cement or compo, had been recently introduced, and had begun to lend its meretricious aid in supplying cheap architectural features. With more ambitious effort and far greater pretence, the Roman cemented façades of Lord Street by no means equal the stately simplicity of the original brick elevations of the west side of Castle Street. There is an expressionless flatness and want of character about the former which gives the eye nothing to dwell upon, but which has been to a considerable extent redeemed by the subsequent reconstruction of the shop fronts upon improved designs, glistening with all the lustre of plate glass and polished mahogany.

Architecture.

Cost of improvements.

The expense of the widening of Lord Street was about 170,000*l.*, which, with all the other improvements down

to a period comparatively recent, was defrayed out of the corporate purse without the imposition of any tax. It is a sort of poetical justice that this spacious avenue should have been constructed with the funds arising from the transactions to which the original project of the street had given rise. Before quitting Lord Street, I would not omit to pay the tribute of honourable mention to the memory of one who for many years conducted his business in this street, I mean Mr. Egerton Smith, the founder and editor of the 'Liverpool Mercury.' He was born in Liverpool, where his progenitors appear to have resided for some generations, as will appear from the following advertisement, dated May 25, 1759 :—

Egerton Smith.

'The school lately kept in Redcross Street by Mr. William Smith, writing master, deceased, is continued by his son Edgerton Smith, where any gentlemen that shall think proper to commit their children to his instruction, may depend on their being carefully and expeditiously taught writing, arithmetick, merchants' accounts, navigation, geography, the use of the globes, maps, charts, planispheres, the rudiments of astronomy, geometry, &c. N.B. those persons that have already paid Mr. William Smith the full price for navigation, merchants' accounts, geography, and the use of the globes, are at liberty to come and make themselves compleat masters of that branch without any additional expence.'

Mr. Smith soon after added to his occupations that of a printer, and before 1780 he removed to premises in Pool Lane, where he carried on the business of a printer, stationer, and mathematical instrument maker. After his decease, the business was continued by his two sons Egerton and William, and subsequently by Egerton alone. In 1811, the latter established the 'Liverpool Mercury,' a weekly paper of small folio size, published on Friday. In 1827 the business was removed to No. 76, Lord Street, where Egerton continued to labour in his vocation to the time of his decease. His lot was cast in a stormy period

'Liverpool Mercury.'

CHAP. VI.

Egerton Smith.

of politics and war. He advocated liberal opinions with zeal and earnestness at a time when such opinions were anything but popular, and he lived to see most of the reforms which he had advocated for almost a lifetime, become the law of the land. Though an ardent, fearless, outspoken politician, he was one of the most gentle and guileless of men, ready to do a good turn to his neighbour at any sacrifice to himself. There was about him a certain '*bonhomie*,' which endeared him most to those who knew him best. He had always some harmless hobby on which he caracoled to the amusement of the public. At one time it was cork jackets for swimming and saving life; at another it was feats of swimming, in which he was a great adept; at another period, the study of spinning tops was expatiated on from week to week. In the year 1817, he established a weekly literary journal called the 'Kaleidoscope,' which was carried on for many years with great success, and was the forerunner of the 'Chambers's Journals,' 'All the Year Rounds,' &c., of later days. In every benevolent undertaking, he was always ready to aid with purse and pen. He was one of the originators of the Strangers' Friend Society, a local charity for visiting and relieving the poor at their own homes, which was carried on for many years very beneficially until finally merged in the Central Relief Fund. In this society he had for an active coadjutor his great political opponent Mr. Thomas Kaye of the 'Liverpool Courier.' At length, after a long, laborious, and useful life, he entered into rest, November 18, 1841.

'Kaleidoscope.'

A memorial statue by Carew, erected by public subscription, is placed in the entrance hall of the Free Library and Museum.

On the pedestal is placed the following inscription:—

To EGERTON SMITH,
By public subscription,
1843.

The indefatigable friend of Humanity, the protector of the Brute Creation, the fearless Assailant of Oppression in all its forms, the Advocate of the universal diffusion of Knowledge, of Free Trade, of Civil and Religious Liberty in every land.

Born June 19, 1774.
Died November 18, 1841.

Harrington Street. Castle Hey.

From Lord Street, 'the Castle Orchard,' we will now proceed to Harrington Street, 'the Castle Hey.' From its name we may infer that this field was an appurtenance to the castle. If so, it probably passed with the sale of the Crown property by Charles I., in 1628. However this may be, in 1667 it belonged to the Tarletons of Aigburth, with the exception of four lands or butts which were the property of the Moores. Moore says, in his 'Rental': 'For these lands I pay three pence burgage for, according to my acquittance.' This confirms the view that the land belonged originally to the Crown. At the beginning of the eighteenth century the Aigburth branch of the Tarletons became extinct in the male line; and by the marriage of the heiress Dorothy Tarleton the property passed to the Harringtons. In 1713, John Harrington of Aigburth petitions the Lords for a bill to sell his wife's property in Liverpool, consisting of forty-three tenements. The street had the name of Harrington Street in 1725; but in Perry's map of 1769 it is called 'Castle Hey, or Harrington Street.' During the first quarter of the last century it had been nearly built up as far as Rainford's Garden.

A.D. 1725.

Sadler and Green.

There is one very interesting historical association connected with Harrington Street which should not be passed over without notice. The art of printing on pottery from engraved plates was here discovered and first carried out by Mr. John Sadler and his partner, Guy Green.

CHAP. VI.

Sadler and Green.

Adam, the father of John Sadler, had been an old soldier under Marlborough, and after the wars settled in Liverpool as a printer. He printed several books, amongst the rest a collection of songs set to music, called 'The Muse's Delight,' which is still valued by book-collectors. His son John learned the art of engraving, and in 1748 he married and commenced business on his own account in Harrington Street. Being an industrious man, and success attending his efforts, an attempt was made by his rivals in trade to drive him away, the supposed state of the law preventing any man but a freeman from opening a shop within the borough. The corporation actually prosecuted poor Sadler at the Assizes at Lancaster, but failed, from being unable to prove their claim of jurisdiction.

Printing on pottery.

Mr. Sadler gained his first idea of applying the art of printing to the ornamentation of pottery from seeing his children stick some waste prints which he had given them on pieces of broken earthenware obtained from the potteries in the neighbourhood. Seeing here the germ of a valuable discovery, he silently worked out the idea, and, after many fruitless trials, at last succeeded. He had a friend, Guy Green, who had lately succeeded the elder Sadler in the printing establishment, a clever, active man of business. To him he imparted his discovery, and the two, working together, perfected the invention. They had made application for letters patent to protect themselves, but ultimately abandoned the intention, trusting rather to their own skill and secrecy for their security.

A.D. 1752.

The invention was brought out in 1752. Several early specimens of the art, bearing the names of Sadler and Green, may be seen in the Mayer collection in the Liverpool Public Museum.

Wedgwood.

Josiah Wedgwood, then in the full career of his marvellous art-progress, and always on the look-out for aid from every quarter, was quick to appreciate the advantage of the new art. He entered into

Queen's ware.

arrangements under which his celebrated Queen's Ware

was regularly transmitted by waggon to Liverpool, to be printed by Sadler and Green and returned to Etruria. This was continued nearly to the time of his death; but shortly before that event persons were sent down to Liverpool to be instructed, and the process was transferred to Staffordshire. Sadler and Green were themselves china manufacturers, in Harrington Street. Sadler had retired before 1781, the business being carried on for a number of years—nearly to the close of the century—by Guy Green alone. John Sadler's remains lie in Sefton Church, with this inscription above them :—

Here lies the body of Mr. John Sadler from Liverpool, who departed this life the 10th of December, 1789, aged 69.[1]

Dr. Dobson.

In the second half of the last century a house in Harrington Street was occupied by Dr. Matthew Dobson, a physician of some celebrity. After residing for some years in Liverpool he removed to Bath, where he practised till the time of his decease, in 1784. He was a Fellow of the Royal Society, and a frequent contributor to the 'Philosophical Transactions.'

St. Mary's Church.

There was formerly a small church, called St. Mary's, on the south side of Harrington Street, between North John Street and Doran's Lane. There is some obscurity about its history. Mr. E. Baines[2] states that immediately after the Revolution of 1688 a Nonconformist chapel was erected in Castle Hey, which continued until 1727, when the congregation removed to the then new chapel in Benn's Garden. This may have been the precursor of the church, but it is hardly probable, as no indication is given of St. Mary's until December 1775, when it is announced by an advertisement in Gore's 'Advertiser' that 'the Lord Bishop of Chester has been pleased to license the Rev. Mr. Bragg minister of St. Mary's, in this

[1] The above account is condensed from a very interesting article on 'Liverpool Pottery' by Mr. Jos. Mayer, F.S.A., in the 'Transactions' of the Historic Society of Lancashire and Cheshire for 1855.

[2] 'History of Lancashire,' 4-104.

CHAP. VI.

St. Mary's Church.

town.' The building was of brick, with a plain, unpretending exterior. Mr. Bragg continued in the incumbency until 1804, and was succeeded by a Mr. Vickers. In 1809 the church, which was never consecrated, was taken down, and Messrs. Downwards' sugar-refinery erected on the site. Bragg was a person of somewhat peculiar opinions and eccentric conduct, which afforded some sport for the wits of the day. The following is a specimen :—

Bragg.

On entering St. Mary's the first thing you see,
Inclosed in a frame are the letters J B ;
Just over the altar, where papists do paint
The Virgin, St. Francis, or some other saint.

Said I to my friend, what can those letters mean ?
I own in that place, I esteem them profane.
'A saint newly canonised,' said an arch wag,
'Uncalendered yet, sir, the pious Joe Bragg.'

'His wife for her good works and charity famed,
Is sanctified too, and the church from her named,
Two saints in one house we so seldom do meet,
That where they now dwell, sir, is called the *Lord's Street.*

Rainford's Garden.

Rainford's Garden takes its name from Peter Rainford, mayor in 1740. It was at one time a pleasant place of residence. Mr. William James, merchant, grandfather of Mr. William James, of Barrock Lodge, formerly M.P. for Cumberland, resided here. His house was afterwards occupied by the firm of Aspinwall, Roscoe, and Lace, solicitors.

Let us now turn our attention to the streets south of Lord Street. I have already stated that down to about 1780 there were no lateral openings from Lord Street. At that time a new street was cut between Lord Street and Cable Street, called Marshall Street; from this to the Old Dock the communication was continued by a zigzag series of narrow lanes, called Love Lane and Trafford's Wyent. In these and similar narrow dark alleys, the most respectable inhabitants resided and the

Marshall Street, &c.

best shops were situated. The family of the Wilsons carried on for nearly a century the business of haberdashers and silk-mercers on the Old Dock Quay, near the corner of Trafford's Wyent. It was for many years the most celebrated shop of the kind in Liverpool. Mr. Thomas Wilson, who was mayor in 1771, resided in Trafford's Wyent. Henry Trafford, from whom the lane probably derived its name, was mayor in 1740, and died in office. The family of Trafford during the greater part of the last century filled a prominent position amongst the magnates of Liverpool. Edward Trafford was mayor in 1742; and Henry Trafford, nephew of the first-named Henry, was bailiff in 1766. The daughter of Edward Trafford married John Leigh, Esq., of Oughtrington, Cheshire. Their son, Trafford Leigh, in 1791 assumed the name and arms of Trafford.

Wilson.

Trafford.

Near the end of Trafford's Wyent, and opening from Cooper's Row, up a flight of steps, formerly stood a small quadrangle, called 'Brooks's Square.' Its quaint, old-fashioned houses remained standing long after the erection of the new Custom-house and the improvements in the neighbourhood. It was constructed about the beginning of the eighteenth century, as it is shown in Eyer's map of 1725, though it is not specifically described in Chadwick's, of the same year. The family of Brooke, or Brooks, is of great antiquity in the town of Liverpool. Giles Brooke was bailiff in 1584, and mayor in 1592. Egidius Brooke filled the civic chair in 1601. Humphrey Brooke, the bold Liverpool captain, brought to England the first tidings of the sailing of the Spanish Armada, in 1588; and for three centuries various members of the family have at different times filled offices of usefulness in the community. John Brooks was bailiff in 1733, mayor in 1743. Roger Brooks, who died in 1753, bequeathed 250*l.* to the Blue Coat Hospital. In the middle of the last century Joseph and Jonathan Brooks were the great builders of the town, carrying on also business as

Brooks's Square.

Brooks.

CHAP. VI.

Brooks.

merchants. Joseph was president of the Infirmary in 1771, and interested himself much in the welfare of the poor, having been for some time treasurer of the Workhouse, where his portrait hangs in the board-room. At his death, in 1788, he bequeathed 200*l.* to the Blue Coat Hospital. Being a Nonconformist, a monument was erected to his memory in Key Street Chapel, afterwards removed to Paradise Street, bearing the following inscription :—

To the memory of JOSEPH BROOKS, Esquire, who died the 12th February, 1788, in the 82nd year of his age. Endowed by nature with an excellent understanding, and favoured by Providence with an ample fortune, he declined the gratifications of luxury and the pursuits of ambition, and employed his time and talents in active exertions for the welfare of the town of Liverpool, particularly to the relief and comfort of the poor. His surviving relations placed this monument here as a testimony of their respect for his character. The gratitude of those who experienced his charity will give him more honourable praise.

Joseph Brooks, jun., nephew of the above, was bailiff in 1784, and again in 1802. In 1797 he was a candidate for the civic chair, along with Mr. Thomas Staniforth, when there ensued one of the most severe contests ever known in the town, which I have recorded above. He was the father of the late well-known venerable Archdeacon Brooks, who for more than fifty years filled a large place in the general esteem of the inhabitants, and whose monumental statue fills a niche in St. George's Hall. Another son, Major Edward Brooks, obtained celebrity in a less creditable manner. The story is a painful one, but it is curious, as illustrative of the manners and customs of the time when the 'code' of honour demanded the penalty of bloodshed for the most trifling offence. Major Brooks had been in the Lancashire Militia; and in 1803, on the death of Mr. Bryan Blundell, who held the office of customs jerquer, he was promoted to the post, through the influence of Colonel Bolton, who had considerable influence with the

Major Brooks.

Government, having at his own expense raised and equipped a regiment of Volunteers 600 strong. Some time after his appointment Major Brooks applied for an increase of salary. This application, strange to say, was referred to the West India Association, of which Colonel Bolton was president, to report upon. The report was adverse to the major's claims. This decision, rightly or wrongly, he attributed to the influence of Colonel Bolton, who, it was reported, had said that '700*l.* a-year was enough for a young unmarried man.' The major, having a proud, irascible disposition, was deeply mortified, and did his utmost to fasten a quarrel upon his recent benefactor. At length a hostile meeting was arranged, to come off at a place called Miller's Dam, on the Aigburth Road. In the meantime rumours of the intended duel had got abroad, and the parties were arrested by the magistrates and bound over to keep the peace for twelve months. This arrest Major Brooks did not scruple to attribute to the influence of Colonel Bolton himself, without the slightest shadow of foundation, it being afterwards ascertained that the secret had oozed out from one of Major Brooks's own friends. Before the twelve months had lapsed Brooks took an opportunity of publicly insulting the colonel in open day in Castle Street. A challenge from Colonel Bolton was the result. The twelve months bond expired on December 20, 1805; and on the afternoon of that day the meeting took place in a field near Fairclough Lane, then a quiet rural road leading from the top of Pembroke Place to Low Hill. The spot must have been very near the site of St. Jude's Church. Major Brooks was accompanied by Mr. Forbes, and Colonel Bolton had Mr. Harris for his second. The well-known Harry Park, the surgeon, was taken up by Colonel Bolton in his carriage as he passed his door.

Major Brooks.

Duel with Bolton.

When they arrived on the ground it was so dark that they could not see to load the pistols. Candles were therefore procured; and here, in the dreary, cold

CHAP VI.

Brooks and Bolton.

December night, the tragedy proceeded to its *dénouement*. What a scene for the pencil of a Salvator Rosa! The generous, public-spirited, kind-hearted British merchant compelled by the fantastic hallucination of the public opinion of the day to imperil his life because the man whom he had fostered and cherished chose to treat him with base ingratitude!

Nemesis, however, claimed her victim. The major fired first, without harming the colonel, who returned the shot, hitting his opponent in the eye and killing him on the spot. The fatal report might have been heard at the major's house, which stood at the corner of Daulby Street, not more than two hundred yards distant.

At the coroner's inquest a verdict of wilful murder was found; but no prosecution was ever instituted, public opinion being entirely in favour of Colonel Bolton.[1]

Pool Lane.

From Brooks's Square is but a step to Pool Lane (now South Castle Street). A road to the Pool southwards from the castle no doubt existed from time immemorial, and it is tolerably certain that there was a wooden bridge at its mouth, extending from near the bottom of South John Street to a point in Hanover Street near the foot of Duke Street. Moore, in his 'Rental,' makes repeated mention of this bridge and of the street. He was sagacious enough to foresee the capabilities of the site for the nascent commerce of the port. Speaking of a field at the point of land between the pool and the river, he says: 'Here is a most convenient parcel of land, if ever the Pool be cut navigable, to build almost round it; there not being the like place in Liverpool to the river side for cellars and warehouses. . . . For the worth of this place, I know not how to value it; for if the Pool shall ever be cut, it may be worth five hundred pounds to you; therefore be careful what you do with it.'

'Moore Rental.'

[1] The details of this duel are taken from an interesting little volume, entitled 'Recollections of Old Liverpool,' published in 1863 under the pseudonym of a 'nonogenarian.'

Moore had lands also on the east side of Pool Lane; but they were, unfortunately, intersected by lands belonging to other persons. With a keen eye to the future, he thus counsels his son and heir in reference thereto:—

'If you could buy them all, or indeed two of them, then add your own close, and you might have a little town there, built all on your own land. You might make one entire street to begin at the gate that goes into Alderman Lorting's close (near the top of Cable Street), and then run south-east directly to the Pool Bridge (near the bottom of South John Street); but remember you leave convenient land to make a street to face the Pool east (the line of the present Paradise Street), if ever it be cut, and so to make houses fronting the Pool, and their back sides to go backward till they reach the back sides of the street above said; then may you likewise cause houses to be built all up the Pool Lane to the castle, and leave little back sides to them, to run eastward till they reach the back sides (on the west side) of the intended street above said. These four closes may be the greatest concern you have in England; for if the Pool be made navigable the shipping must lie along these closes, and the trade will be all in them from the whole town. You may have building here worth far more than twenty thousand pounds, if God send peace and prosper trade. I do not question but to see this brought much to a head in my time.'

Moore here shows great sagacity and foresight; but, alas!

> The best laid schemes o' mice an' men,
> Gang aft a—gley.

The street so earnestly recommended was never cut. The navigation of the Pool was developed, but in quite a different manner to that anticipated by him; and, so far from either he or his son 'seeing it brought to a head in their time,' not many years elapsed before their estates

CHAP. VI.

passed into other hands and the place knew them no more.

The above extract shows the tendency of men's thoughts towards the improvement of the port. The general idea was to enclose, deepen, and extend the Pool by a canal along the natural course of the stream, so as to form a haven for shipping. About the end of the seventeenth century the land began to be built upon. In 1700 the land on which Atherton Street is built was granted by the corporation to one of its members, Mr. Peter Atherton, who was bailiff in 1673. In the conveyance it is stipulated that 'a bridge shall be built over the extended canal,' at the expense of the town. A similar conveyance to Mr. Thomas Ackers of land at the bottom of Cable Street describes it as land lying 'all along the new intended canal.' The scheme at length ripened so far that in 1708 Mr. Thomas Steers was brought down from London, as engineer, to prepare a plan and execute the necessary works. His report changed the whole aspect of affairs. The canal was abandoned, and application was made to Parliament for power to construct a wet dock. To this I have already referred in the history of the Dock estate.

Building. A.D. 1700. Atherton Street.

During the construction of the Old Dock it was thought advisable to remove the Custom-house from the bottom of Water Street to a more suitable building on the quay of the new dock. The old building belonged to Alderman Sylvester Moorcroft, mayor in 1706. He undertook to erect the new building at his own cost, charging a rent for its occupation. The building was commodious and handsome for the period. It stood at the east end of the dock, near the site of the present Sailors' Home; and, with alterations from time to time, continued to serve the purposes of the port for about a century and a quarter, down to the completion of the new Revenue buildings. Moorcroft was a draper in the town. His election to the civic chair is said to have been sorely against his will.

Custom-house.

Sylvester Moorcroft.

In 1716 he was elected the first treasurer of the corporation, at a salary of 50*l.* per annum, which he held until 1720. CHAP. VI. 1725.

In the maps of 1725 the Custom-house is shown surrounded with open fields; and Thomas, Cable, Atherton, and King Streets are unbuilt for about one-fourth of their length from the bottom.

Pool Lane during the first half of the eighteenth century must have been a very quiet, secluded neighbourhood, since the access from Castle Street was so contracted as to be impassable for wheel carriages, which had to go by the circuitous route of Preeson's Row. About the end of the seventeenth century Mr. James Benn, mayor in 1697, had a house, with large garden, on the west side. This property, about twenty years afterwards, was laid out for buildings, the enclosure taking the name of 'Benn's Garden,' to which I have already referred. Several of the magnates of Liverpool resided in Pool Lane. Mr. William Crosbie, mayor in 1776; his son, mayor in 1779; and Mr. Peter Rigby, mayor in 1774, resided in this street. When the access was opened out in 1786, giving a direct route to the Old Dock, Pool Lane became gradually a street of shops. After the filling up of the Old Dock, in 1828, the street to some extent lost its prestige, the shops for the supply of shipping migrated elsewhere, and the neighbourhood remained under a cloud for some years. In 1839 the west side was widened and rebuilt.

Benn. Crosbie. Rigby. Decline.

The Pool having been destroyed, its name was voted vulgar and antiquated, and to obliterate its memory the name of the street was changed to South Castle Street. With the improved avenue and the progress of commerce, the street under its new name has taken its rank as one of the leading lines of the town.

Change of name.

Near the top of Pool Lane there existed a relic of the olden time, only recently swept away. In the early part of the last century a market or shambles for butchers'

Butchers' shambles.

CHAP. VI.

Butchers' shambles.

meat existed in an alley extending from Pool Lane, with an elbow into Cable Street. At that time the general market was held in Castle Street and the open spaces round. When the market was removed, in 1823, these shambles, being private property, were still continued, and were principally frequented by dealers from the country. Gradually the trade fell off, customers went elsewhere; one stall after another was vacated, until the ancient market was feebly represented by one or two rickety old standings, patiently waiting for dissolution. About 1864 the property was sold, and shops and offices built upon the site.

Thomas Street, &c.

The four streets running from Pool Lane to Paradise Street have nothing very remarkable in their history. Thomas Street and Atherton Street until very recently preserved many specimens of their original architecture,[1] which are now fast passing away.

King Street.

In King Street a large house opposite the Bank was the mansion of the Trafford family, already alluded to, and was occupied by several generations. It was afterwards tenanted by Mr. John Zuill, merchant, who removed from thence to Tabley Street. Subsequently it was converted into the brass foundry of the well-known firm of Webster and Forshaw, and so occupied for many years. In King Street also resided Mr. Bentley, the friend and afterwards partner of Josiah Wedgwood.

Thomas Bentley.

Thomas Bentley was born at Scrapton, in Derbyshire, January 1, 1730. He commenced life as clerk in a Manchester warehouse. After going abroad for some years he established himself in King Street, Liverpool, as a dealer in Manchester goods. In 1762 Josiah Wedgwood, then on a visit to Liverpool, made his acquaintance, which soon ripened into a warm friendship, resulting in a lifelong connexion in business. After acting for some years as agent in Liverpool for the Etruria Works, he entered into partnership with his friend, and

[1] See Herdman's 'Pictorial Relics,' vol. ii. pl. 16, 20.

removed from Liverpool. Whilst resident here he was active and useful in many good undertakings. He was one of the founders of the Liverpool Library, in 1757. He aided, along with the Heywoods, in the establishment of the Warrington Academy. He was one of the promoters of the erection of the Octagon Chapel, in Temple Court, afterwards St. Catharine's Church. He was one of the earliest assailants of the slave trade, taking every opportunity of denouncing it as a moral wrong, and doing his utmost to turn the commerce with Africa into a trade for the legitimate productions of the country.[1]

Thomas Bentley.

King Street is best known as the habitat of the banking firm of Leyland and Bullins.

Leyland's Bank.

Thomas Leyland was not one of the least distinguished of those enterprising Liverpool men, who, by their industry and sagacity, were the means of developing the commerce of Liverpool during the last century to such an enormous extent. Of humble origin, he was emphatically the architect of his own fortune, and so rapid was his early rise, that tradition—whether true or false—ascribed it to the fortunate purchase of a lottery ticket.

Be this as it may, in 1781 he was a prosperous merchant residing in Houghton Street, with his office in Nova Scotia. About 1802 he joined Messrs. Clarke and Roscoe in their banking establishment, which was carried on for several years under the firm of Leyland, Clarkes, & Roscoe, in Castle Street. In 1806, about the time of Mr. Roscoe's election as member for Liverpool, Mr. Leyland, who in money matters had a scent for distant events as keen as an Indian, withdrew from the firm, and, in conjunction with his nephews Christopher and Richard Bullin, established a new bank. The locality was in York Street, between Duke Street and Lydia Ann Street, a situation for a bank which would at the present time indicate insanity in any one who would make so bold a

A.D. 1806.

New bank.

[1] See Miss Meteyard's 'Life of Josiah Wedgwood,' *passim*.

CHAP VI.

venture. The reason was that Mr. Leyland lived in Duke Street, and had his office in Henry Street, hard by. He probably reasoned that those who wanted money would have no difficulty in finding the bank, and it might at that day have been a convenient situation for depositors. Here the bank was carried on most successfully until the year 1815, when it was removed to the premises in King Street, where it still remains. It is a remarkable fact that several generations ago concentration in business seems hardly to have been thought of.

Business arrangements.

Merchants' offices were dispersed about the town along the whole line of docks, and inland as far as Duke Street and Bold Street. The primitive arrangement was for the merchant to have his house in front and his office and warehouse behind. Many of these establishments could be pointed out in Hanover Street, Lancelot's Hey, Duke Street, &c. One of the most complete was the house still standing in Colquitt Street, now converted into the Royal Institution. It was built about the beginning of this century, by Mr. Thomas Parr, from whom the adjoining street takes its name. A noble mansion fronted the street, having a railed garden and pleasure-ground opposite. Adjoining were two wings, containing the stables and domestic offices on one side. In the rear, abutting on Parr Street, was a substantial warehouse. Long after this system was abandoned it was common for the merchant to have his office at the rear of his house. This was the case with many of the houses in Duke Street and Bold Street to a period within living memory. Even the Bank of England established its first branch in Liverpool in Hanover Street. The erection of the Exchange buildings, in 1803–9, gave the first impulse to concentration, which is now carried to such an extent, that to be outside the charmed circle narrowly drawn round the Exchange is almost equivalent to being ostracised from business.

Thomas Leyland.

But to return to Mr. Leyland. He took an active part in the town's affairs, having served the

office of bailiff in 1796, and that of chief magistrate three times—a very unusual occurrence—in 1798, 1814, and 1820. In 1816, when Mr. Canning was appointed President of the Board of Control, and had to be re-elected, Mr. Leyland was, sorely against his will, put forward as a candidate, and polled 738 votes against his opponent's 1,280. In 1820 he was again nominated, without his consent. About the year 1804 he purchased Walton Hall, about three miles from Liverpool, formerly the seat of the Athertons, where he resided until his death, in 1828. With all his great wealth, he is traditionally reported to have been a man of extremely parsimonious, not to say penurious habits. His fortune passed to his nephews, Messrs. Richard and Christopher Bullin; and in default of issue from them to the Naylors, represented by Richard Naylor, Esq., of Hooton Hall, Cheshire, and John Naylor, Esq., of Layton Hall, near Welshpool, and Hafod, Montgomeryshire.

Thomas Leyland.

Before terminating this peregrination a few words may be said about the Revenue Buildings and the Sailors' Home. Soon after the great improvements in the town under the Act of 1825, the corporation, in an evil hour, determined to demolish the Old Dock, the cradle of Liverpool commerce, and to erect on its site a large building for the Custom-house, Excise-office, Post-office, and Dock-office. The reason for this strange proceeding it would be useless now to speculate on. As to locality nothing could have been more suitable for a dock; and as to the nature of the site, nothing could have been more unsuitable for the erection of a large building. On August 12, 1828, the first stone was laid by the mayor, Thomas Colley Porter, Esq. The architect was Mr. John Foster, at that time town surveyor.

Custom-house, &c.

In size the Custom-house is one of the three great buildings of the town, the Exchange, including the Town-hall, and St. George's Hall being the two others. Area and bulk are powerful elements in architectural

CHAP. VI.

Custom-house, &c.

design, but they are only the platform on which other and higher qualities should be displayed; and in proportion as the baser or nobler ones prevail, mere bulk adds either deformity or dignity to the structure.

The first view of the building conveys to the mind a general impression of heaviness, which it requires some consideration to account for, since the proportions of the order employed—the Ilyssus Ionic—are by no means the heaviest of those in general use. Every part is severely classical. Each moulding has been accurately measured, and the minutest details are no doubt strictly *en règle;* yet life is wanting—sadness and gloom predominate to an almost painful degree. May not the principal reason for this be, that in the three principal fronts the desire to be strictly classical has choked and stifled the least manifestation of original thought? Each front, *except the one on which the sun principally shines*, has an advanced portico, with a pediment. Each wing has a recessed portico. Pilasters or antæ break round the angles; and these arrangements, with windows few and far between, constitute the design. There are no indications, such as are stamped on every line in St. George's Hall, of careful study and creative power. The only portion of the exterior which bears anything like a cheerful expression is the south façade, which, being considered the back of the building, was not thought worthy of the severe classical dignity of the other fronts. The simple ranges of arched windows, with the breadth of rusticated wall associated with them, and the depth of the masonry above crowned by a bold entablature, without either portico or pilasters, give a noble simplicity and unity of effect, combined with that pleasing play of lines which a range of arches in perspective always produces. Another cause of the heaviness of this building is the bareness with which it is carried out, and the material with which it is built. A Greek temple, constructed of white marble, glistening under the blue sky of Athens, its mouldings encrusted

Custom-house, &c.

with carving, its frieze adorned with sculpture, and probably glowing with brilliant colour, would present a very different aspect from the most slavish copy of the same building in the murky and moist atmosphere of Liverpool, built with dingy sandstone, with the omission of all the sculpture which gave it life and character.

The dome has been severely criticised for its nakedness and poverty; but in justice to the architect it should be stated that the original design had a ring of columns round the tambour, which would have produced a fine effect, but which were omitted for economy's sake.

The interior presents the same character of gloom indicated by the exterior. The long room, could it be lighted from above, is capable of some grandeur of effect. The staircases, which in buildings of this class are worthy of the most careful study, and may form magnificent features in the design, are paltry in the extreme, and utterly unworthy of a building of any pretension.

Sailors' Home.

The Sailors' Home occupies a position very near the site of the old Custom-house. The first stone was laid by Prince Albert, on July 31, 1846. The style is Elizabethan, or Jacobean, which, from its admission of numerous subdivisions, both vertical and horizontal, is well adapted for the peculiar arrangements required. The plan is irregular, having had to be accommodated to the trapezoidal form of the land. It may be described as consisting of a central hall, extending from the ground floor to the top of the structure, surrounded by lofty buildings, partly occupied by day-rooms and offices, and partly divided into numerous stories, laid out in sleeping cabins for the inmates. A lofty square turret is carried up at each angle. The building as a whole is well adapted for its purpose. The architect was Mr. John Cunningham, of Liverpool.

CHAPTER VII.

CHURCH STREET AND ITS VICINITY.

CHAP. VII.

Original town.

OUR surveys hitherto have been confined to what may be called the intramural portion of the borough, the triangular space contained between the Pool and the river, which was fortified at the time of the siege, and which nearly to the close of the seventeenth century comprised the whole of the town. The agreement with Lord Molyneux, detailed above,[1] threw open the lands across the Pool to building enterprise, which was soon taken advantage of. Previous to this time one solitary building existed on the east side of the stream, at the corner of what is now Whitechapel and Church Street; but the site of which, owing to recent improvements, has been altogether obliterated. The tide originally flowed up the little burn as far as the corner of Dale Street, rendering the stream pretty broad at high water. A boat was, therefore, necessary to cross at such times. A boat required a man to attend to it and a house to shelter him.

Pool House.

Hence arose what was called the Pool House, then the 'Ultima Thule' of the town, on the margin of the wide and desolate moor. It is said to have been erected by Alderman Richard Corbet, in 1556. When the Act of the 43rd Elizabeth was passed (A.D. 1601), requiring each township to provide for its own paupers, this Pool House

[1] Vol. i. p. 136.

was hired for the purpose of their accommodation. This probably arose from the circumstance of its having been previously used in times of the plague for the isolation of infected patients. As a poorhouse it remained in occupation until the year 1723. The building remained until about 1804, when it was taken down for the erection of 'Bullock's Museum.' This was a collection of specimens of natural history, sculptures, curiosities, and antiquities, very creditable for the period, brought together by Mr. William Bullock, originally a jeweller and china dealer in Lord Street. It was continued in Church Street to the year 1809, when it was removed to London, probably from want of encouragement here. A feeble imitation of it was kept up on the same premises for many years subsequently, under the name of 'Kind's Museum,' which was a sort of general bazaar.

Bullock's Museum.

Kind's Museum.

The first house erected on the east side of the Pool brook was at the south-east corner of School Lane and Manesty's Lane, by Mr. Dansie, in 1680. It was a tolerably large mansion, with a recessed fore-court, surrounded by a low wall. It has been taken down within the last few years, and the printing offices of Messrs. Willmer and Smith and the 'Mercury' office erected on the site. This house was occupied at different periods by Mr. Ralph Earle, mayor in 1769; Mr. Peter Baker, mayor in 1795; and by Dr. Brandreth, a physician of considerable celebrity at the beginning of this century.

Mr. Dansie's house.

Before proceeding eastward let us take a glance at Paradise Street. This was originally called the 'Common Shore,' from the expanse of sand or mud left bare on the banks at low water. The stream was not navigable except at high water, and we have seen that the original scheme for the accommodation of shipping was to form a canal along the line of the present street. When this was abandoned and the Old Dock constructed, the brook was covered and the street formed under its present name, in the early part of the eighteenth cen-

Paradise Street.

CHAP. VII.

tury. In 1725 very little building had been erected, except at the south end, behind the Custom-house.

As trade increased, Paradise Street, being near the dock, became by the middle of the century a thriving thoroughfare. Some of the leading merchants resided there; amongst others Mr. Nicholas Ashton, high sheriff in 1770, who afterwards resided at Woolton Hall. The Ashton family are of considerable antiquity and standing in the town. George Ashton filled the office of bailiff in 1558–1561. In the latter year, by a spirited defence of the town's rights, he incurred the displeasure of the Earl of Derby, who forbade him the use of Toxteth Park as a pasturage for his cattle. John Ashton, merchant, the father of Nicholas, was bailiff in 1749. He was one of the principal promoters of the Sankey Navigation, which turned out a very profitable investment, and greatly enriched the family.

Nicholas Ashton.

Mr. Thomas Moss, the father of John Moss, banker, one of the great promoters of the railway system, resided in Paradise Street; also Mr. John Crosbie, mayor in 1765–6.

Thomas Moss.

At No. 19, during the latter part of the eighteenth century, the bank of Messrs. Smyth, Caldwell & Co. was carried on, which collapsed during the panic at the outbreak of the French revolutionary war. Mr. Smyth filled the civic chair in 1789.

Smyth and Caldwell.

A shop on the east side of this street was occupied by the blind poet, Edward Rushton, from 1790 to 1817. He had been a seafaring man in early life, and lost his eyesight on the coast of Africa. A warm advocate of the cause of freedom at a period when such advocacy was not without danger, his indignation was especially directed against the African slave trade, at that time a great source of wealth to the town. His earliest poem, entitled 'The Dismembered Empire,' was published in 1782; and not long afterwards 'West Indian Eclogues.' His talent as a poet was always employed in the cause of humanity and philanthropy. He was the father of Mr.

Edward Rushton.

Edward Rushton, the well-known stipendiary magistrate of the borough.

Paradise Street being so near the Old Dock, the south end was for many years the seat of commercial business, which removed elsewhere when the dock was filled up. Here for many years was carried on the mercantile house of Cropper, Benson & Co., the great consignees of the American 'Liners,' before steam had bridged the ocean and reduced the passage almost to a mathematical certainty. Mr. James Cropper, the head of the firm, a member of the Society of Friends, was well known and highly esteemed as one of the foremost in every work of philanthropy, both by his liberal gifts and his personal exertions. After his retirement from business, about 1836, he established an agricultural industrial school at Fernhead, near Warrington, which he maintained at his own expense, and devoted to it his personal superintendence till his death. His sons, John and Edward, have been worthy successors to their father in the work of active benevolence to which they have devoted themselves. Not very far from Cropper, Benson & Co.'s stood the 'Star and Garter' Hotel, one of the principal resorts (along with Horne's, of the Mersey Hotel, Old Churchyard) of American passengers, famed for its gastronomic excellence. After the removal of commerce from the neighbourhood, the hotel gradually declined and died of inanition. It is now converted into shops.

Cropper, Benson, & Co.

'Star and Garter.

At the corner of School Lane and Paradise Street stands the Coliseum Theatre, with its appurtenances. The theatre itself, now hidden from view by the buildings in front, was originally constructed for a Unitarian chapel by the congregation from the old Presbyterian Chapel, in Key Street. It was opened in 1791 by the pastor, the Rev. John Yates, the founder of a family the members of which have risen to stations of high respectability in the community. The building was, as a piece of architecture, by no means without merit. It was octagonal in plan, a form which

Chapel, now Coliseum.

Chapel.

CHAP. VII.

Chapel. seems about that period to have found favour with many Nonconformist congregations. The material was brick, faced with stone. Towards Paradise Street there was a projecting portico, with attached columns carried to the height of the building, and finished with a pediment. The roof was conical, crowned at the summit with a small cupola. An open yard surrounded it, and behind

Yates. were commodious schoolrooms. Mr. Yates's ministry continued down to the year 1823, when he retired, and died in 1826. After an interval of about ten years he

Martineau. was succeeded by the Rev. James Martineau, a man of wide-spread reputation, both as an author and a preacher, the brother of the equally celebrated Harriet Martineau. About 1846, the neighbourhood having become altogether unsuitable for their purposes, the congregation determined on the erection of a new church in Hope Street, on the completion of which, in 1849, the old chapel was abandoned and disposed of.

School Lane. We will now leave Paradise Street and proceed up School Lane. The quarter we are now surveying forms a right-angled triangle, the base formed by School Lane along the south wall of St. Peter's Churchyard, and the apex at the corner of Paradise and Hanover Streets. Through this triangle two streets were carried from east to west—School Lane and College Lane—and two crossing at right angles from north to south—Manesty's Lane and Peter's Lane. School Lane was distinguished by the

Blue School. erection of the Blue Coat Hospital. I have already spoken of the history of Bryan Blundell and of the foundation of this charity. The present building was erected in the year 1716–7, and is a pleasing specimen of the style of the period, in brick and stone. It forms three sides of an open quadrangle. The frieze bears the following inscription :—

Christianæ Charitati promovendæ inopique pueritiæ ecclesiæ Anglicanæ principiis imbuendæ sacrum. Anno Salutis MDCCXVII.

The name of School Lane would naturally be derived

from the Hospital, usually called the Blue School; but there was also another school, almost adjoining—the ancient Grammar School of the town, founded by John Crosse, for which at the Dissolution the sum of 5*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* per annum had been reserved out of the chantry rents, as described in chapter iii.[1] The ancient school-house in St. Nicholas' Churchyard having been destroyed, the school was removed to School Lane. It was built before the Blue School, as the promoters of the new erection held their meetings therein; and it was temporarily used for the Blue Coat boys until the building was finished. Mr. Baines, the last master of the Grammar School, died in 1803. The salary had been raised many years previously, to 35*l.* per annum. In 1769 a long building in School Lane above the Free School was occupied as a stocking manufactory. When it was discontinued or by whom carried on I have not been able to learn.

Grammar School.

Stocking factory.

College Lane.

College Lane was not built up until some time after School Lane. In 1725, it is represented in the map as open land, with the exception of a few houses on the north side. I have already alluded to the 'Pool House' used for lodging the paupers. For some time previous to 1723, the demand for relief so far outstripped the capacity of the building that lodgings had to be procured in different parts of the town. In that year the overseers agreed to rent from Mr. Bryan Blundell thirty-six cottages he had recently erected on the south side of School Lane, above the Blue School. Nine years afterwards (1732) the trustees of this charity agreed with the parish to build on land belonging to them at the corner of College Lane and Hanover Street, suitable premises for a workhouse, for which they were to receive interest at the rate of five per cent. From this erection, College Lane was at first called Workhouse Lane. As the town increased, the workhouse had to be enlarged and extended, until it was found to be such a nuisance to the then aristocratic

Poor-house.

[1] Vol. ii. p. 64.

CHAP. VII.

neighbourhood of Hanover Street, that it was determined to remove it, and in 1770, a new building was commenced at the top of Brownlow Hill on land belonging to the corporation on the edge of the Mosslake, long before this drained and converted into pasture. The old workhouse still remains somewhat altered, and converted into stores and stables.

Poor-house.

Manesty's Lane.

Manesty's Lane takes its name from a merchant who had his residence in the locality. Peter's Lane is of course named from the church to which it leads.

Hanover Street is on the site of an old rural lane leading from the Pool Mouth by way of the present Ranelagh Street across the heath and out into the country. In the map of 1725, the road is marked 'to Manchester.'

Views in 1718.

In Herdman's 'Ancient Liverpool'[1] we have two views, showing especially this portion of the town taken from a point a little distance up the present Seel Street. The date of one is given as 1715 and of the other 1725; but from internal evidence they must be of about the same date, not earlier than 1718 and not later than 1721. Hanover Street is a lane lined with hedges on each side, with haymakers loading carts in the fields. A glass manufactory is shown, which remained for many years subsequently at the corner of Argyle and Hanover Streets, carried on by Messrs. Crosbie, Bostock & Co. School Lane from a little above St. Peter's Church is open fields. College Lane is not cut. The Blue School had just been erected. St. Peter's Church stood almost isolated. The little town was at this time creeping into modern life, having just stepped across the brook, its ancient limit. The Old Dock, then the *New* Dock, had been opened some years before, and a few masts indicate the presence of shipping, but the grim towers of the castle still loom grandly in the distance, as if taking a parting look at the new order of things before they disappear for ever.

The name of Hanover Street is undoubtedly connected

[1] 1st series, pl. 34; 2nd series, pl. 28.

CHAP. VII.

with the accession of the reigning family, but the date of its appellation is by no means clear. In Chadwick's map of 1725, it is not so named. By the middle of the eighteenth century it had become the habitat of the mercantile aristocracy of the day, who erected noble mansions and 'made to themselves gardens and orchards, and planted trees in them of all kind of fruits.' One house in particular deserves notice. It stands on the east side near the bottom of Seel Street, fronted with stone of excellent workmanship and pleasing design. It was erected between 1730 and 1740 by a member of the family of Mr. Thomas Steers, who was the engineer for the construction of the Old Dock. It was the first architectural stone-fronted dwelling-house built in Liverpool. It was in 1769 in the occupation of Mr. Thomas Seel, a gentleman of large property. The gardens and grounds attached to the house were beautiful and extensive, reaching back nearly to the present Colquitt Street. This building was subsequently occupied as the branch of the Bank of England, and on the erection of the Bank in Castle Street, was sold to Messrs. Evans & Co. who now occupy it. In 1867 the interior was consumed by fire, but it has since been restored without much damage to the exterior elevation. Adjoining these grounds stood the mansion of Mr. John Blackburne, mayor in 1760, a large building with two projecting wings. His son, John Blackburne, junr., mayor in 1788, resided in the same house. He erected the mansion on the east side of Hope Street called Blackburne House, now the girls' school of the Liverpool Institute. He subsequently resided at Wavertree Hall, and finally settled at Hawford Hall in Worcestershire. A little further to the west, the brothers Arthur and Benjamin Heywood erected two twin tenements, which were long subsequently occupied as the Excise and Inland Revenue Offices. On the opposite side, resided Mr. John Colquitt, Collector of Customs. We read in Williamson's 'Advertiser' of September 14, 1759, the following advertisement :—

Name.

Mr. Seel's House.

Blackburne.

Heywoods.

Colquitt.

CHAP. VII.

'To be sold by auction at the Merchant's Coffee House, &c., all that messuage or dwelling-house, warehouse, and garden, situated in Hanover Street and Peter's Lane, and late in the possession of John Colquitt, Esq., deceased.' This was the father of the collector. The garden, which extended along Peter's Lane, is now built on, but dwelling-house and warehouse remain, and give a good idea of a mercantile establishment of the olden time. Many other old Liverpool names are connected with this street, such as Tarleton, Rumbold, Banning, Chorley, Brown (mayor in 1782), Daltera, &c. The last of the Dalteras, commonly called Joe Daltera, was for many years a well-known character in Liverpool society, one of the circle of wits in an age when conviviality was the order of the day. He is thus described by one who knew him well: 'He was brought up to be a solicitor, and at one time was in partnership with the late Mr. Topham. He had abilities to have raised himself to the greatest eminence, but he wanted business habits. He had no application, no attention, no steadiness of purpose. In short, he was of a jovial, convivial turn of mind, full of fun and frolic and glee, was fond of company, and greatly preferred shining in society to poring over parchments. He was a terrible sitter at a party . . . . steady old fellows at whose houses he used to visit, would say before he arrived, "We'll be rude to that Daltera to-night, and give him a hint that shall send him home in decent time." But when the appointed hour had struck, these same steady old boys, fascinated by Joe's wonderful powers of jest and anecdote, were the loudest in pressing him to keep his seat, a pressure which he never resisted. . . . . Countless were the stories told of his sayings and doings. Once the watchman found him in the street quite unequal to steer his course home. This friend in need wished to place him in a wheelbarrow and to carry him to his house in this kind of triumphal car, when Daltera, steadying himself for a moment, and throwing himself

Tarleton, &c.

Daltera.

into a theatrical attitude, astonished the poor "Old Charley," as he addressed him *à la John Kemble*, whom he had seen performing the character that night, "Villain, stand back; the gods take care of Cato!" Notwithstanding his irregularities, he lived to a good old age, dying about 1836, having been in the profession not far from half a century.'[1]

On the east side of Hanover Street between Wood Street and the site of Bold Street, stood in the middle of last century the establishment of Messrs. Joseph and Jonathan Brooks, merchants, builders, timber-merchants, lime-burners, rope-makers, &c. Joseph Brooks resided on the spot. The house and garden stood in front, the timber-yard and lime-kilns immediately behind, with a field extending as far as Berry Street. The present site of Bold Street in its entire length was their rope-walk. I have already given an account of the Brooks family, including these gentlemen, in a former chapter.

Brooks.

Leaving Hanover Street let us now turn our attention to Church Street, the main central artery of the district, and for convenience' sake, we will begin at the end next Lord Street. Although laid out as a street at the latter end of the seventeenth century, very little was done in the way of building for many years subsequent. St. Peter's Church was the first building erected. As the town increased, the want of a second church began to be felt, and the corporation, which at that period, was controlled by several very active and energetic men, especially Sir Thomas Johnson, to whom the town owes so much, determined to erect a new church beyond the brook, on the estate so recently acquired from Lord Molyneux. In so doing they took the opportunity whilst going to Parliament, to apply for the establishment of Liverpool as a parish separate from Walton to which it had hitherto appertained.

Church Street.

St. Peter's.

The Act was passed (10 and 11 Will. III. c. 36,—1699).

[1] 'Liverpool a Few Years Since, by an Old Stager,' 1852.

CHAP. VII.

St. Peter's.

The new parish was to have two rectors, the living to be in the gift of the common council. The Rev. Robert Styth and the Rev. William Atherton were the first appointed rectors. Under the provisions of the Municipal Reform Act the advowson was sold by the corporation to the late Mr. John Stewart, of Liverpool. By a subsequent Act the two medieties are now united under a single rector.

Sir Thomas Johnson.

Sir Thomas Johnson, who was elected member for the borough in 1701, took a warm interest in the completion of the church. He frequently refers to it in his letters. Thus, on June 25, 1703, he says: 'Our new church goes on well; we now agree to seat it with oak, though I saw your hand for fir.' Again, on September 17, the same year: 'Please to inquire what we can have your black and white marble for per stoop or yard, proper to lay in the chancel. We shall want as much as will lay forty yards. We have ordered the black flag from the Isle of Man, to lay the iles with; it will be much better than common flags.' In 1704 the church was completed and consecrated.

Architecture.

The building is large and commodious, but possesses few claims to architectural design. It is of the school of Sir C. Wren, being, indeed, a poor copy of the Church of St. Andrew, Holborn. The original cost was 3,500*l.* In the interior there is some bold wood-carving of good style, but somewhat coarse in execution, and several monuments to old Liverpool worthies possessing some interest. In Johnson's correspondence there is no mention made of an architect in connexion with this church. This would give some countenance to the tradition which accounts for the four entrance-doors being each of different design in this wise: An architect in London being applied to, to furnish a design for a door-case, forwarded four sketches from which to choose; but the local authorities not being able to agree in the selection, settled the matter by adopting the whole four. There was formerly a row of elm-trees round three sides of the

churchyard, and a double row on the side next Church Alley. A few of these still remained within the memory of persons now living. The church possesses a very musical peal of ten bells, which were placed in the belfry in 1830. St. Peter's is memorable for the festivals of sacred music which have been held from time to time within its walls, the first dating from 1784, said to have been the earliest of the kind in the North of England. At intervals generally of about three years these performances were repeated, to the great delight of lovers of music at a time when intercourse with the metropolis was difficult and expensive, and to the benefit of the local charities. The leading vocalists and instrumentalists of the day were usually subsidised. Mrs. Salmon, Miss Stephens (Countess of Essex), Bartleman, Braham, Knyvett, 'cum multis aliis,' have here added to their laurels. In the course of time scruples began to be entertained as to the propriety of such performances (of sacred music only) in a church. This led to the proposal of a scheme for the erection of a large hall in which musical performances might be held, which ultimately resulted in the erection of St. George's Hall.

St. Peter's.

Musical Festivals.

It was not until after the middle of the eighteenth century that Church Street was built up to any extent. We are informed by Troughton that it was first completely paved in 1760, prior to which time there was only a causeway about four yards wide in the middle of the street for carts, and a footway, close to the wall of St. Peter's Churchyard. We may also judge of the condition of the neighbourhood in 1769 from the following advertisement of March 16 in that year :—

Buildings.

A.D. 1769.

'To be let for a term of years, two fields or closes of land, near St. Peter's Church, called or known by the name of Williamson's Fields. For further particulars apply to Mr. Thomas Crook.'

Church Street was naturally in the first instance a street of respectable residences, though we do not find any of

Houses.

CHAP. VII.

Residents.

such noble mansions as adorned Hanover Street. There were as residents here at the close of the last century Mr. Henry Clay, of the firm of Gregsons, Parkes & Clay, bankers, mayor in 1805; Mr. Richard Gerard, mayor in 1780; Mr. William Rutson, father of Mr. Rutson, of the great firm of Ewart, Rutson & Co.; Mr. George Case, mayor in 1781. He continued an alderman and member of the common council for more than half a century subsequently, dying somewhere about the time of the Municipal Reform Act. Dr. James Currie, the biographer and editor of Robert Burns, also resided in Church Street.

Shops.

The dwelling-houses in Church Street gradually developed into shops, to some of which I may refer, as having a history connected with them. On the north side, opposite the church, stands the establishment of Messrs. Roskell & Co., watch manufacturers. The history of the watch trade in Liverpool is not devoid of interest, as being one of the few manufactures which have been carried on with success. It is said that there are only three places in the United Kingdom where watches are actually made, viz., London, Liverpool, and Coventry. I have alluded, in chapter v., to John Wyke,[1] who was probably the first to introduce the manufacture into the town. John Wyke died in 1787. In 1796, probably before, Peter Litherland, the inventor of the lever watch, was residing in Mount Pleasant, whence he removed to Commutation Row, thence to Ranelagh Street. The concern has been continued to the present day by several generations in different localities, but for some time past in Bold Street. In 1800 we first find the name of Robert Roskell, watch maker, Byrom Street. In 1803 he had removed to Church Street, where successive generations of the family have carried on the manufacture to the present time.

Watch trade.

Wyke.

Litherland.

Roskell.

These two concerns are world-famous for the excellence of their manufactures. Many other firms have since arisen who have worthily competed for the palm of success, so

[1] Vol. ii. p. 132.

that in this branch of manufacture Liverpool has taken high rank. The Right Rev. Dr. Roskell, R.C. Bishop of Nottingham, is a descendant of Robert Roskell above-mentioned. At No. 2, on the same side the street, there was, many years ago, located the firm of Yaniewicz and Weiss, music-sellers. Mr. Yaniewicz was a Polish musician, very eminent in his day as a violinist, and especially patronised in Edinburgh. Mr. Weiss was a German. His son became a professional singer, and obtained a good reputation as a basso. He died in 1868. The concern was discontinued about 1828.

Yaniewicz and Weiss.

In Church Lane, a few doors from Church Street, there existed during the first quarter of the present century, a rather celebrated academy, kept by Messrs. Prior and Shaw, afterwards by Mr. Richard Prior *solus*. Richard Prior was in many respects a remarkable man. He had not the advantage of a college education, nor, probably, would he now be considered highly informed or deeply read. He had, however, the knack, if it may be so called, of grounding his pupils well in what he undertook to teach. Gaunt in appearance, severe in manner, and somewhat eccentric in his habits, he ruled his little domain with absolute sway. A delinquent seldom escaped punishment, occasionally somewhat severe. His school filled to overflowing, and he became a prosperous man. In 1818 he removed his establishment to Pembroke Place, where by his successors it was carried on for many years subsequently, but scarcely with the same success. Many of his pupils have attained to positions of high respectability in Liverpool and elsewhere. Peace be with his ashes! He deserves at the hands of an old pupil this passing tribute to his memory. 'Quod enim munus reipublicæ afferre majus meliusve possumus, quam si docemus atque erudimus juventutem.'—Cic. *Divin.* ii. 2.

Prior's Academy.

The building which dominates over Church Street and casts into the shade all around it is Compton House. Its history is a romance in brick and stone. Established as

Compton House.

CHAP. VII.

Compton House.

a draper's shop, about the year 1832, in a single small tenement in Church Street, by two young men, James Redcliffe Jeffery and James Morrish, who were possessed of little besides industry and enterprise, it speedily attracted attention for the tact with which it ministered to the general wants, and the air of progress and boldness which characterised its operations. Shop after shop was added, until the concern acquired gigantic dimensions. New departments of trade were opened from time to time, leaving no want of a housekeeper unsupplied, from a kitchen saucepan to the ornaments of a lady's boudoir, or the elegant enrichments of a fashionable drawing-room. Plate, clocks, watches, toys, saddlery, Cashmere shawls, gentlemen's clothes, ladies' millinery, furniture, boots and shoes, travelling trunks—nothing came amiss; and the establishment eventually absorbed the entire front, from Tarlton Street to Basnett Street, and extended the whole depth, from Church Street to Leigh Street. Not content with this, the intention was entertained of leaping over the narrow strait at the back and comprehending the entire block of building to Williamson Square. The York Hotel and several other properties were purchased with this object, but

There is a tide in the affairs of men.

Down to about 1860 all had apparently gone forward with a success which was the astonishment and envy of rival tradesmen. In this year Mr. Morrish drew out of the concern with a large fortune. On December 1, 1865, owing to the mischievous perverseness of a shop-boy throwing away a lucifer-match, the whole establishment was burnt to the ground, and at one fell swoop the labour of a life was rendered nugatory. The stock at the time was large, and, owing to difficulties as to the rate of premium, insufficiently insured. Mr. Jeffery set to work with almost superhuman energy, and in the course of a week after the fire he had opened new pre-

Fire.

mises in Newington, fitted up temporarily for the purpose on a large scale. No time was lost in rebuilding the old structure, which rose from its ashes, phœnix-like, in stately proportions. Architecturally speaking, the occurrence of the fire was an advantage. The original Compton House was a very heterogeneous whole—a thing of shreds and patches; the new structure formed a splendid pile, of handsome design, in white stone, with lofty pavilions at the angles, separated into compartments, with fireproof divisions. By dint of working day and night the building was ready for occupation in an incredibly short space of time, and was re-opened on May 27, 1867. Apparently Compton House again stood forward radiant with more than its former splendour; but, alas! 'Ichabod' might have been written upon it—the glory had departed. Mr. William Jeffery, the brother and right hand of the principal, was cut off suddenly by apoplexy, and J. R. Jeffery was left to fight his battle alone. The battle was a losing one. The expenses of the new Compton House were more than double those of the old concern, the interest of money representing rent being at least 8,000*l.* per annum, besides rates and taxes, about 2,000*l.*, whilst the receipts, if not actually diminished, did not increase in like proportion. After a severe struggle with adverse circumstances for some years, the pressure became too great to sustain, and one morning in March 1871 the shutters of Compton House were closed, never to be re-opened under the *régime* of J. R. Jeffery.

He did not long survive the wreck of his fortunes. The nervous system had been strained to the uttermost point of tension, and when the collapse came, it utterly broke down. He gradually sank under a complication of disorders, and died a few months after the failure.

Mr. Jeffery for many years took an active part in the political and municipal affairs of the town. He was for some time a prominent member of the town council, and

CHAP. VII.

contributed largely to its debates, being a fluent and ready speaker. He was also a magistrate for the borough and county, and on the bench displayed considerable ability.

Dispensary.

A little above St. Peter's Church, on the south side of the street, formerly stood the Dispensary. The first Dispensary was established in 1778, on the east side of North John Street, extending to Prince's Street. The institution arose from the neglected state of the poor of the parish in cases of sickness. From this a wider range was included; and its operation was found so beneficial, that in 1782 a piece of land was purchased in Church Street, at the corner of what was subsequently Post-office Place, and a neat building erected by Mr. John Foster, the founder of a family which became in subsequent years very prosperous. The building was of brick, with stone dressings, with a semicircular projecting portico and a central pediment over. A tablet built into the wall contained a bas-relief of the Good Samaritan, modelled by John Deare, a young sculptor of considerable promise, a native of the town. I may here insert a short memorial of his career.

John Deare.

John Deare was the son of Mr. Thomas Deare, an artist in hair, jeweller and tax-collector, who had a shop in Castle Street, and resided in Temple Street. The future sculptor was born on October 26, 1759. His taste for modelling was very early developed, a miniature figure of the human skeleton having been cut by him with a penknife when he was only ten years of age. At sixteen he went to London, where he was articled to Thomas Carter, of 101, Piccadilly, and was employed in carving ornaments for chimney-pieces, in the performance of which he is said to have exhibited great talent. At twenty he obtained the first gold medal which was given at the Royal Academy, for a design from Milton, Adam and Eve, from the fourth book of 'Paradise Lost,' modelled in alto-relievo. Soon afterwards he was sent to

Rome by the Academy, along with several other young artists, under the patronage of George III. He was a contemporary of Canova, who thoroughly appreciated his talents. George Cumberland says of him that the best artists sought his advice and correction in their designs. His chief works went to France. In England he is not much known. In the Worsley collection there is a Marine Venus from his chisel, which has been much admired; but his *chef d'œuvre* is said to be a piece in the collection of Sir Corbett Corbett.

He married a beautiful Roman girl, to whom he was much attached, and obtained constant employment in his profession. Whilst in the full career of fame the French became masters of Italy. The commandant of the troops, enamoured, it is said, of his wife, threw the artist into prison, where he died of a broken heart, August 17, 1798, in the thirty-ninth year of his age.

There is another account of his decease, derived from Thomas Grignon, who is said to have been present at his death. He states that amongst some blocks of marble which Deare had purchased there was one of a singular shape, from which he believed he could carve a figure in a peculiar attitude; but in order to be quite certain of the fact he was determined to make it his bed for the whole of a night, that he might receive fresh hints from the visitation of dreams. In carrying this design into execution he got a chill into his system which carried him off in a few days.

Neither account is very satisfactory, but my reader can take his choice.

Deare was interred in the English burying-ground, near the Pyramid of Caius Cestius. The original model of his Edward and Eleonora was presented by his fellow-student, M. Lange, to the Liverpool Royal Institution. In the Liverpool Exhibition of 1783 several casts and models by Deare, then at Rome, were exhibited.

After remaining about forty-seven years, the Dispensary

CHAP. VII.

Dispensary removed.

Academy of Art.

was changed in its character, and divided into North and South Districts. The building in Church Street was sold in 1829 to Mr. Josias Booker, who pulled it down and converted the site into shops in front, with a series of rooms behind, leased to the Liverpool Academy for their exhibitions. The history of this Academy is a very unfortunate one. As already related, two attempts were made during the last century to localise an institution for the encouragement of the fine arts, but in both instances without success. In 1810 the Academy was re-established by the efforts of the local artists themselves, and annual exhibitions were held, at first in the Gothic Rooms, Marble Street, and subsequently in rooms over the Union Newsroom, in Slater Street. In 1814 the exhibition was removed to the Gallery of the Royal Institution, Colquitt Street, where it continued to be held until 1831. In that year the town council came to their aid, and agreed to lease for their use the new Exhibition Rooms in Post-office Place. With this timely assistance the Academy went on prosperously for many years, and accumulated a reserve fund. At length, however, adverse currents set in from several directions. When the lease of the building ran out the Reformed Council declined any further assistance. Notwithstanding this, the Academy was quite strong enough to have stood on its own merits; but internal dissension sprang up. The Pre-Raphaelite heresy arose. The annual prize became a battle-ground between the old school and the new. Some of the *dilettanti* outside wished to have a share in the management; and their demand not being complied with, they got up a rival society and opened exhibition-rooms at the Queen's Hall, in Bold Street. The consequences were disastrous to both parties. The Academy held out until their reserved fund was exhausted, and then closed their doors. The new society continued at a ruinous loss for several years, and then followed the example of their rivals. The consequence

Academy of Art.

was an entire absence for many years of any public recognition of art in the town of Liverpool. There are many very valuable private collections in the locality, but the claims of art on public support for the general benefit of all have been almost entirely ignored. In the autumn of 1871 an exhibition of modern paintings was held at the Free Public Museum, William Brown Street, got up by the committee of the institution, and attended with considerable success. It is to be hoped that this result may lead to further progress in the same direction.

Post-office.

In 1800 the Post-office was removed from Lord Street to Post-office Place, near the Dispensary. Mr. Thomas Banning was appointed post master, in whose family the office has ever since remained. In 1839, the business having enormously increased, even before the establishment of the penny postage, the Post-office was removed to its present locality in Revenue Buildings.

Woolfield's Bazaar.

At the western corner of Post-office Place and Church Street, visitors to Liverpool were formerly attracted to a rich and varied collection of articles of taste and vertu, known as Woolfield's Bazaar. This existed while as yet Compton House was not, and was the source of considerable wealth to several successive occupiers. It was originally commenced by Mr. John Woolfield, who opened a jeweller's shop in Paradise Street about 1826, and removed to Church Street in 1828. He was succeeded by his brother Thomas, who greatly enlarged the premises and extended his sphere of operations. About 1840 he retired with ample means, and settled at Cannes, in the south of France, to the success of which he has greatly contributed by his enterprise and outlay of capital. He was succeeded by Mr. W. B. Promoli, of Paris, who in a few years transferred the business to his nephew, Mr. F. L. Hausburg, who after a very successful career was succeeded in 1860 by Mr. Tooke, of London. In 1866 the progress of improvement required the widening of Church Street, which could only be accomplished by the destruc-

CHAP. VII.

tion of the famed bazaar. The claims for compensation, both of landlord and tenant, were naturally large for breaking up so profitable a concern. After a protracted and expensive enquiry, an award was finally made for 38,800*l.* for the site, 916 square yards, being about 41*l.* per square yard, and 23,000*l.* for the trade compensation and stock.

Athenæum.

A little further to the eastward stands the Athenæum, for seventy years past the resort of what may be called the 'upper crust' of Liverpool mercantile society. The scheme for its erection was brought out in 1797 by Mr. Roscoe, Dr. Currie, and some of their literary friends. The building was completed and opened in 1799. The design, though unpretending, is not devoid of character and merit. Its principal fault is a degree of flatness in the façade and feebleness in the details. The news room and library internally are effective. The library contains about 25,000 volumes, amongst which are a few rarities. One case contains a selection of books, purchased at the sale of Mr. Roscoe's splendid library, presented to him by his friends, and by him handed over to the Athenæum. There is also in the library a painting, by Fuseli, of the death of Lorenzo de' Medici, painted for, and presented by, Mr. Roscoe.

Liver Theatre.

Beyond the Athenæum formerly stood the Liver Theatre. This was erected in 1829 by a Mr. Wilson, and leased by Messrs. Raymond and Hammond, two actors formerly connected with the Theatre Royal. Their proceedings were interfered with by the proprietors of the old theatre, who under the old law prosecuted their rivals, and convicted them in heavy penalties for the infringement of their monopoly. About 1850 the theatre was discontinued, and the building converted into shops. The Liver is principally remarkable for having brought out the eminent vocalist, Sims Reeves, whose voice and abilities were here first developed and recognised.

Sims Reeves.

Previous to the erection of the Athenæum the site was

laid out as an ornamental garden, with a fishpond in the middle, extending as far as the corner of Hanover Street. This belonged to Mr. Brooks, who is mentioned above. The street behind, called Brooks's Alley, also owes its origin to the same family.

Brooks's Garden.

The original Church Street was not the spacious avenue it now appears. It has recently been widened on the south side at a very heavy public expenditure. I have alluded to Woolfield's Bazaar, and the compensation allowed. For the property between St. Peter's Church and Paradise Street prices were given varying from 30*l.* to 50*l.* per square yard. A curious and interesting trial took place in 1868 respecting the value of the portion of the churchyard required for the street. According to law, the rector, as the party in possession of the legal estate, was served with notice to treat by the corporation. The churchyard had originally been granted by the corporation to the parish for a burial-ground, and had been so used for about a hundred and forty years, when it was closed by an order of the Privy Council under the Burial Boards Act, and a new cemetery constructed at the expense of the parish at Anfield. The legal advisers of the rector, acting under the decision of the Court of Queen's Bench, in *re* Hilcoat and the Archbishop of Canterbury, claimed 20,000*l.* for 691 square yards of land. After much negotiation, the matter was left to the arbitration of Mr. Manisty, Q.C., and after a keen contest the ultimate award was 5,150*l.* The money was paid into court for the benefit of whosoever may be entitled to it. There have been three claimants. The corporation as the original grantors, the parish for whose benefit the land was granted, and the rector as representing the interests of the clergy and patron. At the time of writing (1872), the question has not been decided.

Improvements.

St. Peter's Churchyard.

Trial.

Let us now cross Church Street. Beginning at the west end, we first approach Williamson Street. The

Williamson Street.

CHAP. VII.

Williamson Square.

Williamson family had large property in this neighbourhood, and laid out this street during the third quarter of last century. In 1764, after Williamson Square was laid out and formed, the proprietors applied to the corporation to convert it into a market. The council agreed to take the subject into consideration if they would fill up the swamp in the land adjoining Frog Lane (now Whitechapel). A few good mansions were erected in this square. Mr. Victor Busigny built the large house corner of Tarleton Street, subsequently the York Hotel. Mr. James Bridge built another at the south corner of Upper Dawson Street. At No. 8 resided for many years the Rev. Thomas Moss, vicar of Walton. I extract a few particulars of this worthy from Mr. Aspinall's lively sketches: [1]

Moss.

'His share of the drum ecclesiastic was decidedly the drum *stick*. Not over witty himself, never was man the cause of so much wit in others, and often at his own expense. He was known in his own circle as "Old England," because "he expected every man to do *his* duty;" that is, he never met a brother clergyman without seizing upon him and asking him if he could do his duty on the next Sunday. . . . Mr. Moss had an intense horror of all sorts of innovations; and in the case of the first railway between Manchester and Liverpool, this feeling was greatly increased by the fact of his being a large shareholder in a canal which might be affected by its success. He was in a fever of excitement, and almost raved whenever the subject was mentioned. He magnified every difficulty, dwelt upon every obstacle, and concluded every harangue on the question with the triumphant exclamation, "But never mind, they cannot do it; Chat Moss will stop it—Chat Moss will stop it!" On one occasion, when our friend had been holding forth in his usual strain, and finished with a look of defiance, "Chat Moss will stop it;" one of the party quietly observed,

Chat Moss.

[1] 'Liverpool, a Few Years Since,' p. 113.

" Depend upon it, your *Chat, Moss*, will never stop it!" ' CHAP. VII.

The Theatre Royal stands on the north side of Williamson Square. In chapter iv., I have traced the history of the drama in Liverpool down to the year 1772 when this building was erected. In the previous year, a patent passed the Great Seal to Mr. Gibson, to establish a theatre and perform stage plays in the town. This led to the erection of the present structure. The cost of the building was 6,000*l.*, which was raised in thirty shares, each share bearing 5 per cent. interest with a silver ticket entitling the bearer to attend every performance in any part of the house. Originally the front was of brick, in a line with the houses at each side, surmounted with a pediment enclosing the royal arms and other decorations in the tympanum. The building was opened in June 1772, on which occasion a prologue was written by George Colman the younger. In 1803, considerable alterations were made. The building was enlarged and advanced beyond the line of the adjacent houses with the curved stone façade as it now stands. The re-opening took place in June 1803, with the comedy of 'Speed the Plough,' when an address was delivered composed by Mr. T. Dibdin. Most of the leading performers have in their day 'fretted and strutted their hour' on these boards; but it is recorded in tradition that both Mrs. Siddons and John Kemble in the days before their fame was established, have been hissed off the Liverpool stage. The death of Mr. John Palmer in August 1798, soon after performing in the play of 'the Stranger,' is recorded in most of the annals. It is not, however, the fact that he died on the stage, or that he had uttered the words 'there is another and a better world.' The words did not belong to his part, nor was he attacked by illness until a succeeding scene. The sad event naturally made a deep impression on the public mind. A performance was given at the theatre on August 18, 1798, for the benefit of his family, which realised 412*l.*, besides the expenses

Theatre Royal.

Palmer.

CHAP. VII.

of the funeral. A monody written by Mr. Roscoe was delivered by Mr. Holman.

Theatre Royal. O.P. Riots.

Occasional disturbances have taken place within this theatre, the principal being the O. P. riots in 1810, and a few years afterwards a fierce contention between the partisans of two rival actors, Mr. Vandenhoff and Mr. Salter, which led to serious feuds and occasional breaches of the peace. In 1804, quite a furore was excited by the appearance on the stage of Master William Henry Betty, the so-called 'Young Roscius.' So strongly was public curiosity excited, that amidst the crowds which besieged the theatre persons had their clothes torn from their backs in the struggle for admission. The excitement, however, soon subsided, and on a subsequent visit, the young performer was treated with something approaching contempt.

Lewis.

This theatre was for a considerable time managed by Mr. T. D. Lewis, who succeeded his father 'gentleman Lewis' as lessee, and who lived in a house adjoining the theatre in Murray Street. I have already in chapter iv., made a slight mention of 'Dandy' Lewis, in connection with his friend Tom Tarleton. Tarleton Street, Houghton Street, Cases Street, Dawson Street, Richmond Street, are called after families once flourishing in the town.

Tarleton Street, &c.

Residents.

The Rev. Thomas Dannett, one of the rectors, resided for many years in Charles Street, now a very unsavoury avenue leading from Williamson Square to Whitechapel. In Williamson Street, lived Mr. Thomas Shaw, mayor in 1747. In Tarleton Street, lived Mr. (afterwards Sir) George Dunbar, who was mayor in 1796. In Marble Street, running northwards from Williamson Square, about the year 1780, a building of some architectural pretension called the Gothic Hall was erected for a linen hall. It was built by Lord Thomas Fitzmaurice, one of the Sherburne family, for the purpose of serving as a depôt for Irish linens, in which manufacture he had an interest. He married the Countess of Orkney, a peeress

Gothic Hall.

in her own right, and was the progenitor of the subsequent Earls of Orkney. Commercially it was not found to be a success. It was afterwards used as an auction room, an exhibition room, and finally subsided into a tobacco manufactory, in which useful occupation it still continues.

On the other side of Marble Street, stands a plain brick building, fifty years ago rather celebrated by the magniloquent title of the 'Liverpool Forum.' Here periodical discussions were held on political and other subjects under the presidency of a somewhat eccentric individual, Samuel William Ryley.[1] This gentleman had been a professional actor for many years, and in the decline of life, this occupation of presiding genius at a debating society open to all comers, was proffered to him by his friends to aid in eking out a livelihood. He was the author of a singular book called 'the Itinerant,' professing to give a sort of autobiography, but I suspect containing many chapters of somewhat apocryphal character. Be this as it may, it is a very interesting story, full of 'moving accidents by flood and field,' with nothing in it to offend the purest taste. Poor Ryley was ultimately pensioned off by his friends, and retired to a small cottage on the banks of the Dee near Parkgate, where he closed a chequered career, having survived to the period of our great dramatist's 'lean and slippered pantaloon.'

Forum.

Ryley.

A little above the theatre on the north-west side of Upper Dawson Street, a building was erected in 1796 called the Minerva Newsroom. At the latter end of the last and the beginning of the present century, a great rage existed for the establishment of newsrooms. About six or seven buildings were erected for the purpose in various localities, some of them in situations which at the present day would be thought very inappropriate. With two exceptions, they have all been abandoned.

Minerva Newsroom.

[1] See vol. i. p. 321.

CHAP. VII.

'Kelly the butterman.'

The one in question has long been known as the *locale* of the celebrated 'Kelly the butterman,' a gentleman who 'keeps a poet' and enriches the diurnal literature with effusions on the leading topics of the day, which all, by some mysterious process, terminate in 'butter and the butter place.'

Murray Street, since called Brythen Street, which runs north-westward from Williamson Square, was until the erection of St. John's Market in 1823, a *cul de sac*, a quiet and almost unknown locality. Here formerly stood

Zion Chapel.

an octagonal building called Zion Chapel, erected in 1801 by the Methodists of the New Connexion. About 1833 it was taken down, and a building for a Fish Hall erected on the site by a Joint-Stock Fish Company. This company came to grief, and the building was sold to the corporation and used as the office for weights and measures.

Basnett Street.

Basnett Street was built up between 1770 and 1780. A large house at the corner of Houghton Street was

John Leigh.

built by Mr. John Leigh, attorney, who removed here from Dale Street. He was a remarkable man for the energy and perseverance displayed in his character. He had probably a greater amount of prescience and foresight as to the coming greatness of Liverpool than any man of his day. Acting on these convictions, he invested all the funds at his command in the purchase of lands

Leigh family.

round Liverpool. This he did to such an extent as seriously to embarrass himself during his own lifetime, and to entail large burdens on his successors. He manfully clung to his prepossessions, and never lost heart or hope to the last. The result fully justified and even surpassed his most sanguine expectations. His purchases have proved a mine of wealth to his family, the value of his estates constantly increasing with progress of building. His son, Mr. John Shaw Leigh, filled the civic chair in 1841. He afterwards purchased the estate of Luton Hoo from the Marquis of Bute, where his de-

scendants reside. In 1776, Mr. Henry Park—usually called Harry Park—an eminent surgeon, went to reside in Basnett Street. This was then considered such a distance from the centre of the town that his friends remonstrated with him for going so far out of the way of his patients. I shall have again to allude to Mr. Park. Harry Park.

We will now proceed up Houghton Street into Clayton Square. This takes its name from the Clayton family once very influential in Liverpool. William Clayton represented the borough in eight parliaments between 1698 and 1714, and was mayor in 1689. It was laid out between 1745 and 1750 on land belonging to the Claytons, a portion on the north side being purchased from the Williamsons. In 1769 only four houses had been erected. The centre house on the south side now converted into the Prince of Wales Theatre, was the residence of Mrs., usually called Madam Clayton, the daughter of William Clayton above mentioned. Before 1785, the whole square had been completed with commodious well-built houses. Originally there was no outlet on the east side; the locality was therefore quiet and retired; the pavement was grass-grown; and the whole had an aspect of dull respectability. In this square resided Mr. Nicholas Ashton after his removal from Paradise Street and Hanover Street, and Mr. William James, father of Mr. William James of Barrock Lodge, M.P. for Cumberland. Mr. Arthur Onslow, a relative of Speaker Onslow, Collector of Customs, lived on the east side in a house taken down when Elliott Street was cut through. The quiet and seclusion of the square led to its use for open air political meetings, principally on the Liberal side, which, notwithstanding the altered circumstances, have been occasionally continued to the present time. In 1822, Elliot Street was carried through to Clayton Square from Lime Street, thus opening up an entirely new thoroughfare from the centre of the town eastwards. Since the establishment of the omnibus

Clayton family.

Ashton.

James.

Onslow.

Improvements.

CHAP. VII.

system, this route has become very much frequented. The character of the square has therefore undergone an entire change. All the houses have been converted either into hotels or offices, and a busy current of human life has supplanted the ancient quiet and decorum.

Parker Street takes its name from the family of the Parkers of Cuerden, who intermarried with the Claytons and Tarletons.

Previous to the building of St. John's Market, which was commenced in 1821, the space between Great Charlotte Street and the back of Clayton Square, was occupied

Roperies.

by rope-walks extending the whole length from Hood Street to Ranelagh Street. Great Charlotte Street, called after the Queen of George III. was laid out about 1780,

Elliott Street.

with the cross streets Elliott Street (called after Sir Gilbert Elliott, Lord Heathfield) and Roe Street. It was originally intended to construct a crescent on the east side of Great Charlotte Street between Elliott and Roe Streets, as shown in Eyes's map of 1785. This was afterwards abandoned and Queen's Square substituted. This was commenced with good houses on the east and north, but was never so completed on the remaining sides. As long as these roperies so continued, any improvement in the neighbourhood was impossible, but the construction of St. John's Market, effected an entire change. Elliott Street being cut through as above stated, the roperies became valuable building land. Shops and taverns were required surrounding the market and a busy, thriving quarter succeeded to what was to that time almost a waste. Deane Street takes its name from a gentleman who had a ropery on the site and resided in Ranelagh Street adjoining, at an old-fashioned house, now the Albion Hotel.

St. John's Market.

St. John's Market was commenced in August 1820 and completed in February 1822, at a cost of 35,000*l.* I have already narrated in chapter i. the circumstances which led to the removal of the market from Castle

Street and its erection here. The building was designed by Mr. John Foster, the corporation surveyor. In point of convenience and adaptation to its purpose, St. John's Market possesses one great advantage, that of simplicity. A right-angled parallelogram, surrounded by streets on four sides, and intersected by avenues, longitudinally and transversely, it is simply a large area protected from the weather. The mere size of a covered area, not very far short of two acres, imparts a certain air of dignity to the erection. To architectural merit it can hardly lay claim. The heavy carpentry of the roof and its division into numerous spans, give an air of lowness, almost of gloom. Allowance must be made for the period of its erection. As yet railway stations with vast iron roofs and enormous spans were things undreamt of. The comparison between the roofs of St. John's Market and Lime Street Station will show what a vast stride has been taken in five and forty years.

St. John's market.

The erection of the fish market followed as an adjunct to the general market.

The Amphitheatre—absurdly so called, not having any approximation to the form—was erected in 1825. The first stone was laid on November 27 in that year, and it was ready for opening in the incredibly short time of two months, having been opened on January 27, 1826. It was constructed for equestrian performances, and has been frequently occupied by Ducrow, Batty, and others, but for a long time it has been usually carried on as an ordinary theatre. The building and its arrangements are rough, uncouth, and slovenly, but it has merits of a valuable kind. It will seat an enormous audience, nearly 4,000 persons, all of whom can see and hear. Its acoustic properties are exceedingly good. It has been frequently used for great political meetings, for which it is well adapted.

Amphitheatre.

At the top of Roe Street stood the Old Fall well, which had existed on the Great Heath from time imme-

Old Fall well.

CHAP. VII.

Old Fall well.

morial, affording a plentiful supply of water to all who chose to draw. It stood in a square area, built round with stone. When it was no longer used for public purposes (about 1790), the water was conducted by pipes to the garden of a house at the north end of Queen Square, occupied by Mr. William Roe (from whom Roe Street took its name), where it formed a fountain for many years.

Whitechapel.

Before completing our perambulation let us take a rapid glance at Whitechapel, which bounds the district I have been describing on its north-west side. Its original name was Frog Lane, so called no doubt from the colonies of croakers which inhabited the open brook running along its course. The name was altered after 1769 and before 1781. In the Directory of 1766 and in Perry's map of 1769 it is called Frog Lane. In the Directory of 1781 it assumes the name of Whitechapel. Why it was so called there appears no record. Probably

Buildings.

the name was borrowed from the metropolis. In 1725 there only existed a few buildings near the bottom of Sir Thomas's Buildings. In 1769 the north-west side was built up, but the south-east side was still for the most part open fields. In 1785 both sides had been completed. There is nothing about the history of the street worthy of special notice. It was until recently a crooked and irregular avenue. The level of the surface being very low, little elevated above high water mark, it was formerly subject in wet seasons to serious inundations, the communication between Church Street and Lord Street being occasionally for a time maintained by carts or boats. The houses built in the street were, therefore, not of a very superior character; but lying as it did in the direct line of traffic from north to south, business became naturally attracted to it, and it has now developed into a leading thoroughfare. The improvements under recent Acts of Parliament have been carried out by widening the north-west side in connexion with the

Improvements.

reconstruction of the district between Whitechapel and Dale Street and the erection of the public offices. The reconstruction is still (1872) incomplete. The alteration swept away many old structures—converted into shops, but still retaining much of their original character. Rainford's Garden takes its name from Mr. Peter Rainford, one of the bailiffs in 1724. Opposite the end of a short street called Derby Street, after the Derby family, with one front to Stanley Street, formerly stood an ancient Baptist meeting-house. It was erected about 1750, for the use of a part of the congregation from the meeting-house in Byrom Street—now St. Stephen's Church—who seceded under the pastorate of Mr. Johnson, a relative of Sir Thomas Johnson. It was continued as a Baptist chapel down to the year 1819, when the congregation removed to Great Crosshall Street, and the building was converted into shops. Hard by, on the south side of Cumberland Street, stood a small Jewish synagogue, the first erected in Liverpool. It is said to have been built by some German Jews, about the middle of the last century. There must have been a small cemetery attached, as fragments of tombstones with Hebrew inscriptions have been found in the neighbourhood. It has been stated that the Hebrew congregation removed to Frederick Street in 1794, but the building remained standing for some time afterwards. It is shown in the map of 1796; but at the time of Horwood's large survey of 1803 it had disappeared.

Rainford's Garden.

Derby Street.

Baptist meeting.

Jews' synagogue.

The triangular space at the north-east end of Whitechapel was appropriated before the middle of last century as a hay market, the name of which it still retains; but the market was removed to Lime Street early in the present century. Under the Improvement Act of 1838 the buildings between the Haymarket and St. John's Churchyard were cleared away, and the area greatly extended, forming a noble '*Place*.'

Hay market.

CHAPTER VIII.

ST. GEORGE'S HALL AND ITS SURROUNDINGS.

CHAP. VIII.

Site.

THE last chapter terminated at the foot of St. John's Lane, whence a few steps take us to the esplanade of St. George's Hall. We are here on the declivity of the 'Great Heath' of Liverpool, and it may not be amiss before taking cognisance of what presents itself to our notice, to pause for a little and call up in our mind's eye the scenic changes which have passed over the locality.

Great Heath.

Our first notice of the heath is soon after the middle of the sixteenth century, on occasion of the disturbance between the 'Blue Coats' and the 'Motley Coats' described in a previous chapter.[1] The townsmen mustered on the heath 'eagar as lions,' 'every man with their best weapons' summoned by the mayor to preserve the Queen's peace. At this time the appearance presented by the locality must have closely resembled Bidston Hill on the opposite side of the river; a long slope of barren rocky soil, declining to the west, covered with whin bushes and heather. Even at this period it is probable that a few windmills had been erected on the high ground, for there is record of a great storm which visited the town on December 22, 1565, in which many windmills 'were clean overthrown and all to broken.'

Windmills.

Seventeenth century.

We again get a peep of the heath nearly a century later. Great changes had taken place in the interval. The country was up in arms, King and Commons battling for

Civil war.

[1] Vol i. p. 68.

Engraved by J. Stanley

STATUE OF GEORGE III. LONDON ROAD.

THIS PLATE IS RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED TO H. WESTMACOTT ESQ. PROFESSOR OF SCULPTURE, R.A.

BY THE PUBLISHERS

PUBLISHED BY [illegible] & CO. LONDON, [illegible] 1829.

CHAP. VIII.

the supremacy, and even in this remote corner of the country, marching and counter marching, leaguer and battle were the order of the day. In the early summer of 1644 the fiery Rupert making a raid into Lancashire, sat down before Liverpool, and surveying from this declivity the mud walls below, pronounced the place 'a mere crow's nest, which a parcel of boys might take.' However he went to work strictly '*en règle*,' opening his trenches at a very safe distance, and gradually bringing his parallels down the hill. The last line of trenches ran from the foot of London Road, nearly opposite what was then the Townsend Mill, along the slope as far as Copperas Hill, near the end of Silver Street. The trenches are frequently met with in excavating for sewers, &c. It is stated that Prince Rupert lost 1,500 of his men in vain attempts to storm the town, but this is probably an exaggeration, as the place was reduced in eighteen days, and in the previous siege when the town was stormed by the Parliamentarians under Colonel Ashton, the Royalists only lost eighty men. However here on this heath for the first and let us hope for the last time culverin and demi-cannon, saker and falconet bellowed and roared for eighteen days. 'Liverpoole hath cost a hundred barrels of munition,' writes Arthur Trevor, 'which makes Prince Rupert much ill-provided.' At length the storm passed away; the Royalists retreated as quickly as they had advanced, and the heath was again left to its solitude diversified only by the scream of the plover or the song of the lark.

Civil war.

Trenches.

Siege.

Another century rolls away, and when we next survey the scene, favourable signs of progress are manifest. The mud walls below have been swept away, the town has overleapt the boundary of the tiny brook, and is slowly dotting the lower slope of the hill with pottery works and houses. Nine or ten windmills are merrily swinging their arms to the fresh breeze, and on the brow of the eminence just below Prince Rupert's trenches, a stately

Progress, eighteenth century.

CHAP. VIII.

building is arising dedicated to the relief of human suffering, flanked by others for the relief of sailors' families, bearing testimony that with increasing prosperity the current of benevolence is developing in like proportion.

Rebellion, 1745.

The inroad of the Pretender (1745) has for a time alarmed the nation. Lancashire has once more—let us hope for the last time—witnessed the advance of hostile troops, and rejoiced at their retreat. Operations have therefore for a time been suspended, shortly to be resumed. The heath has been partially enclosed and brought into cultivation, and a road leading eastward out of the town towards Prescot has been formed. As yet, however, travelling is limited to equestrians. Roads for wheelcarriages into the town are things for the future.

The Derby Dilly with its six insides,

is a luxury unknown to the denizens of the rising port. No stage-coach can approach nearer than Warrington. Such is the general aspect of things hereabouts in the middle of last century.

Nineteenth century.

Our view grows faint and dim and vanishes into empty space. Another century elapses and the curtain rises in the middle of the nineteenth. A mighty change has come over the landscape. The heath is now in the heart of a mighty city. The windmills have twirled their last gyrations and are gone. The haunts of the fox and the wild fowl are pervaded by the avenues of commerce, redolent with the cheerful associations of industry and progress. The stately building with its grassy forecourt, its quaint gates and balustrade and its advancing wings, quiet, solid, and respectable, with the shady gardens behind, has been swept away. In its place there has arisen a building which for magnitude, harmony of proportion, beauty of form and elegance of finish may take its place amongst the noblest architectural works of any age or country. No modern building perhaps approaches nearer Virgil's description of the temple in Carthage:

Hic templum Junoni ingens Sidonia Dido
Condebat, donis opulentum et numine divæ
Ærea cui gradibus surgebant limina nexæque
Ære trabes, foribus cardo stridebat aenis.[1]

Churches, monuments, statues, public buildings, have sprung up on every hand. Many during the period have arisen, flourished, and passed away to be succeeded by others better adapted to the times. The whole system of stage-coach travelling, which for many years was a prominent and distinguishing feature of this locality, has during the century been called into existence, served its purpose and passed away like a tale that is told. Its grand successor the railway system has established its head-quarters in the same neighbourhood. Changes.

Such is the general aspect at the present day. Let us now trace out a little more in detail the successive steps by which this result has been attained.

With the exception of the windmills, which were set up on various points of the heath, the Old Infirmary was the first building erected. The want of such an institution had been felt and publicly noticed some time previously, and in 1745 a vigorous and successful attempt was made to realise the project. The corporation gave the land on a lease for 999 years, and the works were commenced, but for a time suspended owing to the rebellion of that year. In 1749 the institution was opened with thirty beds for patients. The first president was the Earl of Derby. The cost of the building was 2,648*l.* 7*s.* 11*d.* In 1752, two detached wings were added for the purposes of the Seamen's Hospital. This was a Infirmary. Seamen's Hospital.

[1] Sidonian Dido here with solemn state,
Did Juno's temple build and consecrate;
Enrich'd with gifts and with a golden shrine,
But more the goddess made the place divine.
On brazen steps the marble threshold rose
And brazen plates the cedar beams inclose;
The rafters are with brazen coverings crowned
The lofty doors on brazen hinges sound.

DRYDEN.

CHAP. VIII.

charity created under an Act of Parliament about 1750, by which every seaman sailing from the port, paid sixpence per month towards the support of decayed mariners, and the widows and orphan children of seamen. The land was rented from the trustees of the infirmary at 20*l.* per annum. The erections cost 1,500*l.*

Design.

The general effect of the buildings was pleasing and agreeable. They were of dark red brick with stone dressings, with a cupola over the centre of the infirmary, and smaller ones over the wings. The ample extent of the ground occupied, the loftiness of the central building combining with the detached wings by curved open colonnades as at Burlington House, forming three sides of a quadrangle, imparted an air of grave dignity to the *ensemble*, which was quite in character with the purposes for which the building was designed. A large building for a lunatic asylum was erected in 1789 in the garden behind the infirmary.

Lunatic asylum.

After being in existence about eighty years, the infirmary was found too small for the increasing wants of the town. A new building for the institution was erected in Brownlow Street and opened in 1824, to which I shall have to refer hereafter. A new lunatic asylum was also erected in Brownlow Hill. The Infirmary Buildings and Seamen's Hospital were taken down in 1826. The Lunatic Asylum was occupied for some years as military barracks and was finally removed in 1835.

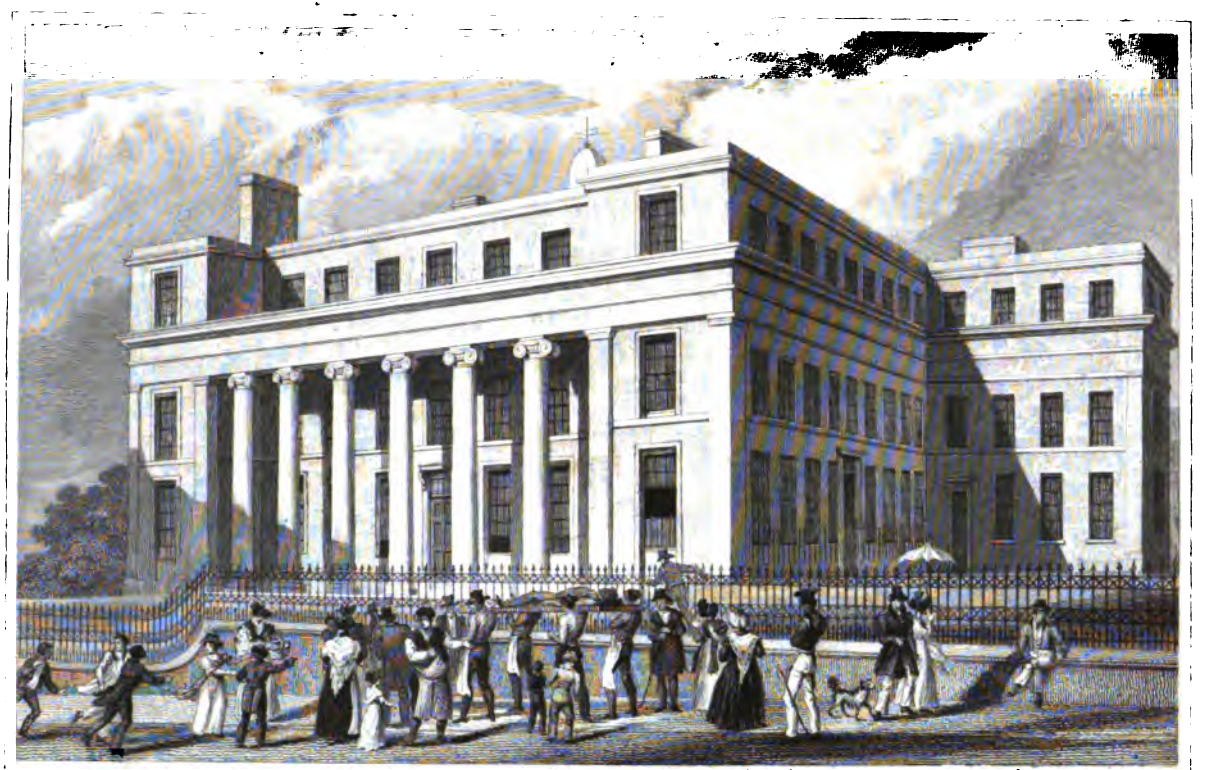
New infirmary.

I have alluded in chapter vii. to the triennial musical festivals formerly held in St. Peter's Church, and to the desire that a separate building for this purpose should be erected. In the year 1836 action was taken in the matter. Subscriptions to the amount of 23,350*l.* were obtained, a committee was formed, and a premium offered in open competition for the best design, for a building to be called St. George's Hall. After a severe contest, the prize was awarded to Mr. Harvey Lonsdale Elmes, a

Festivals.

Proposed building.

Elmes.



Drawn on Stone by T. Allom.

Engraved by T. Allom.

THE INFIRMARY, BROWNLOW STREET.

TO THE PATRONS, PHYSICIANS, AND SURGEONS OF THE INSTITUTION, THIS PLATE IS RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED.

young architect who had just entered upon his professional career in London with considerable promise. Whilst preparations for this building were in progress, the corporation found it necessary to erect assize courts for the southern division of the county, the business of which had recently been transferred to Liverpool. On a competition for the designs for this building, Mr. Elmes was again successful. Difficulties having subsequently occurred in carrying out the original scheme for the music hall, the whole matter fell into the hands of the corporation, who employed Mr. Elmes to prepare plans embracing the objects of both schemes. The result was the design of the present St. George's Hall, which has, however, undergone considerable modification during the progress of its erection.

Assize courts.

The first stone was laid on the Coronation day of Queen Victoria, June 28, 1838, with considerable pomp and ceremony by Mr. William Rathbone, the mayor.

First stone laid.

On October 9, 1851, the town being honoured by a visit from the Queen and the Prince Consort, Her Majesty visited the Hall then in an incomplete condition, and was received in the most enthusiastic manner by her loyal subjects in spite of such a continuous deluge of rain from morning to night, as had scarcely been known within the memory of man. In 1854, September 12, the Hall was publicly opened by Mr. J. B. Lloyd, the mayor, on which occasion various festivities took place.

Queen's visit.

A few words may here be introduced on the general effect and merits of the building. It is a structure of which the town may well feel proud, and notwithstanding some defects which will presently be pointed out, it will always hold a very high and honourable place amongst the erections of modern times. In regard to its situation the building has been fortunate. It occupies the most central position in the town, fronting some of the most important thoroughfares, and is surrounded by an area sufficiently extensive to exhibit its proportions to

Notes on building.

Situation.

CHAP. VIII.

Situation.

the best advantage. The immediate contiguity of the railway station, which discharges its passengers directly opposite the principal front, contributes not a little to the celebrity and fame of the building, the general effect on a traveller, just emerged from the darkness of the tunnel, being strongly—almost dramatically—picturesque. An-

Size.

other advantage it possesses is that of size; absolute bulk being a powerful element in the production of grand and noble impressions. In this respect the building before us stands almost, if not quite alone, amongst the secular structures of the country, at least in the provinces. Our magnificent cathedrals derive their beauty from sources and associations of an entirely different nature. Such palatial edifices as Somerset House, the British Museum, or Buckingham Palace, are rather clusters of buildings surrounding open courts which the eye cannot comprehend from any single point of view; so that there are few buildings in the country forming a solid mass under one roof, which surpass it in dimension.

Plan.

The plan is simple in arrangement and is soon described. The centre is occupied by the great hall, attached to which at each end and opening therefrom are the assize courts; the hall filling the place of Westminster Hall to the London courts of justice, or the 'Salle des Pas-Perdus' to the French courts. A corridor runs round the hall and the courts, communicating on the east side with the external portico, and on the west side with the library, robing room, Sheriff's court, and other subordinate apartments. The south end is terminated by a vestibule opening to the south portico. The north end terminates in a semicircle, within which is a spacious *loggia* or entrance, above which, on the upper story, is placed the concert hall. The corridors are repeated on the upper floor, from which access is gained to the galleries of the great hall, and to a range of apartments partially over those below. The grand jury room is situated over the southern vestibule. These details, with

CHAP. VIII.

the various staircases of communication, comprise the whole arrangement above ground. It would be quite out of place to describe the labyrinth of passages and vaults in the lower regions, comprising the warming and ventilating apparatus, the steam-engine for working the organ bellows, the kitchens and cooking ranges, barristers' dining rooms, &c. Plan.

Returning to the exterior, let us contemplate the building from the south-east, decidedly the most favourable point of view. The first thing which strikes us is the clear indication of the internal distribution which is afforded by the external elevation. The large central mass rising above the surrounding roofs clearly marks a spacious and lofty apartment within. This feature imparts boldness and dignity to the entire composition, and by its extent of plain surface gives that degree of breadth and repose which is essential in every great work of art. Some central feature is necessary in every large building, to give unity of effect, and to concentrate the attention of the spectator. This is often accomplished by the addition of a dome or cupola, but the result is too often that of dwarfing the substructure, and robbing it of its just proportions; in the present case this has been happily avoided. The central mass, in its plainness and horizontality, forms a sufficient counterpoise to the richness of decoration below, and to the vertical lines of the columns, without any painful predominance. It may be mentioned also, that another important element of beauty, that of gradation, is developed from the cornice upward by the receding lines of the attic, forming an intermediate step between the main order and the crowning mass. Exterior.

The east portico, with its sixteen columns and its lofty flight of steps, forms a promenade worthy of Greece in her palmiest days. The open galleries on each side, with their square pillars partially filled up below, are novel in design and effective in the result. East portico.

The distinguishing feature of the southern portico is

CHAP. VIII.

Sculpture.

the fine group of statuary which embellishes the pediment. It seems to represent Commerce and the Arts bearing tribute to Britannia; but allegories of this kind are not always so intelligible that 'he who runs may read.' Be this as it may, the value of the sculpture consists, not so much in the story which it tells, as in the fine relief which the introduction of human and animal forms gives to the rigid lines of the architecture; the play of light and shade, unrestricted by the somewhat monotonous repetition of column and entablature, imparts a richness and variety which are kept within proper limits by the bounding lines of the pediment. The design, which is by the late Professor Cockerell—originally intended, there is reason to believe, for the Professor's design for the London Royal Exchange, had he been selected to carry it out—is very effective in its general features, conforming without constraint to the straight lines of the architecture, whilst possessing within itself the utmost freedom.

South portico.

The portico with its flight of steps is graceful and elegant, but the narrow limit of the terrace in front is much to be regretted; access by the steps being out of the question, the whole arrangement seems somewhat abortive. Originally access was obtained from the street by two narrow flights of steps descending right and left from the centre; but the taste of the local *dilettanti* being offended, an appeal was made to the council, by whose authority they were removed, and the terrace finished as it now remains.

The frieze and architrave carry the following inscription:

ARTIBUS, LEGIBUS, CONSILIIS,
LOCUM MUNICIPIA CONSTITUERUNT,
ANNO DOMINI MDCCCXLI.

It has been objected to the exterior that each of the four sides is dissimilar, thus marring the symmetry essential to every classical structure. This objection, carefully considered, does not appear to have much weight. Since

the eye can only command two sides at one time, if each side be symmetrical in itself, and not discordant from those which may be seen in conjunction, our sense of harmony is fully satisfied.

West front.

The west front, which is the most commanding in its aspect, is the least satisfactory. The square detached pilasters, when seen in perspective, appear massive and clumsy; and the ranges of windows, the absence of which in the other fronts imparts such a monumental character to the building, certainly mar the classical associations called up by the other façades.

North end.

Exception has been taken to the semicircular northern termination as being out of keeping with the remainder of the design, but as it appears to me without sufficient cause. If an excrescence, it is a graceful and elegant one, and needs no apology for its being where it is.

The exterior of the building generally, bears unmistakable marks of genius in its conception. Roman in the style and order selected, the refinement of its details is suggestive of the noblest period of Grecian art. On the whole, the result may be pronounced one of the most successful efforts of modern times.

Interior.

Turn we now to the interior. Here, I regret to say, the same meed of praise cannot be awarded. The arrangement of the plan is in the highest degree objectionable. A large hall of the imposing dimensions of the one under consideration should be approached through a noble vestibule. The principal entrance should be at the end, that the fullest perspective effect may be obtained, and that the first impression may be of the most striking character. Light and cheerful access should be afforded to every part. In the present instance all experience of this nature has been ignored. From the lofty grandeur of the eastern portico we enter by what appears externally a door of imposing proportions, but which is in reality a huge sham. We find ourselves in a low, narrow, and dark corridor, crossing which we immediately enter

East Entrance.

CHAP. VIII.

the great hall on one of its sides. The æsthetic effect is extremely bad, and the practical inconvenience so great, that it is impossible to use the eastern entrances on any public occasion. The southern access is still worse. The external portico is only approachable by a small portion of the steps at one end. We have here before us a still greater sham than on the eastern side. An immense door, with elegant architectural decorations, promises to open upon an equally imposing interior, but alas! the only movable portion of the door is a low-browed wicket, which gives access to a moderate-sized vestibule, the ceiling of which is about half the height of the doorway, the 'dim religious light' serving little more than to make darkness visible. From this the visitor has to grope his way right or left through a series of dark, narrow, tortuous passages, till he finds himself entering the hall by the same doors as those above described, or corresponding ones on the western side. The southern entrance is, therefore, for all practical purposes, utterly useless, and accordingly, is never so employed. Under these circumstances, the only available access is at the north end, which is that commonly used. The vestibule itself is spacious and handsome, though somewhat deficient in height, but the external doorways are narrow and mean. In this magnificent building, erected for all time, regardless of cost, it is a lamentable fact, that with two of the finest porticos and *quasi* entrances in the kingdom, the only available means of access for the public is by three doorways on the basement floor, no larger than a common house door, without a particle of shelter.

South entrance.

North entrance.

Hall.

The great hall itself is worthy of the external design in grandeur of conception and beauty of detail. The rich costliness of the material contributes much towards heightening the effect. The polished red granite columns, the marble and alabaster balustrades, the bronze gates, the encaustic tile floors, combine with the richly decorated vault to produce a splendour which enhances the

greatness of the architectural proportions. Much of the interior design is from the pencil of Professor Cockerell, to whom the completion of the building was entrusted, after the lamented decease of the architect.

Assize courts.

The two Assize Courts are rooms about sixty feet square, the arrangements of which have been repeatedly altered, without any very satisfactory ultimate result. Their acoustic properties have proved incurably defective, after many attempts to remedy them. The great hall labours under the same disadvantage, though for choral performances of music it is by no means to be complained of.

Organ.

The organ is a noble instrument, manufactured by Messrs. Willis, of London, equal to any in the country for extent, power, and beauty of tone. A contest was waged for some time as to the situation of the organ. Although designed for a music-room, it appears that in the plan no provision had been made for the reception of an organ. One great object of the architect was to have a vista through the great hall, by which the judge sitting in one court could see through the long perspective his brother judge on the bench in the other. With this idea the organ placed at the end was incompatible. It was proposed to divide the organ, placing one half on each side, with connecting couplings; but then came the difficulty as to choral performances.

Orchestra

Where was the orchestra to be placed? To divide this would be impossible, and it could not be placed at the end without destroying the much-cherished vista. Dire was the contention on this knotty question, the advocates of the vista even proposing the abandonment of music altogether rather than spoil the unique architectural effect. At length, however, common sense prevailed. The hall was built for music, and it was determined, *coûte qui coûte*, to carry out the intention. The organ was, therefore, placed at the north end; and after several abortive attempts, a tolerable orchestra was constructed below the organ.

CHAP. VIII.

Vault. The vault over the hall is a daring piece of construction, being turned in brick, with a span of eighty feet. Resort was had to hollow or pierced bricks, which lightened the weight by nearly one-half.

Concert hall. The small concert hall on the upper floor is quite a *bijou* in its arrangement and decoration. The plan is semicircular, with a light gallery round. The taste displayed in this apartment reflects the highest credit on the late Professor Cockerell, from whose designs it was completed. Its acoustic properties are remarkably good.

I have criticised pretty freely the mistakes in the internal arrangements of this building; but, with all its defects, it constitutes the architectural glory of Liverpool, and is one of the greatest triumphs of the art in modern times. The esplanade in front of St. George's Hall might be called the Forum of Liverpool, being the receptacle of most of the statuary of which Liverpool can boast. The lions couchant which form an advanced guard in front have occasionally called forth ebullitions of small wit and critical ridicule, but they are notwithstanding noble embodiments of the genus *Leo*, simple and grand in their repose. Mr. Thorneycroft's equestrian statue of the late Prince Consort has also had to encounter its share of critical remarks. Time, which proves all things, will prove the safest arbiter. The companion statue of Her Most Gracious Majesty Queen Victoria is a memorial of the loyalty to the throne and attachment to the person of the sovereign felt by the inhabitants of this 'most ancient and loyal borough.'[1]

Esplanade.

Statues.

Wellington column. What shall we say of the memorial column to the illustrious Iron Duke which dominates over the neighbourhood, and from the summit of which his effigy, like

[1] The above critique on St. George's Hall was originally written for 'Modern Liverpool,' the letter-press of which was contributed by the author to illustrate a series of drawings by Herdman. It is necessary to notice this, as the author has been honoured by the extraction and insertion of the entire criticism in another publication without a word of acknowledgment.

St. Simeon Stylites, looks out stern and forlorn in his isolated grandeur? Better, perhaps, say with Dante's guide—

Non ragioniam di lor', ma guarda e passa,

Which, freely rendered into the vernacular, may be held to mean, 'The least said the soonest mended.'

Alexandra Theatre.

The Alexandra Theatre is a recent erection of considerable merit, from the designs of Mr. Solomon, of Manchester. Both internally and externally it displays marks of careful study and good taste.

Lime Street station.

Opposite St. George's Hall, on the east side of Lime Street, stood formerly a façade or screen of the London and North Western Railway, erected in 1835–6, from the designs of Mr. John Foster.

I will not here enter into any particulars of the railway system, the introduction of which into Liverpool has been already mentioned in the historical narrative.[1] Suffice it to say that for six years after the formation of the railway to Manchester, passengers were taken in omnibuses to the terminus at Edgehill; that in 1836 the Lime Street tunnel was completed and the station opened; that the corporation contributed 2,000*l.* out of the town's funds towards the beautifying of the façade. This façade, now amongst things of the past, consisted of a screen wall, with attached columns and entablature, with a lofty attic over. Although the style was coarse compared with the elegance of the great hall opposite, yet the general effect was somewhat stately and grandiose. The iron roof over the station behind was a noble piece of carpentry in iron, designed by Turner of Dublin. It has since been surpassed in extent and daring by its successor and other modern specimens; but for true scientific construction, at a time when such roofs were novelties, it deserved every commendation. The roof and the façade have been swept away. The former has

[1] Vol. i. p. 486.

CHAP. VIII.

Hotel.

found a successor much larger and bolder in its construction; the latter has given place to one of the huge caravanseries which modern requirements have substituted for the ancient 'hostelry,' in which the importance of every wayfarer is measured by the amount of his contribution to the 10 per cent dividend of greedy shareholders.

St. John's Church.

Before proceeding further eastward let me say a few words about St. John's Church, which seems to occupy such an impertinent position relative to the west front of St. George's Hall. If stones could speak, the church might well plead that though, like Uriah Heep, 'exceedingly 'umble,' it is not responsible for all the grandeur which has accumulated in its rear.

Owing to the increase of the town, an Act was obtained in 1762 authorising the building of two new churches, St. Paul's and St. John's. Soon after this a portion of the 'great heath,' constituting the present churchyard of St. John, was enclosed and set apart for a general burial-ground, and a small mortuary chapel erected near the present western gate. The ground and chapel were consecrated in 1767. In 1775 the first stone of the present church was laid by Peter Rigby, Esq., mayor. Although not usually so understood, the church was really dedicated to St. John the Baptist, as appears from the following inscription on the stone :—

Hic lapis positus erat septimo die ante Julii Calendas, et anno Salutis MDCCLXXV., necnon et die festo maxime venerando sanctissimi Johannis Baptistæ, in cujus memoriam hæ sacræ ædes sunt pietissime dicatæ, et ejusdem nomine reverenter nuncupatæ, Petro Rigby, Prætore, Johanne Colquitt, Jacobo Gildart, juniore, Edilibus, Edvardo Chaffers, Gulielmo Hatton, Custodibus Sacrorum.

The magniloquent character of this inscription, in calling the mayor and bailiffs by the classic titles of 'prætor' and 'ediles,' instead of the usual mediæval 'præpositus' and 'bailivus,' is worthy of notice. Owing to some cause not mentioned, the works went on very

St. John's Church.

slowly, and it was not until 1783 that the church was consecrated. Thomas Lightholder, the architect of St. Paul's, was also the designer of this church. Making every allowance for the period of its erection, it would be scarcely possible to rate the design too low. The deplorable absence of any knowledge of the simplest elements of the pointed style is far from being compensated by anything pleasing in the outline or general effect. The building has obtained considerable notoriety from its very ugliness, and the obstruction which it offers to the west view of St. George's Hall and to the desirable improvements in the locality. Were it removed the churchyard would afford a noble esplanade in connexion with the hall.

Almshouses.

The neighbourhood which we are now surveying was formerly distinguished by the number of almshouses within a moderate distance.

Liverpool is not distinguished, like Edinburgh, Warwick, Coventry, and some other towns, by munificent foundations for charitable purposes handed down from mediæval times. In this respect the borough is remarkably poor. Whether, on the whole, bequests for charitable purposes do a greater amount of good or harm has become in modern times a serious question for inquiry. In Liverpool, at least, the endowments have been too slender to perpetuate much mischief.

Dale Street.

The earliest almshouses of which there is any record stood on the south side of Dale Street, near the Old Haymarket. They are shown on Chadwick's and Eyes's maps of 1725, and called the *Old* Almshouses, in contradistinction from the others I am about to mention. We have no record of any almshouses in existence before 1684, when twelve were erected by David Poole in Dale Street, doubtless the same as are shown on the maps. David Poole was one of the high bailiffs in 1685.

Dr. Richmond.

In 1692 Dr. Silvester Richmond gave 100*l.* to erect almshouses on the south side of Shaw's Brow for poor sailors

CHAP. VIII.

widows, which was increased by a further sum of 50*l.* by his widow, Mrs. Sarah Richmond, in 1706. In 1723 Mr. John Scarisbrick, mayor in that year, gave 70*l.* towards completing them. These buildings are shown in the maps of 1765 and 1769, with pleasant gardens behind.

Richard Warbrick.

In 1706 Mr. Richard Warbrick, who was bailiff in 1694, paid into the hands of the corporation 150*l.* for the erection and repair of almshouses. These were built on the site of the present Lyceum, at the bottom of Bold Street, and were removed in 1787. Mr. Warbrick also gave two houses in Castle Street, one in Moor Street, and one in Chapel Street, the yearly proceeds to be applied for the benefit of seamen's widows. This charity is still maintained, the property having largely increased in value.

Mrs. Molyneux.

In January 1727 Mrs. Ann Molyneux bequeathed 200*l.* to the mayor and the rectors to be placed at interest on landed security for the benefit of poor debtors in the gaol of Liverpool, and 300*l.* to be similarly secured for the benefit of old sailors and sailors' widows. This money the executors laid out in the purchase of five fields at the eastern extremity of the town, extending along Crown Street from Parliament Street to Myrtle Street, called, from the circumstances, the 'Rector's Fields.' This has proved a most profitable investment, the whole of the land being covered with buildings, on leases for ninety-nine years, at ground-rents amounting to about 1,500*l.* per annum. When the leases are out the income will amount to many thousands per annum.

About 1750 the Seamen's Hospital Almshouses were erected near the Old Infirmary, as already described.

Removal of almshouses.

It is recorded that in 1748 the old almshouses in Dale Street having become dilapidated, were removed, and a new range erected behind the Infirmary on what is now the open area of the Haymarket. Colonel Tatlock contributed to their erection, and left the interest of 100*l.* towards keeping them in repair.

In 1787, by arrangement with the various trustees, the

almshouses in Shaw's Brow, Hanover Street, and the Haymarket were taken down, and a new range, concentrating the whole, was erected by the corporation beyond the summit of Mount Pleasant, in the midst of a rural district. The steady, unremitting march of building has since overtaken and surrounded them, but they still remain, it is to be hoped fulfilling the original design of the founders.

Removal of almshouses.

Lime Street appears to have been first laid out as a road at the time of erecting the Old Infirmary, about 1745. It was at first called Limekiln Lane, from the kilns of Mr. William Harvey, which stood on part of the present railway station. These kilns were supposed to be injurious to the patients in the Infirmary suffering from pulmonary complaints, and in 1804 the owner was indicted by the corporation. After a trial at the Assizes a verdict was given in favour of the plaintiffs, but with a strong recommendation that the defendant should be compensated for his loss by removal. The kilns were soon afterwards removed to the North Shore. The name was altered to Lime Street about 1790. I have already described in the last chapter the rope-walks which existed down to 1824 between Lime Street and Clayton Square. The east side also of the street, extending up the hill, was used in a similar way at an earlier period. In the Gregson drawings there is a view of the town looking west, which is lithographed by Herdman, taken from a point about the corner of Gloucester Street and White Mill Street, in 1797. The foreground is occupied with a rope-walk, with men at work after the old primitive fashion, beyond which are three windmills in the line of the present Hotham Street. The Infirmary and Lunatic Asylum stand isolated, all being clear open space to the back of the houses in Clayton Square, with thorn hedges dividing the fields. The spires of St. Thomas, St. George, St. Nicholas's, the towers of St. Peter's and St. John's, and the dome of St. Paul's, form conspicuous

Lime-kilns.

Removal.

View in 1797.

CHAP. VIII.

Building.

objects in the middle distance, whilst beyond is seen the gleaming river, dotted with sails, backed by the Cheshire coast, with the Welsh mountains closing the landscape. In 1796 scarcely any buildings existed in Lime Street. In 1803 the west side, between Ranelagh and Elliott Streets, was nearly closed in, and the extensive range of stables, which occupied the site of the Alexandra Theatre, had recently been built by Mr. Henry Webster. He was an innkeeper in Shaw's Brow. Nothing can indicate more clearly the enormous advance of travelling in the early part of the present century than the necessity for such extensive stabling on one of the leading roads. Within the following ten or twelve years the street was built up in its entire length. Twenty years after this it became necessary to apply to Parliament for powers to widen it. About 1839 and the following years the west side was set back in the whole range from Ranelagh Street to St. John's Lane. Shortly afterwards the projecting part on the east side, between Hanley and Skelborne Streets, was also taken down.

Improvements.

Baptist chapel.

These improvements rendered requisite the removal of a Baptist chapel which stood at the corner of Lime Street and Elliott Street. It was a neat, plain brick edifice, erected in 1803, and taken down in 1844. During the whole period of its existence it was under the charge of one pastor, the Rev. James Lister. From Lime Street the congregation removed to Myrtle Street, corner of Hope Street, where they erected a commodious chapel, since well known under the ministry of the Rev. Hugh Stowell Brown.

Admirals.

The land on the east side of Lime Street was laid out in streets during the first quarter of the present century. The period being one of naval excitement, many of the streets were named after admirals—Nelson, Bridport, Duncan, St. Vincent, Sidney, Russell. The quarter in itself presents nothing worthy of remark. The slope on which it is built is dry and salubrious, but the crowding

of courts and cottages has done much to neutralise any advantage of situation in a sanitary point of view. A few of the prominent buildings may be briefly mentioned.

Blind asylum.

The Blind Asylum was in years gone by the great institution of the district. It had a frontage to London Road, and occupied the whole area between Pudsey and Hotham Streets as far back as Great Nelson Street. The idea of establishing a school for the blind in Liverpool was first started in the year 1790. The merit of the suggestion belongs to Mr. Edward Rushton, the father of Mr. Edward Rushton, some time stipendiary magistrate in Liverpool, both of whom are elsewhere referred to in this work. Mr. Rushton, sen., was afflicted with loss of sight, but was of a very active and benevolent disposition. He belonged to a small literary club which assembled weekly for discussion. A Marine Society had recently been established for the relief of shipwrecked sailors; and a small subscription having been got up in aid of the fund, it was stated by one of the members that small donations would be declined. It immediately occurred to Mr. Rushton that the current of benevolence thus generated, however small, might be turned to good account in aid of the poor blind. After conversation with his friends he wrote two letters on the subject, which were shown about in manuscript. His plan was that a fund should be created by a weekly or monthly subscription from the blind themselves, aided from other sources, for the purpose of relief in sickness and old age. The letters were shown to the Rev. Henry Dannett, one of the rectors of the parish, who took a warm interest in the matter. The subject was also mentioned to Mr. John Christie, an eminent teacher of music, also blind, who suggested an enlargement of the plan—in his own words, 'to afford a gratuitous instruction upon the harpsichord, violin, &c., to the indigent blind of both sexes in and about Liverpool, is, in a few words, the outline of my plan. Let a room be appropriated to this use in one

Rushton.

Christie.

CHAP. VIII.

of our public buildings; let a small subscription be obtained for the purpose of procuring a few necessary instruments, and the business in a great measure would be effected.' A short time afterwards Mr. Dannett invited the few who had interested themselves to dine with him. There were present besides the host Mr. Lowe, Mr. Christie, and Mr. Rushton—all three blind; Rev. J. Smyth (incumbent of St. Anne's), Mr. Carson, and Mr. Roscoe, ever ready to lend his aid to any good work. At this meeting the plan was sketched out and a few rules and regulations drawn up, principally the work of Mr. Roscoe, which were revised and adopted at another meeting in the following week, and so the scheme was launched. The school was commenced in 1791, when two houses in Commutation Row, then recently erected, were rented for the purpose. A few years afterwards land was purchased on the south side of London Road, and in 1800 a building was erected to the front. This gradually increased with the extending usefulness of the charity until it occupied the whole area. The front building was a neat design, in stone, forming a centre, with side-wings. Behind these were the various workshops and offices, surrounding an open central area. The musical services of the blind pupils proved so attractive, that it was determined to build a church, which, besides serving the purpose of the inmates, might prove beneficial to the funds of the institution. This was accordingly done on a piece of land near the hospital, fronting Hotham Street, between Great Nelson and Sidney Streets. The first stone was laid with great ceremony on October 6, 1818, and the church was opened by the Bishop of Chester on the 6th of October following. This church illustrates a remarkable period in the progress of architecture in England. At the end of the last and beginning of the present century a great mania had sprung up for pure Greek architecture, excited by the publication of Messrs. Stuart and Revett's 'Antiquities of Athens,' the

Dannett.

School commenced.

Church.

Greek architecture.

Church.

volumes of the Dilettanti Society, and similar works. The public admiration thus excited, the style speedily became all the rage. Shop-fronts, porticoes of dwelling-houses, banks, gin-palaces—everything was to be modelled from the Parthenon, the Erectheum, or the temple on the Ilyssus. The climax of this mania was attained in the expenditure of about 60,000*l.* in the erection of the Church of St. Pancras, in the metropolis, into the composition of which the architect adapted copies of as many Greek temples as could by possibility be crowded together. Mr. John Foster, afterwards architect to the corporation, had visited Greece in company with the late Professor Cockerell, R.A., and was naturally imbued with a love and admiration for the glorious remains of antiquity in that country. Hence it is not surprising, however strange it may appear to the present mediævalised generation, that in designing the Church for the Blind he should have adopted for the west portico an adaptation of the Temple of Jupiter Panhellenius, in the island of Ægina. In its original position this church was somewhat imposing. Surrounded by an ample open area, the columns placed upon the usual receding stylobate, its massive proportions developed themselves in all their boldness. The body of the church was a plain quadrangular structure, pierced with a single range of windows, having architraves and cornices. The design had one radical defect: the portico, not extending the entire width of the front, did not arise naturally out of the structure, but looked like a separate design stuck on to the building, without any accordance or necessary connection. In 1850 the prodigious increase of the railway traffic necessitated an enlargement of the station, which could only be effected by the destruction of this church. A purchase was negotiated of the entire site of the institution, which was removed to Hardman Street. The new hospital was constructed by the late Mr. A. H. Holme on an entirely new plan, but the church was re-

Blind asylum removed.

CHAP. VIII.

Blind asylum removed.

moved and re-erected stone by stone. It is undoubtedly the same building—with a difference. The narrow area of the new site would not allow of its full development. Cribbed, cabined, and confined, its receding stylobate cut off close to the columns, it presents rather a forlorn appearance, the mere shadow of a transient taste, which never took any permanent hold amongst us. At the east end of the church is a monument to the memory of Pudsey Dawson, Esq., who died in 1816; and a picture by Hilton of Christ restoring sight to the blind is over the altar. The old institution in London Road was taken down and shops erected on the site; but the back portion, with the quadrangle, still remains, converted into omnibus stables and various other uses.

St. Simon's Church.

Until within the last year or two passengers starting from the Lime Street station might have had their attention arrested by a church tower and spire rising from the edge of a sheer precipice far above their heads, like the far-famed temple of Tivoli on the brink of its roaring torrent. This was the church of St. Simon, the site of which has a brief but somewhat fluctuating history. In 1807 a community of the Scottish Presbyterian body, called the Burgher Synod (subsequently merged into the United Secession Church), erected a plain, substantial brick chapel in the then suburban district of Gloucester Street, corner of Silver Street, under the pastorate of the the Rev. John Stewart, D.D., a man in his day and generation highly respected. After remaining here about twenty years, in 1827 the congregation removed to a larger edifice which they had erected in Mount Pleasant. They were succeeded in Gloucester Street by the Independents, who maintained possession until 1840, when the premises were sold to the Established Church, by whom a new church was built, from the designs of Messrs. Hay. The deep cuttings of the railway still continuing to extend, the church at length found itself standing on a rocky promontory almost isolated from the mainland

behind. The further extension of the station in 1866 necessitated the removal of the church, which was reconstructed on the same design at the upper end of Gloucester Street, corner of St. Vincent Street. On the line of Hotham Street, hard by, formerly stood four windmills. One of these, the site of which is absorbed by the railway, belonged to Joseph Hadwen, a member of the Society of Friends, who somewhere about 1810 took down the mill, and erected a charity school on the site. It is related that within the mill a grave was found sunk in the rock, containing a human skeleton, which, it was supposed, furnished the clue to a mysterious transaction many years previous, the memory of which had almost passed away. Another mill formerly existed higher up the hill, called the White Mill—from which White Mill Street takes its name. The two millers had been connected in business, and it was believed had causes of difference. The Hotham Street man of flour was a violent, rough fellow; his rival a man of peaceable character. One day the latter left his home to go into the town, and was never heard of more. As he must almost of necessity have passed the lower mill, suspicion naturally fell upon its occupant; but nothing of an overt character ever transpired, and the transaction was remembered only in tradition. The skeleton furnished the key to unlock the secret.

Windmills.

Murder of Miller.

A little further south, on the same side of Hotham Street, formerly stood the offices of the Corporation Water Works. The history of the supply of water to Liverpool possesses more interest than many a highly wrought tale of romance. The excitement attending it, the odd turns, '*péripéties*,' as the French would call them, arising from time to time, the fierce party warfare engendered out of opposing views would almost furnish materials for an epic poem. The outline may be sketched as follows:

Water works.

The original supply of water was not to be complained

CHAP. VIII.

Water supply.

of either in quantity or quality. The town being seated on the new red sandstone, wells sunk to a moderate depth secured a plentiful supply for a time; and on the declivity east of the brook, springs gushed out here and there on the side of the hill. After a time the superficial supply was comparatively exhausted, and water became a valuable commodity. In the newspapers of the middle of the last century advertisements such as these are common: November 17, 1758. 'At Edmund Parker's pump, on Shaw's Brow, may be had water at 9*d.* per butt, for watering shipping or sugar-houses; and is as soft for washing or boiling pease, &c., as any in the town. Any merchant or captain of a ship, &c., sending to his house, next to Mr. Chaffer's china pothouse, may be served immediately by their humble servant, Edmund Parker.'

Again, August 14, 1759. 'To be sold, to the highest bidder, two dwelling houses at Bevington Bush, with a well of good water that will supply five or six carts, and a gin pump, &c.'

Of the various springs which welled out from the outcrop of the new red sandstone, those at Bootle were the most noteworthy, furnishing sufficient water to turn a mill soon after issuing from the earth. To utilise this valuable gift of nature, in the year 1709, Sir Cleave Moore, the then representative of the Moore family, obtained an Act of Parliament, 8th Anne, ch. 25: 'For enabling the Corporation to make a grant to Sir Cleave Moore to bring water into Liverpool from Bootle springs.'

The Moore estates not long after this date having been disposed of to the Earl of Derby, the Act remained a dead letter for nearly a century. As appears by advertisements such as those quoted above, water gradually became exceedingly scarce and dear, being doled out by women who promenaded the town with watercarts at so much per bucket, or in the vernacular 'heshin.'

Water works.

The improvement Act of 1786 empowered the corporation to supply the town with water from the local

springs, the Bootle scheme having been abandoned. No action, however, being taken, a company was formed and an Act obtained in 1799 to revive the Bootle plan. The corporation now took the alarm, and immediately issued proposals for a scheme for supplying the town with water by a company in shares of 200*l.* each. The stimulus being thus given, the whole of the shares were taken up within a few hours after the promulgation of the scheme. To this company the corporation transferred all their rights and powers, stipulating for a share of the profits, which never accrued.

Water works.

The two rival companies thus established went to work vigorously, sunk wells, erected pumping engines, and laid pipes along the streets. These pipes were first of wood—elm trees bored up the centre—replaced many years afterwards by cast iron. The Corporation Company took advantage of the natural springs oozing out from the hill side, and established pumping stations first in Hotham Street, and subsequently in Berry Street, afterwards extended to Toxteth Park or Harrington. The Bootle Company had their reservoir and mainhead in the Pumpfields, near Vauxhall Road. Great efforts were made by the companies to keep pace with the increasing demands of the town, but all in vain. About 1845 the sanitary excitement in the public mind began to set in with great force. The supply of water formed an important element in this agitation. The quantity of water demanded for the public service rose from ten gallons per head per diem to twenty, and serious apprehensions began to be entertained that, like Mynheer Van Dunk, we should be gradually reduced

Rival companies.

To a pint of the fluid daily.

In 1846 the companies went to Parliament for an extension of their powers. It was felt by the corporation and the town generally that now was the time to strike, and to make the supply of water a public concern. For

Water companies.

CHAP. VIII.

Water schemes.

this purpose, it was necessary in opposing the companies in Parliament to have a scheme to put forth as an alternative to that brought out by them. Three plans were brought forward. One propounded by Mr. Robert Rawlinson, proposed to bring water from Bala Lake; another brought forward by Mr. Thomas Hawkesley, provided gathering grounds in the district of Rivington; a third party were of opinion that the red sandstone at home, properly developed, would yield an ample return. This party were greatly strengthened in their views by the results of a deep well sunk in Green Lane, West Derby, by the Highway Board, for the supply of water for public purposes.

Rivington scheme.

Dire was the contention and enormous the expense of the parliamentary contest. The Rivington scheme found favour with the corporation, and was ultimately carried through Parliament with a compensation clause for the purchase of the two companies' interests. Now came the tug of war. The companies' claims were settled by arbitration for the sum of 537,391*l.* 9*s.* 7*d.*[1] The question then came, what was next to be done. The party which had carried the bill wished at once to proceed with the Rivington scheme. Another party, very large outside the council, were anxious that time should be given before proceeding, to test the local capabilities of supply.

Litigation.

The Rivington party had the majority in the council, and pushed on the scheme vigorously. Advertisements were issued and tenders obtained for the works. In the meantime the opponents were not idle. Committees were organised, public meetings held of the most exciting character, pamphlets issued, and the proceedings of the Town Council denounced in the most decided manner.

'Mercury' newspaper.

The Liverpool 'Mercury' newspaper had been a most uncompromising opponent of the Rivington scheme, and

[1] Bootle Company . . . £205,105 3 2
Liverpool and Harrington . 332,286 6 5
537,391 9 7

a thorn in the side of its promoters; but all at once, owing to some crisis in its business arrangements, the journal passed into different hands, and became 'a preacher of the faith it had once laboured to destroy.' This was a heavy blow, and great discouragement to the Anti-Pikists; but they persevered with true British pluck, and in November, 1850, succeeded in turning out a sufficient number of councillors of the opposite party to secure a majority. But alas! they were too late; the fortress was gained, but the magazine had been blown up. The very day before the election the contract for the construction of the main portion of the works had received the corporate seal. They did, however, what they could. They suspended the works, and engaged Mr. Robert Stephenson, C.E., to hold a court of inquiry, agreeing to be bound by his decision. The inquiry took place, and evidence of the most voluminous character was received. When Mr. Stephenson's report came out, it was found on the whole to recommend proceeding with the Rivington works. Whatever may be the merits of this scheme, and it has undoubtedly very great ones, it must be acknowledged that the deductions of Mr. Stephenson in reference to the home supply, and his reasonings generally on the question, have been singularly falsified by the results.

Municipal contests.

Inquiry.

The scheme was now allowed to be carried out in peace, and it has been found a great boon to the inhabitants. With subsequent additions and purchase of compensation waters the supply to the town notwitstanding the great increase of population has never failed in seasons of the greatest drought.

Result.

At the north end of Hotham Street, opposite the site of the Blind Asylum, stands the quondam Bethesda Chapel, erected in the year 1802, under the following circumstances. All Saints' Church, Grosvenor Street, to which I shall hereafter have occasion to refer, was erected in 1798, for the Rev. Robert Banister. Before very long,

Bethesda chapel.

CHAP. VIII.

Bethesda Chapel.

several prominent members of the congregation, conceiving they had grounds of complaint against the reverend gentleman, seceded from the church. For a short time they worshipped in a room in Shaw's Brow; and subsequently in a small chapel in Maguire Street, under the pastoral care of Mr. James Macpherson. By this congregation, the building now under review was erected and called by the name of Bethesda. Mr. Macpherson having withdrawn, the first pastor appointed was Mr. John Ralph, who continued until 1808, and was succeeded by the Rev. P. S. Charrier, a gentleman of French Huguenot extraction, greatly respected in his day. After his decease in 1826, the Rev. John Kelly was appointed to the charge. In 1835, the congregation erected the

Crescent.

Crescent Chapel in Everton Brow to which they removed, and disposed of Bethesda to the New Connexion Methodists, who continued in possession until 1869, when the building was sold and converted into a dancing saloon.

Returning southward along Hotham Street, I wish to point out, if my reader is at all of an inquiring mind, the site of a building long passed away, but which in its time exercised a powerful influence in a particular class of literature. This was the Caxton Printing Office which stood on the east side of Bolton Street, lying between Hotham Street and Lime Street. The building was of considerable extent, six stories in height. It was originally erected for a cotton-mill by Mr. Edward Pemberton, about the year 1790, and so continued for some years. The premises extended from Hill Street to Bolton Street. In McCreery's 'History of Liverpool' (1794), there is a description of public baths connected with this factory. He says: 'The building is divided into two departments; in one of them is the gentlemen's bath, which has a small dressing-room and fireplace common to all; contiguous to this room are four divisions, in each of which is a small bath lined with lead; these

Caxton printing-office.

Cotton mill.

Public baths.

are called the private baths and with difficulty will hold one person. These baths are ingeniously supplied with either hot or cold water in a few minutes by turning a cock, and emptied with equal facility. Adjoining is a large public cold bath, covered by a skylight, in form of a dome or cupola. On the ladies' side are also four private baths on the same principle as those already described; and a large public hot bath; there being no public cold bath for the ladies, unless they should be disposed to amuse themselves in that of the gentlemen.'

Public baths.

The history of the Caxton Printing Office is somewhat as follows: At the latter end of the eighteenth century, when the popular taste for literature began to manifest itself, 'Chambers's Journals,' 'Good Words,' 'Sunday Magazines,' with all the others constituting the formidable array of the popular periodical and serial literature of the present day, had not been called into existence. The demand was met, but in a somewhat different manner. Old-fashioned voluminous works were reprinted and split up into serial issues of 'numbers' containing about a sheet each, in the distribution of which a whole army of travelling agents or 'number men,' as they were called, were employed, who scoured the country, visiting periodically the courts and alleys of the towns, and penetrating into the remotest recesses of the land. In this way Family Bibles, copies of the 'Pilgrim's Progress,' 'Baxter's Saints' Rest,' 'The Whole Duty of Man,' with such mild and useful fiction as 'Henry Earl of Moreland,' and 'Robinson Crusoe,' found their way into many a cottage which would otherwise have been destitute of food for the mind. The issue of such works was not confined to the metropolis. Derby, Manchester, Liverpool, and other provincial towns formed centres from which the flying sheets radiated in all directions, and handsome fortunes were made by enterprising printers; for although the 'numbers' were comparatively low in price taken singly, yet in the aggregate this mode of

Publishing in numbers.

CHAP. VIII.

publication was most expensive. Amongst those who carried on this business in the provinces, one of the most persevering and far-seeing, was Mr. Jonah Nuttall, who

Jonah Nuttall.

commenced business in a very humble way as a printer in Denison Street, Liverpool, about 1798. About 1802 he removed to Wolstenholme Square, and in 1804 extended his establishment back to Duke Street. The business having by this time largely increased, he took in two partners, the firm being Nuttall, Fisher & Dixon.

Nuttall & Co.

In 1812 the cotton factory in Bolton Street having been discontinued, the building was purchased by the firm and a very extensive publishing business carried on under the name of the 'Caxton Press.' About 1820, Mr. Nuttall retired, having purchased an estate near St. Helen's, called Nut Grove. The business continued to be carried on by Mr. Henry Fisher. A little before this, the firm had retained the literary services of a rather remarkable man, Samuel Drew. Some particulars of his life will be found

Samuel Drew.

in Mr. Smiles's 'Self Help.' He was a native of St. Austell in Cornwall, the son of a day labourer, brought up as a shoemaker, and for some time worked at the trade. After a variety of adventures as 'scapegrace, orchard-robber, shoemaker, cudgel-player and smuggler,' who only learned to read and write after he was grown to years of maturity, he became a distinguished metaphysical writer, his 'Essay on the Immateriality and Immortality of the Human Soul,' having gone through many editions and being still highly prized. He was brought to Liverpool to superintend the literary department of the Caxton Press, and edited the 'Imperial Magazine,' which was brought out in 1821 by Messrs. Fisher & Co. The prosperous career of this concern, which had now grown to a gigantic size, was cut short by a fire on January 31, 1821, which destroyed the

Fire.

entire building and its contents, of the value of 36,000*l*. After this disastrous event, the business was removed to

Removal.

London, and the site was ultimately covered with houses

and cottages, not a vestige remaining to tell of its old appropriation.

Turning now into Copperas Hill and ascending a little distance, we come to a short narrow street called White Mill Street. This was the site of the mill, the owner of which met with so tragical and mysterious a fate, as above described. The mill was blown down in 1794. Adjoining this stood the old copperas works, from which the street takes its name. They belonged to a family named Hughes, and were carried on for many years, having been established before the middle of the eighteenth century. Mr. Richard Hughes was mayor in 1756. In 1781 he was still living in John Street. The works continue to be shown as existing in the map of 1796, but the name is not found in the Directory of that year. They were discontinued a little before this time. The name of the street was changed about the beginning of the present century to Elliott Hill, why or wherefore I do not know. The new appellation did not adhere, and Copperas Hill remains to remind us of an otherwise forgotten manufacture of the olden time. Turning down the hill we arrive at the Adelphi Hotel, and here we will pause until we meet again in the next chapter.

White Mill Street.

Copperas works.

Richard Hughes.

CHAPTER IX.

THE DISTRICT OF MOUNT PLEASANT.

CHAP. IX.

Adelphi Hotel.

We closed the last chapter at the Adelphi Hotel, where, in the days of its founder, James Radley, the wayfarer might feelingly have adopted Shenstone's stanza:

> Whoe'er has travelled life's dull round,
> Where'er his stages may have been,
> May sigh to think he still has found,
> His warmest welcome at an inn.

Locality.

Before condescending upon particulars, let us take a general survey of the declivity up which Ranelagh Street and Mount Pleasant form the main artery.

In ancient times, a road starting from the south side of the Pool continued along the line of Hanover Street, Ranelagh Street, and Mount Pleasant, until it reached the summit of the hill about the corner of Hope Street.

Moss Lake.

Here its direct course was arrested by the Moss Lake or Turbary, an amphibious sort of district, water or marsh, according to the seasons, which extended from Brownlow Hill to Parliament Street. The road then made a diversion northwards, following the present line of the Workhouse Wall, round the shore of the lake, up Brownlow Hill, to the corner of Smithdown or Smetham Lane, when it turned again southwards along the eastern shore, and so on along its present course into the open country.

Such was the state of things when Sir Edward Moore

Drawn by G & C Lyne

Engraved by J. Starling

ABERCROMBIE SQUARE.

TO THE RESIDENTS OF WHICH, THIS PLATE IS RESPECTFULLY INSCRIBED.

'Moore Rental.'

compiled his 'Rent roll' (A.D. 1667). This Moss Lake was in his opinion a subject of vital importance to his estate. The matter stood thus. The district being sometimes land and sometimes water, had a divided duty to perform. In summer it formed a quarry for turf, which was a valuable fuel when wood and coal were dear. Moore says, 'I dare assure you, you may sell fifty pounds' worth at least of turf to the town in a year; for of my knowledge you have good black turf at least four yards deep; if so, it may be worth two hundred pounds an acre, and you have ten acres of it; in a word, you know not what it may be worth, lying so near a great town; and if you leave half a yard of the bottom ungotten, once in forty years it swells and grows again.'

Now this Moss Lake lying on the table land, could send its surplus waters either north by the course of the Pool brook, or south by way of Toxteth Park, and a contest arose between Moore and the Molyneux family which way the watercourse should run. Says the Liverpool squire, 'Within the memory of man the Lord Mullinex hath erected two water mills in Toxteth Park, and raised dams for them within his said park, and hath laid the water over and upon the moss or turf room belonging to me . . . so that I could not get the said turf, by reason the Lord Mullinex caused his millers to lay their dams upon my moss to a great height,' &c.

Hereupon arose disputes and threatening letters; but as the cavalier party to which the Molyneuxs belonged were in the ascendant, Moore thought it better to 'sit down with this great wrong, and to be contented with less fires, till it shall please God to raise me a greater interest and him a weaker.'

Writing in the latter part of the nineteenth century, with all the accomplished facts of a great commercial community about us, it is difficult to realise the modest, timid expectations of our predecessors two hundred years ago as to the future of Liverpool. Edward Moore was a

CHAP. IX.

'Moore Rental.'

keen sharp-witted man so far as the prospects of the locality, which were closely connected with his own interest, were concerned. He saw clearly that the tide of prosperity had set in which was to carry Liverpool forward; but the channel through which it was to flow presented itself to him as of very limited extent. It is curious to read his notions as to the harbour accommodation required. He says, speaking of this little stream running from the Moss Lake: 'There is two great reasons wherefore the town ought to keep that watercourse the right and usual course, which, if otherwise, it may prejudice the town very much: the first is, there is no watercourse convenient or about the town for skinners, dyers, or other such trades as this, which runs down the Gout to the Pool Bridge: the second reason is, if ever the Pool be cut navigable, of necessity all such cuts, wherein ships are to ride, must either have a considerable fresh stream to run continually through it, or else there must be dams of water to let out with floodgates when necessity requires for cleansing of the channel; and truly God and nature hath made all the places between the pool and the stone plate so convenient for raising excessive great dams, and then to supply these dams, so great a fresh from off the Moss Lake, that though my eyes may never see it, yet I am confident that God Almighty, which makes nothing in vain, hath ordained this to be the greatest good for this town.' Truly this is an illustration of

Water-course.

How the thoughts of men are widened, with the process of the suns.

Moore's principle was quite correct, and does credit to his judgment. It is now in operation, not on the petty scale to which his view was limited, but in the noble river, the deep outflow of which is maintained by the same scouring process which he wished to apply to the Pool, the harbour of the day.

After this general survey of the district in the seven-

teenth century, we will now return to Ranelagh Street. Building began to extend itself in this direction in the second quarter of last century, and in 1765 the street was nearly completed on both sides. The roperies along Deane and Great Charlotte Streets on the west side have been already mentioned. On the east side three rope-walks existed, extending from the back of the houses in Ranelagh Street to the south end of Renshaw Street. The centre one belonged to Mr. Charles Goore, mayor in 1767. It was afterwards carried on by Mr. Thomas Staniforth, mayor in 1797, who erected the mansion fronting Ranelagh Street, afterwards the Waterloo Hotel. This ropery was continued down to about 1836. It was carried under the street at Newington Bridge by an archway.

Ranelagh Street.

Roperies.

The property was afterwards converted into an arcade, intended to be a counterpart of the '*galeries*' of Paris. This was not found to be successful. Singular to say, all attempts to naturalise in this country covered passages for shops, which one would think were well adapted to our humid climate, have been uniformly failures. Probably the difficulty of preventing them becoming the resort of improper characters may have something to do with this unfortunate result. After a time the property was offered for sale, and passed into the hands of Messrs. Brassey, Peto, and Holme, the eminent contractors. It had become by this time the mart for secondhand furniture, which it continued to be to its demolition. More recently it has been purchased by the Sheffield and other united Railway Companies, for the purposes of their station. Great alterations have been made in this quarter by the introduction of the railway. The entire character of the neighbourhood has been changed, and every trace of its original aspect has been swept away. In the trials which took place as to the value of property taken for this purpose, very large sums were awarded. Houses and land which in 1766 were advertised to be let at

Arcade.

Railway station.

Valuations.

CHAP. IX.

12*l.* 12*s.* per annum, brought in 1868, 40*l.* per square yard. Ranelagh Street was for many years a quiet, dull suburb of moderate-sized houses. Even in 1825, the date of a view given by Herdman, a large proportion were still private houses, some of them little better than cottages. Business slowly developed itself, and gradually

Shops.

shops took the place of the private residences. One of the earliest shops was that of Mrs. Eleanor Cæsar, a fashionable milliner, about 1818, who had a son rejoicing in the classical name of Julius, but whose functions rather resembled those of the deposed tyrant of Syracuse than the dictator of Rome, he being an usher in a school.

Ranelagh House.

The name of the street was derived from a house of entertainment which occupied the site of the Adelphi Hotel. This was established about 1722. Originally it was called 'The White House,' which name it familiarly retained to the end of its career, being so called in Perry's map of 1769, but in imitation of the famous metropolitan tea-gardens, it assumed the name of Ranelagh House and Gardens. The situation was pleasant, and the grounds agreeably laid out, with a pavilion in the centre under which music, vocal and instrumental, was performed, adjoining which was an ornamental fishpond. From an original handbill in my own possession which has been copied in Mr. Brooke's 'History,' it appears that after the concerts, fireworks were exhibited, much after the manner of Old Vauxhall. After remaining as a place of public resort for nearly seventy years, about 1790 it was demolished, and a terrace of goodly mansions erected in its stead. The southern house of the row was long oc-

Dr. Carson.

cupied by Dr. James Carson, an eminent member of the medical profession, who came into collision with his professional brethren on many occasions, more especially on the memorable trial of Charles Angus, to be mentioned hereafter. The situation of this terrace marked it as

Adelphi Hotel.

especially adapted for an hotel, and in 1826 the northern house was taken by Mr. James Radley and opened as the

Adelphi Hotel. Mr. Radley was the model of a keeper of a hostelry. Polite and easy in his manners, gifted with a nice tact which enabled him to adapt himself to every situation, and endowed with a rare talent for organisation, he soon rendered his house the most popular hotel in Liverpool, and extended its fame far and wide. He gradually added house to house, until he had absorbed the entire site of the old Ranelagh House. After his decease the business was disposed of to a joint-stock company, who have made extensive alterations, and who, it is to be hoped, will not allow the ancient fame of the house to lose its lustre.

Adelphi Hotel.

We will now ascend the slope of Mount Pleasant. The name indicates something rather different from what we now find it, and calls up visions of far-stretching landscapes and umbrageous shades of distant views

Mount Pleasant.

> Of crowded farms and lessening towers,
> That mingle with the bounding main;

nor would the idea be incorrect at the time the name was applied.

At the turn of the road on the summit a crooked lane veered southward, following generally the line of Hope Street. At the corner of this road there stood, from time immemorial, a quaint-looking gabled tavern with a bowling-green attached. Bowling was a very favourite recreation of our ancestors, and Liverpool possessed its fair share of accommodation for the purpose, but this is believed to have been the oldest. Cartwright, writing September 19, 1687, says: 'I went with Sir Thomas Grosvenor, Mr. Massey, and my son, to Liverpool, dined with my Lord Molineux at the Bowling Green.' Sir Thomas Johnson in the 'Norris Correspondence' also alludes to it. The house was called successively by the names of the landlords; at one time 'Richardson's,' at another time 'Martindale's,' from which the street for some time was called Martindale Hill. In 1753, the house was kept by

Hope Street.

Bowling greens.

CHAP. IX.

Roscoe.

William Roscoe, and in that year there was born to him a son named after himself, who has done much to render the name illustrious. The incidents of Roscoe's life are well known. Born in humble life, comparatively self-educated, with no advantages for culture or patronage from those in high stations, he distinguished himself as a scholar, especially versed in Italian literature. His 'Lives of Lorenzo de' Medici,' and 'Leo X.,' have passed through many editions; and although it has come to be thought that the astute and unprincipled Italians have been tinted with rather too much of the 'couleur de rose' by their biographer, yet every praise must be given to the extent of research displayed and to the beauty of the style. As a writer on penal jurisprudence, Roscoe has always ranked high, propounding principles in advance of his age, which are now generally accepted. As a philanthropist, he was amongst the earliest to stand boldly forward and brave popular indignation, in the very seat of the iniquity, in the denunciation of the African slave-trade. As a poet, though he cannot be said to take rank with the highest, yet his poems possess purity of sentiment, delicacy of thought and elegance of expression, with occasional outbursts of real poetic fire. The extent of his acquirements is manifested by his splendid work on the 'Monandrian Plants,' which is still held in the highest estimation. As a politician, he stands out as a moderate and rational reformer at a period of violent extremes, and only died a year too soon to see his own ideas embodied in the Reform Bill of 1832. When to this we add his activity in the every-day affairs of the society in which he moved, his aid in promoting by every means the departments of art, philosophy, education, and philanthropy; the foundation of the Botanic Gardens, the Athenæum, the Literary and Philosophical Society, the Royal Institution, the School of Art; enough has been said to show that Roscoe deserves a high place in the memorials of his native town. Commercially, his life was not a success; but the memory

of wealth merely as such, soon and deservedly perishes; whilst the good that men do is not always 'interred with their bones.' Amongst the natives of Liverpool, with one or two illustrious exceptions, none stand higher in the roll of fame than William Roscoe. Roscoe.

At the time of Roscoe's birth, his father was engaged in building another house and bowling-green lower down the hill on the opposite side. Here, in addition to his public-house, he cultivated a market garden of several acres, especially devoting himself to the culture of early potatoes, which the future member for the borough was accustomed to carry to market in baskets on his head. Both of the houses and bowling-greens have long been numbered amongst the things of the past. About this time (1765) the beauty of the situation began to stimulate building, and on the south side of the road a number of noble mansions were erected with ample gardens and grounds behind. Somewhere between 1765 and 1769, the name of Mount Pleasant was adopted. In Eyes's Map of 1765 it is called Martindale's Hill, but in Perry's Map of 1769, the name Mount Pleasant appears. Martindale still occupied the old bowling-green house in 1779, for in that year the council renewed a lease to Mr. Joseph Brooks of two closes of land described as 'adjoining to Martindale's Bowling-Green.' About 1773, young Roscoe wrote his poem on 'Mount Pleasant,' which was not published however until four years afterwards, when it met with considerable success. It is interesting to call up to the mind's eye, the features of the landscape as they presented themselves not a hundred years ago to the admiring eyes of the youthful poet. Building. Name. Roscoe's poem.

He looks on the town below—

> How numerous now her thronging buildings rise!
> What varied objects strike the wondering eyes!
> Where rise yon masts her crowded navies ride,
> And the broad rampire checks the beating tide;
> Along the beach her spacious streets extend,
> Her areas open, and her spires ascend.

CHAP. IX.

Looking down upon the Infirmary, Seamen's Hospital, and Blue-Coat Hospital, he exclaims:

Roscoe's poem.

Hence rose yon pile where sickness finds relief,
Where lenient care allays the weight of grief.
Yon spacious roof, where, hushed in calm repose,
The drooping widow half forgets her woes:
Yon calm retreat, where screened from every ill,
The helpless orphan's throbbing heart lies still;
And finds delighted, in the peaceful dome,
A better parent, and a happier home.

The distant prospect is thus described:

Far to the right, where Mersey duteous pours
To the broad main his tributary stores;
Tinged with the radiance of the golden beam,
Sparkle the quivering waves; and 'midst the gleam
In different hues, as sweeps the changeful ray,
Pacific fleets their guiltless pomp display;
Fair to the sight, they spread the floating sail,
Catch the light breeze and skim before the gale;
Till loosening gradual on the stretching view,
Obscure they mingle in the distant blue,
Where in soft tints the sky with ocean blends,
And on the weakened sight the long, long prospect ends.

One of the largest houses on the south side of Mount Pleasant was built in 1771 by Mr. Thomas Foxcroft, and afterwards occupied by Mr. James Dawson, surgeon. At the corner of Roscoe Street, lived Sir George Dunbar, Bart., mayor in 1796. George Dunbar was a native of Scotland, who settled in Liverpool and carried on an extensive business as a broker in Exchange Alley. Mr. William Ewart, also a native of Scotland, son of a Presbyterian minister, after being apprenticed in the house, succeeded to the business, which was subsequently renowned under the firm of Ewart & Rutson, and afterwards of Ewart, Myers & Co. Mr. Ewart was the father of Messrs. William and Joseph Ewart, who successively represented Liverpool in Parliament.

Sir George Dunbar.

William Ewart.

In 1799 another Sir George Dunbar, fifth baronet of Mochrum, Major in the 14th Light Dragoons, com-

mitted suicide by shooting himself whilst quartered at Norwich. Mr. George Dunbar of Liverpool, who was his cousin, laid claim to the title as next in succession, and it was admitted. The title still exists in Sir George's descendants, who have long ceased to have any connection with the town. In the same house long resided Mr. John Stewart, long and intimately connected with the public affairs of the town. He filled the civic chair in 1855–6. He was a surveyor and valuer, and was for many years connected with the Foster Family as extensive contractors under the firm of Foster & Stewart. His knowledge of the various properties in the town and neighbourhood, with the history of the families who had possessed them was marvellous, and it is matter for regret that he never could be induced to commit it to writing. Mr. Stewart died on April 9, 1871, in the eightieth year of his age.

John Stewart.

The adjoining house, ever since its erection about 1796, has been occupied by one family, the Mathers, one of the oldest families in this part of Lancashire.

Mather.

Another house on the same side was occupied during the early years of this century by John Caspar Lavater, of the firm of Dixon, Werther, and Lavater, a son of the great physiognomist of the same name, who was killed at Zürich by the French in 1799.

Lavater.

A house in the same range was the domicile of the Rev. R. H. Roughsedge, one of the rectors, from 1796 to 1829. The simplicity of character of this mild unsophisticated divine is admirably hit off by the 'Old Stager,' Mr. Aspinall. On one occasion, when he had for his guest Bishop Blomfield, then diocesan of Chester, wishing to do honour to his distinguished visitor, he could think of no more suitable person to meet him at breakfast than—M. Alexandre, the French ventriloquist, who was then performing in Liverpool! Several of the stories thus related might have stood for Fielding's 'Parson Adams.' Adjoining this lived Mr. John Bourne, mayor in 1812–13.

Roughsedge.

CHAP. IX.

John Foster.

Sir Joshua Walmsley.

A little above Rodney Street, formerly resided Mr. John Foster, architect to the corporation, and builder of the Custom-house, Church for the Blind, &c. The same house was subsequently occupied by Sir Joshua Walmsley, Knight, mayor in 1839, and candidate for the representation of the borough in 1841.

The houses of which I have been speaking long enjoyed an exceptional advantage of ample grounds behind, —'back sides,' as they are called in the Liverpool vernacular. About 1841 to 1844, the enterprising firm of

S. and J. Holme.

Messrs. Samuel and James Holme, contractors, purchased the whole of the property fronting Mount Pleasant, between Benson and Roscoe Streets, and cut off these extensive 'back sides' to form a large builder's yard and workshops. Above Rodney Street, the houses had still more extensive grounds, extending back to Maryland Street. Several of these have been laid together, and now form the site of a Catholic convent and church, with extensive auxiliary schools.

North side.

The north side of Mount Pleasant was not built on until a much more recent period, and the houses erected are inferior to those opposite. The old bowling-green house disappeared about 1810. The Hibernian Schools in Pleasant Street are erected on part of the bowling-green.

Descending the hill on the north side, leaving for the present the Workhouse, to which we shall have to recur hereafter, the first building which meets our eye is the

United Presbyterian Church.

Scotch United Presbyterian Church, a large commodious building with stone front and returns, erected in 1827 from the designs of Mr. Samuel Rowland. The circumstances of its erection, and the removal of the congregation from Gloucester Street, have been told in chapter viii.

At the opposite corner of Great Orford Street stand

Wellington Rooms.

the Wellington Rooms, the 'Almacks' of Liverpool. They were erected by subscriptions from the votaries of

Drawn by G.& C. Pyne

Engraved by Jas Allen

238 THE WELLINGTON ROOMS, MOUNT PLEASANT.

'Terpsichore the dance-loving,' in Liverpool fashionable life, commenced in 1815, and opened in 1816. The architect was Edmund Aikin, son of Dr. Aikin, the well-known writer of 'Evenings at Home,' and nephew of Mrs. Barbauld. He practised for a short time in Liverpool, and afterwards removed to London, where his career was cut short by death at an early age. He showed himself worthy of the talented family to which he belonged. Although Greek architecture—then coming into vogue—was his forte, yet he possessed capacity and power in other styles. A range of Gothic shop fronts, some of the first put up in Bold Street, in the infancy of the Gothic revival, and long since demolished, exhibited great originality and picturesque effect. His 'Essay on the Doric order,' with its illustrations, is still valued by the profession for its research and correctness.

Edmund Aikin.

The circular portico of the Wellington Rooms is an adaptation of the choragic monument of Lysicrates at Athens, with the details of the temple of Vesta at Tivoli. The general effect of the building is light and graceful, characteristic of its purpose and object, which is more than can be said of most buildings. The ball-room is a noble apartment, eighty feet by thirty-seven. At the time this building was erected it was still usual for the beaux and belles to be carried to balls and fêtes in sedan chairs, and a porch on the west side was prepared for the purpose. Even so late as 1829, the 'Stranger in Liverpool,' describing this building, alludes to the practice as still existing. It has now become as utterly obsolete as bagwigs and scarlet velvet coats.

Wellington Rooms.

Sedan chairs.

The Wesleyan Chapel, at the bottom of the street, was built in 1790, previous to the decease of Mr. Wesley. It is a plain, unpretending brick building, having undergone little alteration since the time of its erection, except the addition of a portico in front.

Wesleyan chapel.

We are now at the point where several streets radiate, and will take the ascent of Brownlow Hill. This is a

Brownlow Hill.

CHAP. IX.

street of considerable antiquity, but of more recent date than Mount Pleasant. It would seem to have been cut to avoid the circuitous ascent of the latter road. The

Name.

name has been supposed to originate from some person who had lands in the vicinity, but I cannot find any foundation for the statement. Neither in the old maps, nor in any other documents, does any evidence of the kind appear. In a lease granted by the corporation in 1737, it is called the 'Highway to Brownlow Hill.' The earliest map in which it is shown is Eyes's of 1765, where it is called the 'road to Warrington.' In Eyes's smaller map of 1768 it is called Brownlow Hill Lane, which name it retains in the maps of 1785 and 1796.

Surface.

In the original condition of the locality the ascent of Brownlow Hill terminated in a rocky knoll forming a conspicuous object overlooking the adjoining marsh of the Moss Lake. This was afterwards used as a stone-quarry, and the eminence cut down. The site is now occupied by the Lunatic Asylum.

Brown Low.

There is evidence to show that this eminence bore from time immemorial the name of the 'Brown Low'—*Law*, or *Low*, is the ancient Anglo-Saxon term for an eminence where a *barrow*, or sepulchral tumulus, has been thrown up. Thus we have 'Low Hill,' another eminence a little distance to the north-east. In the 'Perambulatio de Foresta,' in the reign of Henry III., a document to which I shall have occasion hereafter to refer, one of the points marking the boundary of the forest of Toxteth is called the *Brownlowe*.

In process of time the word 'Low' having become obsolete, it was supplemented by Hill. 'Brownlow Hill Lane' is, therefore, the lane leading to the Brown Low. Down to the end of the last century it was simply a rural lane with some farm buildings and a windmill on the south side behind Roscoe's bowling-green, and a public-house, called the 'Black Bull,' on the north side, a little below Russell Street. In 1803 the south side, as

high as Clarence Street, was nearly built up; and above Clarence Street the north side had a fringe of houses nearly as high as Brownlow Street. By the end of the first quarter of the century the street had become built on both sides, but the land behind took some years longer to fill up.

St. David's Church.

In ascending the hill the first object which attracts our notice is St. David's, or the Welsh Church, on the north side. Notwithstanding the very large Welsh-speaking population of Liverpool, down to 1826 no episcopal place of worship had been provided for them. In that year the present edifice was erected on a part of the old Ranelagh Gardens, from the designs of Mr. John Foster. It is a simple parallelogram with three recessed arches in front, with nothing of an ecclesiastical character about it. So far as attracting the Cambrian inhabitants, it has not been a success. The Welsh instincts seem to be altogether in favour of the conventicle. The Welsh dissenters and Wesleyans in Liverpool are a numerous and powerful body; but the church in question, in order to keep open its doors, has had to resort to English services.

St. Nicholas' Roman Catholic Church.

A little higher up the hill, between Hawke and Blake Streets, very near Copperas Hill, stands the Roman Catholic pro-cathedral of St. Nicholas. This was erected about the year 1810 from the designs of Mr. John Bird. It has not much about it resembling one's notion of a cathedral, but since the re-establishment of the Catholic hierarchy in England, and the foundation of the see of Liverpool, it has done duty as the seat of the bishop, and will do so until the projected grand building at St. Domingo is carried out. The building is of brick, with stone dressings. With a better knowledge of detail the elevation to Hawke Street might have been made far from contemptible.

Retracing our steps and ascending a little higher, I wish to detain my unknown reader a short time opposite the end of Rupert Street. There is nothing in the

CHAP. IX.

building to look at of the slightest interest, either externally or internally. Two or three dingy shops in front, with a labyrinth of mean sheds and workrooms behind, form about as unattractive a picture as the eye could dwell upon; yet these poor feeble remains were once irradiated with the light of genius, enterprise, and art. Let me in a few lines briefly trace their history.

At the beginning of the present century architecture and art in general in Liverpool were at the lowest point of degradation; yet there were a few symptoms of an aspiration after better things. About 1802, two brothers, Samuel and Thomas Franceys, established themselves as builders and plasterers in Pleasant Street, behind Brownlow Hill, and erected premises on part of the old bowling-green land, afterwards extended to the front of Brownlow Hill. Having a taste for art, they entered into the manufacture of a sort of composition of oil stucco, then much in vogue for the ornamentation of chimney-pieces and ceilings. This led to the execution of works in marble. In 1805 they describe themselves as 'builders, composition-makers, marble and Italian chimney-piece repository.' The nature of their business required artistical aid, and this again led to the execution of works of a higher class in tombs, monuments, and memorials, in which sculpture of as high an order as they could obtain was furnished. They thus found it to their interest to seek out and encourage young men of rising talent in the execution of their commissions. The most illustrious of these was John Gibson, R.A., whose genius has been recognised as belonging to the very first rank of British sculptors. Gibson was not a native of Liverpool, but was brought over at a very early age from the neighbourhood of Conway, where he was born. He was placed as apprentice to Mr. William Southell, a cabinet-maker, in Ranelagh Street. Here his dexterous use of the chisel in wood-carving soon attracted attention. He was brought under the notice of Mr. Roscoe and others,

S. and T. Franceys.

John Gibson, R.A.

Roscoe.

CHAP. IX.

John Gibson.

and found his way into the studio of Messrs. Franceys, where a very promising school of young artists was then rising up, to one or two of whom I will shortly allude. After remaining here four or five years in close intimacy with Mr. Roscoe, who was ever ready to aid his young friend with purse or pen, in 1815 he proceeded to Rome, where he remained until his decease, January 27, 1866, with occasional visits to England. His subsequent career is well known wherever art is valued or its history recorded. In the days of his renown he did not forget his early friends. In one letter he says: 'Whenever my imagination glides to Allerton[1] it is with a deep feeling of gratitude and respect, for it was there my inexperienced youth was led to the path of *simple art;* it was there it caught the flame of ambition; it was there the suggestion of Rome was given birth to,' &c. In 1827 Gibson presented to the Liverpool Royal Institution a marble bust of Mr. Roscoe. In the letter accompanying it he says: 'Permit me to offer to the Committee of the Royal Institution (as a grateful tribute to my first patrons—to those who enabled me to study my profession where I could best learn it) the accompanying bust, in marble, of their illustrious and venerable president, Roscoe. To that gentleman I am indebted for what little merit I may possess as a sculptor. He first inspired me with ideas worthy of my profession, and kindled within me an ardent love of fame in the pursuit of it.'

Gibson at Rome.

About two years before his decease I paid a visit to Mr. Gibson at Rome. He was a bachelor, and maintained his *ménage* on the most modest and frugal scale, occupying apartments up two pair of stairs in the Via Babuino. Though quiet and simple, his rooms were well and tastily furnished, with a good store of well-bound books and numerous art illustrations. His establishment consisted of an Italian man-servant and a housekeeper. His meals were usually taken at the Cafè Greco, round

[1] Mr. Roscoe's residence.

CHAP. IX.

John Gibson.

the corner, hard by. On inquiring for 'Signor Giovanni,' by which name he was usually known amongst his dependents, the reply was, 'Il signor non sta bene; egli sta a letto.'[1] I left my card and returned down the stairs. I had not gone many paces before the 'domestico' overtook me with the message, 'Se piace à vossignoria, il signor desidera vederla.'[2] I found the artist in bed, fatigued, but not seriously indisposed, and had a most interesting conversation with him for about an hour and a half. Conversation, indeed, it could hardly be called, for Gibson was almost as great a monologuist as Coleridge. His talk was delightful, poured out from the full stores of a richly endowed imagination, and rendered racy by his slightly Welsh accent and occasional expressions, such as 'Yes, sure,' which he had brought from the principality. He talked about Greek art in all its phases, discoursed on tinted statues, on which he was enthusiastic; entered into reminiscences of old Liverpool friends, told anecdotes of the Queen and royal family, and of his intercourse with them, to which he was always proud to allude. It was an interview to be remembered and treasured up. I only saw him once subsequently for a short time, at his studio. He was a man of remarkably simple, one might almost say primitive, tastes and habits. In the Italian restaurants, which are not remarkable for nicety of cleanliness, it is common for the guests before partaking to run over the plate, knife, fork, and spoon with the napkin. It is related of Gibson that this habit had become so much a matter of instinct, that when dining with the Duke of Sutherland, he astonished the powdered flunkies by deliberately wiping the plate, knife, and fork before him.

Having paid my homage to the memory of the 'Jupiter Tonans,' I will briefly refer to a few of the artistical *Dii minores* of the period.

[1] 'Master is not well; he is in bed.'

[2] 'If you please, sir, master wishes to see you.'

CHAP. IX.

Not long after Gibson's departure for Rome a young man named Robert Ward entered Messrs. Franceys's studio. He was the son of a worthy Liverpool burgess well known in his day, named Jonah Ward. The youth displayed considerable ability as a modeller and sculptor. I have in my possession a bas-relief of a sleeping Venus from his hand, which displays great capability. A bust executed by him of William Huskisson, M.P. for Liverpool, is well known from the number of casts which have been sold, but the artist is forgotten. His early death nipped in the bud the germs of promise which were rapidly developing.

Robert Ward.

Another name, contemporary with that of Gibson, ought never to be forgotten in any history of art in Liverpool—that of William Spence. Gibson and Spence worked in the same *atelier*, studied the same models, were animated by the same thirst for distinction, but how different have been their fates! The one, transported to the world-centre of art, encumbered by no domestic ties, devoting a long life to the practice of his profession in its highest forms, secured a distinguished place in the roll of fame; the other, early burthened with the cares of a large family, chained to the oar of daily drudgery by imperious necessity, had the wings of his imagination clipped, and his soaring genius confined like a Pegasus harnessed to a dray. When Gibson went to Rome, Spence remained at the studio in Brownlow Hill, designing and executing monuments, tombs, and chimney-pieces. About 1819 he was taken into partnership by one of his former employers. In 1830 he took the business on his own account, and so continued to the time of his decease, in July 1849, at the age of 52 years. For unflagging, untiring, patient industry and thorough devotion to his profession there have been few men equal to him. Although necessarily absorbed in the mere manufacture of marble as a trade, he snatched every leisure moment he could steal for a loving devotion to art as

William Spence.

CHAP. IV.

William Spence.

such. For quickness in modelling and readiness in catching the expressive lines of a countenance he was surpassed by few, and many of his designs only sketched in outline exhibit great grace and beauty. Modest and gentle in his outward demeanour, he was in character and conduct one of the kindest and most unselfish beings it has ever been my lot to meet. He was never so happy as in his workshop, surrounded by his assistants, the sharp click of the chisel in his ears, the modelling tools in his hand, clad in a long grey duffel coat, his curling grey hair flowing over his shoulders. Here he would chat merrily with his friends, working assiduously all the time, his eye lighting up with pleasure as tidings came from time to time of his son's progress at Rome. Cheerfully submitting as he did to the adverse fates which had limited his own

Benjamin Spence.

progress, he was resolved that his son Benjamin—who was as dear to him as his namesake to the patriarch of old—should lose no advantage it was in his power to bestow. After an excellent training at home he was sent to Rome, where his father's old friend, Gibson, received him with welcome and aid. He occupied a studio very near Gibson's, and very soon came into notice. His peculiar *forte* was the embodiment of gentle youthful grace. His Highland Mary, Innocence, with others of similar stamp, have acquired a high reputation. Before long he married a daughter of Mr. Gower, English Consul at Leghorn, and took up his abode on an upper floor of a palazzo in the open place opposite the fountain of Trevi, where it has been the lot of many English tourists besides myself to meet such votaries of art as Saulini, the great cameo engraver; the veteran artist Severn, the friend of Keats, now for a long period English Consul at Rome, and others of similar stamp. But alas! for all human prospects. Pulmonary disease, the fatal enemy of so many young aspirants to fame, slowly and insidiously undermined his constitution, and he sank into the grave with

the apparent purpose of his life unfulfilled. He died October 28, 1866, a few months after his friend Gibson.

> So Lycidas is dead, dead ere his prime,
> Young Lycidas, and hath not left his peer.

Works.

The statue of Archdeacon Brooks in St. George's Hall is from his chisel, but it can hardly be considered a fair specimen of his talent, which lay more in the direction of youthful grace and elegance, than of senatorial or ecclesiastical dignity. Casts of some of his most admired works were presented by his widow to the town, and are now lodged in the public museum.

At the decease of the elder Spence the establishment in Brownlow Hill was broken up, and the premises converted to other uses, and so concludes a little chapter in the history of art, which may not be without at least a local, if not a wider interest.

Russell and Clarence Streets.

Continuing our course up Brownlow Hill, we soon arrive at the corner of Russell and Clarence Streets, forming a portion of the long line of thoroughfare which extends from north to south under many different names. Clarence Street was laid out and built on between 1796 and 1803; Russell Street was about ten years later in its development.

Powder magazine.

On the north side of Brownlow Hill, on the site which Russell Street now occupies, formerly stood a building long occupied as the powder magazine. The date of its erection is fairly presumable from a lease granted by the corporation in 1737 to Thomas Pearse, Samuel Underhill, and Robert Norman, in which it is described as a 'powder house, or building and ground as sett out in the Close in lease to Alderman Gildart on the north side of the way to Brownlow Hill.' In 1744, the site was enlarged and a new lease granted. Some time about 1765, the magazine was removed to Liscard on the Cheshire side of the Mersey. During the American revolutionary war, the old magazine was utilised as a place of confinement for

CHAP. IX.

Powder magazine.

prisoners of war. It is shown in the map of 1785, but eleven years later it had disappeared, on the lines being laid out for Russell Street. This street was originally laid out rather ambitiously with an open square opposite the end of Warren Street, which was never carried out. The gardens in front of the houses between Trafalgar and Bronte Streets were intended to have formed part of the square.

Russell Street.

There is nothing of very special interest in the general aspect of Russell Street. The line of which it forms a part has been for some time gradually developing into a business thoroughfare, and has obtained an additional stimulus from St. Anne's Church being removed and the line carried northward to Scotland Road. The founders

Welsh Charity.

of the Welsh Charity, established in 1804, erected a large school at the corner of Bronte Street, which has been carried on with considerable success, and there is a small place of worship on the east side which has a story of its own to tell.

Chapel.

I have already related in chapter ix. the history of Bethesda Chapel, Hotham Street. Mr. John Ralph, the first pastor of this congregation, resigned his charge in 1808, and his friends and adherents erected for him the building in Russell Street, which was called Salem Chapel. In 1811 he retired and removed to Wigan. Soon after this time it was altered and re-opened as a quasi-Episcopalian Church, styled 'St. Clement's,' by the Rev. Thomas Pearson, who had previously occupied a small chapel in Cockspur Street (referred to in chapter iii.) with considerable popularity. It does not appear to have been consecrated or even licensed, nor is there any evidence that Mr. Pearson had taken orders in the Church of England. He remained until 1816, when he removed to Preston. Soon after Mr. Pearson's retirement, a personage arrived in the town described on his visiting

Reverend Thomas Stretton.

cards as the 'Rev. Thomas Stretton, A.M.' with the benevolent intention of gratifying the church-going public

with a superior style of sacred service. He entered into a contract for the purchase of 'St. Clement's,' and decorated it with much elegance, inserting a fine painted window. He also purchased an organ, lined the pews with cloth and built out new vestries. When all was completed the church was re-opened with considerable pomp. Choral antiphonal service was performed by choristers in full costume—at that time quite a new thing in this part of the country—vergers in purple gowns and white wands ushered visitors into the pews. The imposing demeanour of the reverend gentleman had brought tradesmen in crowds to solicit his orders and patronage, and he distributed his favours with an impartial hand. The church was crowded, and all went merry as a marriage bell. I am not aware that any cloud of suspicion ever darkened the sunshine of the sphere in which he moved. Aladdin's lamp scarcely procured for its fortunate possessor a more brilliant *entourage* in a shorter space of time. But alas! and alack a day! One fine morning, it was found that the 'Rev. Thomas Stretton, A.M.' and his household, had—to use an American vulgarism—skedaddled. The bubble had burst, and nothing was left but a *caput mortuum* of debt and disgrace. It was rumoured that the *dénouement* had been hastened by an accidental rencontre in the street with a lady who knew the antecedents of the reverend gentleman. However this may have been, the delusion could not much longer have been maintained. When the catastrophe became known, dismay filled the hearts of the too confiding victims, the tradesmen who had supplied all this luxury, and there was a general scramble to get back, *vi et armis*, such of the articles as were still to be found. For many years St. Clement's, and the Rev. Mr. Stretton, were a very sore subject to joke upon in some of the victimised circles. The *soi-disant* person was discovered to have been a hairdresser or a dancing-master—perhaps both—in the Isle of Man.

St. Clement's.

Collapse.

CHAP. IX.

The man must have been possessed of considerable ability and tact to have passed himself off in his parasitical garb with such success.

Crookenden.

The chapel, after being unoccupied for some time, was taken by a Mr. Crookenden, who had been assistant to the Rev. R. Banister at 'All Saints'.' He died in 1820. It then passed through the hands of several sects, Lady Huntingdon's Connexion, the Independents, and Baptists. In 1832 another farce, almost equal to that of the Rev. Thomas Stretton, took place in this building. The

G. M. West.

Rev. George Montgomery West, of whom I shall have to speak hereafter, an American bishop, according to his own statement, of the 'Primitive Episcopal Church,' held here a grand consecration service, when the church was consecrated and a candidate admitted to deacon's and priest's orders. The newspaper paragraph records that, during the service, 'the audience were deeply affected, even to tears.' This bubble, like the other, soon burst, not perhaps so dramatically, but quite as discreditably.

Changes.

The chapel, after being occupied by a body of Scotch Dissenters, passed into the hands of the Swedenborgians or New Jerusalem Church, who retained it until 1852, when, having removed to a new church in Crown Street, Russell Street Chapel was purchased by the Methodist Free Church, who still retain possession.

Brownlow Hill.

Returning to Brownlow Hill, we continue the ascent. The streets above Clarence Street up to the workhouse; Pleasant Street, Pomona Street, Great Orford Street, &c. were formed and built on between 1810 and 1830. The only public buildings within this range are two places of

Pleasant Street.

worship in Pleasant Street; one on the north side, erected in 1839 by the Wesleyan Association, afterwards the Methodist Free Church. In 1852, the chapel was sold to the Established Church, and consecrated under the title of St. Columba's. The other building is on the south side of the street, erected in 1837 by what may be called a very particular class of the Baptist denomi-

nation, of which the celebrated William Huntington, S.S. as he styled himself, and the late William Gadsby of Manchester may be taken as the types. The venerable James Lister, after his retirement from Myrtle Street Chapel, officiated here for a short time. After several changes of tenants, the building was finally purchased in 1850 by the congregation of St. Philip's Church and converted into schools.

Chapels.

On the north side of Brownlow Hill, a little above Trowbridge Street, formerly existed an extensive ropery belonging to Messrs. George Duncan & Co., extending from Brownlow Hill to Copperas Hill. About 1834 this was discontinued; Bronte Street was cut across the middle of the long range, and the property was purchased by the Abattoir Company, who erected slaughter-houses on the site. The question of the provision for killing and dressing meat has been productive of much litigation and expense in Liverpool. Previous to 1832, slaughter-houses were permitted anywhere, and were generally located in the lowest and most crowded parts of the town, more especially in Cable Street, Atherton Street, and the neighbourhood. This had become such a crying nuisance that, at the date above mentioned, the corporation agreed with Mr. John Etches to erect a range of abattoirs at the back of the Adelphi Hotel, between Copperas Hill and Brownlow Hill, and to secure to him on lease a certain specified rental. Mr. Radley of the Adelphi and his friends took the alarm, public opinion was called forth in decided opposition to the scheme, which was abandoned, Mr. Etches' lease, however, having been previously secured; and encouragement was given to a joint-stock company of butchers for the purchase of Messrs. Duncan's ropery and the erection of slaughter-houses. In the course of years, when the sanitary agitation had impressed the public mind, notwithstanding all the restrictions and regulations made and provided, the existence of slaughter-houses in the town at all was held

Ropery.

Abattoirs.

CHAP. IX.

Bill.

to be detrimental to health, and a bill was introduced into Parliament in 1867 to enable the corporation to erect abattoirs on land in West Derby near the Prescot Road and to discontinue those in town. This was strenuously opposed by the West Derby local authorities on the ground of health, and by the butchers and cattle trade on the score of convenience. After a hard and expensive contest, the bill passed the Commons. Before its introduction into the Lords, a proposition was made and accepted to neutralise the opposition of the butchers by the payment of 500*l.* The money was paid unconditionally in anticipation that all was perfectly serene and propitious, but after all, the bill was thrown out, and the abattoirs remain as before. Perhaps a better illustration could not be afforded of the folly of paying for the skin before the animal is secured.

Gill Street

A little higher up the hill we arrive at Gill Street. The land hereabouts remained open ground to a period comparatively recent. About 1840–2, a great outcry was raised as to the want of a market for the eastern district of the town, and affecting pictures were drawn of the deprivation of the housekeepers in the locality of the necessaries of life owing to their distance from the central mart. Yielding to this impulse, the council in 1842

Market.

erected a commodious covered market in Gill Street, which was opened September 23, 1843, when Islington Market was closed. Much capital was expended by private individuals in the erection of shops and public-houses as necessary concomitants, and great expectations were formed as to the coming property. All, however, ended in delusion and disappointment. Neither sellers nor buyers could be attracted to the new establishment, and, after a lingering existence of nearly twenty years, it was finally closed in 1862, and the building leased to the agents of Messrs. Bass & Co., the Burton ale brewers.

Ascending still further eastward, we come to Brownlow Street, situated nearly on what I conceive to have

Brown Low.

Doctor Solomon.

been the original Brown Low, or Brownlow Hill. Very early in the present century, a number of suburban houses in the midst of pleasant gardens were erected in this street. A house and garden on the west side at the corner of Dansie Street, was in 1803 the residence of Dr. Samuel Solomon, and the adjoining street was called 'Solomon's Place.' Doctor Solomon was for many years one of the institutions of Liverpool. Long before Holloway's Pills were heard of, or Morrison had established his 'British College of Health,' Solomon's 'Balm of Gilead,' had penetrated to the utmost bounds of the habitable globe. The Doctor was a gentleman of the Hebrew nation, who commenced his medical career in a very modest way in Marybone Tithebarn Street, some time before 1796. The precise period when the Balm of Gilead first diffused its soothing influences over the ills of humanity, I cannot accurately determine, but by the end of the century it had become very popular. From Marybone Dr. Solomon removed to Brownlow Street about 1800. In 1804, wealth and reputation increasing, he built himself a noble mansion at Kensington, and called it 'Gilead House,' where he resided until his decease. Gilead House, or 'Dr. Solomon's' as it was familiarly called, was for many years the first house in approaching Liverpool from the eastward, and attracted great attention from the beauty of the grounds, and the trim style in which they were kept. The Doctor died about 1819, and was interred in a mausoleum he had erected for himself on an estate belonging to him in Garston. Many years after his decease the estate was sold by his representatives, his remains removed to one of the cemeteries and the mausoleum pulled down. Well might the philosopher of Norwich say, 'All was vanity, feeding the wind and folly. The Egyptian mummies, which time hath spared, avarice now consumeth. Mummy is become merchandise, Mizraim cures wounds, and Pharaoh is sold for balsams.'

CHAP. IX.

Royal Infirmary.

We are now opposite the façade of the Royal Infirmary, a structure of considerable pretence with its recessed octostyle Ionic portico. This building was erected in 1822–4 from the designs of Mr. John Foster, at a cost of 27,800*l.*, exclusive of land. The classical Greek here reigns in all its dry severity. Every feature is hard and stiff, if not forbidding. The epithet which would in the smallest compass express its general effect is the word 'squareness.' Everything, from the square attic windows to the square plinths of the columns, is rectangular. The building, from its magnitude and isolation, is imposing; but although the terms 'grand,' 'magnificent,' and 'splendid,' have been lavishly applied to it in guide-book descriptions, there are few persons who in comparing this costly building with its plain and unpretending predecessor, would not award the palm for picturesque effect to the latter. An interesting circumstance took place on the opening of this building in 1824, from the presence of an old lady (Mrs. Linaker) who remembered the erection of the old Infirmary eighty years previously, she being then seventeen years of age.

Mrs. Linaker.

Nurses' Institution.

Behind the Infirmary a Nurses' Training Institution was erected a few years ago, at the sole expense of Mr. Wm. Rathbone, now M.P. for the borough. In Ashton Street stands the Lock Hospital; and on a large space of ground fronting Brownlow Hill stands the Lunatic Asylum, erected in 1829. The site was for many years a large quarry of red sandstone on the very summit of the hill. The Asylum is a plain stone building surrounded by high walls.

Workhouse.

We have now arrived opposite the Workhouse, which of all our public buildings is the largest and most populous. Its general aspect is anything but repulsive. Built in the Elizabethan or Jacobean style of architecture, in brick and white stone, with a multiplicity of windows, it has rather a cheerful and pleasant outlook. In extent it is said to be the largest in England, having contained at occa-

sional times not fewer than 4,000 inmates. In chapter vii. I have related the early history of the Liverpool poor down to the removal of the workhouse from Hanover Street in 1771. The new building for the reception of the poor was placed a long way outside the town. It consisted of buildings surrounding a quadrangle, the front portion four storeys high with projecting wings, having a pediment and clock in the centre. In the middle of the roof arose a turret surmounted by a cupola. The external appearance of the building, red brick and white stone, with a wide lawn and shrubbery in front, was somewhat imposing. At a subsequent date a battery of cannon was ranged in front, which contributed its share of noise and vociferation on festive occasions. In 1776 a building was erected contiguous to the Workhouse for a house of correction. It had no connection at that time with the parish, but at a subsequent period (1811) the prisoners were transferred to the borough gaol in Great Howard Street, and the building was taken by the parish and appropriated to pauper lunatics. In December 1803 a letter was published in the 'Gentleman's Magazine,' written by Mr. James Nield, containing remarks on the prisons in Liverpool, from which it appears that the ducking stool, that ancient implement of torture, was still in use, applied to *women* on their first admission. The discipline of the pump (whatever that may mean) in the men's court was still continued, though not inflicted weekly. In 1806 a House of Recovery, or Fever Hospital, was erected on the east side of the Workhouse, entirely isolated from all other buildings.

Workhouse.

Ducking stool.

Thus matters continued down to the year 1846, additional accommodation having been provided from time to time, as circumstances required, by accretions to the old buildings. At length the task of reconstruction became imperatively necessary, and during the following ten or twelve years the old buildings were gradually demolished, and the new arrangement carried out as it now

Rebuilding.

CHAP. IX.

exists. The parish offices were also removed from Fenwick Street, near the Exchange, so that the whole of the parish business became concentrated on one area, with the exception of the industrial schools at Kirkdale, which contain about 2,000 children.

Moss Lake.

We are now on the verge of the old 'Moss Lake,' containing about 280 acres of what was once a swampy lake, afterwards a rural agricultural district, and now, for the most part, the best built and most aristocratic quarter of the town. Down to the commencement of the present century there was not a single house erected on any part of 'Mosslake Fields,' as they were then called. Soon after that time a plan was prepared for laying out the portion between Brownlow Hill and Crabtree Lane (now Falkner Street). As the freehold of the whole was vested in the corporation, it was possible to construct the streets with something of regularity and order, which in other parts of the town are sadly wanting. Aber-

Squares.

cromby Square was the central point of the scheme. The older squares of the town, Pownall, Clayton, Williamson Squares, were simple open paved areas. Here the leading feature of the metropolitan squares, a central enclosed garden, was first carried out. In the first quarter of the century a number of goodly mansions were erected; and at the date of 1835, Bedford Street, Chatham Street, Grove Street, Oxford Street, were lined with a fair sprinkling of respectable houses.

The district between Crabtree Lane (Falkner Street) and Parliament Street was of later development. In

Falkner Square.

1835 the streets were laid out, and Falkner Square planted, but scarcely any buildings erected. From that time until the present, gradually, almost imperceptibly, by slow and sure steps, house has been added to house, and street to street, until scarcely a vacancy remains.

Of course, in a region so recently peopled there can be nothing of interest derived from antiquity. Everything is comparatively raw and fresh. There is none of that

CHAP. IX.

'distance' which 'lends enchantment to the view.' There is much, however, illustrative and suggestive of the times, manners, and habits of the period. Let us take a general survey, and pick up what we can. The aspect of the district, on the whole, is that of comfort and respectability. In Bedford Street and Grove Street the houses are recessed back from the road with green areas in front, and with more variety and picturesqueness in outline than is usual in rows of street houses. In many of the earlier erections stucco fronts were the order of the day; but of late, brick with stone dressings has been more affected.

General survey.

Old Botanic Garden.

The earliest structure in Mosslake Fields was the old Botanic Garden, which occupied the triangular space between Myrtle Street, Olive Street, and Melville Place, the entrance lodges and gates occupying the site of the Deaf and Dumb Institution fronting Oxford Street. The enclosed area was about five acres. The establishment of the Botanic Garden was the work of Mr. Roscoe, in conjunction with his friends Dr. Bostock and Dr. Rutter. Mr. Roscoe prepared the prospectus in the year 1800, and when the gardens were opened in 1802 he delivered the opening address. It is worthy of remark, in surveying the history of Liverpool at the latter end of the last century and the commencement of the present, how often we come across the name of Roscoe in connection with the establishment of many of the most useful institutions of the town. The Athenæum, the Botanic Garden, the Royal Institution, the Literary and Philosophical Society, the Academy of Art, were all either established by him or received his warm support. Earnestness and force of character are wonderful powers when combined with the requisite knowledge and acquirements.

The museum of dried plants collected by Dr. Forster, of Halle, purchased by Mr. Roscoe for his own private collection, was presented by him to the new institution.

The Botanic Garden remained in the same locality for thirty-four years, until it became completely surrounded

CHAP. IX.

Botanic Garden.

with buildings. It was in its day a very pleasant resort; and in summer evenings, when a band was engaged to play, it was a centre for the assembly of the upper-crust of Liverpool society, none but proprietors and their friends being admissible. During the administration of the first curator, Mr. Shepherd, it acquired a high scientific reputation. In 1836 it was dismantled and removed to a larger piece of land in Edge Lane. The inherent vice of exclusiveness which had clung to it from the first, became at length so discordant with the spirit of the age, that the struggle could no longer be maintained, and about 1841 the gardens were transferred to the corporation, who undertook their maintenance for the benefit of the public at large. When the original garden was broken up, in 1836, the land was taken by the corporation. The hay market in Lime Street being about to be discontinued, it was determined to establish two hay markets, one at the north end, and the other on a portion of the site of the old Botanic Garden. This was carried out in March 1841. The experiment soon proved an utter failure, from ignorance of one of the first principles of political economy. The proportion between demand and supply being the regulator of price, it is impossible to keep up two independent markets for the same produce in the same locality.[1] The northern market gained the predominance, the eastern one became utterly deserted, and in process of time was converted into building land. The Orphan Asylum stands upon part of the old Botanic Garden. The educational foundations of Liverpool are exceedingly circumscribed. We have no Charter House, Christ's Hospital, &c., as in the metropolis; nor Heriot's, Watson's, Donaldson's, or Merchant Maidens' Hospitals, as in Edinburgh. Ours are on a humbler scale. The Blue Coat Hospital will ever be identified with the

Hay market.

Orphan Asylum.

[1] This remark of course does not apply to retail markets, which are the mere channels for distribution of the goods already regulated by the price in the wholesale market.

name of Bryan Blundell, and the Orphan Asylum will perpetuate to future ages the remembrance of Mrs. Aikin and of Mr. Harmood Banner.

Female Orphan Asylum.

The Female Orphan Asylum was the first established. It was commenced in 1840, in a house in Upper Stanhope Street. In 1843, the number of children being then forty, it was determined to erect a new building, forming one of the wings of the present asylum. The first stone was laid on May 17, by Mr. Robertson Gladstone, mayor. On November 2 in the same year it was opened by the Bishop of Chester. This portion of the institution having been completed mainly by the efforts and contributions of a lady, Mrs. James Aikin, the boys' portion was undertaken by Mr. Harmood Banner, a gentleman whose name was in his day as familiar as a household word. This forms the west wing of the building. The foundation was laid by Mr. Thomas Littledale, mayor, on October 5, 1852. Not content with materially aiding the construction of the hospital, Mr. Banner undertook at his own cost the erection of the Church of the Holy Innocents, which forms the centre of the block. The foundation of this was laid on the same day by the Bishop of Chester. It was consecrated on March 13, 1854, the boys' school being opened at the same time. Since that period an infant school has been added to the group, thus completing the establishment as one of the most perfect and efficient of its kind in the kingdom. Mr. John Cunningham was the architect of the whole of the buildings. They are faced with red stone, in a simple, unpretending style, very suitable for their purpose, in which pretence and ornament would have been utterly out of character.

Institutions.

It is pleasant to see that in laying out the site of the old 'Mosslake,' and substituting dreary lines of hard street in exchange for the gentle face of nature, the claims of humanity have not been forgotten, and that schools, churches, hospitals, and charities extend their

CHAP. IX.

genial influence *pari passu* with the growth of the huge city, bearing testimony to the truth that

> Man is dear to man; the poorest poor
> Longs for some moments in a dreary life,
> When he may be himself the dealer out
> Of some small blessings; from this simple cause,
> That we have all of us a human heart.

Deaf and Dumb Asylum.

The site of the lodge and entrance of the old Botanic Garden is occupied by a neat, modest-looking building, containing the Asylum for Deaf and Dumb Children. This institution was established in 1825. The present building was commenced in October 1839, and opened in October 1840.

Wesleyan Chapel.

A little to the west of the Orphan Asylum stands the Wesleyan Trinity Chapel, in Grove Street, erected in 1860. The progress of architecture in the present age is in no respect more remarkable than in the wonderful improvement in the style of Nonconformist churches and chapels. The dull barn-like conventicles of the olden time have become to a great extent superseded by handsome ecclesiastical edifices, for the most part in stone and in the pointed style, whilst internally, painted windows and even polychromatic decoration are indulged in to an astonishing extent. It has been discovered that ugliness has no necessary connexion with godliness; that beauty of form and colour are not unfitting types of moral perfection; and that harmony of proportion is more in keeping with the works of the Great Creator than discordant eccentricity. The church or chapel we are contemplating carries out these views. It is a large, commodious building, of white stone, in the pointed style, with considerable elegance of design, which is not wanting in sculptural decoration. The arrangements are very complete, with schools, vestries, and other accessories.

Welsh Chapel

The Welsh Calvinistic Methodists, or Welsh Presbyterians, as they have lately called themselves, erected in

1861 a large and convenient chapel on the east side of Chatham Street.

St. Catharine's Church, on the east side of Abercromby Square, was almost the last of the classical Greek churches erected in Liverpool. It was designed by Mr. John Foster, and consecrated in 1831. The principle of the design—the *motif*, as a French artist would designate it—is good, being a cella, nearly square, with a dome in the centre, and advanced portico in front. The working out of the design, however, has been anything but successful. The dome is low and insignificant, the interior is dark, and the general effect far from happy.

St. Catharine's.

Close to this church, at a noble mansion, corner of Oxford Street and Abercromby Square, long lived William Earle, a gentleman in his day much conversant with the town's affairs, and greatly renowned for his caustic wit and powers of bitter repartee. The Earles are one of the oldest existing Liverpool families. John Earle was bailiff in 1705, mayor in 1709. He kept an ironmonger's shop in Castle Street, and ventured occasionally into foreign commerce, more especially the rising African and West Indian trade. By these means he realised a large fortune. When the Moore estates were brought into the market, about that time, he was a considerable purchaser. He was related nearer or more remotely to the Stanley family. Ralph Earle was mayor in 1769. In 1788, two years before his decease, he took the name of Willis, on succeeding to the property of the Willis's of Halsnead. Thomas Earle filled the chair in 1787. Willis Earle took the Liberal side at a time when party spirit ran very high. In 1791 disputes arose as to the mode of electing the Common Council, the freemen claiming the right in opposition to the self-election by the council. Willis Earle was elected by the freemen in common hall assembled, but the Council rejected him, and he never secured his seat. William Earle, sen., when the Volunteers were raised in 1803, filled the post

William Earle.

CHAP. IX.

William Earle.

of Lieutenant-Colonel of the Liverpool Fusiliers. William Earle, jun., the subject of our present sketch, was elected on the Common Council in 1817. He was an ardent Liberal, and one of the earliest members of the reformed council under the Municipal Act. He filled the office of mayor 1836–7. He continued for many years a member of the council, where he took a prominent part in all leading subjects. The Rivington Pike Water scheme found in him one of its staunchest advocates, which for a time rendered him very unpopular; but the amusement his biting sarcasm furnished to the public soon restored him to his wonted place. It would, perhaps, be degrading to call him the Thersites of the council, though, like that celebrated personage,

> His chief delight
> Was to inveigh against the Councillors,
> But always when occasion promised him
> The public laugh.

It would be fairer perhaps to compare him with the shrewd and wayward Jaques, who says:—

> I must have liberty
> Withal, as large a charter as the wind,
> To blow on whom I please; for so fools have;
> And they that are most gallèd with my folly,
> They most must laugh.

Mr. Earle died in 1864, in the seventy-fifth year of his age.

Returning down Oxford Street and Mount Pleasant, let us pause for a moment at the corner of Hope Street.

Medical Institution.

The Medical Institution, a neat stone-fronted building, adapted to the curved junction of the two streets, was erected in 1836–7. It stands very nearly on the site of the old bowling-green house where Roscoe was born.

Hope Hall.

Adjoining the Medical Institution stands Hope Hall, the history of which is a little curious. About the year 1834 the Rev. Robert Aitken, a clergyman of the Church of England, from the Isle of Man, became what is called a

revivalist preacher, first amongst the Wesleyan Methodists, whose pulpits were for a time opened to him, although he was not connected with the body. The excitement created became difficult to control; and the sanction of the Methodists being withdrawn, Mr. Aitken's followers formed a separate community. About 1837 the chapel in Hope Street was erected by his friends, and for a time a large amount of excitement was kept up by his energetic ministrations. The following description of one of his services is from an eyewitness:[1] 'The place was crowded almost to suffocation. Having selected as the subject of his discourse Christ's healing of Jairus's daughter, he spoke upon it for the space of forty-five or fifty minutes. His language was pointed and energetic, his manner impassioned, occasionally, indeed, bordering on the wildest enthusiasm. Upon his hearers his discourse, which was carefully composed, but declamatory, told with prodigious effect. From about ten minutes to a quarter of an hour before reaching his conclusion, or climax, many of the audience, apparently unable to control themselves, were giving loud vent to their feelings. "Amen!" "Lord, hear him!" "Come, Lord Jesus!" "He is coming!" and similar expressions I heard resounding on every side of me. The gestures of many persons in my immediate vicinity betrayed their intense agitation and excitement. When the preacher had ended, an invitation to go downstairs was given to such as felt inclined to do so. I did not comply. A friend, who went down, described to me the scene as extraordinary, but inexpressibly painful. In the apartment below he saw persons, to the amount of fifty or thereabouts, in different postures and attitudes; some grovelling on their bellies, some kneeling, and some standing; some anxious, some depressed, and some joyful, but all more or less excited, and the majority uttering a great variety of exclamations. Some were labouring under

[1] Rev. Dr. Thom, 'Liverpool Churches and Chapels,' p. 47.

CHAP. IX.

Hope Hall.

convictions of sin, and some had just obtained deliverance. Individuals were constantly flitting about ready to aid the parties described in their religious trials and exercises.' This overwrought system of excitement soon wore itself out. Differences arose between Mr. Aitken and a Mr. Bowes, who was engaged to assist in the services, and at length Mr. Aitken abruptly left the town, leaving his followers to provide for themselves.[1] In 1841 the building was licensed for service in connexion with the Established Church, under the title of St. John the Evangelist. The Revs. Richard Cargill, Thomas Macgill, and Henry H. Higgins successively occupied the pulpit. In 1853 the building was brought to the hammer and purchased by Mr. R. A. Macfie, since M.P. for Leith. Under his auspices it has been made exceedingly useful as a place for meetings of religious societies, lectures, &c., under the name of Hope Hall.

Descending the hill, we may notice in passing, on the the left, the extensive buildings, old and new, of the Convent of the Sisters of Notre Dame, with its adjacent schools, and its church with an elegant wooden spiret or *flèche* on the summit of the roof. We halt again at the Adelphi Esplanade, where we will resume our walk in the next chapter.

[1] Mr. Aitken subsequently resumed his place in the Church of England, and became vicar of Pendeen, Cornwall. One of his sons is now vicar of St. Paul's, Penzance, and another, the Rev. W. Hay Aitken, is vicar of Christ Church, Everton (Liverpool).

CHAPTER X.

BOLD STREET AND ITS SURROUNDINGS.

CHAP. X.

OUR Bold Street—*parva componere magnis*—has been compared to the metropolitan Bond Street; the reason why, merits consideration. 'There is a river in Macedon, and there is also moreover a river at Monmouth,' quoth honest Fluellen; 'and,' he adds, 'there is salmons in both.' Perhaps here may be found our point of comparison. Bond Street has, or is reputed to have, its 'loungers.' Whatever there is in Liverpool of the 'dolce far niente' style of life—and, sooth to say, there is not much—is accustomed to air itself in Bold Street. It is true we cannot boast of a Madame Rachel, who professes to renovate ancient dames and make them 'beautiful for ever,' but we have had a Madame Jane Clarke, who was far more successful in setting off the charms of the younger ones to the best advantage; and we still retain our Brights and our Woolwrights, whose establishments glisten with attractions for the fair which Aladdin's palace could not boast of. We have also here our single, solitary club-house, the 'Palatine,' which confers a sort of Pall Mall air upon the locality. The 'flâneurs' assembled at the door, taking stock of the fair ones as they pass, may be likened, *longo intervallo*, to the aristocrats at the window of Brookes's. And then we have the Lyceum and its library, where the last new novel is anxiously con-

Loungers.

Shops.

Palatine Club.

CHAP. X.

tended for by the sweetest lips in the most dulcet tones of earnest entreaty. Have we not also the Queen's Hall, where the Howard Pauls, the Frederick McCabes, the Christy's Minstrels, *et hoc genus omne*, each in their several season contend for the public favour? I think enough has been said to show that Bold Street presents a microcosm of the larger world of Liverpool life—the distilled essence, so to speak, of Dicky Sam-ism. Let us estimate its merits accordingly.

Queen's Hall.

A.D. 1780. Site.

Down to about 1780 the site of Bold Street was a rope-walk and field, occupied by Messrs. Joseph and Jonathan Brooks, alluded to in the description of Hanover Street, in chapter vii. In the map of 1785 the line of street is laid out, but no buildings erected. The name is derived from the Bold family, who possessed lands at the top of the street, including the site of St. Luke's Church. Such progress was made in building, that in 1796 the whole of the south-western side and about one-half of the north-eastern side were built up. From some unexplained cause the demand then slackened, and vacant spaces remained unbuilt on for many years subsequently. The dwelling-houses erected were of a respectable class, many of those on the south-west side being occupied by merchants, who had their counting-houses at the back, fronting Wood Street. One of the last of these was Mr. Thomas Tobin, who occupied a handsome house about half-way up the street, with his counting-house behind. He began to reside here in 1806, and continued until 1838, long after all the neighbourhood had been converted into shops. In his noble, portly form, and stately though somewhat ponderous gait, he was the embodiment of a 'fine old English gentleman.' His brother, Sir John Tobin, Kt., was mayor in 1819, and filled for some time a prominent place in the public affairs of the town. He was the builder and owner of the 'Great Liverpool' steamship, launched in 1838, and then considered a marvel in naval architecture, being 1,150 tons burthen,

Buildings.

Tobin.

and 461 horse-power. One of the first buildings erected in Bold Street was the Old Music Hall, extending back to Wood Street, along the east side of Concert Street. The site is now occupied by shops, but a relic of the old building still exists in the portion projecting over the footwalk in Wood Street, supported on columns. The hall was opened in June 1786 with the oratorio of the 'Messiah.' At this time music was much patronised in Liverpool. A few years after we find that there were three hundred subscribers to the concerts, at two guineas per annum each. Though the building in its original state was externally plain brickwork, the interior was worthy of notice. It was a parallelogram in form, with a gallery at one end, and an orchestra at the other, the seats in the body rising at the sides. Whether from its peculiar proportions, its mode of fitting up, or from whatever cause, the fact is certain that in its acoustic properties it was one of the best music-rooms ever constructed. The organ was large and powerful. The building was capable of accommodating an audience of about 1,300 persons. For many years the concerts in this building were carried on with considerable success, most of the leading vocalists, Catalani, Pasta, Malibran, Braham, Bartleman, &c., and many of the leading violinists, having here added to their laurels. During a considerable period the management was in the hands of Thomas Wilson, well known at one time as a dancing-master. He was a man of good musical taste and of considerable enterprise. By his exertions Weber's opera of 'Der Freischutz' was performed in the Music Hall, for the first time in Liverpool, in 1823, a few months after its first appearance on the stage.

Music Hall.

A.D. 1786.

Vocalists.

Thomas Wilson.

About 1836 the building was dismantled, shops were constructed on the lower storey, and a floor thrown over, forming a large hall above, which was let for public meetings. For musical purposes the alteration was

A.D. 1836. Alterations.

CHAP. X.

destructive. A few years afterwards the building was destroyed by fire, when it was rebuilt as it now stands.

Whatever may have been the cause, Bold Street has been for the last twenty years the leading street for ladies' shopping. The migration in this regard in Liverpool has been from west to east. Time was, in the middle of the last century, when Redcross Street and Pool Lane displayed the newest fashions. Castle Street then succeeded, and held supremacy for many years, until the ladies were elbowed out by the demands of commerce. Lord Street then took its turn, until it was widened, in 1826, when its business assumed more of a general character. The tide then set along Church Street, and by its flow up the slope of Bold Street has enhanced the value of property in the locality to a very great extent. What changes may be in store time alone can show. Fashion, like the wind, bloweth where it listeth; but in any event Bold Street as a leading thoroughfare must always maintain a high business capability.

Changes in fashion.

Lyceum.

Commencing the ascent of Bold Street, the Lyceum attracts our first attention. The history of the Liverpool Library, from its origin in 1757 down to the close of the century, has been detailed in chapter v. After the successful establishment of the Athenæum in 1799, a stimulus was given which led to a proposal to erect a building for the library, and to connect therewith a news-room which would enlarge the circle of its operations. This led to the erection of the present building. The accepted design was by Mr. T. Harrison, of Chester. The building was completed in 1803, at a cost of 11,000*l.* Although it would not be difficult to criticise some portions of the exterior, yet, on the whole, it is a noble and effective design, and well adapted for its purpose. The news-room is a fine apartment, 68 ft. by 48 ft., 31 ft. in height, with a vaulted ceiling. The library, which doubtless had its prototype in the Radcliffe Library at

News room.

Oxford, is a model of arrangement and convenience within a limited extent. CHAP. X.

A little above the Lyceum formerly stood a building called the Rotunda, originally built for the exhibition of panoramic views, having a conical roof with a central shaft, round which the panorama moved. For many years it was used as a billiard-room, confined to a select body of subscribers. About 1864 it was taken down, and shops erected on the site. Rotunda.

Immediately adjoining stands the Palatine Club-house, a handsome structure in Bath stone. Club life is not indigenous in this ancient and loyal borough. Liverpool is a place to make money in, not to spend it. The quiet lounge, the gossip, the persiflage, the sudden changes in the political atmosphere—*péripéties* the French call them—are all wanting. The prices of cotton and sugar, very exciting on the Exchange flags, are scarcely fit subjects for the drawing-room of a club. Add to this the distance from town at which most of the leading classes reside, and it will be seen that club-life in Liverpool must be rather dreary—must smack a little of molasses and tar. However, these untoward circumstances have not prevented the erection and maintenance of a handsome building, handsomely furnished, and serving its purpose in a very respectable manner. Palatine Club.

The house at the upper corner of Newington and Bold Street, now converted into shops, was erected in 1788 by Henry Park, surgeon, who resided here for thirty-two years. Mr. Park was not the least eminent of the many distinguished men who have raised the fame of the medical and surgical school of Liverpool. He was descended from an old Liverpool family. His father was a surgeon residing in Water Street, where Henry was born on March 2, 1745. During a long professional life he did much to increase the reputation of the practice of surgery in his native town. His work on the 'Excision of Carious Joints' passed through several editions. He Harry Park.

CHAP. X.

commenced practice in 1766 in Basnett Street, and removed to Bold Street in 1788. In 1820 he retired to a suburban retreat at Wavertree, and died on January 28, 1831, in the 86th year of his age, full of years and honours.

Queen's Hall.

About midway up the street, on the north-west side, stands the Queen's Hall. It was originally built in 1827–8 as a chapel for the Rev. David Thom, LL.D., who had been ejected from the Scotch Church, Rodney Street. Of him I shall have to speak hereafter. About 1856 the congregation removed to Brownlow Hill, corner of Crown Street, when the building in Bold Street was sold, and converted to the purpose of public amusement.

Diorama.

Not far distant formerly stood the 'Diorama,' in which was exhibited a very beautiful and artistic series of views, with optical effects of a very charming character. This exhibition was established by M. Daguerre, subsequently so renowned in connection with the invention of photography. After standing a few years, the building was converted into shops.

Free-masons' Hall.

Higher up, at the corner of Colquitt Street, stood the Freemasons' Hall, a neat stone building erected about 1801, as the place of meeting of the Royal Arch Lodge, No. 20. From what cause I am unable to say, but in a few years it was abandoned by the Freemasons and converted into the Savings' Bank.

In 1864 the hall was taken down, and a new and enlarged building erected for the bank from the designs of Messrs. Culshaw and Sumner.

Having arrived at the summit of Bold Street, we will next turn our attention to Renshaw Street, which radiates from the same point.

Renshaw Street.

Renshaw Street dates from a much earlier period than Bold Street, having been in existence before the middle of the last century, though the greater part of it was a mere rural lane. Down to the end of the century it was only very partially built on. Originally it was narrow

and irregular, but about 1800 the east side was partially taken down and set back to widen the street.

Commencing at the north end, the first building which meets our view is Newington Chapel, an object of considerable interest from several sources. Previous to the year 1777, the Independents or Congregationalists possessed no place of worship in Liverpool. After the passing of the Toleration Act, in the reign of William III., the Nonconformists of the orthodox creed, in erecting chapels, made no distinction between the Presbyterian and Independent 'platforms' or systems of church government; but about the middle of the eighteenth century a large proportion of the congregations adopted Arian or Unitarian sentiments, which occasionally led to divisions and secessions. In the year 1777, on the appointment of the Rev. Hugh Anderson to the ministry of the ancient chapel in Toxteth Park, a secession of this kind took place, which led to the erection of the building in Renshaw Street called Newington Chapel. The Rev. David Bruce was the first pastor, and under his ministry the church was united with the Independents. Mr. Bruce's pastorate extended over thirty years. Dying in 1808, after an interval of three years, the congregation gave a call to a young man of very remarkable talents—the Rev. Thomas Spencer—whose youth, fervour, piety, and oratorical powers at once rivetted public attention; such a sudden rise to extensive popularity has rarely been witnessed. The crowds who flocked to listen to his ministry exceeded all precedent, and it was found absolutely necessary to take immediate steps for the erection of a large and commodious building. This resulted in the erection of Great George Street Chapel, of which more hereafter. The melancholy sequel is well known in the annals of Liverpool. In the month of June 1811, Spencer was ordained. On August 5th following, his brilliant but too brief career was brought to a close, through his being accidentally drowned whilst

Newington Chapel.

Reverend Thomas Spencer.

CHAP. X.

Rev. Thomas Spencer.

bathing on the south shore. The regret for his loss in the public mind was wide and deep. Such a scene of public mourning as took place at his funeral has rarely been witnessed:

> His beauteous image passed us by,
> He came like lightning from the sky,
> He seem'd as dazzling to the eye,
> As prompt to disappear.
>
> O nate, ingentem luctum ne quære tuorum.
> Ostendent terris hunc tantum fata; neque ultra
> Esse sinent.

Rev. Thomas Raffles.

The immediate successor to Mr. Spencer was the Rev. Thomas Raffles, afterwards D.D., to whom I shall have to allude more specially in connection with Great George Street. The pulpit of Newington Chapel has been filled by several eminent men at subsequent periods; amongst others, by the Rev. Robert Philip, afterwards of Maberly Chapel, London; Dr. Lindsay Alexander, afterwards of Edinburgh; and Dr. Spence, afterwards of Dundee. The quasi-Gothic façade was added in 1820, and the schools in the yard about 1863. The building has recently (1872) been sold and appropriated as a German church.

Unitarian Chapel.

A little further along the street on the east side stands the Unitarian Chapel. I have in chapter iv. brought up the history of the Presbyterian congregation originally assembling in Castle Hey, down to the period of their removal from Benn's Garden. This was in 1811, when the chapel in Renshaw Street was built. It is a neat stone-fronted edifice, designed by Mr. William Byrom. The Rev. Robert Lewin, who was pastor of the church for forty-six years, opened the new chapel and remained its minister until 1816. He was succeeded by Mr. George Harris, who created a great sensation in his day by his controversial discourses. After him came Mr. William Hincks and his brother Mr. George Hincks; and in 1831, Mr. John Hamilton Thom, who continued until 1863, when he retired from the ministry, but still remains

amongst us to pursue a useful and active career in private life. The present incumbent is the Rev. Charles Beard, M.A.

St. Andrew's Church.

Nearly opposite stands St. Andrew's Episcopal Church, erected in 1815 by Sir John Gladstone, Bart., at an expense of 12,000*l.* It was built at a period when ecclesiastical design was at a very low ebb. Chancels and altar screens, clerestories and reredoses were supposed to have passed into the night of oblivion, never again to see the light. Commodious space for a congregation with galleries all round, and a shallow recess at one end—east or west as the case might be—were all that was required. The Rev. John Jones, M.A. since incumbent of Waterloo, and Archdeacon of Liverpool, filled the cure for many years, and several eminent men have been his successors. The church having been erected under the former state of the law, by which the patronage after a limited period lapsed to the patron of the parish, in this case the corporation, the advowson was recently offered for sale under the Municipal Act, and was purchased by Mr. Robertson Gladstone, thus again investing it in the family of the founder.

A little way further along Renshaw Street, Oldham Street runs eastward up the hill. This takes its name from the Oldham family, to whom the land originally belonged, and from whom it passed to the Bolds. In Oldham Street stands the oldest Presbyterian church in the town, connected with the Church of Scotland. The Scottish residents in Liverpool down to the year 1792 worshipped in the Dissenting chapels, but about that time, they felt themselves strong enough to erect a place of their own. Amongst these was Mr. John, afterwards Sir John Gladstone, subsequently an ardent champion of the Church of England and founder of several Episcopal churches. By their efforts the funds were raised for the erection of Oldham Street Kirk, which was opened in 1793, Mr., afterwards Dr. William Kirkpatrick being

Scotch Church.

CHAP. X.

the first minister. This church has been the fruitful parent of the numerous Scotch Presbyterian edifices in various parts of the town. In itself it is simply a square brick edifice with a barn roof, the orthodox design until recent years of most Nonconformist ecclesiastical structures.

Caledonian Schools.

The Caledonian Schools, on the opposite side of the street, have long occupied a very honourable position amongst the schools of the town; supported by the Scottish inhabitants of all sections, they give an excellent education to children, of both sexes, of Scotch parentage.

We have now arrived at the *Carrefour*, where Renshaw, Leece, Berry, and Bold Streets converge, and see

St. Luke's Church.

before us a stately church with a lofty tower and aspiring turrets, and if it happens to be a Sunday or a holiday, our ears may be gratified by the musical cadences of a melodious peal of eight bells. This is St. Luke's Church, generally considered the crowning point of Liverpool ecclesiastical architecture; built by the old Common Council as the corporation church *par excellence*, regardless—as the auctioneers say—of expense, and dedicated to their patron saint.

It is stated that the site was purchased for the purpose of building a church about 1791, but no steps were taken towards the erection until 1811, when the first stone was laid by Mr. James Drinkwater, then mayor. Some progress was made with the foundations, and the enclosure walls were built, when from some cause the works were suspended for many years. They were resumed about 1826, and the church was finally completed in 1831. The original enclosing walls were solid and lofty pieces of masonry with arched monastic-looking gateways. When the church was completed these were taken down and replaced by iron railing. A few years ago, the front portion of this railing was removed, and the church, which stands at the summit of a lofty flight of steps, was thrown open to the street. On gala days, when any military or

civic procession parades the streets, this ascending stage presents a splendid 'coin of vantage,' with its vistas along the converging streets.

It would be unfair to subject a design like this of forty or fifty years ago to the canons of modern criticism with any severity. At the same time it may not be without interest to offer a few remarks, if only to show the progress which has been made since that period. The design is attributed to Mr. John Foster, the corporation architect of the day; but as it is certain that his studies were never turned in the direction of mediæval art, rumour ascribed the design to his assistant Mr. Edwards. This, however, may be only that sort of vulgar gossip which sees in every architect a Pecksniff, who takes the glory, and in every assistant a Tom Pinch, who really does the work. Be this as it may, for excellence of masonry, careful execution of the several parts, and attention to detail, the design is deserving of much praise; but as an original composition, it must be pronounced a failure. Copyism is manifest in every line. The want of a clerestory gives a low and uncharacteristic aspect to the nave. The entirely different style of the chancel would not be incongruous had they been really distinct compositions, as is often the case in a mediæval building; but when they are evidently parts of the same design, there is an inconsistency which cannot be reconciled. This applies still more strongly to the tower, which is 'late perpendicular' in character, with the rectilinear panelling peculiar to the style; whilst the belfry windows exhibit the flowing tracery of the fourteenth century. The fact is the whole design is a *rifacciamento* of scraps, put together with much painstaking and care, and with a certain amount of beauty, but utterly wanting in the spirit and feeling of original composition. The interior is a mere caricature of the style it professes to imitate A continuous barrel vault over the centre aisle, run in plaster with small panel ribs, seems such a grotesque

CHAP. X.

anomaly, that one cannot help wishing that the same eclectic spirit which presided over the exterior and culled its component parts from their various sources, had exercised a little of the same discretion in borrowing or copying for the interior. The result might have been better, and could scarcely have been worse.

Reverend James Aspinall.

The first incumbent of St. Luke's was the Rev. James Aspinall, M.A., a member of an old Liverpool family, his father, Mr. John Bridge Aspinall, having filled the office of mayor in 1803. Mr. Aspinall was a man of very brilliant parts both as a writer and speaker, and during his residence here filled a prominent place in Liverpool society. He was the writer of many lively, and frequently severe articles on local affairs in the journals of the day. A series of sketches written for a local paper and afterwards collected and published under the title of 'Liverpool a Few Years Since, by an Old Stager,' are in their way very remarkable productions, showing a power of developing individual character in its amusing and humourous aspects and of felicitous description of a very rare kind. In 1840 he was presented to the rectory of Althorpe in Lincolnshire, where he remained until his decease. Two of his sons occupy official positions in the borough, Mr. J. B. Aspinall, Q.C., being recorder, and Mr. Clarke Aspinall the coroner.

Rodney Street.

Ascending Leece Street, which has been twice widened during the course of Liverpool improvements, we turn into Rodney Street, where we shall find food for meditation and reflection. The name is indicative of the date of its foundation. The famous victory of Lord Rodney over the Comte de Grasse on June 2, 1780, is still commemorated in the sign boards of many a country tavern, and has given the name of our gallant sailor to many a street and alley. Soon after that date the street was projected, but in the map of 1785 not a single house is shown as built therein. By the year 1803 a fair sprinkling of houses had been erected on both sides, but the

street was not completed until a much more recent date. The houses generally are of respectable size and character, many of them mansions of some pretension, answering in the early part of this century to the Hanover Street of the last. It has been the residence of many of the old Liverpool families, the Drinkwaters, Bournes, Tobins, Houghtons, &c., with others shortly to be mentioned. It has had for some time a hard struggle to maintain its respectability, but there are signs of its following the usual course. After a reign longer or shorter of quiet dignity, the physicians and surgeons begin to colonise. The dentist follows; then a modest-looking display of wares in the parlour window indicates the *modiste*, or the brilliant red and blue jars give token of the druggist and apothecary. By-and-by a shop window is boldly put forth radiant with plate glass and gold, and so gradually a change comes over the spirit of the locality; the tradesman pushes out the gentleman, and trade reigns supreme. Rodney Street is at present in the transition state, when there is a tripartite division between the private house, the doctor, and the shopkeeper, but in the end the triumph of the trader is inevitable.

Scotch Church.

Let us commence our survey at the north end. The first conspicuous object which meets our eye is the Scotch Church of St. Andrew, a large and stately building erected in 1823. Its architect was Mr. John Foster. The front is bold and imposing in its aspect, consisting of a recessed Ionic portico, with solid wings in antis; the portico surmounted by a balustraded attic. The wings are crowned by turrets and cupolas. On the whole, this building may be considered as one of the most successful efforts of the architect by whom it was constructed.

This church owes its origin to a difference of opinion amongst the congregation of Oldham Street Kirk as to the appointment of a minister, on the resignation of Dr. Barr in December 1822. There were two candidates, the Rev. John Stewart, and the Rev. David Thom, afterwards

CHAP. X.

D.D. Mr. Stewart being elected, the dissentients took immediate steps towards the erection of a new church. The first stone was laid on June 17, 1823, by Rear-Admiral Murray with considerable *éclat*. The church was opened for divine service on Friday, December 3, 1824, by the celebrated Edward Irving, then in the full blaze of his popularity and fame.

Edward Irving.

Previous to the completion of the building, some differences had arisen respecting the theological tenets of the pastor Mr. Thom, amongst the congregation, who temporarily occupied the old Music Hall in Bold Street. In order to accommodate these differences, it was agreed to appoint another gentleman as joint pastor, and the Rev. Andrew Wilson, a young man of great promise, was selected. Very soon after the opening of the new church, charges of heterodoxy were brought against Mr. Thom, which were submitted in June 1825 to the Presbytery of Glasgow, which sent down to Liverpool a commission to collect evidence. After a protracted enquiry held in the Tron Church, Glasgow, at an expenditure by the litigating parties of at least 1,000*l*., a decision was pronounced adverse to Mr. Thom, by which he was removed from his office and ministry. A number of the congregation still adhered to him. The Music Hall was again resorted to as a temporary refuge, until the chapel was erected on the north-east side of Bold Street, now the Queen's Hall. This was opened in April 1828. After remaining here about twenty-eight years, the site having become very valuable for business purposes, it was sold and premises purchased at the upper end of Brownlow Hill, corner of Crown Street. Here in an 'upper room,' Dr. Thom continued to minister to a select but very attached circle, to the time of his decease, on February 27, 1862, after which the congregation became dispersed. He was a man of varied and extensive attainments and of a large minded charity. Though holding theological views somewhat peculiar, and engaged in controversy at

Reverend Dr. Thom.

Deposition and secession.

many periods of his life, few men have been more free from bitterness or have possessed less of the 'odium theologicum.' A little volume published during his life entitled 'Liverpool Churches and Chapels,' contains the results of much patient and laborious enquiry, and furnishes information on an interesting subject which might otherwise have been lost. I am indebted to this little volume for many particulars in the present work. Since his decease two volumes containing sermons and other writings by Dr. Thom have issued from the press, to which is prefixed a memoir by his son.

Scotch Church.

The church in Rodney Street, owing to a misunderstanding of some kind, had fallen so low that it was offered for sale by public auction, and was actually purchased on behalf of the Wesleyan Methodists. Difficulties in the transfer arose out of the nature of the trust-deed, and the purchase was cancelled. Since that time the conflicting interests having been harmonised, the establishment has been rehabilitated, and has recently pursued a prosperous career. A burial-ground surrounds the church, in which there has been recently erected, in memory of Mr. McKenzie, the eminent railway contractor, a pyramid of granite almost rivalling that of Caius Cestius adjoining the English burying-ground at Rome.

Opposite the Scotch Kirk stands a large mansion which we must not pass without a tribute to a man and a family worthy of all honour. This was the residence during the latter part of his life of the well-known and highly-esteemed Robert Bickersteth, surgeon, as it is still that of his no less distinguished son. The Bickersteth family present an example of what natural talent combined with early training and good example can accomplish in a country where the path to fame and honours is open to every man with a strong brain and a determined will. The elder Bickersteth was a medical man in Kirkby Lonsdale, a small country town in Westmoreland. From this country of 'the dales,' many hard-headed men trained

Bickersteth family.

CHAP. X.

Bickersteth family.

in the frugal and industrious habits of the district, have emerged to distinguish themselves on the arena of public life. Of the five sons of this gentleman, one took to the law, rose to distinction, and died a peer of the realm—Lord Langdale, Master of the Rolls. Another, the Rev. Edward Bickersteth, entered the church, where he became eminently useful, his memory as a preacher and author being held in high estimation. A third, Robert Bickersteth, devoted himself to the medical profession, and rose to the highest rank as a surgeon and operator, his reputation and fame being very widely extended. The present generation have worthily maintained the position acquired by their parents; one being the present Bishop of Ripon, and another, the occupier of the mansion before us, fully maintaining his father's fame in the medical profession.

Consul Maury.

At the house adjoining, resided for many years Mr. James Maury, American Consul in Liverpool for about a quarter of a century, a gentleman very much respected in his day. He was the father of Captain Maury of the U.S. navy, so well known by his researches on ocean currents and soundings.

Pudsey Dawson.

Hard by resided Mr. Pudsey Dawson, mayor in 1799, colonel of a regiment of volunteers raised in 1798. The distinguishing feature in Mr. Dawson's character was the uniform and ardent zeal he displayed on behalf of the School for the Blind, to the interests of which he devoted much both of time and money. Somewhat small in stature, his personal courage was remarkable. His martial proclivities descended to his sons. His eldest son, William, entered the Royal Navy, and for his gallant conduct when lieutenant of the 'San Fiorenzo,' in fighting his ship after the captain had fallen, he was promoted to the command. His second son, Henry, was captain in the 52nd Regiment, and fell in the Peninsular War. Another son, Charles, was lieutenant in the same regiment, and died in France in 1816 of wounds received in battle.

Proceeding onwards, a few doors beyond Leece Street, on the west side, we pause before a house which will ever be memorable in the annals of Liverpool. It is a tolerably large house, now numbered 62. It originally stood comparatively detached with a wing on each side. One of these has been altered, and converted into a separate dwelling. This house was formerly the residence of Mr., afterwards Sir John, Gladstone; and here, in 1808, first saw the light the Right Honourable William Ewart Gladstone, prime minister—orator, poet, scholar, statesman, a man of the most varied capacities and equally eminent in them all. This is not the place to discourse on politics; but however political opinions may vary, there can be but one estimate of the great ability and conscientious application of his powers of this remarkable man. Liverpool has reason to be proud of being, in one sense, the 'alma mater' of such a son. It is a remarkable fact, that of the four great parliamentary orators of recent times—Lord Derby, and Messrs. Disraeli, Gladstone, and Bright—three belong to South Lancashire and two of these to Liverpool, or its close vicinity.

W. E. Gladstone.

Let us now turn up Hardman Street. This takes its name from the Hardman family, of whom Mr. John Hardman was elected member for the borough in 1754, and died whilst in office. The street was originally narrow, and along with Leece Street, by a strange oversight or misconception, has been twice widened; the buildings erected after the first widening having had to be again purchased and taken down.

Hardman family.

Ascending the street, the first object which strikes the eye is St. Philip's Church, a Gothic building of rather peculiar structure. It was erected in 1816 by Mr. John Cragg, at an expense of 12,000*l.* The material is brick, covered with a thin coat of compo, which scarcely hides the joints of the brickwork. The windows are of the depressed Tudor arch form, with slender cast iron tracery. Hollow octagonal turrets are carried up at the angles,

St. Philip's Church.

CHAP. X.

crowned with spirets, ornamented with cast-iron crockets. The absence of any central or aspiring feature to carry the eye upwards is the great defect in the external design of this building, which is a sort of feeble imitation of King's College Chapel, Cambridge. The architect was Mr. Thomas Rickman, who deserves rather more than a mere passing notice. In the early part of the present century he was a clerk in a mercantile office in Liverpool. Born and brought up in the Society of Friends, with whom he continued in communion to the end of his days, ecclesiastical architecture was about the last study to which he might have been expected to devote himself. The tendencies and bent of a genius for a special pursuit are not to be controlled; and so young Rickman, with little or no external assistance, devoted himself to the study of our mediæval buildings, at a time when little progress had been made in that direction.

Thomas Rickman.

In 1809, James Smith, an enterprising printer in Tithebarn Street, Liverpool, a member of the Society of Friends, brought out in serial numbers a work entitled, 'Smith's Panorama of Science and Art,' in which he engaged Thomas Rickman to write the article on architecture. Up to this time the awakening sense of the beauty of mediæval architecture had been destitute of any order or arrangement for its ideas. No classification had as yet been attempted. This want Rickman attempted to supply, and for the period very successfully. His article attracted considerable attention. It was afterwards expanded and published as a separate work, and has gone through many editions, the last, issued since the author's decease, by Parker of Oxford, being profusely illustrated. It contains much useful information, but is now to a considerable extent superseded by later works. Its main defect is the comparatively narrow view taken of the subject by its limitation to English examples, the Continent not being accessible, and its rich stores almost unknown, at the time when he wrote. The notice which

the work obtained led Rickman to devote himself entirely to architecture as a profession, first in Liverpool and subsequently in Birmingham, where he continued to practise until his decease. The churches designed by him in Liverpool are St. George's, Everton; St. Michael's in the Hamlet; the present church under notice; and at a subsequent period St. Jude's, Hardwick Street. These buildings, the three first erected at an early period of the Gothic revival, exhibit a very material advance upon any thing in the Gothic style previously attempted in Liverpool; the tone, character, and motive of every part being derived from careful study of ancient examples. This, however, is nearly all the merit which can be fairly awarded to them. As original designs they are stiff and feeble, the common fault of all early attempts to resuscitate an extinct style, whether in art or literature.

Churches erected.

The half century which has since elapsed has made prodigious advances in the growth and development of the germ planted by Rickman, and it cannot be denied that the genius of the pointed style now shines forth with far more brilliant lustre than in anything designed by him. This is natural and to be expected; but when we consider the difficulties by which he was surrounded, and the utter absence of all such aids as now abound for the use of the architectural student, our wonder should be not that he did not accomplish more, but that he did so much. His great merit is that of having opened a sealed book, of having furnished the key to the buried treasures of a forgotten art, of pointing out to his successors the way to attain a deeper infusion of the spirit and feeling of mediæval architecture than it was possible for him under the circumstances to obtain.

Rickman's merits.

On the opposite side of Hardman Street stand the buildings of the Blind Asylum, which institution was removed here from London Road in 1851. They form a neat group, designed by the late Mr. A. H. Holme. The church adjoining, removed at the same time and re-

Blind Asylum,

CHAP. X.

erected stone by stone, has already been described in chapter viii.

We are now approaching a quarter abounding in churches and public buildings. The land about Myrtle Street and a portion of Hope Street, owing to peculiar circumstances, was prevented from coming into the market, and remained green fields long after the surrounding land was occupied. Hence, when brought within reach, it was eagerly sought after for public structures. Owing to these circumstances, Hope Street long retained its suburban character; its houses withdrawn within pleasant gardens, with trees and verdure all around. This retirement was strengthened by the north end of the street being blocked by the old tavern where Roscoe was born, which limited the passage into Mount Pleasant to a narrow crooked lane. The house was taken down about 1835, and the street thrown open as at present. Hope Street takes its name from Mr. William Hope, who built and lived in the house at the corner of Hardman Street. His sons became eminent as merchants, Mr. Samuel Hope having founded the bank in Water Street, subsequently so unfortunate under the name of the Borough Bank.

Hope Street.

In ascending from Hardman Street to Hope Street, the first edifice which attracts attention is the Philharmonic Hall, well known to fame and the musical world. This building in its uses and constitution is almost unique. Liverpool cannot boast of an Opera House. Various attempts have been made to naturalise the opera as an institution amongst us, the latest, by the erection of the Alexandra Theatre in Lime Street; but the results have been uniformly failure. The public of Liverpool are not as a whole a play-going people, and cannot be excited by any stimulus to respond to the great outlay which the opera necessarily involves. Still the love of music has always prevailed amongst us more or less. After the destruction of the Old Music Hall in Bold Street, a long time elapsed without any adequate provision for the

Philharmonic Hall.

Musical taste.

gratification of musical taste. To meet this want the Philharmonic Society was established about 1842. Its meetings were at first held in a large room in Great Richmond Street, near St. Anne's Church. Its great success led to more extended operations, and before many years it was determined to erect a suitable structure on a scale commensurate with the greatly extended circle which felt an interest in the subject. The money was raised in shares, for which the subscribers received boxes and stalls.

Musical taste.

The first stone was laid on September 23, 1846, and the building was opened on August 27, 1849. The architect was Mr. John Cunningham. For convenience of arrangement, capability of seeing and hearing, and general design this building may be pronounced one of the most successful of the kind ever erected. Internally it may be described as a large and lofty parallelogram, with the orchestra at one end; free from pillars or obstructions of any kind, and without projecting galleries.

Building.

Description.

The area of the ground floor is appropriated to the stalls. The boxes are carried along both sides and one end, and are recessed back over the corridors, which extend round the building. Above the boxes there is an upper gallery. The access to the boxes is by two commodious staircases, at the head of which is a long refreshment room, communicating with the upper corridors at each end. The arrangement of the corridors and communications, in their spaciousness and convenience, contributes much to facilitate the agreeable intercourse which takes place in the intervals of the performances. The whole is well worthy of the position which the institution enjoys amongst the attractions of the town. The exterior is a simple rectangular design, bold and massive, with an arcade in the lower storey at the front and north side, and an upper tier of moulded windows surmounted by pediments. A bold cornice crowns the whole, with

CHAP. X.

Description.

ornamentation above, displaying medallions of eminent musical composers. The method of lighting the interior is worthy of notice. An ornamental cornice runs round the ceiling, from which springs a cove with open decorated work in panels. Along the outer edge of the cornice are placed innumerable small jets, by which the entire hall is lighted, with the addition of a sun-burner over the orchestra. The effect is pleasing and subdued, entirely avoiding the glare and heat of lights scattered about the room. The ventilation is simple and ingenious, the air, after being moderately warmed, being forced in by mechanical means through apertures diffused round the hall, to avoid draughts. The consumed air is drawn off above.

Performances.

Although the performances are not operatic, the *morceaux* selected from the operas being presented in a fragmentary manner, without scenery or dramatic effect, the institution discharges for Liverpool society the same functions as Her Majesty's Theatre does for the *haut ton* of the metropolis. It is here that friends meet and the newest fashions are displayed. It is here that the small talk, persiflage, and gossip of what is called 'good society' pervade the air and circulate their agreeable flavour—

> Through all the giddy circle they pursue,
> And old impertinence expel by new.
> When Florio speaks, what virgin could withstand,
> If gentle Damon did not squeeze her hand?
> This, erring mortals levity may call;
> Oh blind to truth! the sylphs contrive it all.

The music, however, is not all operatic; oratorios, masses, cantatas, and choral music of all kinds vary the bill of fare, which is generally selected with taste and performed with skill.

Baptist Chapel.

At the opposite corner of Myrtle and Hope Streets stands the Baptist Chapel, under the ministry of the Rev. Hugh Stowell Brown. I have spoken in chapter

viii. of the chapel in Lime Street, and of its demolition in 1844, when the present building was erected in its stead. As a place of worship it is commodious and well-arranged, but its style of architecture is not up to the demands of the age in ecclesiastical structures. Its original architect was Mr. W. H. Gee. In 1847 the Rev. James Lister, owing to advancing years and infirmity, resigned the pastorate, which was soon after conferred on Mr. Brown. The great popularity of this gentleman, and the consequent crowded state of the congregation, necessitated an enlargement of the edifice, which was carried out in 1862 by Mr. Culshaw. The building now accommodates a very large congregation.

Baptist Chapel.

A little above the Philharmonic Hall, on the south side of Myrtle Street, stands St. George's Presbyterian Church, of which the Rev. J. Kennedy Moore, M.A., is the minister. This church owes its origin to a secession from Rodney Street Kirk, shortly after the disruption in the Scottish National Church. The congregation are in connexion with the Presbyterian Church in England, which represents here the Free Church in Scotland. The building has a neat stone front, with nothing remarkable except a figure supposed to represent John Knox struggling under the oppressive weight of a heavy mass of masonry forming a projecting corbel. The first stone of this building was laid by the Right Hon. Fox Maule, afterwards Earl of Dalhousie, on April 11, 1844. It was opened for public worship on May 10, 1845.

Scotch Free Church.

On the opposite side of the street stands the Lying-in Hospital, near which is the Children's Infirmary, a most praiseworthy and efficient charity, erected through the untiring efforts of several warm and zealous friends, in which the press took a conspicuous part, by whose exertions it was opened free from debt. Next comes the Gymnasium, a large and commodious building. The reaction in favour of muscularity at the present day, both in the Church and the world, is a remarkable sign

Lying-in Hospital.

Children's Infirmary.

Gymnasium.

CHAP. X.

Gymnasium.

of the times, of which Volunteering is only one phase. 'The legs of a man,' of which the Psalmist made so little account, are now required to be strengthened and improved, as part of the 'whole duty of man.' A philosopher is no longer the pale, etiolated being, smelling of the midnight oil. He is thought of very small consequence unless he has walked over the Alètsch Glacier, ascended the Jungfrau, scaled the summit of Monte Rosa, or paddled his canoe on the bosom of the Albert Nyanza. The youth of Liverpool, fired with the same ambition, have cultivated the gymnastic art with considerable success. In this they were greatly encouraged by the leadership of a gentleman who rejoiced in the classical title of *Gymnasiarch*, and has done much to popularise athletic exercises. Owing mainly to his exertions a limited liability company was formed, and the present building erected. It is spacious, light, and every way fitted for its purpose. Its architect was Mr. Walter Scott.

Parish cemetery.

A little way back from Myrtle Street, having a front to Cambridge Street, is the old parish cemetery, with its quasi-Gothic chapel. The ground was laid out for a burying-place and the chapel erected about the beginning of the present century. It has been for some years closed, and almost forgotten. Near by stand the collection of almshouses concentrated here by the corporation, as described in chapter viii. They look strangely out of keeping with the neighbourhood. The plan, straddling, as it were, angle-wise, and pushing out of line the abutting streets, and the general appearance of meanness and squalidity, point to the desirability of removing them to a more rural situation. One might apply to them, *mutatis mutandis*, the pasquinade of Bonomi in reference to the screen of columns at Carlton House:—

Almshouses.

Care caselle, che fate quà?
Non sappiamo, in verità.[1]

[1] Dear little houses, what do you here?
In truth, my good sir, it's not very clear.

CHAP. X.

Returning westward by Myrtle Street, and turning along Hope Street past the Philharmonic Hall, our attention is arrested by an ecclesiastical building of considerable richness, with an attached tower and spire. This is the Unitarian Church, erected in lieu of the Octagon Chapel, formerly existing in Paradise Street. In chapter vii. I have traced the history of this congregation down to the time of its removal from thence, and will therefore confine myself to a few remarks on the building before us. It was erected during the ministry of the Rev. James Martineau, a learned, accomplished, and eloquent divine, bearing a name highly distinguished in the rolls of literary fame. The first stone was laid on May 9, 1848, and the building was opened on October 18, 1849.

Unitarian Church.

At the time of its erection this structure attracted considerable attention, both on account of the general design, and the completeness with which the details were carried out; in fact, it formed an epoch in the progress of Gothic architecture in the town and neighbourhood. Up to this time, with few exceptions, our Gothic buildings (principally churches), however meritorious in design, had been crippled and impoverished—starved, so to speak—in their detail and ornamentation, by parsimony in most cases, and want of appreciation in others. In the Hope Street church free scope was given to the talent of the architects, by providing means for the full development of their conceptions. The result has been on the whole highly satisfactory. The building is picturesque in outline and rich in its detail and ornament. The style is that of the early fourteenth century, which delights in flowing lines and admits of much decoration.

The principal feature is the steeple, which consists of a square tower, flanked by double buttresses at each angle, from which rises a broach spire, breaking into an octagon above. The angles at the base of the spire have niches and statues, with spire lights over, in the inter-

CHAP. X.

Unitarian Church.

mediate planes of the octagon. The proportions are pleasing and harmonious, combining solidity below with elegance and lightness above. The body of the church consists of a nave and side aisles, with chancel at the east end, which are carried out with very successful effect. The main defect in the design is the multiplicity of its parts. In the anxiety to make it complete too much has been attempted. The imitation in a small building of the laying out of a cathedral or collegiate church was a mistake, and the result of so many breaks, projections, porches, transepts, chancel, and miniature chapter house, produces somewhat of a flutter and confusion which is unfavourable to dignity and repose.

The exterior walls are built with a bluish-grey stone from the coal measures, the dressings of Bath stone. These materials, pleasing in appearance when fresh, have proved rather an unfortunate selection. The walling stones have become disfigured with brown stains, and the Bath stone in various places begins to show signs of decomposition.

Raffles Brown.

The architects were Messrs. T. D. Barry and Raffles Brown. The latter gentleman, who has long passed away from this mortal scene, was a remarkable man. The son of Dr. Brown, an eminent barrister, brother of the Rev. James Baldwin Brown, and nephew of the Rev. Dr. Raffles, talent was indigenous in both descents, and Raffles Brown possessed much of what might be called genius. As an artist and designer he possessed great taste and wonderful facility, especially in the Gothic style. His power of sketching and combining beautiful forms and effective grouping was something remarkable. Unfortunately he was infected with much of the waywardness which is commonly—perhaps erroneously—ascribed to genius. He was a rolling stone, to which very little moss adhered in its eccentric revolutions. A settled, steady life was irksome to him; and after a chequered career of a few short years, he sank into an

early grave, his life an incomplete problem, an unfinished sketch.

> O good Horatio, what a wounded name,
> Things standing thus unknown, shall live behind me!

The churches of St. Chrysostom, Everton, and of St. John the Divine, Holly Road, Fairfield, were designed by him, both erected in 1852.

Falkner Street.

Proceeding along Hope Street, a few steps bring us to Falkner Street, originally Crabtree Lane, formerly a rural road extending some distance eastward, and terminating in the fields.

Blackburne House.

The detached mansion, with its grounds extending between Falkner Street and Blackburne Place, was erected between 1785 and 1790, by Mr. John Blackburne, a relative of the Blackburnes of Hale. The family resided previously in Hanover Street. Mr. John Blackburne, sen., was mayor in 1760; and his son, who built the house we are surveying, was mayor in 1788. This building will commemorate the name of a benevolent man, not very long passed away from us, Mr. George Holt, who for many years took an active part in the public affairs and charities of the town.

George Holt.

As a man of business he was energetic, shrewd, and successful; as a member of the council he occupied a leading position for a long period. The Mechanics' Institution, now the Liverpool Institute, found in him one of its most attentive and liberal supporters. From the time of its foundation to his decease, nearly thirty years, he watched over its affairs with the most devoted attention. He was earnest on the subject of female education; and when the female branch of the Institute was established he purchased Blackburne House; and in memory of a beloved daughter who had during her lifetime taken an interest in the subject, he devoted the property to the purposes of the institution. After his decease this was made a gift in perpetuity by his family. Mr. Holt died on February 16, 1861, in the 71st year of his age.

CHAP. X.

We are now at the top of Mount Street, and will pause before the large building the seat of the Liverpool Institute. Before doing so I would direct attention to a respectable but modest-looking house almost adjoining. This was for many years, down to the time of his decease, the residence of Thomas Thorneley, M.P. for Wolverhampton. He was a merchant in Liverpool; and having retired from business in middle life, devoted himself to public affairs, and not long after the passing of the Reform Act of 1832 he entered Parliament as the representative of Wolverhampton, in which position he remained for twenty years. His connexion with this borough was equally honourable to himself and his constituents, they having the good sense rightly to appreciate his sterling worth. Though not a man of brilliant talents nor an oratorical speaker, there was something about him which inspired confidence in his judgment and respect for his thorough honesty. In person he was of a noble aspect, a courteous gentleman in his manners. When he spoke it was with that simple directness and thorough acquaintance with his subject which never fails to carry conviction to the hearers. He was much respected in the House of Commons by both sides, and placed on many important committees. Increasing years and infirmities led to his withdrawal from Parliament in 1859; he continued to reside in Mount Street until his decease in 1863.

Thomas Thorneley.

Liverpool Institute.

We have now arrived at the Liverpool Institute, a very unintelligible name, which conveys not the remotest idea of its object or purpose. Juliet asks, very pertinently, 'What's in a name?' One may reply, a great deal, if names are to answer to things. If it is stated that Mr. Jones keeps the 'Panklibanon,' or Mr. Thompson the 'Pantechnitheca,' ninety-nine out of every hundred would never divine that the one was a depôt for pots and pans, and the other a tailor's shop. In like manner it would be difficult for a stranger to discover that the Liverpool Institute is an educational establishment, originally the

Mechanics' Institution, which has now existed for not much short of half a century, and has been the source, both in its aim, operations, and the influence it has exercised, of an untold amount of benefit to the community.

Mechanics' Institution.

The efforts of Dr. Birkbeck, Mr. (afterwards Lord) Brougham, and others, in the first quarter of the present century, towards the establishment of Mechanics' Institutions stimulated public opinion in Liverpool in the year 1825 to an attempt at practical realisation. In that year public meetings were held at the chapel in Sir Thomas's Buildings and in the Music Hall, Bold Street, in which Dr. Stewart Traill, the Rev. Andrew Wilson, of Rodney Street, and others took part, when the subject was taken up enthusiastically, and steps taken for carrying out the scheme. After a short sojourn in a room in School Lane, the institution was established in rooms over the Union News-room, in Slater Street, afterwards occupied as the Free Public Library and Museum. Classes were formed for instruction in the various subjects of human knowledge, lectures were delivered, and the foundation of a good library laid. About 1834 steps were taken towards the erection of a new building. The energy and perseverance displayed in this effort were worthy of all commendation. Much of the success was due to the untiring labours of Mr. J. Radcliffe, the then secretary, whom no difficulties could daunt, and whom no rebuffs could turn from the tenor of his way. He had made up his mind that a large building worthy of the institution and the town should be erected, and he ultimately succeeded in carrying it out.

New building.

The land in Mount Street was purchased from the old municipal corporation—on contract, without the remotest idea of paying for it; and by public appeals and adroit management it was ultimately obtained as a free gift. The first stone of the new building was laid by Lord Brougham on July 20, 1835, on which occasion he deli-

First stone laid.

CHAP. X.

vered one of his noblest harangues, which will be found in his collected works. When nearly approaching completion the building was unfortunately destroyed by fire; but it speedily arose from its ashes, and was opened on September 15, 1837, by Mr. Thomas Wyse, M.P. for Waterford.

Opening.

The front of the building and the portico were designed by Mr. A. H. Holme, and have a bold and massive effect. Additions have been made from time to time to the building, which now covers a large area.

Progress.

As a Mechanics' Institution proper it cannot be said to have met with the success anticipated by its founders. The hard-handed are not always the hard-headed. It requires an amount of self-denial and effort far above the average for a youth at the close of a hard day's labour, with his physical energies exhausted, to raise himself to the study of mathematics, chymistry, or the art of design. Had the directors confined themselves to this department, the original object of the institution, the result must have been a failure; but, surveying the educational wants of the town, they wisely struck out for themselves a new path of usefulness. Without neglecting the Mechanics' Institution proper, they established day schools, higher and lower, offering the best education on the lowest possible terms. To these has since been superadded what is called the Queen's College, for continuing the educational course beyond the limits defined in the schools, and affording the means of qualifying for degrees in the London University. When affairs took this turn it was rightly thought that the name of the Mechanics' Institution pure and simple was no longer the appropriate designation, and the name was accordingly changed to that of the 'Liverpool Institute.'

Change of name.

High School.

The education given here being entirely secular, the extension of the original 'platform' stimulated the members of the Established Church to the formation of an educational institution which should combine religious

instruction with its course. Hence arose the Collegiate Institute, now the Liverpool College, to which I shall have hereafter to refer.

Proceeding along Hope Street, we arrive at the corner of St. James's Cemetery, where several objects attract our attention. We will take them in order. First we see a row of stately houses within an enclosure, with a heavy colonnade running in front of them, facing Hope Street. This is Gambier Terrace, called after the celebrated admiral of that name. When this district was laid out for building, between 1830 and 1835, a great demand existed for first-class houses, which met for a time with a corresponding supply. Gambier Terrace was then projected, and the land along the east side of Hope Street was laid under restrictions to continue the elevation according to the original design. Then came the commercial crisis of 1837, after which years elapsed before a demand again arose. In the meantime a change had taken place. 'Seest thou not,' quoth Borachio, 'what a deformed thief this fashion is? how giddily he turns about?' The style of 1832 did not suit the demand of 1839. The railways had begun to carry away far beyond the smoke the possible denizens of Gambier Terrace. The gloomy effect of the heavy colonnade was distasteful. Possibly the *vis-à-vis* of the Cemetery was not agreeable. At all events, every attempt to stimulate the public into continuing the façade has been hitherto abortive, and it remains, and is likely to do so, a practical illustration of 'letting "I dare not" wait upon "I would."'

Gambier Terrace.

Ascending Canning Street, we enter the best-built and most respectable quarter of what may be called intra-mural Liverpool. The district between Falkner Street and Parliament Street was the last portion of Mosslake Fields laid out for building, and was completed between 1835 and 1855, with spacious avenues and high-class houses. Nearly the whole of the land belongs to the

Canning Street quarter.

CHAP. X.

corporate estate, and is let on building leases for seventy-five years.

Church of the Apostles.

The first public building which meets the eye is the Church of the Holy Apostles, at the corner of Catherine Street. The Holy Apostolic Church, or, as they are more profanely styled, the Irvingites, present a very curious psychological study. Originally established, as was announced, on the primitive apostolic model, they soon outran the grand simplicity of their founder, Edward Irving, and degenerated into mediævalism and ritualism, at least in outward appearance. The present building was commenced in 1840, when the eastern portion was erected. It so remained incomplete for many years, when the western portion and steeple were added, on a scale much reduced from the original design. The proportions of the building are too small for the style of the eastern portion. Flying buttresses which look as if a man could carry them away on his shoulder do not add dignity to the design. The western portion is much less ambitious, though more commonplace. Internally the church is highly finished, with neat screen-work and handsome roof.

Scotch Free Church.

At the next corner—Bedford Street—stands the Presbyterian Church, in connexion with the Free Church of Scotland. This was erected in 1846 by a portion of the congregation of Oldham Street, which seceded at the time of the disruption, along with Mr. Welsh, their minister. It is a neat building, in a plain mediæval style, with tower and spire at the south front.

Falkner Square.

A hundred yards further up Canning Street we arrive at Falkner Square, the last of the squares laid out in Liverpool. The houses are commodious, though not distinguished by any special architectural taste. For the most part they are only two storeys in height, which imparts to the general aspect a somewhat undignified effect. The square takes its name from the family of Falkner, who settled in Liverpool early in the last century.

Thomas and Edward Falkner were merchants in Old-hall Street in 1757, in which year Thomas filled the office of churchwarden. Edward Falkner the younger, born in 1750, succeeded to a large fortune on the decease of his father. He purchased a property in West Derby, on the Prescot Road, called Fairfield, on which he erected a mansion, which, from its peculiar style and design, obtained the sobriquet of 'Teacaddy Hall.' In 1788 he filled the office of High Sheriff of the County Palatine. He died in 1825. The estate has since been cut up into building land, and has given the name to the district of 'Fairfield.' The family purchased from the corporation on lease a large tract of land in Mosslake Fields, on a portion of which Falkner Square was erected. Falkner Street and Falkner Terrace, Parliament Street, also commemorate the name.

Falkner family.

Fairfield.

Not many yards from the south-east corner of Falkner Square stands St. Saviour's Church, Huskisson Street. This is a large, plain building, covered with compo, with a square tower at the west end, breaking into an octagon above. The whole building is designed in what may be called the conventicular style.

St. Saviour's Church.

Returning westward along Huskisson Street, we pass the Church of St. Bride. The name of the patron saint calls up visions of Wren's beautiful steeple in Fleet Street, with its graceful gradation of forms in the ascending scale. Let no such expectations be cherished, for be it known our St. Bride's, despairing of successful rivalry, does not boast a steeple at all. It was erected in 1830, from the design of Mr. Samuel Rowland. Viewed simply as a public room for an assembly the design is very creditable; but there is nothing in the exterior to mark it out as an ecclesiastical structure. It consists of an oblong cella, with a neat prostyle Ionic portico, without a campanile or other distinguishing feature. The Rev. J. Haldane Stewart, a well-known and highly

St. Bride's.

CHAP. X.

esteemed clergyman, of the Low Church or Evangelical school, was for many years the incumbent.

St. James's Cemetery.

Returning down Canning Street we arrive again at the corner of Gambier Terrace, and see before us the large area comprising St. James's Cemetery and the Mount Gardens. This was originally the crest of one of the sandstone ridges which form the background of the

Site.

curved slope on which Liverpool is built. Here the Kuyper or Yellow Rock coming to the surface, a quarry of building stone had existed from time immemorial, or at all events from the early part of the eighteenth century, out of which the stone for the Town-hall, St. Thomas's, St. Paul's, and St. John's churches, and other public buildings of the time had been extracted. Hence

Quarry.

the name 'Quarry Hill,' by which it was long designated. The excavation in process of time became very extensive, and was approached opposite the top of Duke Street by a tunnel in the rock, which still exists, forming the entrance to the cemetery. Almost immediately over this tunnel, occupying the position of the cemetery chapel, on an elevated escarpment, stood an ancient windmill. Near by, on a site forming part of Upper Duke Street, in front of Sandon Terrace, stood a tolerably large house of enter-

Bowling-green.

tainment with a bowling-green at the back. The earth and rubbish thrown out of the quarry formed large unsightly heaps, particularly on the western or lower side. So matters stood in the year 1767. The winter of this year set in remarkably severe. The price of bread was high, and the sufferings of the poor were great. The mayor, Mr. Thomas Johnson, (not *Sir* Thomas Johnson, who had been gathered to his fathers long before), animated by a benevolent desire to mitigate their sufferings by affording

The Mount formed.

employment, moved the council to undertake the task of levelling and forming into order the amorphous heaps of rubbish encumbering the brow of the Quarry Hill. This was accordingly undertaken at the expense of the corporation, with the same purpose and success as was adopted

with the Lancashire operatives during the cotton famine nearly a century later. A terrace was formed along the extent of the line, with a green slope in front; the summit was levelled, and partially formed into a pleasure-ground and plantation, afterwards extended and improved. A portion of the land was let on leases for building the row of houses still existing. In one portion of the garden an artificial mound was thrown up at a point commanding the finest view. At the north end, near the spot where the gardener's cottage now stands, another windmill remained standing until about 1800.

The Mount formed.

At the time of its construction this terrace and garden must have been a delightful place of resort. The situation is most commanding. Before the valley below was covered with chimney shafts, vomiting forth the dense volumes of smoke which hang over it like a sable pall, and even still early on a Sunday morning in summer the view is extensive and beautiful. The spires, and towers, and domes in the town itself, shooting up above the common level of the lower buildings, the expanse of the Mersey, the estuary of the Dee, Birkenhead in its youthful vigour, Bidston Hill with its mill and lighthouse, the ocean in its majesty of calm or storm, and the distant range of the Welsh mountains terminating the perspective, combine to form a panorama, to which it would not be easy to find a parallel. It was originally called Mount Sion, and is so named in Perry's map of 1769; but after the erection of St. James's Church in 1774, it took the name of St. James's Walk, and the road below that of St. James's Road. The change of name arose in this way. One of the houses on the Mount had been converted into a tavern, with a garden attached, and was much resorted to. The incongruity of the association of Mount Sion with the site of a public-house formed the subject of the following *jeu d'esprit*, by a wit of the day, said to have been a clergyman:—

Commanding view.

Mount Sion.

Mount Sion.

The mayor and council in a dreamy fit,
To slight the Scriptures, and to show their wit,
The name of Sion, sacred seat of Heaven,
To this unhallowed common walk have given.
Fond of impiety, behold, a shrine
They've dedicated to the god of wine;
And to excite our admiration more,
See 'bottled beer' recorded on the door,
But thou who answerest the poor man's prayer,
Protect the innocent and guard the fair,
And if thou canst forgive—forgive the mayor.

Though the name of 'Sion' is now forgotten, the terms 'The Mount' and 'Mount Gardens' are still in common use as applied to the locality.

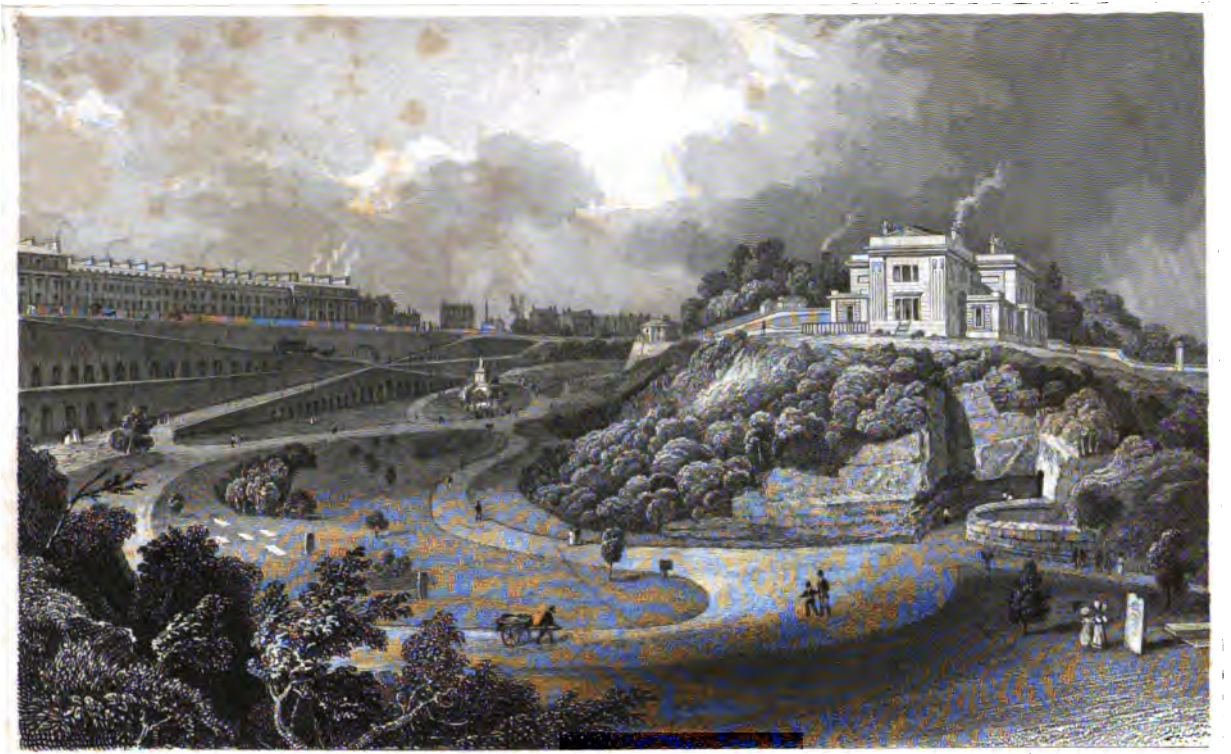
Formation of cemetery.

About 1825 the quarry had become exhausted, and remained a mere rough, neglected excavation of about ten acres extent. Schemes had been propounded for its conversion into a public garden or place of recreation, belonging, as it did, to the corporation; but soon after the opening of the Necropolis, in February 1825, a scheme was brought out for its appropriation as a cemetery in connection with the Established Church. A company was formed and shares issued, the corporation giving the land, and advancing the sum of 9,000*l*., and the ground was laid out much as at present. As a commercial speculation it has proved very unfortunate, but as a picturesque development of the natural features of the locality it deserves every praise.

Huskisson interred.

About a year and a half after the cemetery was opened, it received, amidst the sincere regret of the whole community, the mortal remains of the Right Hon. William Huskisson, M.P. for the borough, who met with his death, as is well known, by an accident, at the opening of the Liverpool and Manchester Railway, September 15, 1830. He lies interred in the centre of the cemetery, and over his remains a small circular temple has been erected, enclosing a marble statue of the deceased by John Gibson, R.A.

Monument.



Chapel.

The mortuary chapel is a neat specimen of a prostyle Greek Doric temple in antis. It is situated on a bold escarpment of rock formerly occupied by a windmill. This and the other buildings were designed by the late Mr. John Foster. The interior contains several good monuments.

The eastern side of the cemetery presents a nearly perpendicular face, pierced with several tiers of catacombs, or tombs hewn in the wall, with arched entrances, approached by inclined planes from below.

Chalybeate spring.

Within the cemetery, near the base of the wall just mentioned, a chalybeate spring issues from the rock. It was celebrated in the middle of the last century for its curative properties, and is still frequently resorted to.

The following lines are inscribed on the rock whence the spring issues:

> Christian reader, view in me,
> An emblem of true charity,
> Who freely what I have bestow,
> Though neither heard nor seen to flow;
> And I have full returns from Heaven
> For every cup of water given.

Charles Wye Williams.

I cannot quit the neighbourhood of St. James's Walk without devoting a few lines to the memory of a man who during a long life contributed much to the progress of commerce and the advancement of science. At a secluded house, called 'The Nook,' hidden from sight at the north-east angle of 'The Mount,' and enclosed within its own court and garden, long lived Charles Wye Williams, C.E. His father was the secretary of the Bank of Ireland, and he was born in Dublin in 1779. He commenced life as a barrister; but he early abandoned the legal profession, his tastes and capabilities lying in an entirely different direction. His first engineering operation was the erection of a linen mill in Ireland, in which he introduced some new processes of manufacture. In the year 1819, Mr. John Oldham, engineer to the Bank

CHAP. X.

Charles Wye Williams.

City of Dublin Company.

Steam to America.

Peninsular and Oriental Company.

of Ireland, having invented a patent feathering paddle for steam vessels, consulted Mr. Williams as to the best means of bringing it into notice. Mr. A. Manby, C.E., was also consulted about the machinery, and the result was the construction of the 'Aaron Manby' steamboat, with oscillating cylinders and feathering paddles. Its success as a seagoing vessel was so satisfactory that it led to the formation of a company for steam navigation between England and Ireland. This was established under an old Act of the Irish Parliament, with a capital of 50,000*l.*, under the firm of Charles Wye Williams & Co. The growth of the concern was so rapid that a large company was soon formed, called the 'City of Dublin Steam Packet Company;' Mr. Williams being the manager, and continuing to serve in that capacity until a few years before his death, when age and infirmity compelled him to retire. The success of the company was owing in great measure to Mr. Williams's energy and organising power.

He next turned his attention to steam communication with America, and in 1837, under his advice, the City of Dublin Company built the 'Royal William,' and purchased from Sir John Tobin the 'Great Liverpool,' both of which vessels made several voyages to New York. The result, however, was unfortunate. In the then state of steam machinery long sea voyages could not be attempted with profit, and the project was abandoned. Nothing daunted by this failure, Mr. Williams and his coadjutor, Mr. Francis Carleton, applied themselves to the carrying out of a scheme for steam navigation to the East, for which purpose the Peninsular and Oriental Company was formed. The success of this undertaking, which has been most brilliant, shows the value of sagacity and perseverance. There can be no doubt that the efforts of Messrs. Williams and Carleton in establishing this company led first to the construction of the Suez Railway, and afterwards to the formation of the Suez Canal, by which

the whole course of commerce with the East and Australia has been revolutionised, and the distance practically diminished more than one-half.

Steam boilers.

Mr. Williams's next experiments were directed to the economy of fuel in the generation of heat and steam, in which he was indefatigable for many years. In 1856 he received the gold medal of the Society of Arts from the hands of the Prince Consort, the president, for an essay, 'On the Prevention of Smoke;' and in the exhibition of steam-boilers at Newcastle he was awarded the prize of 500*l.*, which he presented to a popular institution.

In his laboratory at 'The Nook' he continued in his retirement the studies and experiments of his earlier years; and after retaining to the last his faculties unimpaired, he died, full of years and honours, on April 2, 1866, in the eighty-seventh year of his age.

CHAPTER XI.

DUKE STREET AND ITS NEIGHBOURHOOD.

CHAP. XI.

Duke Street.

We terminated our last chapter at St. James's Walk, forming the upper extremity of the long avenue of Duke Street. We will take this street as the centre and representative of the district we are about to explore; but for convenience we will commence at the lower end. Duke Street is in many respects one of the most noteworthy of our thoroughfares. For nearly a century it was the favourite residence of the higher class of merchants. It is identified with the names of most of the families who by their enterprise and sagacity raised the port from a petty haven for coasters to a world's emporium. Scenes both tragic and comic have here occupied the stage. The local Montagues and Capulets have here had their feuds. Romances of love and hate and jealousy and spite have diversified the moral atmosphere, enacted their little drama, and passed away; and now fashion and gaiety, wealth and revelry, have departed, and left no trace but the noble mansions once redolent of life and action, now being gradually devoted to baser uses—

Residents.

> And so from hour to hour, we ripe and ripe,
> And then from hour to hour, we rot and rot,
> And thereby hangs a tale.

Origin. A.D. 1725.

Duke Street had its origin early in the eighteenth century. In Chadwick's map of 1725 the street is shown,

but not named. A map was issued a few years ago stated to be taken from the original plan by John Eyes in 1725. In this Duke Street is shown with the name attached. The map, however, bears internal evidence of not being a faithful transcript of the original which it purports to reproduce. The name has evidently been supplied by a later hand. Hanover Street and Duke Street were called after the reigning dynasty; but in 1725 Hanover Street had not been named, and the only royal duke of that generation, William Augustus Duke of Cumberland, was a child four years of age, not yet endowed with a title. After the rebellion of 1745 and the battle of Culloden he became a popular personage, and it is to that period we are to relegate the naming of the street.

Duke of Cumberland.

Proceeding upwards, a range of warehouses will be noticed on the left-hand side, erected within the last few years. The site was previously occupied by a large mansion, the residence, towards the end of the century, of Mr. Richard Walker, of the firm of Watt & Walker, eminent West India merchants, who had their counting-house in Hanover Street, hard by. He was the nephew of Richard Watt, alluded to in chapter iii., a sort of provincial Whittington, who left Liverpool a poor lad and returned possessed of fabulous wealth. His partner, the second Richard Watt, a nephew of the first, resided in Gradwell Street, just behind Duke Street, 1790–6. He was the purchaser of the Speke estate, formerly the demesne of the Norris's, which still remains in the Watt family. From about 1806 to 1833 the house in Duke Street was the depôt and show-rooms of the Herculaneum Pottery Company, of which I shall have to say more hereafter. It was subsequently occupied as a barrack for soldiers, and, after several other vicissitudes, was finally removed and warehouses erected in its stead.

Richard Walker.

Richard Watt.

This site, with the land adjoining, in 1769 and for some years before and after, contained the residence and timber-yard of Mr. William Rathbone. The family of the Rath-

CHAP. XI.

Rathbone family.

William Rathbone.

bones have had a long and honourable connexion with the town, no less than seven William Rathbones in direct succession having acted their part in the drama of life in this community. Until the last generation they were connected with the Society of Friends, and took their share in the testimony borne by that earnest fraternity against slavery, war, and ecclesiastical exactions, and in the penalties arising therefrom. The late William Rathbone, who was gathered to his fathers in 1868, in a goodly and honourable old age, had been a conspicuous public character for many years. In early life he was attached to the band of Reformers in Liverpool who were before their time—the Roscoes, Croppers, Curries, Rushtons, and others, most of whom, like Moses, departed without entering the promised land of political and social reform. William Rathbone was more fortunate. After braving for many years the unpopularity—in this Conservative region—which attached to advanced views, he shared in the political triumphs of 1832. After the Municipal Reform Act of 1835 he became a prominent member of the town council, and served the office of mayor in 1837–8. But the spirit of political rancour was not yet exhausted. A few years afterwards the portrait of William Rathbone, painted during his mayoralty, was offered by his friends to the council, to take its place amongst the series of chief magistrates, and—was declined. A few years more, and a great change was wrought. Mr. Rathbone had retired from political and public life. The principles for which he struggled in his early years had become accomplished facts, acknowledged by all. Political differences were forgotten, and his generosity, public spirit, earnestness, and philanthropy had come home to men's hearts. And so it came to pass that when, on February 5, 1868, his remains were laid in the grave, it seemed as if the whole population turned out to do honour to his memory. A subscription was opened to provide a fitting memorial, and men of all political creeds eagerly rushed

to subscribe in honour of the man whose likeness a few short years before had been refused admittance into our municipal 'Walhalla.' So true is the scriptural saying: 'Our fathers killed the prophets, and we build their sepulchres.'[1]

Pothouse Lane. Pothouse Lane is so called from a pottery which formerly existed here. After the decline of the earthenware trade in Liverpool it was converted into a brewery, which long continued under the firm of Johnson & Co. A projecting house a few doors above Pothouse Lane was the residence of the Gildart family. James Gildart, sen., was mayor in 1750. He then resided in Castle Street, but afterwards removed to Duke Street. His son, James Gildart, jun., was mayor in 1786, residing in the same house.

Gildart.

Ladies' Walk. A little higher up the street, on the north-east side, commenced the Duke Street Walk, or Ladies' Walk, consisting of an avenue of trees extending upwards as far as what is now the corner of Colquitt Street, forming a beautiful and much-frequented promenade. This was in its full beauty about the year 1769, soon after which it began to be trenched upon for building. At first, however, the houses were not built to face Duke Street. The fronts were set to Wolstenholme Square, then considered the more fashionable locality, the gardens behind extending back to the Duke Street Walk. Within the last few years a solitary remnant or two of the trees forming the avenue were still remaining, enclosed within the curtilage of the houses in question, but they have all now disappeared.

York Street. York Street, leading south-west from Duke Street, was originally called Great George Street, and changed its name about the time of the elevation of Prince Edward Augustus, brother of George III., to the title of Duke of York. At the corner house resided Mr. Peter Ellames,

Peter Ellames.

[1] The portrait so unceremoniously rejected by the town council, was subsequently unanimously accepted, and now hangs on the wall of the council chamber.

CHAP. XI.

attorney-at-law, well known in his day, father of Mr. Pattison Ellames, who purchased the Allerton Hall estate from the representatives of the Hardman family. On the opposite side of York Street, in a large old-fashioned mansion, corner of Lydia Ann Street, Mr. Thomas Leyland opened his banking-house in 1806, after the separation from Roscoe & Co. He continued here until 1815, when the bank was removed to King Street. Mr. Henry Rawlinson, who represented the borough in Parliament from 1780 to 1784, also resided in York Street. Mr. Leyland resided in Duke Street, at No. 100, between York Street and Suffolk Street, from about 1790 to 1804, when he purchased the estate of Walton Hall and removed there.

Thomas Leyland.

Henry Rawlinson.

At the corner of Duke Street and Slater Street stands a neat-looking stone-fronted building, originally the Union News-room. This was erected in 1800, and was so called in commemoration of the Union with Ireland consummated in that year. The history of the institution exhibits in a striking point of view the changes which have taken place in the habits of the mercantile community during little more than half a century. At the present day, when the population of the town is sixfold its number in 1800, the idea of erecting a place of mercantile resort so far distant from the centre of business as the middle of Duke Street would be thought absurd. The tendency of the present day is to concentrate as much as possible all mercantile operations within a limited area round the Exchange. The hours of business are shorter and more hurried. The newspapers must be close at hand. The local daily paper is skimmed over in a few minutes, and even the 'Times' is in its main features anticipated by the telegram. The town is a sphere to do business in, to make money or—to lose it; but that done, the omnibus, the steamboat, the railway, whirl off their thousands to purer air and brighter skies, until the dawn of another day recalls the busy crowds to another struggle

Business hours.

Conduct of business.

in the battle of life. Far different was the case at the commencement of the century. The merchant or broker lived in the town and was of it. If the head of the firm resided in Bold Street, his office was in Wood Street immediately behind. If in Duke Street, his counting-house and warehouse would be in Parr Street or Henry Street. At the time of its erection the Union News-room stood in the centre of the aristocratic region of trade. The London morning papers arrived early the following morning, and the evening papers the following evening, thus suiting the *habitués* in their way to and from town, and especially the select circle inhabiting the region of Duke Street. The proximate cause of the erection was a disagreement respecting the selection of the plans submitted for the Lyceum, in Bold Street, which led to the secession of the dissidents, and the establishment of a separate institution. The building was designed by Mr. John Foster. The interior was well-proportioned and handsome. After enjoying a prosperous career for many years it began to decay with the change of the times, until at last it dwindled down into the resort of a few ancient *quidnuncs* who dwelt with affectionate remembrance on the days of its departed glory. The upper room was used for a variety of public purposes. At different periods it was occupied as the Academy of Art and Exhibition of pictures. For some years it was the home of the Mechanics' Institution until the erection of the present building in Mount Street. In 1852 it was sold to the corporation and occupied by the Free Public Library and Museum, then recently established. In 1862, on the opening of the new Library, the building was again disposed of and used for private purposes.

London papers.

Union News-room.

A few doors below the News-room, in a modest-looking dwelling, formerly numbered 32, was born Felicia Dorothea Browne, afterwards well known to fame as Mrs. Hemans.

Mrs. Hemans.

Her grandfather, Mr. Benedict Paul Wagner, though

CHAP. XI.

B. P. Wagner.

George Browne.

Poems.

bearing a German name and of a German Lutheran family, was an Italian by birth, and was for many years consul to the Venetian Republic. He belonged to the firm of Fahrer and Wagner, a German house established in Liverpool in 1753. After Mr. Fahrer's retirement from business, the firm became Wagner & Busch, Mr. Wagner residing at No. 9 Wolstenholme Square,[1] with an office behind fronting Duke Street. Mr. George Browne of Cork came to Liverpool about the time of the Irish Volunteering demonstration, and took up his residence in Duke Street a few doors above Mr. Wagner's office. This led to an acquaintance, which resulted in the marriage of Mr. Browne to Miss (Felicia Dorothea) Wagner. According to the memoir prefixed to her works, the poetess was born on September 25, 1793, but according to the 'Memorials' by Mr. H. F. Chorley, it was in the following year. In 1793 Mr. Browne, who had carried on an extensive business in Liverpool, stopped payment, bringing down many others in his fall. He afterwards retired to Canada, where he died.

In the year 1800, the family removed from Liverpool to Denbighshire. At fifteen years of age, Felicia Browne issued from the local press a volume of juvenile poems which gave promise of future eminence.[2] Her future history is well known, and it is unnecessary here to refer

[1] Two unmarried daughters of Mr. Wagner, Elizabeth and Ann, continued to reside in Wolstenholme Square until their death. The last survivor, Miss Ann, died in 1852, having lived in the same house about seventy-five years.

[2] The title is as follows: 'Poems by Felicia Dorothea Browne, Liverpool; printed by G. F. Harris for T. Cadell and W. Davies, Strand, London, 1808.' 4to. Pp. 111.

The printing is beautifully executed, with wood engravings in the frontispiece and in vignettes.

A short advertisement prefixed states that 'the following pieces are the genuine productions of a young lady, written between the ages of eight and thirteen years. . . . . .

'They owe their publication to the kind and condescending favour of the Right Honourable Viscountess Kirkwall.'

A list is given of more than 1,000 subscribers. Few young poets have made their *début* under more favourable auspices.

to it. In after life she returned for a time to the neighbourhood and resided in Wavertree from 1828 to 1830. In 1835 she departed this life n Dublin in the forty-second year of her age.

Mrs. Hemans's works.

The poetry of Mrs. Hemans, the genuine outpouring of a feeling and affectiomate heart, at one time enjoyed a high degree of public favour. It is possible that the tide may have ebbed rather too far in the opposite direction. It would be absurd to place her writings in the same rank with those of Wordsworth, Shelley, or Tennyson, but their purity of sentiment, intensity of feeling, harmonious versification, and elevation of thought will, it is probable, secure for them at least a distinguished position in the second rank of our English poesy. Amongst the daughters of Liverpool, few have left behind them a nobler character or brighter memories than Felicia Hemans.

John Sparling.

At the second house below York Street on the south-west side, resided Mr. John Sparling, high sheriff of the county in 1785 and mayor in 1790. He subsequently became the purchaser of the St. Domingo Estate, Everton, where he erected the magnificent classical mansion, now St. Edward's (R.C.) College.

Sir Joseph Birch.

A little higher up the street at a handsome double-fronted mansion, resided, towards the end of the last century, Mr., afterwards Sir Joseph Birch, Bart. He was an eminent merchant in the West India trade. He took a prominent part in politics on the Whig side and represented Nottingham in Parliament for some time. About 1803 he purchased from the Cases the estate of the Red Hazles, near Prescot, where the family have since resided. His son Sir Thomas Bernard Birch, represented Liverpool in Parliament from 1847 to 1852.

Sir William Barton.

The same house was subsequently occupied by Sir William Barton, Knt., mayor in 1815–6. He was a fine, bluff, old fellow, who had derived his money and his manners from the West Indies, which led occasionally to jokes at his expense.

CHAP. XI.

John Bridge Aspinall.

A little above Suffolk Street lived Mr. John Bridge Aspinall, mayor in 1803, the father of the late Rev. James Aspinall, and grandfather of Mr. J. B. Aspinall, recorder, and of Mr. Clarke Aspinall, the coroner of the borough. Nearly opposite, at the corner of Slater Street, resided Mr. John Gregson, banker and receiver-general of the land-tax, who filled the office of mayor in 1784.

John Bellingham.

A few doors above, on the same side of the street, one of the houses is memorable for having been the residence of the unfortunate John Bellingham, who was executed for the murder of the Prime Minister Spencer Percival in the lobby of the House of Commons on May 11, 1812. The circumstances have been often related, and have already been referred to. The man was a monomaniac, who had rambled about the world and met with misfortunes, arising principally from his own misconduct, which soured his mind, and impelled him to seek out a victim on whom to take vengeance for his fancied injuries. The Draconian legislation of that day dared not show mercy even to a madman who had been guilty of the death of a high functionary of State. The poor man's wife and family were much respected in Liverpool, and lived many years subsequently under an assumed name.

John Bolton.

Mounting still higher up the slope, we come to a double-fronted mansion formerly No. 84, on the south-west side, for many years the residence of Colonel John Bolton, a man deservedly of mark and note in his day. He was a native of Ulverstone, and was educated at the charity school of that place. At an early age he went out to the West Indies, and in the course of time accumulated considerable wealth. About 1789 he settled at Liverpool in the house in question.[1] He was a man of a generous and liberal spirit, unsparing of his means in any

[1] Mr. Aspinall in his 'Liverpool a Few Years Since,' states that this house was built by one of the Lake family. This is probably a mistake, as in 1790 Thomas Lake and Charles William Lake occupied distinct houses a few doors below Mr. Bolton's house.

cause which he thought worthy. He was an unswerving supporter of the Pitt Administration and of their successors. In 1803 he embodied and equipped at his own expense, and commanded a regiment of volunteers 600 strong. He was the intimate friend of George Canning during the whole of his career. During the elections from 1812 to 1820, the electors were usually addressed from the balcony of Colonel Bolton's house. It is said that his services to the Government were such that King George IV., when Regent, offered him any title he might choose to ask, but having no issue to succeed him, he declined the proffered honour. At his country seat of Storrs, beautifully situated on the banks of Windermere Lake, he dispensed a princely hospitality, especially delighting to entertain the celebrities of the day. In 1804 he was elected on the Common Council of the borough, but declined to serve, owing to the painful circumstances of the unfortunate duel with Major Brooks already related in chapter vi.

John Bolton.

At the corner of Duke Street and Kent Street, there formerly stood a noble mansion, erected in 1768 by Mr. Richard Kent, merchant. At the time of its erection and for many years subsequently, it had extensive gardens and grounds attached, reaching back to Pitt Street and including the site of St. Michael's Church. Mr. Kent was the representative, by female descent and inheritance, of the ancient family of the Lancelyns of Poulton Lancelyn, Cheshire, and of their successors the Greens; his father, Randle Kent of Knutsford, having married Catherine, the last heiress of the race. Richard Kent died in 1790 and was interred in St. Thomas's Church. One of his daughters married Lord Henry Murray, son of the Duke of Athol; another was married to John Blackburne, Esq. His only surviving son Joseph, succeeded to the Poulton Lancelyn estates, and in 1793 by royal licence assumed the name and arms of Green. Mrs. Elizabeth Kent continued to reside in Duke Street to nearly the

Richard Kent.

CHAP. XI.

end of the century. The house in Duke Street next passed into possession of the Bensons. Moses Benson was born in Lancashire in 1738, and early in life went out to the West Indies, where he amassed a handsome fortune. On his return to England, he purchased an estate at Lutwyche in Shropshire, but settled in Liverpool, having purchased the house in Duke Street. The counting-house was in Kent Street adjacent, where, in conjunction with his son Ralph, who resided a few doors lower down, he carried on an extensive business under the firm of Moses Benson & Son. He built and endowed St. James's Schools, St. James's Road, for 200 poor children. After his return to England with ample means, he wished to assume a coat of arms, and applied to the Herald's Office to make him a grant suitable to his circumstances and history. The grant was made as follows: Argent, a ship in full sail, Union ensign flying, all proper; and, on a chief wavy azure a dexter hand holding a sword erect argent, hilt or, bearing the scales of Justice, between two pine-apples erect of the second, leaved vert. Crest: upon a wreath argent and azure, a chesnut charger saddled and caparisoned. Those who are enthusiasts in the noble science of heraldry will perceive the allusions to his mercantile profession, his West Indian relations, his functions as justice of the peace and colonel of light horse. The motto 'Leges arma tenent, sanctas commercia leges.' Moses Benson died in 1806, and lies interred in St. James's churchyard. In the church there is a marble group to his memory, with the inscription 'Contemplate a good man's life, and look for his reward.'

Moses Benson.

Benson family.

His son, Ralph Benson, retired to the estate in Shropshire. He was elected M.P. for Stafford in 1812.

After passing through different hands, the lands round the house were gradually sold off for building purposes, the house was closed, and, after remaining empty and dilapidated for many years, was at length cleared away.

The large house immediately above was built in the

first quarter of the present century, about 1820–5. It was inhabited for some years by Mr. Cyrus Morrall. At the time of its erection the aristocratic bloom of the locality had begun to fade. The house was too large and grandiose for the neighbourhood. After being empty for some time, it was sold about 1850 to the corporation, and converted into the sanitary offices of the Health Committee. On part of the land at the corner of Grenville Street and Cornwallis Street, a handsome range of public baths and wash-houses has been erected. Subsequently a grant of a further portion was made for the erection of workshops for the outdoor blind. On the completion of the municipal offices in Dale Street in 1868, the building in Duke Street was abandoned, and subsequently sold to the Gas Company, who have erected on the land adjoining handsome offices.

Cyrus Morrall.

Public baths.

Gas offices.

In taking our leave of this goodly range of old-fashioned mansions, one or two things strike us as worthy of note. The first is the fact that nearly the whole of the occupants were connected with the West India trade, which was—'not to put too fine a point upon it'—simply the slave trade. This commerce, as it appeared to the eyes of the good people of Liverpool, was an extremely innocent and a very profitable occupation. The sugar, and molasses, and rum, with a few spices and fruit, which constituted the bulk of the returns, had nothing at all of a repulsive character in their aspect, and the hardware, clothing, and provisions which were exported were equally harmless. The man-stealing process, the burning of villages, the trains of manacled fugitives, the horrors of the barracoon, and of the middle passage, never obtruded themselves into the thoughts of the polite circles of Duke Street. Wealth increased, vast fortunes were made in a few years, and the town prospered. What more could be required? The Roscoes, Rathbones, Rushtons, Croppers, who rang the tocsin of alarm, and denounced the unrighteousness of the traffic,

General character.

CHAP. XI.

General character.

were looked upon as troublesome, meddling praters, who wished to undermine our glorious constitution in Church and State, and to destroy the trade of the port. Hence there grew up insensibly in the prevailing tone of thought and feeling in the town, a strong sentiment of Conservatism and dread of change, which has clung to us to the present day, and is likely to remain the characteristic of Liverpool political doctrine. When the channel has once been dug the waters continue to flow, though the denuding force may have been withdrawn.

Apart from this West India and African question, there was much in the Liverpool society of fifty to a hundred years ago worthy of commendation. Living in the town, near neighbours to each other, intercourse was free and unrestrained; conviviality was no doubt indulged in to a much greater extent than would be consistent with modern ideas; but generosity and liberality were almost unbounded, and charitable institutions were established with no niggard hand for almost every form of human misery.

Another illustration of the great change in the times is the fact that almost every merchant had his counting-house at his back door. Henry Street was lined with offices belonging to the merchants who resided in the houses in front. Colonel Bolton had his warehouse in Henry Street, behind his house, as was the case with many others. The hours of business were much longer. Attending 'Change was a much more solemn and important undertaking than at present; being, in fact, the great event of each day. The hours were strictly regulated, and the *habitués* unrelentingly rung off at the appointed time. In fact, the world of business moved more slowly, and, there is reason to believe, gathered up more in its diurnal revolutions than it has recently been able to do.

St. Mark's Church.

A little above Berry Street, on the north-east side of Duke Street, stands St. Mark's Church, erected in 1803.

St. Mark's Church.

It is a large plain brick building with no architectural pretensions. Plain as it is, it cost the large sum of 18,000*l.* Originally there was a tower at the west end, which, on account of real or supposed danger, was taken down about 1830. At the opening services of this church, a crowded congregation being present, the accidental overturning of a bench spread such a panic through the assembled multitude that a general stampede took place. Many were trampled down in the crowd, and received serious injuries. The church was not consecrated until 1815.

Reverend Richard Blacow.

The first incumbent was the Rev. Richard Blacow, A.M., who also held the incumbency of the West Derby parochial chapel. He retained the two livings for more than forty years, dying about 1847. He was in many respects a remarkable man. Eloquent in the pulpit, he attracted at one period very large congregations. He was very decided in his opinions, and not always very scrupulous in the expression of them. This propensity led him on more than one occasion into trouble. At one time he was prosecuted for a libel on a member of his congregation, and sentenced to six months' imprisonment. During the trial of Queen Caroline, in 1820, Mr. Blacow, who was what Dr. Johnson calls 'a good hater,' took a very decided part against the unfortunate queen. I have referred in a former part of this work to the criminal prosecution instituted against him, in which he was found guilty and sentenced to six months' imprisonment, and a fine of 100*l.* He was not the man quietly to submit to inflictions of this kind. On both occasions he rushed into print, and published his own statements and defence, written in a style of bitterness which is now happily all but extinct.[1] In the latter of these publications, Mr.

[1] 'A statement of the circumstances of the Prosecution of the King *v.* Blacow for a libel, Liverpool, 1813.'

'The Defence of the Rev. R. Blacow, A.M., on a Criminal Information for a Libel against the Queen, London, 1822.'

CHAP. XI.

Brougham, Sir Francis Burdett, Alderman Wood, and the Whigs and Radicals generally, are abused in language of a vigour and force which are not often met with outside the walls of Billingsgate.

Having completed our survey of Duke Street, let us now glance at the lateral streets on the north-east side.

Wolstenholme family.

Gradwell Street and Wolstenholme Square were originally laid out for first-class residences. The land belonged to the Wolstenholme family, after whom both the street and square were first named. When or why the name of Wolstenholme Street was altered to Gradwell Street, I have not been able to ascertain. This square displayed the first attempt at an enclosed garden, though

Square.

this was not done until many years after the square was formed. The quaint oval enclosure, with its shrubs and verdure, presented a little oasis in the midst of the desert of warehouses and workshops, and it was to be regretted that public convenience required its removal. The houses on the south-west side had gardens behind abutting upon the Ladies' Walk in Duke Street. By the time this square had been half completed, fashion began to change. Duke Street presented more attractions. The demands of commerce required smaller houses, and drew up from Hanover Street applicants for manufactories and cooperages, which occupied the vacant spaces, and left the square a half-completed fossilised remnant of the olden time. Several of the houses have been since pulled down, and ware-

Parr Street.

houses erected on the site. Parr Street was checked in its growth in a similar way. The gardens belonging to the houses in Duke Street, abutting on Parr Street, have become gradually covered with dense masses of cottages and courts, with warehouses on the opposite side.

Seel Street.

Seel Street takes its name from Thomas Seel, Esq., whose mansion in Hanover Street was subsequently occupied as the Branch Bank of England. Attached to this house was a large and beautifully laid-out garden and pleasure-ground, behind which was a field extending up

Seel Street, beyond the Catholic Chapel. This remained undisturbed until about 1790, when Seel Street was cut through and the land laid out for building. The building plots were filled up by very slow degrees, much of the land having remained to a recent period occupied by timber-yards and open spaces. St. Peter's Catholic Chapel was erected in 1792, long before the revival of the mediæval style applied to such structures. It is a plain unpretending edifice without any special character.

St. Peter's Roman Catholic Church.

A little above Colquitt Street, on the north-west side of Seel Street, stands one of the Jewish Synagogues, erected in 1807 from the designs of Mr. Thomas Harrison, of Chester. The front, consisting of four attached Ionic columns supporting an entablature and pediment, is neat, but is much injured in its effect by the meanness of the flanks, which consist simply of plain rough brickwork.

Jews' synagogue.

Fleet Street was laid out about the middle of last century. In 1769 it contained two large breweries, Mr. Unsworth's and Mr. Crosbie's. The remainder of the street was principally gardens with summer-houses attached. It has since become available for manufactories and occupations requiring a considerable area of land at a moderate cost.

Fleet Street.

Wood Street is of more ancient date, being shown as a rural lane in the maps of 1785. It has always remained subordinate to Bold Street, forming the back entrance to the shops fronting thereto.

Wood Street.

About the middle of the last century Mr. John Colquitt was collector of customs for the port. He resided in Hanover Street, and was possessed of lands adjoining Mr. Seel's, already alluded to, and extending in a south-easterly direction across the present Colquitt Street as far as Berry Street. Slater Street was cut through about 1790, Colquitt Street about 1800. The houses in this street are commodious and respectable, and long kept up their aristocratic prestige. A large pool of water for-

Colquitt Street.

CHAP. XI.

merly existed, extending along the south-east side of Colquitt Street from Seel Street to Wood Street. The premises now occupied as the Royal Institution were erected by Mr. Thomas Parr about 1799. They offer one of the best examples extant of the establishment of a first-class Liverpool merchant of the period.[1] In 1817 the destiny of this building was changed:

Royal Institution.

I have described in the historical portion the steps taken in 1813 for the establishment of an institution 'to promote the increase and diffusion of literature, science, and the arts.' A considerable time elapsed before the project was carried out, but eventually the building now before us was purchased, enlarged, and altered to suit its new purposes. The institution was opened on November 25, 1817, when an address was delivered by Mr. Roscoe, 'On the origin and vicissitudes of literature, science, and art, and their influence on the present state of society.' This discourse was afterwards published.

Schools.

The school buildings on the opposite side are commodious. The front to Seel Street has a Greek Doric portico.

Picture Gallery.

The picture gallery contains a very interesting historical collection, along with a number of diploma pictures of the members of the Liverpool Academy of Art.

Roscoe's statue.

There is also a fine memorial statue of Roscoe, by Sir Francis Chantrey. The artist has entered upon his subject *con amore*, and has done full justice to the subject; but the contracted space of the small apartment in which it is displayed prevents its beauty from being appreciated. There are few lovers of art who are at all aware that such a fine work is in existence.

Berry Street.

We will now proceed to Berry Street. In 1769 this was a narrow rural road, with a rope-walk running along one side. A little to the north of Knight Street there was a large quadrangle, enclosed with a range of buildings called Mr. Matthew Stronge's Pitch House. Matthew Stronge was mayor in 1768, having his residence in

[1] *Vide supra*, p. 160.

Paradise Street. He was also corporation treasurer. These premises were subsequently purchased by the corporation Waterworks Company, established in 1800, and constituted their head-quarters. Deep wells were sunk and steam-power applied, which produced a large supply of water for many years. Other pumping-stations, however, were found more productive, and about 1830 the property in Berry Street was sold and the site converted into shops and dwellings.

Waterworks.

Before 1785 the street was formed, but down to the beginning of the present century very few buildings had been erected to the front. It was at first called Colquitt Street, from Mr. John Colquitt, the town clerk, who resided in Wood Street, and who owned the land between Wood Street and Seel Street; but when the present Colquitt Street was formed the name was transferred, and the original Colquitt Street altered to Berry Street, so called from Mr. Henry Berry, who resided at the corner of Duke Street and Berry Street.

About 1798 a range of buildings of a somewhat imposing appearance was erected on the west side of Berry Street, extending from Wood Street to Fleet Street. They were built by Mr. John Walmsley, marble mason. The wings were faced with pediments and pilasters, and the centre set back, with an open quadrangle, in which the business was carried on. After the death of the proprietor, about 1812, the buildings were altered and shops erected to the front. The quadrangle and workshops were converted into the coach factory of Mr. George Bennion (afterwards Messrs. Bennion & Healey). Some few remains of the original decorated structure may be traced, much mutilated, in the front to Berry Street. Mr. Walmsley was a man of considerable taste. He was the architect of the Octagon Chapel, in Paradise Street, now converted into the Coliseum, and concealed behind the buildings erected in front. His son, Sir Joshua Walmsley, for many years acted a conspicuous part in the town's

Walmsley.

CHAP. XI.

affairs. He filled the office of chief magistrate in 1839–40, and was knighted on the occasion of the Queen's marriage, during his year of office. In 1841 he unsuccessfully contested the representation of the borough against Lord Sandon and Mr. Creswell. He subsequently represented Leicester in Parliament for some years. He died in 1871.

Knight Street.

Knight Street is called after the proprietor of the land in the locality, and was laid out about 1785. In the map of 1796 it is shown as built up on both sides as far as Roscoe Street.

Western district.

The next section to which we will turn our attention is the district lying between Duke Street and Park Lane, to a small portion of which I have already slightly adverted.

After the opening of the Old Dock, in 1721, the town began rapidly to extend southward. In Chadwick's map of 1725 the only buildings shown south of Hanover Street are the lower part of Mersey Street as far as Liver Street, and one side of Park Lane nearly to the same extent. Within the succeeding forty years a southern district had been created, almost as large as the previously existing town. The names of the streets indicate the circumstances of the times. Park Lane was the old road leading to the royal park of Toxteth. Argyle Street commemorates the great statesman John, Duke of Argyll, celebrated by Scott in 'The Heart of Mid-Lothian.' Frederick Street is named after Frederick, Prince of Wales, father of George III. Cleveland Square takes its name from a family once very prominent in Liverpool. Cleveland Square was lined by respectable houses and surrounded by a row of elm-trees, some of which remained down to about forty years ago. The area of the square has been appropriated for many years as a public market, and the houses round converted into shops and taverns.

Park Lane.

Cleveland Square.

St. Thomas's Church.

Near by stands St. Thomas's Church, on the east side of Park Lane, erected in the year 1750. The original design was rather of a pleasing character, consisting of a

rustic basement, supporting a range of coupled Ionic pilasters, with semicircular-headed windows between, carrying a balustraded entablature. The east end has a semicircular apse. The beauty of the structure, however, lay in the tower and spire, which were very effective in their outline, broad and massive in the substructure, with sufficient richness in the middle portion to attract the eye, which was carried upward by the converging lines of the spire, rising to the height of 240 feet. Whether this slender *flèche* was defective in construction it would be hard to say. It was, however, peculiarly unfortunate. On Tuesday, March 15, 1757, about 42 feet of the upper portion was blown down, breaking through the roof and tearing down the west galleries. On being rebuilt it was reduced in height 18 feet. On July 9, 1783, the spire was struck by lightning, and considerably injured. In the year 1822 great alarm was caused by the perceptible vibratory motion which it began to assume. On a careful survey it was found that the stone, being of a yellow, porous description, had become so decayed as to render necessary the destruction of the spire, which was accordingly taken down, much to the injury of the picturesque appearance of this part of the town. The structure erected in its place is a poor abortion of a belfry, altogether unworthy of the predecessor which it has displaced.

St. Thomas's Church.

A few hundred yards above St. Thomas's Church, on the east side of Upper Frederick Street, a little north of Kent Street, there exists, at the back of the houses, an old Jewish cemetery, of course no longer used, but still containing monuments of departed worthies of the Hebrew race. It is not of very ancient date, having been constructed about 1794, when the synagogue was removed from Cumberland Street, and having continued to be used until the synagogue in Seel Street was erected, about 1807. There is nothing about it either picturesque or antique, but it illustrates in a striking manner the fugitive career

Jewish Cemetery.

CHAP. XI.

and indomitable pertinacity of the chosen people of Israel.

Glass works.

One of the first buildings erected on the south side of the Old Dock was a glass manufactory, which stood at the corner of Argyle and Hanover Streets, and was very conspicuous by its lofty cone. It is shown in the map of 1725, and fills a part of the foreground in two views of that period which are given by Herdman. I have already alluded to it in chapter vii.

Pitt Street.

Pitt Street took its name from the great commoner afterwards Earl of Chatham, who was beginning to attract public attention about 1740, when the street was commenced.

Methodist Chapel.

The Methodist Chapel, in Pitt Street, is the original seat of the followers of John Wesley in Liverpool. The first structure was erected in 1750, and enlarged in 1765. In 1803 the chapel was rebuilt and greatly extended.

Fawcett's foundry.

A little distance to the eastward, covering the block surrounded by Lydia Ann, Gilbert, York, and Suffolk Streets, stands the Phœnix Foundry, the world-renowned engine factory of Messrs. Fawcett, Preston & Co. The history of this concern presents many points of interest. It was originally an offshoot from the great ironworks of Coalbrookdale, and was commenced under the management of George Perry.

George Perry.

This gentleman, born in 1719, a native of Somersetshire, was descended from an old Devonshire family, one of whose members, Micaiah Perry, was Lord Mayor of London in 1747, and represented the City in Parliament. The name Micaiah indicates the Puritan proclivities which the family always maintained. George Perry was sent to college, with a view to the ministry, but his inclinations led him rather in the direction of science and engineering. He was transferred to the Coalbrookdale Iron Works, then in full development under the enterprising brothers John and William Wilkinson, and Abraham Darby, whose notice he attracted by his intelligence and ability. While

at Coalbrookdale he carried out some successful experiments in boring cannon from the solid. In 1758 he contributed an article to the 'Gentleman's Magazine,' in which he proposed a system of 'inland water conveyance from London to Gloucester, Worcester, and Bristol, and from Liverpool to Hull,' which plan in its general features was afterwards carried out by others. Soon after this date the foundry in York Street was established, and the management deputed to George Perry. He married Lydia Ann, the daughter of Philip Lacroix, of an old Huguenot family, from whom Lydia Ann Street takes its name. George Perry.

The Rathbone family appear to have had some connection with the foundry in its early development. In 'Williamson's Advertiser' of July 28, 1768, we read that 'On Tuesday was married, at Coalbrookdale, Mr. Joseph Rathbone, of this place, merchant, to Miss Molly Darby, daughter of the late Mr. Abraham Darby, an eminent ironmaster; and on Thursday they, accompanied by many friends, arrived at his house in Duke Street. Those who know Mr. Rathbone need not be told that with the means and power he has all the disposition to make the most delicate woman happy; and though we have not the pleasure to know Mrs. Rathbone, we conclude, from his taste and discernment, that she is a valuable acquisition to Liverpool.' In 1781 Mr. Joseph Rathbone was residing in York Street, adjacent to the foundry. Rathbone.

Mr. George Perry, during his short career in Liverpool, displayed extraordinary activity in a variety of pursuits, to which he brought a cultivated mind and extensive attainments. He was the promoter of every useful institution, amongst others of the Liverpool Library, then in its nascent state. He made collections for a history of Liverpool, which were worked up after his decease by his friend, Dr. Enfield. The map of the town which he published in 1769, and that of the environs, George Perry.

CHAP XI.

attached to Enfield's History, in 1773, are models of accuracy and clearness.

George Perry.

In 1763 his elder brother, William, died, and was buried in the graveyard of the ancient chapel, Toxteth Park, where a cast-iron monumental slab records his name, with the inscription, 'Frater mœrens posuit.' George Perry died February 3, 1771, aged 52, and was interred in the same chapel, where a mural monument records his worth. In the preface to the 'History of Liverpool' Dr. Enfield regrets his premature decease, quoting the words of Pliny: 'Mihi videtur acerba semper et immatura mors eorum, qui immortale aliquid parant.'

I venture to insert the following short poem from the pen of Mr. Perry. It is given in the introduction to Enfield's History. The poetry is by no means despicable; but, apart from that, the foresight of the future and the vision of the coming greatness of the port are remarkable:—

THE PROPHECY OF COMMERCE.

When Commerce, ranging o'er her wide domain,
Saw Leverpolia near the briny deep;
Pondering her future fate and rising fame,
She thus address'd the Naiad of the flood:
'O Mersey! fairest of my numerous train,
Pleased, I behold, through Time's perspective glass,
Thy banks adorned with Lerpool's rising towers!
A naval forest crowds her spacious docks,
And o'er th' adjacent plain her streets extend:
Borne on the surface of the swelling tide,
Vessels from every port and every clime,
Or ride in state, or cut their yielding way.
Whilst thou Merseia, from the lofty hills,
Pouring thy plenteous and propitious stream,
Shalt join the tradeful Irwell; flowing on
To meet thy sister Weaver's ample flood,
Fraught with the wealth of Cestria's fertile plains.'
But O! when prosperous days and gay success
Invite luxurious ease and baneful pride,
May she be warned by the disastrous fall
Of Tyrus and of Carthage, famed of old!

For thus the charter of her glory runs,
And this the tenure of her rising state:
'So long as frugal industry prevails,
And punctual honour guides her virtuous sons;
So long as innocence and modest worth
Enhance the native beauties of the fair;
So long shall Leverpolia's wealth increase,
Her stately structures, and extensive trade.
Still, in the bosom of her crowded port,
Receive the tribute of each foreign clime;
To every realm unfurl her swelling sails,
And be th' emporium of the western world.'

George Perry.

Mr. Perry left a son, also named George, who practised as an architect. He published a work on conchology of considerable value, also several views in aquatint of the Town-hall, St. George's Church, and Castle Street after the improvements in 1786.

I have no accurate means of information, but I believe that after Perry's decease the concern was carried on by Mr. Joseph Rathbone. Before 1790 the foundry passed into the hands of Mr. William Fawcett, a nephew of Mr. Rathbone, by whom it was carried on for more than half a century, at first under the firm of Fawcett & Burrows, and subsequently under that of Fawcett & Prestons. Mr. Fawcett was a man of remarkable enterprise and of skill as a mechanical engineer. Every improvement in the steam-engine and in the machinery to which it supplied power was eagerly sought out and adopted, whilst the excellence of the workmanship contributed to extend the business and reputation of the firm.

William Fawcett.

For fifty years Mr. Fawcett, who never married, resided on the premises in Lydia Ann Street, his windows overlooking the works, where his affections were centred, and to which his heart yearned, and from hence he was gathered to his fathers about the year 1846. The concern is still carried on under the same designation, and a more honourable one it could not have. Mr. Fawcett was an active, benevolent man. He assisted in the formation of

CHAP. XI.

the Mechanics' Institution, and for many years took a prominent part in its management.

Kent Square.

Kent Square was formed about 1783. It was first named Surrey Court, and is so called in the map of 1785. Before 1796 it had assumed its present appellation, probably from its contiguity to Kent Street. Like many other similar attempts in Liverpool, it was never completed. A few good houses were built; and in course of time, the remainder of the land not being taken up, was converted into cooperages and yards.

St. Michael's Church.

We now approach what may fairly be considered one of the most showy-looking ecclesiastical buildings in Liverpool—St. Michael's Church. The site on which it stands formed part of the pleasure-grounds of Mr. Kent's house, Duke Street, which was intersected by streets about 1800. The church was commenced by the parish under an Act 54 Geo. III. c. 3, the first stone having been laid in June 1816. After expending about 35,000*l.* the parish enthusiasm began to abate, and the works were stopped. In 1823 an arrangement was come to with the corporation, who at that period, being in possession of almost unlimited funds, without any responsibility, occasionally acted as the good fairy in the nursery tale. This agreement, which was sanctioned by an Act 4 Geo. IV. c. 89, made over the patronage to the corporation, on condition of their completing the church, which was done, at a further expense of 10,267*l.* 10*s.* 6*d.*

Although the design cannot, perhaps, lay much claim to originality, the portico and steeple being palpably modelled, as to their general principle, on the Church of St. Martin's-in-the-Fields of the metropolis, yet the building as a whole is noble and effective. The portico, being carried round the flanks of the tower, produces considerable boldness and depth of shadow. The steeple, though characterised by the defect of nearly all classical campanili—that of the vertical lines being stopped by the horizontal ones—has its pyramidal form well preserved. The eye

CHAP. XI.

is not pained by any exaggeration of particular parts, giving an appearance of weakness and want of proportion to the structure. To these negative merits may be added a general propriety and agreeableness in the detail of the component parts, forming a whole of a pleasing character. The body of the church is hardly in keeping with the west front, being a plain repetition of round-headed windows, crowned by an entablature. The situation is all that could be desired for a place of worship, being a large quadrangular area, surrounded by open streets. It is much to be regretted that, with such a fine opportunity for display, the advantage should have been thrown away by bringing the west front almost close up to the street, rendering a good front view almost impossible.

St. Michael's Church.

At the beginning of the present century the district between Kent Street and Great George Street, north and south, and between Duke Street and St. James's Street, east and west, was nearly all open ground. The names of the streets sufficiently indicate the stirring period in its history through which the nation was then passing. It was a time of glorious naval successes. The victories of the Nile, of Camperdown, of Cape St. Vincent, were fresh in the memory, and we find their heroes commemorated in the streets of Cornwallis, Nelson, St. Vincent, and Duncan. The statesmen Pitt and Grenville attach their names to the cross-streets; and in the centre Great George Square perpetuates the sense of loyalty which pervaded the nation. Before the lapse of the first quarter of the present century nearly the whole district was covered with buildings. The houses in Great George Square were commenced on a high-class scale; but, as I have had more than one occasion to notice, these great expectations too often terminated in disappointment. The scale could not be maintained; and after lying idle for many years, the square had to be completed by houses of an inferior description.

Names of streets.

Great George Square.

The quarter of which I am now treating does not contain many public buildings of a very noteworthy character.

CHAP. XI.

Congregational Chapel.

One of the principal is Great George Street Congregational Chapel. In chapter x. I have already related the history of Newington Chapel, and the brilliant but transient career of the celebrated Thomas Spencer. Great George Street Chapel was in the course of erection for him at the time of his decease, the foundation-stone having been laid by him in April 1811. The choice of a successor fell upon the Rev. Thomas (afterwards Dr.) Raffles, who for nearly half a century maintained a position of popularity as a preacher and respect as a public man which very few have enjoyed. In 1861 he resigned his charge, and on August 18, 1863, he entered into his rest, and was interred at the Necropolis on the 24th. Such a funeral has rarely been witnessed in the town of Liverpool. The shops along the line of procession were closed, the bells of the churches rang muffled peals; the mayor and magistrates and principal inhabitants joined in the procession, which was lined along the route by 50,000 persons.

Dr. Raffles.

First chapel.

The original chapel on this site was opened in 1812. It was a large brick building, with some pretence to design, having a bold pediment on the front, and a low attached portico, with three interspaces of coupled Ionic columns covering the entrances. This building was destroyed by a fire, occasioned by overheating the stoves, on February 19, 1840. The new building was commenced in July of the same year from designs by Mr. Joseph Franklin, and was reopened in October 1841. The interior is spacious and commodious, giving seat room to about 2,000 persons. The lecture-room model on which this chapel is constructed, with large galleries and hollow ceiling, loses somewhat of architectural effect when compared with the mediæval model affected at the present time, but in its acoustical properties and general convenience, it certainly bears the palm. The exterior of the building has still less of the ecclesiastical character. It displays a classical order carried the full height, with a semicircular porch with attached columns carrying a

Fire.

Rebuilt.

lantern crowned with a cupola. The general effect is pleasing, but the result would have been more satisfactory if the lantern and cupola had been more elevated.

Church of St. Vincent de Paul.

At the corner of St. James's Street and Hardy Street (formerly St. Vincent Street) stands the Roman Catholic church of St. Vincent de Paul, a handsome Gothic structure designed by Mr. E. Welby Pugin. It possesses a noble west window and an elegant belfry crowning the gable. The interior contains some fine sculpture in the altar screen and reredos. The foundation-stone of the structure was laid by Bishop Goss on April 8, 1856, and the church was opened on August 26, 1857.

Hinrichson tragedy.

In this immediate neighbourhood there occurred, in the year 1849, one of the most frightful tragedies in the history of crime. Captain John Henry Hinrichson, master of a vessel sailing out of the port, in the early part of that year came to reside at No. 29, Leveson Street (originally Grenville Street), a few doors from Great George Street. He went to sea, leaving in the house his wife, a very accomplished young lady, aged twenty-nine, two children, a boy and a girl, aged five and three years, and a maid-servant, Mary Parr. The house being larger than the family required, Mrs. Hinrichson put up a bill in the window advertising apartments to be let. On Tuesday, March 27, a young man of decent appearance applied to see the apartments, and after being shown through them agreed to the terms, and slept there that night. The next day, Wednesday, he went out in the forenoon, and according to evidence subsequently obtained, and the death-bed testimony of the maid-servant, he engaged a boy out of the street to call at the house after he had entered and deliver a letter addressed to John Gleeson Wilson. At this time Mrs. Hinrichson had gone out to make her domestic purchases. When the letter was delivered, Wilson was in the front parlour, which looked on the street, where the maid-servant came to speak to him. He took up the fire-irons, and after

CHAP. XI.

Hinrichson tragedy.

some casual observation, made a sudden attack on the woman and beat in her skull, leaving her senseless. He next attacked the elder child, whom he soon despatched. The young infant made its escape into the cellar where it was followed by the murderer, killed and thrown into the coal-cellar. He then returned up-stairs and quietly waited for the arrival of Mrs. Hinrichson, for whom he opened the first door, and as she was entering the parlour, struck her down, and continued his blows until life was extinct. He then ransacked the house carrying off whatever plate and valuables he could lay his hands on. A very short time elapsed before a butcher's boy knocking at the door and receiving no answer, peered through the parlour window and saw three bodies weltering in their blood. He gave the alarm, the window was forced and the house entered, but the murderer had made his escape. The officers of justice were soon on his track. He was taken into custody and tried at the assizes on August 28. During his imprisonment and trial, he displayed the most brutal indifference to his crime, and ferocity of disposition. His whole conduct and bearing more resembled that of a demon than of a being endowed with human sympathies. He was executed at Kirkdale on September 15. The name of the street had become so notorious by the crime, that it was changed back to its original appellation of Grenville Street.

Great George Street.

Great George Street is in the line of a rural lane which led to the Royal Park of Toxteth. Before 1785 it had been laid out as a street for building, but very few erections were made until the end of the century, by which time a number of houses had been constructed on the east side. It is said that many of these houses remained empty, owing to badness of trade; but that the breaking out of the rebellion in Ireland, causing many respectable families to fly to England, led to such a demand as speedily filled them all. Washington Street takes its name from the great American Liberator. Nile Street

Great George Street.

was laid out soon after the battle of the Nile; Rathbone Street was so called from the Rathbone family, who were owners of the land through which it was carried. There was formerly a fine quarry of freestone of excellent colour and quality on the east side of this street. The columns in front of the Town-hall each in one piece, and the shafts of the porticoes of the Old Exchange were here procured.

The west side of Great George Street was not built on until some years after the east side. During the latter part of the last, and the beginning of the present century, the open fields between this and St. James Street were the favourite exercising ground of the volunteers of the day. Here were celebrated the rejoicings over the victory of the Nile, which were prolonged until late in the evening, the *feux de joie* illuminating the darkness. The last display of the kind took place on the occasion of the victory at Copenhagen in 1801. Soon after that time, the erection of buildings prevented any further similar exhibitions.

St. James's Market.

In 1827 St. James's Market was erected on the east side of Great George Street, the market having previously been held in the open place adjoining.

The land behind Great George Street fronting St. James's Road remained for many years unbuilt on. Moses Benson, in 1803, erected St. James's Day Schools at an expense of 652*l.* The remainder of the land was not covered until between 1830 and 1840.

Schools.

I will conclude this chapter with a few notices of the district west of Park Lane and St. James's Street; we will commence as before at the north end where building was first developed.

Docks.

The Old Dock was opened in 1721, and the Salthouse (then the New South) Dock in 1753. The ideas of commercial accommodation at that period seem to have been somewhat singular. Water to float the ships was provided, but the necessity for quay space was ignored,

CHAP. XI.

Crowded buildings.

and houses were permitted round the dock sides leaving a mere narrow avenue between them and the water. In this way the space between the two docks was speedily covered with a dense mass of houses, constituting Bridge Street, Bromfield Street, Darwin Street, &c. These houses, at first respectable, became in the course of time the lowest haunts of vice and profligacy, in connection with the seamen frequenting the docks. In the days of the iniquitous system of the impressment of seamen, the sailors often hid themselves in the slums of this locality. Here they were ferretted out by the ruffians who constituted the pressgang, and conflicts sometimes took place, not unfrequently terminating in bloodshed. On these occasions the seamen from the docks rushed to the aid of their comrades. Windows were smashed, doors torn from their hinges, and the wretched women who constituted the bulk of the inhabitants, whichever side came off victorious, were sure to suffer. About 1826, these dens of wretchedness and vice were swept away, and the space cleared for the dock quays.

Riots.

Salt works.

One of the first erections on what was then the south shore, now the east side of Wapping, was the salt work belonging to the Blackburnes of Orford Hall, near Warrington, now of Hale. I have not been able to ascertain the date of its construction, but it was in existence in 1725 as indicated by the map of that year. The rock salt was brought down the river in barges, or 'flats,' as they are locally termed, converted into brine and evaporated on the spot. At that time the works stood on the bank of the river, the barges discharging and shipping directly therefrom. When the Salthouse Dock was made, this direct communication was interfered with. These works, which extended from Salthouse Lane to Campbell Street, and back from Wapping to Hurst Street, continued in operation for nearly a century, having been removed about 1798. They were then transferred to Garston on the margin of the river, where they con-

tinued down to a very recent period, having been removed to make way for the Garston Docks. The memory of them in Liverpool is perpetuated in the names of Salthouse Lane and Orford Street.

Ship-building.

After the construction of the Salthouse Dock, this quarter of the town became the busy centre of shipbuilding industry. The land gained out of the river on the west side of the Salthouse Dock and the river beach along the shore to the south, were laid out in shipwrights' yards. During the twenty-three years between 1758 and 1781, many noble ships for the Royal Navy were constructed in these establishments. The first was the frigate 'Venus,' launched from a yard on the west side of Barter Street in 1758. The 'Kent,' East Indiaman, of 1,100 tons—an enormous size in those days for a merchant vessel—was built by Mr. Peter Baker (afterwards Baker and Dawson) in 1773. From the same yard were launched, in 1778, the 'Penelope,' 28 guns; in 1780, the 'Adamant,' of 50 guns; in 1781, the 'Assistance,' 50 guns; and the 'Ariel,' 16 guns. In Mr. John Fisher's yard, Cornhill, were constructed, in 1777, the 'Harpy,' 20 guns; in 1779, the 'Ulysses,' 44 guns; in 1780, the 'Hyæna,' of 24 guns, and the 'Alligator,' of 16; in 1781, the 'Racehorse,' of 16; in 1782, the 'Grampus,' of 58. Messrs. Rogers and Smallshaw built, in 1780, the 'Nemesis,' of 28 guns. Mr. Samuel Fearon built, in 1781, the 'Ceres,' of 36 guns. Mr. John Sutton built, in 1781, the 'Success,' 32 guns.

Many of these noble vessels, true 'Hearts of Oak,' did good service in the glorious naval contests of the latter part of the last century. The construction of the King's Dock caused the temporary removal of several of these building establishments, for which space was subsequently provided on the west side of the Queen's Dock. The yards in Cornhill, west side of the Salthouse Dock, continued in active operation until the construction of the Albert Dock (opened in 1846).

CHAP. XI.

Improvements.

Under the authority of an Act of Parliament, obtained in 1859, for Dock Improvements, a large mass of streets and buildings, east of the Salthouse Dock and Wapping, extending from the Custom-house to the Wapping Railway Station, was swept away, and the present line of Wapping was formed. Of the docks themselves I have already spoken.

Wapping district.

In 1769, the land to the west of Park Lane, as far south as Mason Street, had become pretty well covered with buildings, though a good deal of open land in gardens still existed behind the houses. A windmill stood near the corner of Campbell Street and Wapping, and a glass manufactory had recently been built between Campbell and Garden Streets. A tavern and bowling-green stood south of Garden Street, beyond which southwards were fields and gardens. Soon after the middle of the century several ropewalks were established, extending from Park Lane to the road along the beach (now Wapping). Some of these continued down to a very recent period.

The names of the streets may be identified with the leading men of the time, who 'fretted and strutted their little hour' on the stage of Liverpool life. Pownall Street took its name from Mr. William Pownall, merchant, mayor in 1767, who resided at the corner of Liver and Pownall Streets. Shaw's Alley commemorates Alderman Thomas Shaw, mayor in 1747. Grayson Street took its name from an enterprising ship-builder of the day, whose descendants have continued in the same honourable occupation to the present time. Campbell Street owes its designation to Mr. George Campbell, sugar-baker, mayor in 1763.

St. James's Street.

After the erection of St. James's Church, in 1774, the prolongation of Park Lane took the name of St. James's Street, but continued to be very sparsely built on down to the end of the century. As the docks extended southward, streets and buildings followed '*pari passu*.' Spar-

ling Street was laid out about 1780, and took its name from John Sparling, mayor in 1770, who resided in Paradise Street, and afterwards in Duke Street. Crosbie Street is the site of the ropery of Messrs. Crosbies and Siddalls. James Crosbie filled the office of mayor in 1763, John Crosbie in 1765, William Crosbie in 1776, and William Crosbie, jun., in 1779. The adjoining land belonged to the Blundells, an old and influential family in Liverpool, who are commemorated in the name of the street. Many of them have filled the civic chair during the course of the eighteenth century. Jonathan Blundell was senior bailiff in 1764. Henry Blundell—who afterwards took the additional name of Hollinshead—was mayor in 1791, and again in 1793. Bridgwater Street points to the completion of the Duke of Bridgwater's great commercial enterprise connecting Liverpool with Manchester by the canal from Runcorn.

Sparling. Crosbie. Blundell.

Greenland Street calls up a reminiscence of a trade which made vigorous efforts to establish itself in Liverpool, but was never completely successful. In the year 1775 there was launched from the yard of Mr. Richard Kent, on the south shore, the good ship 'William,' intended for the Greenland Whale Fishery. She was built of good sound English oak, and after contending with the storms and breasting the ice of the Arctic regions for more than fifty years, she was finally brought to her moorings at the north-east corner of the King's Dock, where she served in another honourable capacity for a further period of five and twenty years as a seamen's chapel, until, her timbers being scarcely able to hang together, full of years and honours she succumbed to fate.

Whale fishery.

Baffin Street also took its name from the same trade, in remembrance of Baffin's Bay. In both of the streets just mentioned there were depôts for the whale oil procured from the fisheries.

Baffin Street.

Soon after the construction of the King's Dock, about

CHAP. XI.

Tobacco warehouses, old.

1790, a large building was erected at the north-east corner of the quay, extending from thence to the old line of Wapping, for bonded tobacco warehouses. The Virginia tobacco trade was one of the earliest and most diligently cultivated of the rising branches of Liverpool commerce. The correspondence of Sir Thomas Johnson, the Norrisses, and others, in the early part of the last century, is redolent of tobacco, of the fluctuations of the trade, and—alas! for poor human nature—of the devices resorted to, to make things pleasant with the revenue officers and to escape payment of duty. The old tobacco warehouses having become too small for the requirements of the trade, new warehouses were erected, about 1812, on the west side of the King's Dock, occupying an area of three acres, one rood, and twenty-five perches, or 16,486 square yards. The old warehouses were appropriated for general merchandise, and under the Act of 1859 were swept away to make room for the Wapping Dock.

New.

Timber trade.

Another branch of commerce—the timber trade—found a local habitation with the extension of the town southwards. Before the construction of the Old and Salthouse Docks, whatever timber was brought by water was landed on the open beach. After the Salthouse Dock was built, the land gained on the west side was appropriated principally for ship-building; but Messrs. Rathbone had a large yard there for the storage of timber, which long continued in the family. Further south the edge of the river was lined with timber-yards, as far as what is now the north end of the Queen's Dock. Two small open basins or inlets, surrounded by quays, allowed small vessels to come alongside. One of these belonged to the premises of Messrs. Blackburne and Mr. R. Kent; the other to Messrs. Whitaker, and to a copper company which had extensive premises in Wapping. This was the state of things in 1769. In 1785 this had altogether changed. The King's and Queen's Docks were in course of construction, and the timber-yards were swept away.

In 1796 the land on the east side of the Queen's Dock began to be appropriated for the purposes of the timber trade, where it enjoyed a long and prosperous career until the construction of the Canada Dock in 1859, when the bulk of the trade was removed to the extreme north end.

Removal.

In 1803, the whole district as far as Parliament Street, and beyond, was covered with streets, and to a great extent with houses. The bane of Liverpool, the erection of narrow unwholesome court houses was here suffered to a most pernicious extent. Various changes have taken place, and much of the property has been removed for commercial purposes and public improvements, but the original vice still clings to the locality, rendering almost abortive the adoption of effectual sanitary measures.

Railway Station.

The Railway Station, now extending from Wapping to Park Lane along Crosbie Street, was established after the tunnel was constructed in 1831. From its modest commencement it has gradually enlarged its borders to its present gigantic dimensions. The site was originally the ropery of Messrs. Siddall, Greetham & Co.

We have now completed our survey of the south-eastern district of the old borough to its boundary in Parliament Street, which we will not at present overstep, but may return to in future.

CHAPTER XII.

FROM LONDON ROAD NORTHWARD.

CHAP. XII.

HAVING completed our survey of the southern portion of the old borough, we will return northward and commence our present inquiry at the east end of Dale Street. Here formerly flowed the brook which formed the Pool,

Bridge.

spanned by the Town's-end Bridge, which led to a steep road ascending the heath, and so to the open country. Down to the end of the seventeenth century no attempt at building had been made beyond the stream, but the early part of the eighteenth century witnessed the establishment, principally in this locality, of a branch of industry, which flourished with signal success for the greater part of a century, and then died out as rapidly as it had sprung into existence. I allude to the manu-

Potteries.

facture of earthenware, which at one period might have been considered as the staple of Liverpool, and bade fair to hold its own in competition with its ultimately more successful rivals in Staffordshire.

Shaw's Brow.

Very early in the century Samuel Shaw established a pot-work on the slope of the hill, thenceforward known by the name of Shaw's Brow, which name the street retained until the erection of the Free Public Library, when it was changed to William Brown Street. Whether Samuel Shaw's original work was on the north or south side of the street is a moot point. Down to the

alterations under the Improvement Act of 1855 there were remains of old pottery ovens and other buildings on both sides of the street, but the main settlements were on the north side. Shaw's concern was subsequently removed to Dale Street, where Thomas Shaw, the son of Samuel, occupied a large house, still standing, corner of Fontenoy Street, the pottery being behind. He filled the office of bailiff in 1738, and that of mayor in 1747. Several specimens of Shaw's manufacture are preserved in the Mayer collection, in the Public Museum; amongst others a large *plaque*, 2 ft. 8 in. by 1 ft. 8 in., containing a curious view of Great Crosby and the sea coast; mugs with the dates of 1722 and 1756, and a noble punch-bowl, 17½ in. in diameter, presented in 1753 to Captain Metcalf, of the ship 'Golden Lion,' by his employers, on the completion of her second successful voyage in the Greenland Whale Fishery. It is painted in blue, with a representation of the ship inside the bowl. The 'Golden Lion' was originally a French sloop-of-war, and was captured in 1749 by a Liverpool privateer, and subsequently converted into a whaling vessel, the first in the trade from Liverpool. A special berth was allotted to her in the Old Dock, with her name attached.

Shaw's Pottery.

After the Shaw family had led the way others embarked in the same branch of industry, which flourished to such an extent that the brow became covered with pot-works and workmen's cottages, amongst which stood forth here and there the more stately residences of the proprietors. In the year 1790, at a time when the trade had somewhat declined, there were in Shaw's Brow seventy-four houses, occupied by 374 persons, the whole of whom were connected with the potteries.

Pot-works.

Several of the Liverpool potters acquired honourable distinction in their art, none more so than Richard Chaffers, who, having served his apprenticeship to Alderman Thomas Shaw, commenced business on his own account near the bottom of Shaw's Brow, about 1752. It may

Richard Chaffers.

CHAP. XII.

Richard Chaffers.

be mentioned that the early Liverpool earthenware was of the Dutch type of Delft pottery, with a coarse body and thick white or blue glaze. The improvements made by Wedgwood about the middle of the last century stimulated Mr. Chaffers to turn his attention to the production of china.

Mr. Mayer[1] gives a very interesting account of the adventures of Mr. Chaffers in his search after the soapstone, or kaolin, in Cornwall, one main ingredient in the manufacture. Suffice it to say that he was successful in his efforts, and entered with renewed earnestness upon the great work of his life. His career was suddenly brought to a close by his early decease, which left Wedgwood without a rival.

Pot-works.

The new manufacture developed rapidly. The following list of the pot-works existing in 1766 will give some idea of the extent of the trade. There were in Shaw's Brow, Richard Chaffers & Co., John Dunbibin, John Roscoe, Robert Tyrer, John Williams, Charles Woods & Co.; Dale Street, Alderman Thomas Shaw; Haymarket, James Cotter & Co.; Harrington Street, Sadler & Green, Frederick Fisher; Lord Street, Philip Christian; Pothouse Lane, Duke Street, George Drinkwater & Co.; Park Lane, Richard Thwaites, R. Willcock & Co.

Pennington.

Not long after this date the family of Pennington embarked in the trade. Seth Pennington had a large work in Shaw's Brow, and distinguished himself by the manufacture of punch-bowls and excellent imitations of Oriental ware. John Pennington had his pottery on the north side of Islington, a little above St. Anne Street.

[1] 'On Liverpool Pottery,' by Jos. Mayer, F.S.A., an article originally contributed to the Transactions of the Historic Society, and afterwards issued separately.

To this paper I am indebted for much of the information given above. The reader may also consult Marryat's 'History of Pottery and Porcelain,' and the separate Lives of Josiah Wedgwood, by Miss Meteyard and Mr. Llewellyn Jowett.

James Pennington established himself in Copperas Hill. Zechariah Barnes succeeded Messrs. Cotter & Co. in the works in the Haymarket about 1780; and dying in 1820, survived to see the destruction of every pot-work in Liverpool. Zechariah Barnes.

Specimens of the ware from most of these manufactories are to be found in the Mayer collection. Of Chaffers's porcelain there is a handsome punch-bowl, in the Chinese style; another with the portrait of a ship, with the legend, 'Success to the Molly, Capt. Bibby,' about 1770. From Mr. Philip Christian's works there is a punch-bowl of the date of about 1780, with the inscription, 'Presented by the Merchants of St. Petersburg to Capt. Jos. Gibson, of the "Esther," of Workington, Cumberland.' Philip Christian.

I have already, in chapter vi., made some reference to John Sadler and his invention of the art of printing on pottery. In the Mayer collection many fine early specimens of Sadler and Green's work will be found. Zechariah Barnes, mentioned above, possessed a speciality in the manufacture of painted tiles for fireplaces, in which he was unrivalled for the excellence of the body and glaze, and for the squareness and truth of their form. John Sadler.

After flourishing for a considerable number of years, towards the close of the century the potteries began to decline, and early in the present century, with one exception, they had entirely disappeared. That exception is the Herculaneum Pottery, Toxteth Park, to which I shall have occasion hereafter to refer. The reasons for this decline are not difficult to seek. The growing prosperity of Liverpool developed itself in a different direction, and the enterprise which might otherwise have found occupation in this manufacture found more attraction and scope in foreign commerce. Add to this the energetic action and inventive faculties of the Staffordshire potters, led on by the genius of Josiah Wedgwood, which carried forward British ceramic art to the proud position it has Decline.

CHAP. XII.

eventually attained, and we need feel no surprise that a manufacture which at one time presented so fair a prospect declined and came to nought even more rapidly than it had risen.

Shaw's Brow.

The old pot-works in Shaw's Brow became gradually appropriated to other manufactories, such as soap-works, grinding-mills, a large coach-factory, wheelwrights' and builders' yards, &c. The original brow had been exceedingly steep. The crest of the hill was at different times lowered, leaving the houses standing on a bank raised considerably above the roadway. This street being the main access to the town from the eastward, the steepness was found a great inconvenience to the coaching traffic, which in the first quarter of the present century had acquired great importance. In the year 1821 the present Manchester Street was opened from Dale Street to St. John's Lane, thus avoiding the steep ascent by a more circuitous route. Shaw's Brow then remained comparatively deserted until the completion of St. George's Hall rendered further improvements necessary. Under an Act passed in 1855 the property on both sides was purchased and taken down, the crest of the hill still further lowered, and the alignment of the street removed further to the south, so as to skirt the margin of St. John's Churchyard. The open land thus gained was availed of for a very useful purpose. Early in 1850 the scheme of establishing a Free Public Library was brought before the Town Council, and, after some inquiry, was adopted. The first location of the Library was in Duke Street, in the *ci-devant* Union News-room, which was opened on October 18, 1852. The success of the institution was so great as to lead to a proposal for the erection of a larger and more central building, which was still further required for the reception of the Museum of Natural History belonging to the thirteenth Earl of Derby, who died in 1851, and bequeathed his collections to the town.

Improvements.

Library and Museum.

A large piece of land was appropriated for the site,

Library and Museum.

and competition plans were advertised for. This led, as frequently happens, to considerable difference of opinion and difficulty in carrying out the scheme. At this juncture, Mr. (afterwards Sir William) Brown, nobly stepped forward, and undertook to defray the expense of the building, the corporation providing the land. This was gratefully accepted, and the present building was erected from the designs of Mr. John Weightman, at that time architect and surveyor to the corporation. On April 15, 1856, the first stone was laid by Mr. Brown with great *éclat* in the presence of the Bishop of Chester and many other distinguished guests. This was followed by a grand banquet at St. George's Hall, Mr. Alderman Holme presiding in the absence of the mayor (Mr. F. Shand). The new building was opened on October 18, 1860, with even greater rejoicings than at the previous celebration. One very interesting feature in the proceedings was the presence of the venerable Lord Brougham, who had just completed his eightieth year, but who entered into the spirit of the scene with a vigour and eloquence worthy of his best days.

First stone laid.

Opened.

The building is spacious and handsome, and admirably adapted for the purposes of the institution. Its position and aspect are all that could be desired. Standing on a commanding eminence facing the south, with a large open unobstructed area in front, the view of the town from the portico is singularly striking. The contiguous locality is the finest in Liverpool, architecturally speaking. St. George's Hall, the Free Library, the commanding façade of the Railway Hotel, the Alexandra Theatre, the Wellington Column, the equestrian statues of the Queen and the Prince Consort, form an artistic group which we might travel far to see surpassed. Soon after the opening of the building, the name of the street was changed, by a vote of the Council, from Shaw's Brow to William Brown Street.

Esplanade.

When the Improvement Act of 1855 was under con-

CHAP. XII.

High Level Bridge.

sideration, a strong desire was felt in many quarters for a high level bridge to be thrown over Byrom Street connecting William Brown Street with Dale Street on the plan which has been so successfully carried out in the Holborn viaduct in the metropolis. The alarm of the shopkeepers and those interested in property which it was fancied would be injuriously affected, succeeded in thwarting the project. In the erection of the new library on the side of a steep slope, a broad platform in front became a necessity. This being laid out as a paved street, and terminating abruptly at the west end with a retaining wall, it presents all the appearance of an unfinished viaduct waiting to carry the line over the valley of Byrom Street and the Haymarket.

Mayer Collection.

In addition to Sir Willam Brown and the Earl of Derby, another munificent donor arose in the person of Mr. Joseph Mayer, F.S.A., who in 1867 made a free gift to the town of his valuable and in some respects unique collection of historical art treasures, which occupy a department of their own, under the name of the 'Mayer Collection.'

Heath.

The triangular area opposite the north end of St. George's Hall, demands a passing notice. It was originally part of the heath, and remained in its primitive state down to the latter end of the last century. In a fine plate by Burdett of the Old Infirmary, given in Enfield's 'History of Liverpool' (1774), it is shown as a rough foregound with an antique wooden windmill in the centre. This mill was removed about 1780, and the ground levelled and paved. It then became the scene

Folly Fair.

of the annual festivity called Folly Fair. The origin of this merrymaking was something as follows. A short distance up what is now called Islington, but then simply the road to West Derby, very near the site of the present Christian Street, a house of entertainment and strawberry or tea-garden was kept about the middle of the last century by a person named Gibson. Here he erected a

square tower, eight storeys in height[1] most probably for a look out or Belvedere, the situation commanding an extensive view. Here, as in many other parts of England, any erection of a peculiar character is attributed to the 'folly' of the builder, and designated by the name. The structure in question thus acquired the appellation of 'Gibson's Folly,' by which name it was commonly known. The road which led up to the establishment was called Folly Lane, by which name it is designated in the maps of 1785 and 1796. Easter has always been a season of peculiar festivity in Lancashire. Pasche eggs, Morris dances, and hot cross buns have lingered here with greater perseverance than in most other parts of the country. In South Lancashire and in the district of Cheshire and the other Mercian counties, the custom of 'Lifting' was practised until a comparatively recent period. Within the memory of many persons now living, it was impossible for a female to pass through any of the lower streets of Liverpool on Easter Monday without being laid hold of by a set of good-natured ruffians, who asked for '*backsheesh*,' and if it was not granted, she was taken by the head and heels and heaved up three times into the air. On Easter Tuesday, the females retaliated, and many a 'grave and reverend signior' has had to run for it; to pay toll, or to be seized by a posse of stalwart women who were not over particular in handling him.

Gibson's Folly.

Easter.

Lifting.

Mr. Chambers in his 'Book of Days,' relates the following anecdote in illustration: 'A grave clergyman who happened to be passing through a town in Lancashire on an Easter Tuesday, and having to stay an hour or two at an inn, was astonished by three or four lusty women rushing into his room, exclaiming they had come "to lift him." "To lift me!" repeated the amazed divine, "what can you mean?" "Whoy, your reverence, we're come to lift you, 'cause it's Easter Tuesday." "Lift me because it's

[1] A view of this will be found in Herdman's 'Ancient Liverpool,' vol. i. pl. 37.

CHAP. XII.

Lifting.

Easter Tuesday? I don't understand. Is there any such custom here?" "Yes, to be sure, why don't you know? all us women was lifted yesterday; and us lifts the men in turn to-day. And in course it's our reights and duties to lift 'em." After a little parley, the reverend traveller compromised with his fair visitors for half-a-crown, and thus escaped the dreaded compliment.'[1]

Fair.

Folly Fair.

For the indulgence of these sports and the usual concomitants of an English festivity, a sort of fair grew up on Easter Monday and Tuesday about the Folly Gardens. After the Folly was removed about 1780, the 'Folly Fair' was held on the open area in question, year by year acquiring increased dimensions with the growth of population. Temporary theatres, merry-go-rounds, swinging boats, and the usual stalls, occupied the open area. From the windows of the public-houses in the neighbourhood banners waved, whilst within 'the sounds of revelry were heard by night.' In the course of time 'Folly Fair' became a saturnalia of the lowest roughs in the town. Drunkenness, debauchery, and fighting prevailed to a frightful extent. In the then imperfect state of police arrangements the authorities were almost powerless to put down the nuisance. Proclamations and notices prohibiting the assembly were annually published and as often disregarded. In 1818, the area was enclosed by brick walls and iron gates, with rows of small shops round the interior, and opened as 'Islington Market.'

Discontinued.

Folly Fair was then transplanted to the open fields on the north side of London Road, now occupied by Stafford Street, &c., but it never took kindly to its new location, and in a year or two it died of inanition.

Lament.

The following 'Lament' was published in one of the newspapers about the time of the discontinuance of 'Folly Fair':—

[1] *Vide supra*, vol. i. p. 292.

Lament.

A LAMENT FOR FOLLY FAIR.

Breathers of harmony, who oft of yore,
Vouchsafed your aid alike to joy and grief,
O deign t' assist my sad and mournful lay;
To touch the flinty and unfeeling hearts
Of those whose harsh imperious edicts
Have doomed thy woeful fall, O FOLLY FAIR!
O let each gentle nymph, who at the approach
Of soft-eyed spring, has loved to wander there,
And sport her gay attire, 'midst fragrant groves
Of oranges and nuts, raise her melodious voice
In sweet but sighing cadence—let the swain,
In whose fond bosom must for ever dwell
The dear remembrance of the blissful hours
Which he experienced, when upon his arm
The smiling fair one pressed with welcome weight,
Much wondering at the things she saw and heard—
Let him essay to raise a dolorous stave
Of grief and desolation. Ye who dwell
By the way-side in habitations frail,
But furnished well with toys, and fruit and cakes,
Uplift your voices, not as you were wont,
Shrilly and sharp, but wailingly and low,
And, if you can let fall a pearly tear,
So much the better. Princes and Potentates,
Who hold your courts in moving palaces,
Strip off your glittering robes, your awful hands
Unsceptre, for your glory is laid low.
Thou, Merry Andrew, shew forth thy distress
In horrible grimaces, kick thy heels
Aloft in air, in token that thy power
Is vanishèd; ye double-headed calves,
With bellowing loud, proclaim your mighty woe.
Ye dancing bears join all your deep-toned voices,
Till the loud strain reverberate around.
Ye, by whose touch the notes of melody
Are oft awakened, ye whose magic powers
Have oft sustained throughout the midnight hour
Th' unwearied dancer, strike the deepest tones
To some most wild and lamentable lay,
For soon your harmony shall be laid low;
Your sticks hang idly on the dusty wall,
While silence spreads her shadowy wing around.

Islington Market was not a success. It was too near

CHAP. XII.

St. John's, and was not approved by either buyers or sellers. It was closed for some years, and at the time of the improvements of 1856 it was cleared away altogether.

Progress northward.

Down to the year 1785 scarcely any buildings existed north of the pot-works in Shaw's Brow and east of Byrom Street; but during the eleven years from 1785 to 1796 a prodigious advance was made, and the greater part of the area between Shaw's Brow and Richmond Row, from north to south, and from Byrom Street to St. Anne Street, from east to west, was covered with buildings.

Christian Street.

Christian Street was so called from Mr. Philip Christian, originally a potter in Lord Street, who purchased 'Gibson's Folly' and grounds, pulled down the tower, and erected for himself a handsome mansion at the corner of the present Christian Street, some time between 1770 and 1780. The garden was pleasantly laid out, and decorated with statuary. Here he continued to reside until his decease, about 1808.

Islington Terrace. Circus.

The fine row of houses called Islington Terrace was erected between 1784 and 1796. The Olympic Circus, Adelphi Theatre, or Queen's Theatre, as it has since been called, was built in 1795. Jacob Astley, of equestrian fame, had been accustomed to visit Liverpool and to give performances in the Theatre, Williamson Square. For some unexplained reason he received notice to quit, and in July 1795 issued proposals in the newspapers for the erection of an amphitheatre for music, dancing, equestrian exercises, &c., which he proposed to carry out 'by subscription by way of tontine, viz., one hundred subscribers at fifty pounds each, to have a free admission ticket, on the same plan as the Theatre. The building to be held in trust by six of the subscribers by way of security.' This appeal was responded to, and the building was erected within six months.

Circus Street.

Circus Street of course takes its name from the building

opposite which it debouches. Gerard Street was so called from Dr. James Gerard, a leading physician of the town, a prominent member of the Council, who filled the office of chief magistrate in 1808, and who possessed lands in the immediate neighbourhood. Hunter Street received its appellation from Mr. Rowland Hunter, a retired tradesman and tax-collector, from Cable Street, who built and resided in a house at the corner of Byrom Street. Thurlow Street indicates the popularity of Lord Chancellor Thurlow at the period of its construction. Mill Lane and Mill Place, now almost entirely obliterated, mark the site of two lofty windmills, which, from their elevated position, were for a long period conspicuous objects in the view. They were both burnt down at different periods between 1840 and 1850, and not again erected.

CHAP XII.

Circus Street.

Windmills.

Byrom Street was originally a narrow lane running along the side of the brook as far as Richmond Row, where it turned up the hill towards Everton. The street took its name from George Byrom, a pavier and builder, who had his yard nearly opposite Hunter Street. In the Directory of 1781 he is described as 'the town's pavier.'

Byrom Street.

Near the bottom of William Brown Street, fronting Byrom Street, formerly stood the quaint-looking little Church of St. Stephen. It was erected in 1722, as a Baptist chapel, being the first and for a long time the only place of worship of the denomination in Liverpool. The original source of the Baptist churches in this part of the country was a small chapel at Hill Cliffe, a wooded height near Warrington. About A.D. 1700 Baptist services were commenced at the house of Dr. Daniel Fabius, who had a house, with surrounding land, at the corner of Brunswick Road and Everton Road. After the cause had increased, the building in Byrom Street was erected. In 1772 the Rev. Samuel Medley became the pastor of this church. He was in every way an original and re-

St. Stephen's Church

Samuel Medley.

CHAP. XII.

markable man. He had been in early life a midshipman and master's mate in the Royal Navy, and was severely wounded whilst serving on board the 'Intrepid,' 74, in the action off Cape Lagos, in 1759. He afterwards taught a school, and at length entered the ministry amongst the Baptists in 1766. In 1772 he entered upon his pastoral duties in Liverpool, and soon became exceedingly popular. He bestowed great attention on the seamen frequenting the port; and from having been one of themselves, was able to find the way to their hearts by those touches of nature which 'make the whole world kin.' In 1773 the chapel was enlarged; but, from the popularity of the pastor, a still further expansion became necessary, and a much larger and more commodious building was erected a few hundred yards to the north, at the bottom of Gerard Street, which was opened in 1789. The old chapel was soon after sold for a church connected with the Establishment, and consecrated in 1792. The projected widening of Byrom Street led to the purchase of the old church and the erection of a new building in substitution in the same street, a little distance to the northward, in 1871.

Samuel Medley.

New Chapel.

The new Byrom Street Chapel continued for many years the chief seat of the Baptist denomination in Liverpool; but in 1836 a rupture took place, soon after the appointment of the Rev. C. M. Birrell to the pastorate. The church had up to this period adopted what is called the close communion principle, which restricts the administration of the Lord's Supper to those who have been baptized by immersion on a profession of faith. An attempt to throw open the communion was defeated, and the dissidents withdrew, and after a time erected the handsome building at the junction of Crown and West Derby Streets, of which Mr. Birrell has been so long the incumbent. The Byrom Street Chapel continued to be occupied with greatly decreased numbers. About 1850 it was purchased by the London and North Western Rail-

Rupture.

Secession.

way, in consequence of the Victoria Tunnel having to be constructed underneath. After the tunnel was completed it was purchased by Mr. John Johnson, in the hands of whose representatives it still continues, and is used for benevolent and religious purposes.

Friends' Meeting-house.

Not very far distant, on the brow of the hill, on the north side of Hunter Street, stands the Friends' or Quakers' Meeting-house, within a spacious area. I have, in chapter v., referred to the original settlement of the Quakers in Hackin's Hey, about 1709. About 1796 the present building in Hunter Street was erected, in the neat, plain style so much affected by the society, and continues to be occupied for public worship. The land around was intended for a cemetery, and was so employed until the passing of the Act prohibiting intramural interments. About 1856 a new cemetery was prepared and opened in Smithdown Lane, with a meeting-house attached, contiguous to the public cemetery of Toxteth Park.

Christ Church.

A little higher up Hunter Street, on the opposite side, stands Christ Church. Though built of common grey brick, with little or no decoration, the design is pleasing, and possesses considerable merit, especially considering the period of its erection, and the style then prevalent. It was built in 1797, by Mr. John Houghton, of whom and of his residence in Dale Street I have spoken in chapter v. It was opened in 1798, and consecrated in 1800. The cost of the building was 22,000*l.* The wooden dome and cupola impart a certain air of dignity to the exterior. The interior is commodious and lofty. Originally it possessed double galleries round three sides, but within the last few years the upper one has been removed.

Free School.

The Free School, in Hunter Street, opposite the Friends' Meeting-house, was built about 1800.

We now approach the line of St. Anne Street and Norton Street, one of the great leading arteries from

CHAP. XII.

St. Anne's Church.

north to south. St. Anne's Church was erected in 1770–2, at the expense of Mr. Dobb and others, under the authority of an Act of Parliament. It was originally plain red brick, with stone jambs to the windows and doors, supporting ogee arches, intended, it is presumed, to indicate the Gothic or pointed style of architecture. At the north end was a plain square brick tower. Internally it was a simple parallelogram, with galleries on three sides, and a recess for the altar at the south end. Any attempt at criticism on such a piece of composition would be superfluous. It is worthy of notice on another account. It was one of the very few public buildings in Liverpool which terminated a vista. In former times, standing as it did at the extremity of a long, straight avenue, on a slightly rising eminence, and shadowed by trees, the perspective was striking when seen from a distance at which the paltry detail was lost in the general outline. Our English towns are for the most part deficient in effects of this kind. Paris abounds in them. Edinburgh possesses a noble avenue in its George Street, terminated by the Melville Monument at one end, and by St. Andrew's Church at the other.

On the principle of gilding refined gold, the dingy brickwork of St. Anne's Church was ultimately covered with a coat of compo, which brought out with better effect its incarnate ugliness.

It was supposed, after the erection of the church, that marriages could be solemnised within its walls; but in consequence of the loose way in which the Act of Parliament was framed, this right was denied by the rectors of the parish, and in 1781 the case was tried before the Court of Queen's Bench, when the decision was given in favour of the claim.

Choral Society.

During many years St. Anne's Church was the *locale* of the performances of the Liverpool Choral Society, which brought out with considerable success the oratorios of Handel, Haydn, and other masters of sacred song.

CHAP. XII.

Both vocal and instrumental performers were amateurs, reinforced at the quarterly public rehearsals by a few instrumental professionals and a lady vocalist, usually from Manchester. In consequence of some dissension a rupture took place, and a rival association, called the 'Musical Society,' sprang into life, which conducted its performances at St. John's Church. The Choral Society was the first to succumb to fate, and ceased to exist about 1835. The Musical Society struggled on a few years longer; and being obliged to quit the church, retired into a state of hybernation, waiting for the opening of St. George's Hall, but was never subsequently quickened into re-existence.

Choral Society.

Under the Improvement Act of 1867, by which the line of St. Anne Street was continued northward, the old church was removed and a new one erected on the east of the old site, from the designs of Mr. Robson, at that time architect and surveyor to the corporation.

Church removed.

St. Anne Street takes its name from the church, but was not formed for many years after its erection. In the map of 1785 the line of street is shown, but without a single house. Within the succeeding ten years the west side was built up between Springfield and Birkett Streets. In 1803 the street exhibited a goodly array of mansions on both sides, inhabited by the *crème de la crème* of the Liverpool society of that day. Duke Street was built up; Rodney Street was not yet developed; and bad roads and insecurity prevented the overflow into the country. Hence St. Anne Street took the lead, and maintained it for many years. Many of the commercial magnates of the town, the Rutsons, the Alisons, the Molyneuxs, the Batesons, here found their habitat. Science was represented by Drs. Rutter and Traill. The former of these, a fine, old, primitive Quaker, was deservedly esteemed for many years as a sound and sagacious physician. To him principally the profession is indebted for the establishment of the Medical Institution.

St. Anne Street.

Inhabitants.

Rutter.

CHAP. XII.

Traill.

Dr. Thomas Stewart Traill was a man of rare attainments, and of eminent activity in the employment of them. During his residence in Liverpool he was one of the foremost in aiding every project for the promotion of education, literature, and science. The Botanic Garden, the Academy of Painting (in which he was the honorary Professor of Anatomy), the Royal Institution, with many others, received the benefit of his active co-operation. He took a warm interest in the establishment of the Mechanics' Institution, in the year 1825. After a long and useful career in Liverpool he was promoted to the chair of medical jurisprudence in the University of Edinburgh.

Sandbach.

The noble mansion on the east side, at the corner of Mansfield Street, was built about 1825 by Mr. Samuel Sandbach, who filled the office of mayor in 1831. He resided only a short time in the house, and was succeeded by Mr. Thomas Colley Porter in 1827.

Molyneux and Porter.

Two of the most memorable contests in the history of the municipality were connected with inhabitants of this street. I have already related their history. Mr. William Molyneux, the defeated candidate in 1821, resided at No. 25 on the west side; and Mr. Thomas Colley Porter, the successful candidate for the civic chair in 1827, at the house just described.

Judges' lodgings.

Mr. T. C. Porter died about 1833, and the house, after remaining vacant a year or two, was taken by the corporation for the Judges' Lodgings, on the assizes being transferred to Liverpool in August 1835; and so continued until the substitution of Newsham House in 1868.

Matthew Gregson.

At No. 38 on the east side, long lived Matthew Gregson, F.S.A., antiquary, and editor of the 'Portfolio of Fragments relating to the History of Lancashire.' His father came from near Whalley, in Lancashire, and settled in Liverpool in the early part of the last century. Matthew, one of thirteen children, was born in 1749, and served an apprenticeship to a cabinet-maker and uphol-

sterer. He afterwards commenced business for himself, which he carried on very successfully, and retired in 1814 on a handsome competence. Although destitute of the advantages of early education, he took a deep interest in literature, particularly devoting himself to the study of mediæval antiquities. He made large collections of prints, books, and MSS. in his favourite pursuit, and searched with care and discrimination the collections in the British Museum and elsewhere. The result is manifested in his publications, a description of which will be found in the appendix to the present work. Mr. Gregson was active in the promotion of every work of benevolence and education in the town. His pursuits brought him into friendly intercourse with many of the leading literary men of the day. His house in St. Anne Street was so noted for hospitality as to have acquired the name of the 'Gregson Hotel.' He died in 1824 at the age of 75, from the effects of an accidental fall whilst reaching down a book in his library. His life was one of simple unobtrusive usefulness, which met, as it deserved, respect from all who knew him.

Matthew Gregson.

The Church of the Holy Trinity, on the east side of St. Anne Street, was built under the authority of an Act passed in 1792 (32 Geo. III., ch. 76). In Gore's 'Annals' it is stated that the church was consecrated on November 16 in that year, but this must be an error, as the Act had then only just been passed, and in Charles Eyes's map of 1796, stated to have been made from actual survey in that year, the building is not shown. The church is well situated on a square plot of ground open on all the four sides. It is a stone building, standing in the orthodox position, with a tower at the west end, and is capable of accommodating a large congregation. Its architecture is below criticism, and strikingly shows the deplorably low state of the art in Liverpool at the period of its erection. A quiet row of respectable houses, called Trinity Place, stands at the east end of the

Trinity Church.

CHAP. XII.

church. In 1808 this was the scene of a very remarkable trial, which caused a great sensation at the time.

Charles Angus.

The house No. 2 was occupied by Mr. Charles Angus, a merchant, who had as governess in his family a young lady named Margaret Burns. On March 25, 1808, Miss Burns died somewhat suddenly under very singular circumstances. Suspicion fell on Mr. Angus, who was alleged to have had illicit intercourse with the deceased, and to have administered drugs which caused her death. He was committed to Lancaster Castle, and on September 2 was tried before Sir Alan Chambre, at Lancaster. The most eminent counsel were employed both for the prosecution and the defence; Scarlett (Lord Abinger), Topping, Serjeants Cockell and Cross, &c.; and medical evidence of the highest class was produced. The turning point in the trial was the evidence given by Dr. James Carson, then a comparatively young man, who displayed an amount of ability and clearness in his view of the case which led to the acquittal of the prisoner in spite of the very suspicious circumstances, and the strong medical evidence given against him. This led to considerable controversy, and a display of somewhat bitter feeling in the medical circles.

Trial.

Dr. Carson.

St. Anne Street.

St. Anne Street, in its palmy days, was a pleasant place of residence. Its locality was high and dry, the houses were dignified and commodious, with large gardens behind. The house at the corner of Myrtle Street, with a forecourt in front, is a good specimen. It was built near the close of the last century by Mr. William Calton Rutson, of the eminent firm of Ewart, Rutson & Co., Exchange Alley.

After flourishing about forty years, St. Anne Street began to show signs of decay. Its surroundings were encroached upon and crowded with cottages. The old families dropped off one by one, either by death or removal, and none succeeded in their stead. It became a thoroughfare, though rather a circuitous one, to Everton

and Kirkdale. Shops, one after another, were opened, until its aspect has become entirely metamorphosed into one of a second-rate commercial character.

Eastern district.

The district east of St. Anne Street, as far as the boundary of Everton, was laid out in streets, but very little built on about the close of last century. The character of the neighbourhood was pleasant and suburban down to about 1825, when the gardens and open spaces began to be appropriated for ranges of cottages in narrow streets and courts. The principal streets, King Street, Soho, (now Wilton Street), Springfield, and Queen Anne Street, continued for some time to maintain a respectable position which is not even now altogether lost. Soho Street was laid out before 1796, and a few large houses were built at the north end; but it remained incomplete for many years, and was gradually filled with a smaller description of property.

Soho Street.

An attempt was made about 1829 by an enterprising builder (Mr. John Johnson), to revive the respectability of the street by the erection of ten large houses on the east side near the south end; but the result was very disastrous, and might have ruined any but a man of large means.

Baptist Chapel.

On the east side of Soho Street, corner of Church Street, Soho, stands a modest-looking building occupied as a Baptist Chapel, erected about 1836. It was erected for the Rev. Moses Fisher, who had been previously the minister of the chapel in Byrom Street down to 1824. The site is memorable on another account, as having been one of the scenes in an extraordinary ecclesiastical drama which was enacted in the town from 1827 to 1832, to which I shall have occasion again to refer. Suffice it here to record that on April 23, 1832 (Easter Monday), in the presence of a vast crowd of spectators, who bravely maintained their ground through a continuous drenching rain, the first stone of an intended cathedral for the 'Primitive Episcopal Church' was laid by the Right Rev. George Montgomery West, *soi-disant*

G. M. West.

CHAP. XII.

bishop of the community undertaking the erection. It appeared like an augury, as

Coming events cast their shadows before them,

that whilst the imposing ceremony was proceeding, the stage on which the principal performers stood gave way and precipitated the right reverend gentleman and his party into the trench below.

The history of the district east of Soho Street will be more properly referred to in the chapter on Everton.

Islington.

Let us now turn our attention to Islington, which as I have already mentioned was originally called Folly Lane. The row of houses called Islington Terrace which were completed before 1796 first bore the name. In 1803, the street was called Islington as far as Birchfield, but the higher portion still continued as Folly Lane. Subsequently the more modern appellation extended to the whole length of the street. Down to 1859, a very pleasant enclosure existed on the north side of Islington containing three large mansions enclosed in their respective grounds, entered by a lodge and avenue from the street. The site is marked in the map of 1785 as a field belonging to Mr. William Roscoe, and from a row of trees extending along the margin, it was called Birchfield. On this field three houses were built, the first by Mr. Daniel Daulby, about 1787, afterwards occupied by Mr. Lightbody, the second by Mr. Roscoe. When the latter house was taken down in 1859, a square tile [1] was discovered in the foundation, bearing the following inscription:

Birchfield.

Roscoe's house.

1 SEP. MDCCXC
INCHOATA

DIV MANEAT
NVLLA TVRBATA TVMVLTV
NESCIA CVRARVM
NVLLIVS CONSCIA CVLPÆ
SIC VOVET
GVLIELMVS ROSCOE
ÆDIFICATOR.

[1] The tile is deposited in the Free Public Museum.

Mr. Roscoe resided in the house from 1791 to 1799, when he removed to Allerton Hall and was succeeded in Birchfield by his partner Mr. William Clarke. The third house was built by Mr. William Ewart about 1800.

Birchfield.

This pleasant retreat continued for many years an undisturbed oasis amongst the dreary piles of brick gradually accumulating around. It was subsequently occupied as military barracks, and was finally dismantled in 1859, when the enclosure was removed and the site converted into building ground. The locality is marked by Birchfield and Bidder Streets.

Presbyterian Church.

In 1846 the Presbyterian Church, corner of Islington and Salisbury Street, was erected, in connection with what is called the Presbyterian Church in England. The minister, Dr. Verner White, and many of the congregation were more nearly connected with the Presbyterian Church in the north of Ireland. The building is large and commodious. Externally it looms rather massive, having a heavy Doric portico fronting the street.

Camden Street, &c.

The district between Islington and London Road from Camden Street eastward, was mapped out into streets about the beginning of the present century, and was gradually built up during the following twenty-five years. In the map of 1803 nearly the whole tract consists of open fields.

The land westward of Stafford Street had become pretty well covered about 1819, about which time houses began to be erected in the street. The margins along Upper Islington and London Road had been previously built up.

Gallows Mills.

On the north side of London Road between Stafford and Gildart Streets, there formerly stood two ancient windmills and a large mill-dam. These were known for a century as the Gallows Mills, from the fact of four of the rebels captured at Preston after the failure of the insurrection of 1715, having been executed here.

Removed.

The Gallows Mills were removed about 1820, but one

CHAP. XII.

of the millers' houses, a long, low cottage, originally thatched, remained for many years standing at the corner of Stafford Street, converted into a public-house. It was finally removed about 1866, to make way for a gin palace of loftier pretensions.

Moss Street.

Moss Street was cut through between London Road and Islington about 1809.

Daulby Street.

The triangular space between London Road and Pembroke Place bounded on the east by Daulby Street was principally covered with buildings from 1815 to 1830. Daulby Street had been laid out some time before. The name is derived from the family of Daulby, who possessed the land through which the street was cut.

Daniel Daulby.

Daniel Daulby, senr., and Daniel Daulby, junr., both resided in 1781 in Sir Thomas's Buildings. Similar refined and cultivated tastes led to a close intimacy between the younger Daulby and William Roscoe, which was drawn still closer by the marriage of Roscoe's sister to his friend. About 1788, Mr. Daulby removed from Sir Thomas's Buildings to Birchfield, and a few years later he left Liverpool to reside at Rydal Mount, Westmoreland, where after a short career he died. He was a man of an elegant mind and of great taste in art. The

Sonnet by Roscoe.

following sonnet was inscribed to him by Mr. Roscoe on his recovery from a painful illness:

Daulby! who oft hast bowed beneath the smart
Of keen affliction, yet survived to know,
More blissful hours return, and through thine heart
Health's temperate flood and native spirits flow;
Think not the hand that led thee through the gloom,
Will now forsake thee—still thy breast shall prove
The lasting transports of a happier doom,
Each charm of health and every sweet of love.
Yet should thy God permit the storm to rise
(His ways incrutable to mortal eyes),
Dim thy fair hopes, and bid thine ills increase,
Despair not; for while virtue is thy guide,
Secure thy bark shall stem the bursting tide,
And gain the haven of eternal peace.

Soon after 1800 a few houses with large gardens were erected on both sides of Daulby Street, and about the same time the upper end of Pembroke Place was lined with a row of goodly mansions, a number of which still remain. The western portion of the plot now under review remained for many years very sparsely covered by buildings, and at last was laid hold of by speculative builders and devoted to cottage dwellings. A large mansion was erected about 1830 at the corner of Anson Street, by Mr. William Comer. It was afterwards sub-divided, and a part has been recently converted into the General Post Office for the eastern district. St. Silas's Church was erected on the garden belonging to this house in 1841, from the designs of Mr. A. B. Clayton. It is a neat building, with a red sandstone tower and spire to the front in a *quasi* Gothic style. The interior contains side galleries, and will accommodate a large congregation. The Rev. Dr. Taylor, formerly the incumbent of St. John's, where he attracted crowded congregations, was for a number of years the minister.

Comer.

St. Silas's Church.

In returning down London Road the eye is arrested by the bronze equestrian statue of King George III. in the open esplanade at the junction of the streets. This statue was erected by public subscription to commemorate the fiftieth anniversary of the King's reign, and was intended for Great George Square; the first stone of the pedestal having been laid by the mayor, Mr. John Clarke, on October 25, 1809 (the jubilee day). It remained in abeyance for thirteen years, and at length, in 1822, it was set up in London Road as a locality better suited for its display. The artist was Mr. Robert Westmacott, R.A. The figures, especially the horse, are spirited and bold. The *motif* is evidently taken from the well-known equestrian statue of Marcus Aurelius on the esplanade of the Capitol at Rome. Exception might be taken to the introduction of the ultra-classical costume in a memorial statue intended to present the form and appearance of

King's monument.

CHAP. XII.

King's monument.

the subject as he appeared in life. At the same time few would be disposed to prefer the effigy of 'Farmer George,' as he stands in Pall Mall, London, capering on horseback, cocked hat in hand, and pigtail streaming behind. There is a medium between the two extremes, which the instinct of genius alone can seize, combining the faithfulness of modern representation with the flowing contour of the antique, which has occasionally been realised, as in the noble statue of George Canning in the Town-hall by Chantrey.

Reserving our notice of Everton for a separate chapter, let us now turn our attention to the part of the old borough lying north of Richmond Row and east of Scotland Road. This forms a narrow tongue of land extending to Great Homer Street, which is the line of division between Everton and Liverpool.

Richmond Row.

Richmond Row is the ancient road to Everton village, and down to 1785 was a rural lane. Near the lower end on the south-east side, the curious enquirer will observe a small street called Downe Street, proceeding a short distance along which the area expands, with a depression of the surface, the ground rapidly rising to the east and south. This marks the side of a pool or reservoir which

Brook.

was formed by the brook running from the Mosslake, in an oblique direction down the steep hill. After leaving the reservoir, its course crossed the line of Byrom Street to the west side, and turning sharp round to the south, ran in an irregular line along the site of Fontenoy Street to Dale Street where it was crossed by the Town's-end bridge.

A little below the reservoir just spoken of, and on the margin of the brook, stood, about the middle of the last

Kennels.

century, and for some time subsequently, the kennels of the corporation pack of harriers. Although popularly called by the name of the Corporation Hounds, they were really supported by subscription, the Council subscribing five guineas per annum towards the expense.

Kennels.

When the whole district north of the kennels was open fields, the slopes of Everton and the flat plain of Kirkdale, though not presenting the style of country which would satisfy a member of the Quorn or Melton Hunt, afforded free scope for the less exciting exercise of hunting the hare. The kennels remained in Richmond Row until nearly the end of the century, when they were removed to Kirkdale, near what was then the North Shore, where they stood entirely isolated for many years. Ultimately they were converted into cottages, and still remain, a little to the north of Bankfield Street, Regent Road. They may be recognised by the curious triangular shape of the plan on which they are built.

Livesley's pottery.

On the other side of Richmond Row, in 1769, stood Mr. Livesley's pottery; and near by, on the margin of the brook, an extensive tannery. Building commenced in the lower part of Richmond Row and the neighbourhood about 1790. A large house was erected by one of the Benson family on the west side of Thurlow Street. An extensive brewery, intended principally for porter or stout, was built a little to the northward; but, like every attempt of the kind in Liverpool, it signally failed About 1804 Mr. Matthew Gregson, the ingenious and painstaking antiquary, who was an upholsterer in Preeson's Row, in the firm of Gregson & Bullen, erected in the dell or hollow mentioned above a feather-dressing manufactory, whence the street took the name of Downe Street.

Benson.

Mr. Gregon.

Rose Place, &c.

The erection of St. Anne's Church, soon after 1770, gave the first impulse to building north of Richmond Row. In the map of 1785 Great Richmond Street is shown, with houses and gardens on the south side. Rose Place (originally Rose Street) and Rose Hill (originally Rose Hill Street) take their names from Mr. Joshua Rose, merchant, who owned lands in the neighbourhood. Comus Street was originally called Mayor Hill. So matters stood in 1796. The houses were thinly scattered about the new

CHAP. XII.

streets, with large open spaces and gardens interspersed. About the commencement of this century a small but neat chapel was erected in Comus Street by a community of what are called Johnsonian Baptists. In the second quarter of last century Mr. John Johnson—a relative of Sir Thomas Johnson, M.P. for Liverpool—was the pastor of the Baptist Chapel in Byrom Street, afterwards St. Stephen's Church. In the year 1748, in consequence of some peculiarities of doctrine, he became distasteful to the majority of his congregation, and withdrew with his adherents. They erected a place of worship in Stanley Street, corner of Matthew Street, where he officiated until his decease in 1791, at the age of 90 years. He was a staunch and loyal adherent of the House of Hanover, having shown his loyalty by enrolling himself as a volunteer in a regiment raised in 1745 for the defence of the town. Some years after his decease the congregation migrated to the building in Comus Street.

Baptist Chapel.

In 1826 a chapel was erected by the Welsh Calvinistic Methodists at the corner of Comus Street and Rose Place, since converted into a brewery.

Oil Gas Works.

The large stone-fronted building on the west side of Rose Hill, now, with its accessories, constituting the Northern Police Station, was erected in 1822 by a gas company proposing to manufacture the article from oil, of better quality than from coal, and at a cheaper rate. The gas was no doubt excellent in quality, but it was found so expensive in the manufacture that the company had to abandon oil and substitute coal or cannel. After some years' rivalry between the old and new companies they finally amalgamated in 1849, under an Act of Parliament which recognised the interests of the consumers, and imposed certain conditions as to price of gas, inspection of accounts, and limitation of dividends. The present building was not required after the amalgamation, and was sold to the corporation, who converted it to its present use. A large part of the property fronting Comus

Street was sold for building ground and covered with houses. CHAP. XII.

Crossing to the north side of Rose Place, the streets immediately opening therefrom were commenced about the beginning of the present century.

Cazneau Street took its name from Mr. Joseph Cazneau, merchant, who built and resided in the first house in the street about 1796. Beau Street and Belle Street are shown in the map of 1803, but with very few houses erected. Cazneau Street.

In the course of a few years a very pleasant neighbourhood developed itself in this locality. The houses in Cazneau Street, Beau Street, and Rose Place were set back in gardens and embowered in umbrageous foliage, and so they remained for about a score of years, when a sinister change began to take place. The growth of population in Liverpool has been so rapid, that the speculative cottage-builder is always on the heels of the aristocracy, whose residences accumulate more slowly. Wherever an open space has been left unguarded, the builder has speedily insinuated himself. Narrow courts block up the light, and long rows of windows peer impertinently over the privacy of the sacred precincts. A migration of the well-to-do succeeds. Then follows the sacrifice and conversion of the larger property. The mansions disappear, their materials to be worked up again into new combinations; the lawn and the parterre give way to the alley and the back street, and the remembrance of them is lost for ever. So it was in the neighbourhood which we are surveying. Narrow streets and squalid courts gradually accumulated around; then the mansions themselves were attacked and succumbed, and an entire change passed over the spirit of the district. Changes. Cottage building.

A small street called Meadows Street takes its name from one William Meadows, who resided there from 1807 to 1814. He is said to have been a sort of modern Bluebeard, having married six wives in succession, the last when he was seventy five years of age. Meadows.

CHAP. XII.

Grosvenor Street Church

In Grosvenor Street, leading northward from Rose Place, stands the Roman Catholic Church of St. Joseph, externally a plain brick structure, built up closely on each side. The interior is spacious, having an enormous gallery at the north end, and calculated to seat 2,000 persons. There is a spacious churchyard behind, formerly used as a cemetery. The history of this building is connected with some rather singular incidents in the ecclesiastical world. Originally a tennis-court was erected on the site in 1796. About that period the Rev. Robert

Banister.

Banister, B.A., who had been curate at Upholland, near Wigan, settled in Liverpool, and for a year or two took duty in several of the churches, especially St. John's, as a clergyman unattached. In the lamentable dearth of pulpit talent at that time he became exceedingly popular. When Christ Church, Hunter Street, was erected in 1797, it was proposed and intended that Mr. Banister should have been appointed incumbent. Reports, however, were circulated to his prejudice, and a division took place amongst those interested, which led to the secession of Mr. Richard Walker and others taking part with Mr. Banister. By these friends the tennis-court in Grosvenor Street was purchased and a church erected, to which the name of 'All Saints' was given. It was not legally connected with the Establishment, having never been consecrated nor even licensed until after Mr. Banister's decease. By the kindness of his friends the edifice was made over to him as absolute owner. Here he flourished for about thirty-three years, at first exceedingly popular; but as younger and fresher lights appeared above the horizon the lustre of the elder luminary began to wane, his congregation gradually dropped off by death and removal, and few came forward to supply their places. For some years previous to his death, in 1829, the church was almost deserted. After Mr. Banister's decease the church

Turner.

was rented on lease by the Rev. H. T. Turner, a gentleman in deacon's orders only. In 1831 he entered into a

connexion with the Rev. George Montgomery West, who had, for some time previously, occupied a position of considerable notoriety in the public eye. Originally a preacher amongst the Wesleyan Methodists in Ireland, he had attracted attention by his boldness and eloquence; but, from some cause of difference, he had separated from their communion and visited the United States, furnished with letters recommendatory from Lord Kenyon and others. Here he became acquainted with Bishop Chase of Ohio, who conferred upon him priest's orders, and sent him to England to obtain contributions towards the erection of Kenyon Episcopal College, Knox County, State of Ohio. Returning to England on this commission, he obtained admission to the pulpits of the National Church, where he preached with great acceptance, was recognised and encouraged by Bishop Blomfield, Bishop Sumner, and other dignitaries, and raised large sums of money for the purpose for which he was sent over. After a sojourn in England of about a year he returned to America, with the hearty congratulations and good wishes of a large circle of admirers. A rupture soon took place between the Bishop and his emissary, whom he did not scruple to charge with a breach of trust. Mr. West defended himself in a pamphlet published in New York, and soon after returned to England, on the invitation of Mr. Turner to join him in the co-pastorate of All Saints' Church. Here he became for a time exceedingly popular with all classes; but his restless, ambitious spirit could not be satisfied with the ordinary sphere of usefulness now opened out to him. He had returned to England with higher aims than those of a mere incumbent or priest. He gave out that whilst in America he had received episcopal ordination, and it was his mission to establish or rather to revive the Primitive Episcopal Church. At a meeting held in All Saints' Church on February 18, 1831, the validity of Mr. West's orders was recognised. He was requested to act in his episcopal capacity, and the congre-

CHAP. XII.

G. M. West.

gation resolved that they would 'to the utmost of their power, support the dignity of his office.' So matters remained for another twelve months down to March 1832. The church was crowded with attentive hearers. The new bishop delivered lectures on behalf of the Primitive Episcopal Church; he made alterations in the Book of Common Prayer, which he published for the use of his church; he consecrated another bishop, the Rev. T. R. Matthews, D.D., and conferred orders on several priests and deacons. The chapel in Russell Street, bearing so sinister a reputation as St. Clement's Church, was taken by the body and solemnly consecrated by Bishop West, who was also applied to to perform the same ceremony for the Hebrew congregation in Sir Thomas's Buildings. This brilliant but unsubstantial career was doomed to a collapse as sudden as its inflation. An estrangement had crept in between the bishop and his less prominent coadjutor, Mr. Turner, which soon led to an open rupture. On March 27, 1832, Mr. Turner, as lessee of All Saints, gave legal notice to the bishop that he would be no longer permitted to occupy the pulpit. On the evening of the next day, the church being crowded to excess, in expectation of hearing a lecture from Mr. West, Mr. Turner presented himself to conduct the service, and prevented his late colleague from ascending the pulpit stairs. A scene of uproar then took place, which, according to the newspapers of the day, 'baffled all description.' The shouting and hooting of the men, the screaming of the women, and the scramble to carry away the books and cushions from the pews, created such a tumult that the noise resounded to a distance from the church, and attracted the attention of passengers in the neighbouring streets.

Russell Street Church.

Rupture.

Mr. West's friends at first rallied round him, and got up a subscription list for the erection of a cathedral in Soho Street, the ceremony on laying the first stone of which has already been described a few pages above. At the dinner, by which the proceedings were wound up, a

split in the camp again took place. Some of the bishop's subordinates rebelled against his assumption of authority, and the whole affair broke up in disorder. Mr. West soon after quitted the town for Birmingham, where, it is said, he met with a gratifying reception. In 1834 he returned to the United States, and associated himself with the Presbyterians, amongst whom he officiated as a minister for some years. In 1844 he returned again to Liverpool, and preached a few Sundays in a room in Newington. From Liverpool he visited Bristol, where, as usual, his talent and eloquence gained him for a time considerable popularity. He was next appointed the minister of St. Paul's Episcopal Chapel, Carruther's Close, Edinburgh, in which he officiated for several months, in despite of the inhibition of Bishop Terrott, who refused to confirm his appointment. On quitting Edinburgh he returned to America, and was not again heard of—at least officially—on this side the Atlantic. Mr. West's career presents a striking instance of commanding talent and great capabilities, utterly thrown away for want of prudence and consistency of conduct.[1]

CHAP. XII.

G. M. West.

Soon after Mr. West's departure, Mr. Turner retired, and the church was closed for a time. It was subsequently rented and licensed in connection with the Establishment, and reopened under the incumbency of the Rev. John Lyons, November 27, 1833. He remained until 1838, and was succeeded by the Rev. A. McConkey, who continued until 1847, when he was presented to the incumbency of St. James's, West Derby. All Saints' Church was soon after offered for sale by the devisees of Mr. Banister, and was purchased by the Roman Catholics, with whom it started on a fresh career as the Church of St. Joseph. The neighbourhood having become exceedingly populous, the church, as a mission station, has been

Lyons.

McConkey.

St. Joseph's Church.

[1] For most of the above particulars I am indebted to a little volume on 'Liverpool Churches and Chapels,' by the late Rev. David Thom, D.D., 1854.

CHAP. XII.

found valuable and useful, being usually attended by an overflowing congregation.

Tragic accident.

The most recent scene in the eventful history of this building has been one of an awfully tragic character. On Sunday evening, January 23, 1870, a mission service was being conducted by the Passionist Fathers. The church was so crowded that another service had to be held in a spacious school-room in the basement of the building, the access to which from the street is by a flight of stairs at the north end, from the landing of which another door opens upon the ground-floor of the church. About half-past seven in the evening, the service in the school-room was disturbed by a man in a state of intoxication, who interrupted the officiating priest in a loud and insulting tone. This roused the congregation, and cries were raised of 'Turn him out!' The man then became excited, gesticulated wildly, and set the bystanders at defiance. A scene of confusion ensued, and many rushed up the stairs to escape into the street. The noise of the uproar and trampling of feet became audible in the church above, and the congregation grew alarmed and excited. It is said that about this time a man outside gave the alarm of fire, and held a lantern up to one of the windows. In an instant a general panic seized those in the church, who were in perfect ignorance of what had been going on in the school-room, and a fearful stampede took place. Those rushing out of the church by the north door met the living torrent pouring out of the school-room, and in the collision bore down all before them. The struggling heap of writhing bodies in their convulsive efforts presented an impassable barrier to those behind attempting to escape, and in the *mêlée* no less than fifteen persons were trampled to death or suffocated. The presence of mind of the clergy conducting the service cannot be too much commended, especially as they must have been totally unaware of the nature of the alarm. After endeavouring to calm the excitement of the people, they recom-

menced the service where it had been suspended, and in this way inspired an amount of confidence which retained many in their places, and counteracted to a considerable extent the fearful danger. The bodies of the sufferers were attended to the grave on Wednesday, January 26, by a large concourse of people.

Tragic accident.

A little further to the northward, along Grosvenor Street, formerly stood the Lodge of the Toxophilite Society, called 'The Mersey Bowmen,' in the middle of its archery ground. This was a very fashionable resort in the last quarter of the eighteenth century. The ground has been built over, but the lodge still remains behind the houses, somewhat altered, but still displaying the device and cypher of the society carved in stone—a bow and arrows, with a hunting horn.

Mersey Bowmen.

Before quitting this locality it would be unpardonable to omit some notice of a queer old relic which once enjoyed a reputation of its own, but has long passed into oblivion from the outer world.

Leaving St. Joseph's Church, and ascending Rose Place, we turn along Fox Street to the right. On the left side, about midway between Rose Place and Richmond Row, opposite the end of Great Richmond Street, we turn under a low-browed arch, along a short passage, and find ourselves in an irregular open area of about 1,200 square yards, surrounded by covered galleries open to the area in two storeys. The aspect is something like that of a dilapidated eastern caravanserai, or one of the Russian bazaars. Figures in caftans and heavy boots, smoking and drinking *vodki*; or the impassible Eastern, with coloured turban and yellow slippers, sitting cross-legged and indulging in the mild chibouk, would seem more suitable occupants than the groups of squalid children amusing themselves on the muddy earthen floor of the area, or roaming about the wooden galleries. This is Richmond Woollen Hall, or, in more popular phrase, Richmond Fair. The buildings were erected in 1787 by

Richmond Fair.

CHAP. XII.

Richmond Fair.

Messrs. Thomas and William Dobb, as a mart for the sale of Yorkshire woollen goods; and the rooms opening upon the galleries were let out to dealers, both permanently and on the occasion of fairs, which were held quarterly. The situation, so far away from the centre of business, would seem to modern eyes very unsuitable for an undertaking of this kind; yet for a considerable number of years it enjoyed a very fair share of prosperity. The corporation of that day looked upon it with very jealous eyes. At a Common Council held April 2, 1788, it was resolved, 'that the records be searched, and a case be stated for the opinion of counsel, respecting the proper mode to be pursued in order to suppress the attempt now making to hold a market or fair for the purpose of vending different manufactures, at a place erected by Messrs. Dobb and others, near St. Anne's Church, called the Woollen Hall.' Nothing ever came of this motion, and the 'Fair' was allowed to pursue its humble course of industry. For many years a number of thriving shops in the cloth and carpet trade were located there, but the tendency towards concentration proved too strong. As population increased in the district, the trade fell off. One tradesman after another quitted, without finding successors, until the premises ultimately came to be occupied as cottages, principally tenanted by washerwomen.

Extension northward.

The progress of the town northward has been somewhat fitful and irregular, though always advancing. In 1796, Rose Place was the furthest limit north-eastwardly. In 1803 the line had been extended to Beau Street, with an outlying cluster of houses in Belle Street beyond. Great schemes were in progress at this time, which occupied many succeeding years in carrying out. The old circuitous narrow road into the town by way of Bevington Bush was improved by carrying a new street in a direct line from the bottom of Rose Place, northward to Mile End, opposite the present Virgil Street. To this new cut was given the name of Scotland Road. Fox

Scotland Road.

Street was prolonged by a new street northwards, and several new streets were laid out from Scotland Road eastward. The names of these new streets commemorated two of England's greatest naval heroes, Nelson and Collingwood, and the statesman, Lord Grenville, in the streets bearing their names; and the poets in Great Homer, Dryden, and Virgil Streets. In the year 1802, Mr. Edward Houghton, formerly of St. Anne Street, erected the mansion at the corner of Great Nelson and Great Homer Streets, long known as 'Squire Houghton's.'

Naval heroes and poets.

Dryden Street remained for many years the northern limit of this portion of the town. Down to 1830 the whole district beyond this line on both sides of Scotland Road was open fields, extending to Vauxhall Road to the west, and to Everton eastward. Even within this limit many pleasant nooks still remained. Collingwood Street, and to a considerable extent Virgil and Dryden Streets, consisted of walled gardens, planted with fruit trees and flowers, amongst the verdure of which nestled in each a snug cottage, to which the busy tradesman who resided habitually in the murky districts of Dale Street or Tithebarn Street could retire to spend a quiet Sunday, and recreate himself in the summer evenings. Kirkdale was considered too distant for the generality of those engaged in town.

Limits of town.

Westmorland Place was the first street which broke into the monotony of the rural district. It was laid out about 1804, and long remained a quiet street of gardens. During nearly a quarter of a century afterwards things remained in *statu quo*; during this period the town in its northern direction appeared stationary. It was the extension of the docks northward which gave the impulse to building, and drew out the town in this direction. About 1828 some enterprising builders purchased a field about halfway to Kirkdale, on the east side of the road, on which they formed a street, which they named Bostock Street. About 1830 operations were commenced

Westmorland Place.

Bostock Street, &c.

CHAP. XII.

on the west side the road a little beyond Mile End, when Tenterden, St. Martin's, Blenheim, and Woodstock Streets were formed and built up.

St. Anthony's Chapel.

At the corner of Dryden Street, fronting Scotland Road, there formerly stood a little quaint-looking brick building, surmounted by a cross, with a modest residence by its side. This was the original Roman Catholic Chapel of St. Anthony, which was erected about 1806, through the exertions of the Rev. Jean Baptiste Antoine Gerardot, a French ecclesiastic and *émigré*, who settled in Liverpool soon after the first Revolution as a teacher of French. He continued as the officiating priest until his decease in 1826. At his death it is said he bequeathed the chapel to the Order of Jesuits; but this appropriation was resisted by the then bishop, Dr. Penswick, and the building was continued as a chapel by the secular clergy. The great increase of the Roman Catholic population led to the sale of the old building and the erection of the present St. Anthony's Church, a little distance to the northward, in 1833. The architect was Mr. John Broadbent, a pupil of the celebrated Thomas Rickman. The building is imposing from its size and proportions. The style is Gothic, of the 'early pointed' period. A practised eye would perceive at a glance its connection with the school of Rickman, the characteristics of which may be summed up as combining correctness of detail with weakness and timidity in the *ensemble*. Windows without tracery, stuccoed fronts, absence of prominent features externally, plastered ceilings, and side galleries internally are nearly always to be met with in churches of this particular school. It is only fair, however, to acknowledge that several of Mr. Rickman's pupils advanced beyond their master in the path which he had pointed out. This is strikingly displayed in the tower of Walton Church, built by the architect of St. Anthony's, nearly about the same time. Mr. Broadbent's career was cut short by death at a comparatively early age.

New Church.

Broadbent.

From the year 1836 the tide of building set in with considerable vigour on both sides of Scotland Road. Most of the land between Dryden Street and St. Anthony's Church belonged to the Earl of Derby, who now began to form streets—Wilbraham Street and Place, Penrhyn Street, Leycester Street, &c.

Lord Derby's land.

The next public building erected in this locality was the Church of St. Matthew, corner of Wilbraham Street, to which rather an interesting history is attached. Down to the year 1838, notwithstanding the great increase of the Scottish population in Liverpool, the only churches connected with the Scottish Establishment were those in Rodney Street and Oldham Street, within a few hundred yards of each other. This was felt to be a great reproach, and in that year the two congregations resolved to unite their efforts to erect a church for the Scotch inhabitants at the north end. Considerable delay, however, took place, and it was not until the end of 1841 that they were able to purchase the land from the Earl of Derby which forms the site of the present church. Pending these arrangements, the Carpenters' Hall, in Bond Street, had been rented for public worship, and the Rev. John Ferries had been brought from Scotland as officiating minister. The foundation-stone of the new church, which was to be called St. Peter's, and of which Mr. John Cunningham was the architect, was laid by Mr. George Armstrong on March 22, 1842. Mr. Ferries was soon after appointed minister, and on September 14 he was solemnly ordained to the office according to the Presbyterian form. On March 21, 1843, the new church was opened for divine worship.

St. Matthew's Church.

Scotch Church.

About this time the disputes in the Church of Scotland on the non-intrusion question had reached their height, and a very few days after the opening of St. Peter's the disruption of the National Church took place. Mr. Ferries, profiting by the opening afforded by the retirement of so many ministers, obtained the appointment to the

Disruption.

CHAP. XII.

St. Matthew's Church.

living of Torryburn, in Fife, and resigned his charge in Liverpool. The consequences were most disastrous. The congregation were divided in opinion, but the majority sided with the seceding Free Church. Had it rested with them all would have gone on smoothly enough, but a serious legal difficulty arose. The land had not been conveyed, and was merely held on a contract with Lord Derby covenanting that a church and schools in connection with the Church of Scotland should be erected thereon. The trustees being divided in sentiment, no arrangement could be come to. For a time public worship in connection with the Free Church was connived at; but on an attempt being made in 1845 to settle Mr. John Wiseman as permanent minister, the trustees were threatened with a prosecution if they permitted it. The church was then closed, leaving the trustees under very serious liabilities for the payment of the building contracts and other expenses. At length, after waiting until 1847, powers were obtained by which Lord Derby conveyed the land to trustees for the Church of Scotland, but with power of sale unless certain conditions were fulfilled. Under these provisions the church was sold by auction on July 15, 1847, and purchased by the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway Company for 5,510*l.*, as a substitute for St. Matthew's, Key Street, taken down for the purposes of the company. In 1849, when possession was given, the church was consecrated under the title of the mother church, St. Matthew's. The building is a neat structure, in red stone, in the Norman style, with a tower and short spire at the west end.

Sale.

Methodist Chapel.

The chapel of the Methodist Free Church, at the opposite corner, was built about 1843.

All Saints' Church.

After the sale of All Saints' Church, Grosvenor Street, to the Roman Catholics, in 1847, an effort was made for the erection of a church in substitution. This was accomplished by the erection of All Saints' Church, Great

Nelson Street North, which was consecrated in 1849, and an ecclesiastical parish annexed to it. It is a neat stone building, of the 'early pointed' style, built from the designs of Mr. Arthur Hill Holme.

Hay market.

The wholesale market for hay, straw, provender, and vegetables in Great Homer Street, between Great Nelson and Juvenal Streets, has become of late years a very important institution. I have narrated in previous chapters the history of the old and new hay markets within the town, and their discontinuance in 1841, when two new markets were opened, one for the eastern and southern district, in Olive Street, and the other for the northern district, on the site now before us. Whether from the fact of the greatest amount of agricultural produce coming in from the north, or for what other reason, certain it is that from the first the north hay market took the lead and kept it. The southern one lingered for a few years, and was finally abandoned and the site converted into building-ground about 1849. With the increase of business it has been found necessary to enlarge the north market more than once, the site now containing an area of about 13,800 square yards. More recently its importance has been farther increased by its being constituted the wholesale mart for vegetables. This trade was formerly located in Queen Square, but had increased to such an extent as to overflow the neighbouring streets and cause considerable annoyance. To remedy this evil some very grandiose schemes were propounded. One plan was to take down the Theatre Royal and all the intervening buildings, and to extend the area of the market so as to include Williamson Square. Another proposal was to appropriate the land to the eastward of the Free Public Library, extending it by taking down the adjacent buildings. Dire was the contention in the local parliament for many months; the various conflicting interests set themselves in order of battle, and an expensive Parliamentary contest was expected, when a very simple and modest

CHAP. XII.

Vegetable Market.

proposal threw oil on the troubled waters and allayed the rising storm. It was suggested that by an arrangement of the hours of sale the hay market possessed ample accommodation for both classes of traffic. This suggestion was adopted, and on July 7, 1866, the market was opened for the sale of vegetable produce in the early morning, and for hay, straw, and provender during the later hours of the day. The system has worked admirably for the convenience of both buyers and sellers, and a very large amount of business is here transacted.

The area has been further utilised as a parade-ground for the Volunteers. For their protection in wet weather and for the use of the market, extensive sheds have been erected, giving 'ample room and verge enough' for a battalion to manœuvre under their shelter.

Summary.

We have now completed our survey of this district of the original borough, by no means the least interesting of its divisions. The steady, unrelenting progress of brick, stone, and pavement, advancing yard by yard and year by year, though not so rapid as in the district next to be surveyed, has been more uniform. The worst feature in this conquest of the artificial over the natural is the entire absorption of the area. Not a tree or shrub or blade of grass is left to cheer the eyes of the inhabitant or to refresh the wayfarer.

In London these things are managed somewhat better. Even in the most squalid neighbourhoods, especially of late years, a little foliage, however poor and scanty, and a few open spaces where with diligence a tint of verdure is preserved through the summer, are allowed to remain. Where neither art nor nature are permitted to exercise their improving influences, what can be expected other than coarseness and brutality?

Drawn by C. & C. Pyne. Engraved by J. Thomas.

ST. GEORGE'S CHURCH, HYDE-ROAD.

TO THE REV. R. D. HINCHCLIFF, M.A. F.S.A. THIS PLATE IS RESPECTFULLY INSCRIBED BY THE PUBLISHERS.

FISHER, SON & CO. LONDON. 1829.

CHAPTER XIII.

EVERTON.

CHAP. XIII.

General aspect.

THE modern New Zealander or American, approaching Liverpool from the sea, will perceive, if the heavy drapery of black smoke will permit so extended a view, on the left hand in the distance, over the long line of masts and rigging, a ridge or eminence crowned by a church tower on the summit. Up this slope creep numerous narrow streets and avenues, flanked by monotonous lines of brick walls and slated roofs. Not a patch of verdure offers an oasis on which the eye can rest. With the exception of a few spires here and there shooting up above the common level, there is nothing to break the dull uniformity of the whole aspect. Many famous towns in Italy and in the east, are beautiful and picturesque from a distance, but squalid and wretched on a nearer approach. Everton with a lovely natural position, has nothing in its distant aspect either picturesque or beautiful. When examined internally, it is — not exactly squalid — but bourgeois, common, and uninteresting.

Natural beauty.

Fifty years ago, a very different picture presented itself to the gazer from the westward. The crown of the hill and its western slope were sufficiently built on to take away the appearance of baldness or nakedness, and yet not so densely as to crowd it inconveniently. From the umbrageous foliage of their gardens and pleasure-grounds,

CHAP. XIII.

View.

noble mansions, in tier above tier, looked out on a lovely landscape. Town and country, land and water, lay stretched beneath their view, whilst the distant sea on the one side with its ever-shifting panorama of arriving and departing vessels, and on the other, the undulating outline of the distant Welsh mountains, afforded a background worthy of the scene. Art had been subsidised to heighten the effects of nature in the only naturally picturesque piece of scenery in the neighbourhood, and the result was in every way beautiful. On bright summer evenings when the sun was declining towards the Cheshire heights, the rich ruddy glow of reflected light from the windows of the terraced mansions embosomed in verdure, has not unaptly been presented by an enthusiastic cleric as a type of the latter-day glory. Everton was a suburb of which Liverpool had every reason to be proud.

Changes.

I wish to indicate briefly the history of these transformations; how the barren sandstone ridge with its waste of heather and gorse, became enclosed and civilised; how its hanging fields developed into gardens and pleasure-grounds surrounding the abodes of wealth and luxury; how these in their turn one by one

> Were melted into air, into thin air;
> And, like the baseless fabric of a vision,
> Leave not a rack behind;

how the builder and speculator finally reigned triumphant, as street by street, cottage by cottage, slowly advanced up the ascent or crept along its terraced sides, until the pretty village of half a century ago, has developed into the crowded town with its 100,000 inhabitants and its 11,000 municipal electors. The next stage in its history I have no prophetic inspiration to shadow forth. Whatever it may be, it must be left to a future generation to realise and record.

Site.

The township of Everton consists of about 692 acres

of land occupying the summit and the eastern and western slopes of one of those long red sandstone ridges, which are of common occurrence in Lancashire and Cheshire. Its highest point, in St. George's Churchyard, is 250 feet above the sea level, which is the greatest elevation of any land within a considerable distance. From this point the ground falls rapidly to the north and west, with a gentle inclination eastward. The ridge itself gradually declines southward to the Necropolis, where the level is 199 feet above the sea. The western slope is very steep, falling not less than 150 feet between Church Road (now Heyworth Street) and Great Homer Street. The eastern aspect has a gentle inclination which gradually rises to a level as it proceeds southward.

Elevation.

The soil is not naturally fertile, and in its primitive condition doubtless resembled its sister ridge of Bidston Hill on the opposite side of the Mersey, an irregular common, covered with furze bushes, heath, and scanty pasturage.

Soil.

Our earliest information of Everton is derived from Domesday Book, in which, however, it is not entered as a manor like the neighbouring townships of Kirkdale, Bootle, Orrell, &c. After enumerating the several manors in the hundred of West Derby with the tenants and their obligations, the following significant note appears: 'In Otringmele (Orrell) Herleshala (Halsall) Hiretun (Everton) erant tres hidæ quietæ a geldo carucatarium terræ, a forisfactura sanguinis, a feminæ violentia. Alias consuetudines reddebant omnes.' 'In Orrell, Halsall, and Everton, there were three hides of land of which the cultivators were exempt from tax, from fines for bloodshed or for violence to women.' The first privilege all can appreciate. The two latter, one would think, could not have improved the desirability of Everton as a place of residence in that remote age.

Domesday.

The origin of the name is sufficiently indicated by the

Name.

CHAP. XIII.

spelling above, *Hiretun* or Higher town, expressive of its position on the highest land in the neighbourhood.

Manor.

The precise period of the formation of Everton into a separate manor is uncertain, but it is recognised as such in a precept 9th Henry III. (1225) addressed to the sheriff of Lancaster, ordering that the king's tenants in Everton should be permitted to have reasonable *estovers* [1] out of the king's wood in West Derby. This is sufficient proof that timber was a scarce article in Everton at that period.

Lords of Manor.

At the time of the compilation of Domesday Book, Everton formed part of the large grant of lands to Roger de Poictou, after whose forfeiture it reverted to the Crown. In 1229, it was bestowed on Ranulph, Earl of Chester. By marriage with one of his daughters, it passed to William de Ferrers, Earl of Derby. By the forfeiture of one of his descendants, Everton became in 1254 the property of Edmund, Earl of Derby, younger son of Henry III. By an inquisition taken in 1327 it is recorded that there were at that time nineteen *nativi* or serfs holding twenty-four oxgangs [2] of land, at a rent of

Value.

4*l.* 16*s.* per annum. At this time the lands of Liverpool were valued at 30*l.* 10*s.* per annum, and those in Wavertree at 7*l.* 9*s.* 4*d.* In 1352, Henry Earl of Lancaster and Derby made over the manor of Everton to John Barrett, at that time constable of the Castle of Liverpool, at the rent of 4*l.* yearly. Reverting back to the duchy, it became vested in the Crown by the accession of Henry of Bolingbroke, and so remained until 1629. In that

Sale by Charles I.

year, the unfortunate King Charles I. endeavouring at a

[1] Estover—Lat. *Estoverium*—was, in the Middle Ages, a permission to cut wood for the purposes of agricultural implements or building.

[2] There is some difficulty in determining the exact quantity of a bovate or oxgang of land, which varied in different places and at different times. It really meant the area which could be kept in tillage by one pair of oxen. Allowing 13 acres to be a fair average, there would be 312 acres of enclosures in Everton, which is more by about 30 acres than the whole quantity of enclosures in 1716.

time of pressure to raise money from every available source, sold to certain citizens of London, amongst other possessions, the manor of West Derby. The grantees, by virtue of this purchase, claimed the manors of Wavertree and Everton as part and parcel of West Derby. This was resisted by the copyholders of the other two townships, which led to a long course of litigation, continuing down to the year 1639, when Wavertree and Everton having established their claim to be considered as separate manors, the manorial rights were sold by the king to the grantees of West Derby manor. In the same year the three manors were conveyed to James Lord Stanley and Strange. In 1667 Charles Earl of Derby entered into an agreement with the copyholders by which the copyhold rents were settled, and one-third part of the commons was allowed to be enclosed and leased to the copyholders. In the year 1702, by the decease of William, Earl of Derby, without male issue, the manor of Everton descended to his only surviving daughter, Henrietta Maria, Baroness Ashburnham. In 1716, by the united action of the copyholders, an arrangement was made by which on payment of 115*l.* and a rent of 1*s.* per acre, the trustees of Lady Ashburnham leased to the copyholders for a term of 1000 years, the whole of the remaining unenclosed lands, amounting to 115 acres of large measure (about 245 acres statute). Some disputes arose in consequence of the Everton lessees having enclosed lands claimed by the copyholders of West Derby; but in 1723 an amicable arrangement was come to by the grant to West Derby of 5½ acres of land and a payment in money of about 200*l.* The manorial rights were sold in 1717 to Mr. Isaac Greene, solicitor, who also purchased those of Wavertree and West Derby. One of Mr. Greene's daughters and co-heiresses, married Bamber Gascoyne, Esq., of Barking, Essex. His son, Bamber Gascoyne, resided at Childwall Hall, and represented Liverpool in three Parliaments, from 1780 to 1796. His daughter

Disputes.

Enclosures.

Lease of wastes.

Disputes with West Derby.

Gascoyne.

CHAP. XIII.

and only surviving child, married the Marquis of Salisbury, whose son and successor is the present lord of the manor of Everton.

Lands.

The ancient enclosed lands of Everton, the greater part of which are still held by copyhold tenure, were

Whitefields.

divided into three parts—the Hongfields,[1] the Whitefields, and the Netherfields. The Whitefields were probably so called from the colour of the surface (daisies or white clover). They occupied the area between Everton Road and Boundary Lane from west to east, and from West Derby Road to Breck Road from south to north.

Netherfields.

The Netherfields covered the western slope of the hill below Netherfield Road north and south. The northern portion of these lands was open and unenclosed previous

Hongfields.

to the lease of 1716. The Hongfields were situated between Hongfield Lane (now Breckfield Road north) and the eastern boundary of the township. The greater part of these fields belonged to the lord of the manor. The name Hong or Hangfield has been supposed to mean the hanging fields, or fields on the slope; but this is scarcely probable, as the site is the least sloping of any in the township. The lands south of Prince Edwin Street

Freeholds.

and west of Everton Road, are of freehold tenure, but how or when enfranchised, I am unable to state. The cluster of dwellings forming the site of the original

Leaseholds.

village are of ancient copyhold tenure. The remainder of the land in the township, being 255 acres or two-fifths of the whole, was as waste land comprised in the lease from Lady Ashburnham in 1716. These lands consisted of several detached portions. On the eastern side they occupied the space between Breckfield Road (south) and Oakfield Road, extending northward from Whitefield Road until they met the ancient Hongfields. Centrally they extended from east to west between Beacon Lane

[1] In Gregson's 'Fragments,' in an abstract of an inquisition, temp. Hen. VII. 1488, this name is spelt *Houghfield*; but as this spelling is found nowhere else, it is probably a clerical error.

and Netherfield Road, and from the boundary of Kirkdale southwards as far as Priory Lane and St. George's Hill, including the site of Bronte House and the large field to the eastward, called the Great Sleeper. CHAP. XIII.

There can be no doubt that the cluster of houses forming the site of the ancient village of Hiretune, Yerton or Everton, carry back their origin to a very remote antiquity. The progress of improvement, especially in the narrow and dangerous thoroughfare of the 'village' so called, has swept away most of the ancient relics, but within the memory of persons now living, many quaint and venerable specimens still remained standing. Timber being scarce and stone abundant, the fronts of the houses usually presented pinnacled gables with mullioned windows. To some of these I shall have occasion hereafter to refer. Down to the latter end of the eighteenth century, Everton slumbered on as a quiet and retired agricultural hamlet. No Village.

moving accidents by flood or field

interrupted the quiet tenor of its history.

The most memorable event in its annals, is the visit of Prince Rupert, who established his head-quarters during the siege of Liverpool, in 1644, at a cottage on the brow (now demolished), long known by his name. Prince Rupert.

Mention may here be made of another relic of antiquity, also destroyed, which filled a prominent place in the landscape for several centuries: the ancient beacon, which stood on the highest point of the ridge, where St. George's Church has since been built. It was not a building of any great importance, but interesting from its position, being within sight on the east and north of the beacon towers on Billinge and Ashhurst hills, and in clear weather, of Black Combe in Cumberland, and on the west and south having a clear view of Moel Famma and the Denbighshire range, with Beeston Castle in the distance. Many representations of it are in existence. It con- Beacon.

CHAP. XIII.

Beacon.

sisted of a tower of red sandstone about 18 feet square and 25 or 30 feet in height, in two storeys with a raised turret at one angle having a receptacle for the faggots and brush-wood used for the beacon fire.

Mr. Gregson, in his 'Fragments,' expresses the opinion that the Beacon was erected about 1220 by Ranulph de Blundeville, Earl of Chester, on whom the manor was bestowed by Henry III. The date is in any case a mistake, as the grant was not made until the year 1229, but the statement is an assumption without the slightest authority. There are in existence several 'inspeximus' rolls or inquisitions of the manors in this part of the country taken in the thirteenth, fourteenth, and fifteenth centuries, which enter into very minute particulars, but in none of them is any mention made of the existence of this beacon.

When erected.

The probability is that it was erected in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, at the time when public feeling was strained to the highest pitch in expectation of the Spanish Armada, and preparations were made in every quarter to combine and utilise all the slender resources at the command of the country. With this the style of the architecture is perfectly in accordance.

Although professedly kept in repair by the township, the Beacon tower had fallen by the middle of last century into a state of dilapidation and neglect. It was inhabited occasionally by squatters, the last occupant having been an old cobbler, who resided there about

Beacon destroyed.

1783. At length, after a stormy night in the early part of 1803, the tower was found in the morning to have fallen to the ground. Whether some substantial aid had been given to assist the storm in the work of destruction, as was shrewdly suspected at the time, must remain a moot point.

Slow progress.

The progress of Everton down to a recent period was exceedingly slow. I have already mentioned that at the time of the inquisition in 1327, there were nineteen

nativi or husbandmen. This would imply a population of about 100 to 110 souls. In 1790 the number of houses was 67, and the population only 370. 1790.

Soon after this date the beauty of the situation began to attract notice, and investments were made by some of the wealthier of the Liverpool merchants, and residences erected, principally on Everton Terrace, and on the west side of Netherfield Road. In 1802 the number of houses had increased to 87, and the inhabitants to 499. In 1816 there were 175 inhabited houses, which would give a population of about 1,060. Soon after this date the tide of population began to set in with greater strength. A.D. 1802. A.D. 1816.

We possess singularly ample means of tracing the progress and transformations of this district. Mr. Robert Syers published his 'History of Everton' in 1830. In this he gives a map which was prepared in 1790, showing every house and property, with the names of the owners, and other particulars at that time. He also presents us with an entire survey of the state of the township, made by himself in 1829, in which almost every inhabitant of the least note is distinguished by a most Boswellian minuteness of portraiture, and a *naïveté* which is racy and amusing in the highest degree. From the year 1830 to 1870 I am able from my own observations to supplement the earlier descriptions. Let me then entreat the courteous reader to entrust himself to my guidance whilst we make a perambulation, and note whatever appears interesting or remarkable in the wondrous changes which this locality has passed through during the last half century. Syers's History. A.D. 1830.

We will commence our survey at the top of Richmond Row, the old highway to Everton. This was originally a narrow deep sandy road, which went by the name of Causeway Lane. A little below Soho Street, on the south side, stood the Loggerheads Tavern, a long low building, which served as a halfway house of call for the visitors to the rural village up the hill. The building still Richmond Row.

CHAP. XIII.

remains, but much modernised, and converted into a gin-palace.

After passing Boundary Place, a row of houses displays itself on the left, the fronts of which are set back within an enclosed area, and curved into the crescent form.

Everton Crescent.

This is Everton Crescent, once upon a time considered as a very aristocratic quarter, and the first link in the chain connecting Everton with Liverpool. These houses were erected in 1808, and the years following, by Messrs. Webster, Bibby, and others, who jointly purchased two fields extending back as far as Upper Beau Street, and laid them out as building land. The Crescent houses were large and commodious, with pleasant gardens at the back. Mr. John Wright, mayor in 1816, resided for several years in the Crescent. Those who are curious to learn further particulars of the residents in 1830, with a little pleasant chirruppy gossip concerning them, will find it all duly recorded in Mr. Robert Syers's history.

Decay.

With the progress of time and the advance of building, Everton Crescent lost the bloom of its youth. Its wealthy denizens flitted to more congenial neighbourhoods, and though it struggled vigorously for some years to maintain a sort of quasi-respectability, it was at last obliged to succumb. Its larger houses were subdivided into smaller tenements, and recently even the abode of the quondam chief magistrate has been converted into a gin-palace, which has obtruded its audacious front, covered-with gilding and plate glass, across the area, even to the front of the street.

Holmes.

Above Watmough Street a row of noble houses was erected about 1826, by Messrs. John and Henry Holmes, who filled at one time a very high position in the mercantile world. Mr. John Holmes occupied the civic chair in the year 1849–50. The firm were bankers in Douglas, Isle of Man, where they were largely engaged in the herring fishery, and in chemical manufacturing in Liverpool. At the decease of Mr. John Holmes, who was the

last surviving partner, about 1854, it was discovered that the reputed wealth of the firm had no real foundation. The bank in Douglas closed, involving in ruin many of the poor islanders; and the complicated affairs of the firm were wound up under the direction of the Court of Chancery. These houses have undergone the usual transformation, another gin-palace having absorbed two of the mansions, and thrust itself over the area into the street. Holmes.

A little above these houses formerly stood a handsome villa, commenced about 1790 by Mr. William Mayor, and completed by Mr. Nathaniel McKnight. The grounds of this house extended back a considerable distance. The site is now covered by shops and cottages. McKnight.

The detached house at the corner of Netherfield Road, formerly called Acre House, was built before 1790, having a large garden attached. In 1822 it was the residence of Mr. William Dixon, manager of the City of Dublin Packet Company. On December 4 in that year, by the effect of a storm of wind, a stack of chimneys was precipitated on the roof of the house, and caused the death of two infant daughters of the occupier. In 1845 the grounds were broken up, and a row of houses built on the garden fronting Everton Brow. Acre House.

Let us now turn to the opposite side of the Brow. Prior to 1830, the district now so populous and crowded lying between Everton Brow and Islington, from north to south; and from Everton Road to the boundary of the borough, a little above Soho Street, from east to west, was almost entirely open fields. With the exception of a few houses in the village, and Mr. Gregson's house at the corner of Everton Road, not a single dwelling existed; nor were there any roads across the land. Open fields.

I have already described in chapter xii. the pleasant enclosure of Birchfield, with its three detached villas, the northernmost of which belonged to Mr. William Ewart. About 1810 he added to his possessions three fields, extending from his mansion northwards to Everton Brow, Ewart.

CHAP. XIII.

fringed with a row of noble Lombardy poplars. These fields are now the site of Rokeby, Canterbury, and the neighbouring streets. A great part of the remaining land to the eastward belonged to the family of Shaw of Everton. It had previously been the property of the Halsalls, one of the oldest families connected with Everton. In 1667 William Halsall and Robert Carter were deputed by the copyholders to negotiate with Charles Earl of Derby for a settlement of the fines and quit rents, and for the enclosure of one-third part of the commons. In the lease of the commons from Lady Ashburnham's trustees in 1716, Henry Halsall has about 55 acres (statute) allotted to him. The last of the Halsalls died about 1780, without issue, leaving his property to his widow, who married Mr. John Shaw, of Liverpool, and on her decease bequeathed to him the Everton estate.

Halsalls.

Shaw.

About 1826 Mr. Thomas Shaw, who had succeeded to the property, conceived the idea of bringing this land into the market for building. The first step was to cut a street through the domain connecting Moss Street, on the south, with Netherfield Road, on the north. This was a communication much needed, as up to this date persons travelling north and south were obliged to make a detour either along Everton Road, to the east, or along Soho Street, to the west. The cutting of this road was a work of considerable time and labour, the surface being very uneven and the ground hard, solid rock. At the latter end of 1829 the street was opened through, and building commenced on the west side. The houses were required to be built to a uniform design, and of a superior class. The streets to the west of Shaw Street: Salisbury Street, Canterbury Street, &c., running north and south, and William Henry Street and Langsdale Street (originally Church Street, Soho), running east and west, followed soon after. The original design was to form a new quarter of respectable dwellings; but in all such cases the wants of the people are the supreme law, and

Shaw Street.

Salisbury Street, &c.

predominate over all arbitrary regulations. The demand for large houses slackened, while the multitude clamoured for more and more accommodation, and thus it came to pass that streets commenced with a certain amount of pretence and style gradually degenerated into mere rows of cottages. Canterbury and Salisbury Streets may be taken as examples. At the south end a number of goodly mansions were erected between 1830 and 1835. The demand subsequently fell off, and the land remained many years idle. When building revived a lower class of house was called for. As we proceed northward along the streets a visible deterioration will be manifest, until at length the buildings merge into rows of mere cottages, courts, and alleys. Shaw Street, owing to the special restrictions imposed on building, has better maintained its respectability, though there can be no doubt that the large houses originally erected have lost much of their prestige.

Canterbury Street, &c.

Let us now take a glance along the streets of this quarter. It does not boast of a large number of public buildings, but some of them are well worthy of notice.

Entering Shaw Street from the north en , we observe that a large portion of the land on the east side is still open, forming a sort of park or pleasure-ground, in two divisions, following the original boundary-lines of the estate. As this arrangement was only made for a limited period, apprehensions have been entertained of the land at no distant period being covered with buildings. Attempts have been made to induce the corporation to purchase it for the public benefit; but appeals to an empty exchequer are not usually attended with much success.

Shaw Street.

The first building which attracts our attention is the Welsh Wesleyan Church or Chapel, erected in 1866. It is not very ecclesiastical in its appearance, but the design of the façade possesses considerable merit. It presents an advanced centre, with three arched entrances below, and an open loggia above, having eight Corinthian columns, in pairs, supporting an entablature, with pedi-

Welsh Wesleyan Church.

CHAP. XIII.

ment over. The recessed flanks are in a similar style. We are, unfortunately, too much reminded of the shopkeeper who placed all his goods in the window. The design is all front. The wings overlap at the sides, reducing the real corpus of the building to a mean-looking brick structure which is starved and impoverished by the finery displayed in front.

St. Augustine's.

St. Augustine's Church stands in a very prominent position, on an elevated platform on the east side, forming a suitable termination to the vista along Langsdale Street. This was the first building erected in the district. It was built in 1830–1, from the designs of Mr. Broadbent. The style is what may be termed the severe Greek. The windows have the odious form which had a short run of fashion about forty years since, of diminishing in their width upwards. Indeed, the whole design has the appearance of a reduced, impoverished copy of the Church of St. Pancras, London. The tower, square in its lower stage, octagonal above, with columns at the angles, points in the same direction.

College.

Immediately contiguous to St. Augustine's stands the Collegiate Institution, or the Liverpool College, as it is now called, one of the three excellent institutions for high-class education of which Liverpool can boast. Of these the Royal Institution School was the first in point of time. The High School of the Liverpool Institute (originally the Mechanics' Institution) followed. This being established on a purely secular basis, it was thought desirable to found another educational institution, combining High, Middle, and Lower Schools in connection with the Established Church. The scheme met with very cordial support, and on October 22, 1840, the foundation-stone of the present building was laid by the late Earl of Derby (then Lord Stanley). On January 6, 1843, the building was opened with great *éclat*, on which occasion the Right Hon. W. E. Gladstone delivered one of his noblest orations. From that time to the present

College opened. A.D. 1843.

the schools have been carried on with great success, many distinguished scholars having here received their elementary education. In the year 1870 the Liverpool College had the distinguished honour of saluting one of its pupils (Mr. Pendlebury) as the Senior Wrangler of the University of Cambridge. Our business, however, is more with the material structure. The architect was Mr. Harvey Lonsdale Elmes, at that period in the full tide of his short but brilliant career.

Design.

The design of the front façade is simple, broad, and noble, but a little too suggestive of the front of King Edward's Schools at Birmingham, designed by Sir Charles Barry. The building is erected with red sandstone, in the Tudor Gothic style, displaying an advanced centre, having a bold arched recess and octagonal angle turrets, with corresponding wings, having large projecting oriels. The connecting flanks have buttresses, with octagonal pinnacles.

Building.

The building is divided into four storeys, the upper one lighted from the roof. The summit of the front is crowned with a crenellated battlement. The centre gable contains the arms of the institution, with the motto, 'Non solum ingenii, sed etiam virtutis.' The internal plan is simple and well-arranged. Provision is made for the three departments of the High, Middle, and Lower Schools, without interference with each other. The lecture-room is in the rear of the building, octagonal in form, with two galleries. It is capable of accommodating a large audience; but in this respect too much has been attempted, the increase of accommodation being obtained at rather too great a sacrifice of comfort. It is unfortunate that the building has been brought too near the street. Exception also might be taken to the large blocks of stone with which the masonry is constructed, as being contrary to the genius of the style adopted; but for neither of these defects is the architect responsible, as he was not employed to carry out his own design.

On the south of the college stands a chapel belonging

CHAP. XIII.

Baptist Chapel.

to the Particular Baptist denomination, which was erected in 1848, after the sale of Byrom Street Chapel to the Railway Company. It is a red brick building, with stone dressings, having a recessed portico in the centre of the front, with two columns between antæ, and a pediment over. It is almost an exact reproduction in design of the Church of St. Matthias, which stood on the site of the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway Station, Great Howard Street, and was burnt down April 10, 1848.

Presbyterian Church.

Nearly opposite stands the Reformed Presbyterian Church, which has a neat white stone Gothic front, having two turretted buttresses, with panelled pinnacles, terminated by crocketted finials. The windows have geometrical tracery.

St. Francis Xavier's Church.

A little lower down the hill, occupying an extensive isolated block of land, fronting Salisbury Street, we find the Church of St. Francis Xavier, with the Jesuit College and schools attached. This is the most extensive ecclesiastical establishment in Liverpool, and does credit to the energy, enterprise, and perseverance of the reverend fathers by whom it is carried on. The church was erected in 1849–50, from the designs of Mr. Scholes, of London, and the collegiate and school buildings have been in a constant state of progression down to the present time. The church may be fairly pronounced one of the most successful specimens of church architecture in the town. There is nothing about it flaunting or pretentious, but everything is in good taste and in perfect harmony. The north end, which corresponds to the ordinary west end—the Catholics not being pedantic as to orientation—displays a centre, with two subordinate aisle gables. The window tracery is geometrical, of that light elegant character taken from Beverley Minster or the choir of Lincoln Cathedral. The side front to Salisbury Street has seven bays, with windows having two lights each, with buttresses terminating in gabled pinnacles. There is a tower at the north-west angle 80 ft. in height, in three

stages, with bold set-offs. The principal entrance is under the tower, having a centre pier, with geometrical tracery and crocketted gable. The interior is pleasing, having nave, aisles, and clerestory, the pier arches supported by polished shafts of Drogheda limestone. It is scarcely so successful as the exterior. In front of the choir there is an enormous cross of wood, gilt and richly ornamented, which is regarded by some as a masterpiece of art. To others it appears as a tasteless excrescence. Who shall decide? Shall we say, 'De gustibus non disputandum est'? The buildings of the College High School, adjoining, are of red brick, with stone dressings, in a florid late style of mediæval art. Recently some further erections have been made in a style somewhat varied, and a large red stone school building for the poor has been built behind. There is something interesting in this gradual agglomeration of conventual buildings of varied style and character, combining into one group, which carries us back into the ages when priories and convents constituted a large portion of the architecture of every city. There is one blemish, however, which cannot be too soon removed. In front of these groups of buildings, all harmonising together, as partaking of the mediæval character, there stands a large ordinary brick house, having no character at all, but that of commonplace. Probably, however, it is doomed, and only waiting for the sentence of execution.

Church.

Schools.

School buildings.

A hundred yards distant, on the west side of Salisbury Street, the schools belonging to St. Augustine's Church present a very neat façade, in the Gothic style, consisting of a main gable, with bold projecting buttresses, a tower, with conical slated roof, and some minor erections of corresponding character.

St. Augustine's Schools.

A little more to the northward, at the corner of Salisbury and William Henry Streets, stands the large block of buildings forming the schools of the Crescent Congregational Church. The building was erected in 1847, at an

Crescent Schools.

CHAP. XIII.

expense of about 5,000*l.*, and is a noble example of philanthropic effort by a single Nonconformist congregation. The exterior design is Elizabethan or Jacobean in style, in a bluish-white stone, with red stone dressings.

St. Timothy's Church.

Further to the north-west, fronting Rokeby Street, the Church of St. Timothy rears its modest front, in red brick and white stone. This is essentially a poor man's church, all the seats being free. Wedged in between the adjoining houses, there is little room for architectural display, even had the means permitted it. The main feature of the front is a three-light window, with flowing tracery and gable above, flanked by a small tower, crowned with a slated spire, having an open gallery under the base. The church itself, owing to its position, is necessarily lighted by skylights.

Crescent Chapel.

Turning up Everton Brow, a walk of a few yards brings us to the Crescent Congregational Chapel, erected in 1835–6, in lieu of the chapel in Hotham Street described in chapter viii. The building is large and commodious, built with white stone in the classical style. The front to Everton Brow has a recessed portico in the centre, with fluted Ionic columns in antis, surmounted by a pedimented gable. The architect was Mr. Joseph Franklin, who filled for some years the office of corporation surveyor.

Streets.

Ascending the brow, we will next cast a glance at the conglomeration of streets between Shaw Street and Everton Road. The arrangement at first sight seems what Brother Jonathan would call '*slantindicular*,' both vertically and horizontally. The steepness is, of course, natural. The oblique and irregular lines of street arise from the disposition of the old boundaries of the land, it being one of the peculiarities of Liverpool building that any combination of different owners so as to produce regular lines has been almost entirely ignored. A painstaking antiquary may almost always be able to trace in the tortuous avenues and oblique angles the original

form of the fields before they were covered with houses. This district was laid out in streets and covered with buildings in the twenty years between 1842 and 1862.

Brunswick Road.

Turning to the right, up Radcliffe Street, we pass successive rows of monotonous cottages until we emerge near the upper corner of Brunswick Road. As this thoroughfare is in the township of West Derby, it is not included in our present survey. The corner where Everton commences is brilliant with the usual flaunting ornamentation of the gin-shop. This corner was in former times well known by the name of 'Gregson's Well,' from a public spring, which was surrounded by an iron palisade, with steps leading down to the level of the water. At the early part of the eighteenth century there existed here a modest mansion, with a small demesne attached, belonging to and in the occupation of Dr. Daniel Fabius, most probably a German by birth or extraction. Dr. Fabius was of the Baptist persuasion—or Anabaptists, as they were called in those days—and he collected round him, about 1700, a small congregation, who worshipped in his house. A chapel was subsequently erected, which appears to have been taken down when the congregation removed, in 1722, to the chapel in Byrom Street, afterwards St. Stephen's Church. In 1707 a small plot of ground fronting Everton Road was presented to the Baptists by Dr. Fabius for a burial-ground, which continued so to be used by the denomination until the construction of the Necropolis, in 1825. Dr. Fabius died comparatively young, and was interred in the little cemetery, where his tombstone is to be seen, with the following inscription :—

Gregson's Well.

Dr. Fabius.

Chapel.

Removal.

Burial-ground.

In this Dormitory reposeth the body of Daniel Fabeus, who departed this life y^e^ 12th of Aprill, 1718, aged 37.

New Chapel.

After remaining more than forty years neglected and almost forgotten, the cemetery has recently been made use of as a site for a chapel, which covers a large proportion of the area, leaving only a narrow margin round.

CHAP. XIII.

What has become of the remains of mortality of which the ground was full; whether they were dug up and 'scattered at the grave's mouth, as when one cutteth and cleaveth wood upon the earth,' or whether they were only disturbed sufficiently to carry down the walls of the building, I am unable to say; but in any case the bad taste of the whole proceeding cannot be too much reprobated. The tombstones have been torn away from the family graves and placed upright round the walls of the enclosure, where they bear silent and reproachful testimony to the sacrilegious violence which has been practised on them. In themselves they are very interesting records of old and respectable Nonconformist families, the Johnsons and Houghtons, the Barneses and Wedgwoods, the Hopes and the Holmeses, the Smallshaws and the Fishers, &c. The Indian savage will travel hundreds of miles to visit the graves of his ancestors and deposit some small token of his reverence for their memory. The Christian of the nineteenth century estimates the tombs of his fathers at so much per square yard, and to save the cost of a few hundred pounds, builds the walls of his temple upon their bones!

Desecration.

After the death of Dr. Fabius the house and land were bought by the Johnsons, who were very prominent people in Everton at that period. By them the house was enlarged. About 1786 the property was purchased by Mr. William Gregson, almost rebuilt, and fitted up in a style of magnificence. The Gregson family occupied an important place in Liverpool for many years. William Gregson was mayor in 1769, and John Gregson in 1784. When the alterations were in progress Mr. Gregson fancied the public road came too near the front of his house. The overseers of the highways, willing to oblige so magnificent a personage, consented to alter it so as to give adequate space in front of the mansion. Hence the awkward curve in the road as it now exists, which it may cost some thousands of pounds to make straight.

Johnsons.

Gregson.

Necropolis.

At the opposite corner is the Necropolis, or city of the dead. During the first quarter of the present century the provision for interment in Liverpool was deficient and discreditable. The burial-grounds of the parish churches, St. Nicholas's and St. Peter's, had become overcharged to such an extent that it was a common practice to take up the old coffins in order to make room for fresh deposits. St. John's large cemetery was originally intended for the poor, and had become crowded with the remains of mortality. Whatever small space existed round the churches was eagerly availed of even in the most crowded and public thoroughfares. The Nonconformists were even in a worse plight. Their places of worship being usually surrounded by very narrow strips of land, every available nook and corner had to be economised for the purposes of interment. With a view to remedy this state of things, a company was formed in 1823 for the establishment of a cemetery which should be open to all sects and parties. A field called the Mill Hey, containing about five acres, was purchased from Mr. Plumpton; and on February 1, 1825, the first interment took place, being that of Mrs. Martha Hope, a member of one of the old dissenting families of Liverpool. The service was performed by the Rev. Dr. Raffles, who delivered an address appropriate to the occasion. The ground was laid out in a manner much superior to anything of the kind hitherto adopted. The buildings and entrance were designed by Mr. John Foster. They consist of two pedimented gables, connected by a colonnade in the Grecian Doric, with the entablature and details fully carried out. The style is massive and grave; well suited to the purposes of the structure.

A.D. 1823.

Opened, A.D. 1825.

Buildings.

For a long period this cemetery enjoyed a large amount of popularity, and the shareholders divided a considerable percentage; but after a prosperous career of about thirty years it rather began to decline. Other cemeteries, in accordance with the growing public feeling, had been

CHAP. XIII.

Revelations.

established. Most of the ground had been occupied, and about 1857 a discovery was made which caused a tremendous explosion of public indignation. It was divulged that remains deposited in the Necropolis had not been left undisturbed; but in several instances had been removed into common pits to make room for fresh interments. Many stormy indignation-meetings were held; a prosecution of the guilty parties was threatened, but never carried out. A Government inquiry into the circumstances took place, which resulted in the cemetery being closed for all interments except those in family graves.

Cemetery closed.

Adjoining the Necropolis, on the north side, there formerly existed a handsome mansion with about an acre and a half of pleasure-ground. It was erected about the middle of the eighteenth century by a family named Bridge. It was afterwards occupied in succession by Richard and William Statham, who each filled the office of town-clerk. It was subsequently the residence for many years of the Rev. Jonathan Brooks, rector and archdeacon of Liverpool. Few men have enjoyed in their day and generation more general respect than fell to the lot of Archdeacon Brooks. Of a dignified and noble presence, his manners were genial, courteous, and, with perfect truth it may be said, those of a gentleman. When presiding at vestry meetings in the stormy times of contested church-rates, when occasionally very strong language was indulged in, a quiet, pleasant remark from the 'old rector' would calm the troubled waters, and frequently cause all parties to laugh at their own violence. He died in 1856. His great popularity led to the erection of a memorial statue in St. George's Hall, by B. Spence. With all respect to his memory, it is difficult to see the grounds for a public recognition of this character. Statues in our local 'Walhalla' should be reserved for men who have distinguished themselves in some way above and beyond their contemporaries,

Statham.

Archdeacon Brooks.

either by enlarging the circle of human knowledge and power, or by some great public benefit conferred. If every clergyman who respectably performs the duties of his sacred office is to have a statue erected to his memory, all honour and distinction by such a tribute would be lost. Mr. Brooks died in 1856, and not very long after the house was dismantled, and the land occupied by buildings.

Dr. Gleave.

Adjoining Mr. Brooks's, on the northward, a good house was built about 1782, by Dr. Gleave, a medical man, who previously resided in Dale Street. An old public-house had existed on the site, called 'Boyd's,' which was much frequented by holiday parties, having a reputation for superior cookery. The memory of Dr. Gleave is preserved in the name of the street cut through his grounds. The mansion was removed about 1862. The above were all the houses existing in Everton Road, north of the village, down to 1824.

Boyd's Tavern.

Everton Road.

View, A.D. 1820.

I may here say a few words on the beauty of this locality in the olden time. I have before me a fine water-colour drawing by the late Charles Barber, taken about 1820, giving a prospect of the northern end of the road, taken from a point about opposite the present Gleave Street. The view is charming. On the left a fine avenue of noble trees extends to the corner of the village. The road is narrowed by an old gabled farm-house and buildings, standing on the site of the present Audley Street, beyond which a peep of the village is seen through the vista, bathed in sunlight. On the east side of the road, occupying the main portion of the view, is a wood of trees of large and ancient growth, and of varied tints; whilst the foreground consists of steep broken banks, such as the early primrose and violet love to nestle in.

Building, A.D. 1824.

The first inroad which was made in the rural beauty of this road was in 1824, when Mr. James Plumpton, the owner of a large portion of the land on the west side,

CHAP. XIII.

1830.

laid out the front part for building a row of commodious double-fronted houses. About 1830 the most serious blow was struck, by the invasion of the builders on the fields at the north end of the road, corner of the village, belonging to the family of Fisher, when the grove disappeared, and the lovely little dell, through which a rivulet had at one time flowed, was filled up and converted into the present Fitz-Clarence Street. From that time the work of demolition and reconstruction proceeded with more or less rapidity, the class of buildings constantly deteriorating with the advancing tide of population. Latterly, the mansions built by Mr. Plumpton have to some extent been converted into shops, but hitherto with very little success. Everton Road has at length become a dense thoroughfare of a somewhat shabby and second-rate character, which would require a very powerful imagination to invest with its long faded beauty.

Land laid out.

Progress.

Our scene now shifts to the village, so called, which still retains its ancient name, and until a very recent period still retained something of its ancient character. Let me describe it as it appeared a few years ago. The first house, entering from the south, was the mansion of Mr. Shaw, or 'Squire' Shaw, as it was the custom to call him from his property and influence in the neighbourhood. It was originally built by the Halsall family, whom the Shaws succeeded, and was the dominant house in the village. Immediately opposite this house stood an ancient cross, afterwards converted into a sundial in the middle of the open area, originally, no doubt, the village green. This was removed in 1820. The original village, the abode of the nineteen families of *nativi* who constituted the population in 1327, extended from the corner of the present Eastbourne Street, on the brow of the hill, in a curved line to the corner of Breek Road. At the extreme west end, on an escarpment of rock, stood Prince Rupert's Cottage—a long, low, thatched building of stone. It was a humble dwelling of four apartments, with clay

Village.

Shaw.

Ancient cross.

Prince Rupert's cottage.

floor and walls, but was probably as good a domicile as any the neighbourhood contained when the Prince took up his quarters there in 1644. One advantage it possessed in the clear unbroken view which it commanded of the valley below, and the little mudwalled town which the Prince contemptuously styled 'a crow's nest.'

Prince Rupert's cottage.

Above this cottage stood a number of solid-looking substantial houses, one pair semi-detached, built by Messrs. Goring and Green, about 1775. One of these was subsequently occupied by Mr. George Syers, of whom honourable mention has been made in chapter ii. of this veritable history. The next house but one above belonged to the family of Seacome, who possessed large property in Everton, and who resided here for many years. After the decease of Mr. John Seacome, some time in the latter half of last century, without male heirs, the property descended to the Ellisons and Fishers. This portion belonged to the Fishers, who sold the land for building about 1830. This house is the only one of the original buildings remaining in the row in which it stands, all the others having been taken down, and their place occupied by modern buildings.

Goring and Green.

Seacome.

Fisher.

We will now cross to the opposite side of the street. Commencing with the western end we find the old coffee-house still remaining, though transformed from a quiet village hostelry into a flaring dram-shop. This was first licensed as a public-house in the year 1770, and from its commanding situation and delightful view was a favourite resort on Sundays and holidays. It was nearly thirty years in the occupation of William Halliday, a shrewd old Scotchman who was exceedingly popular with his customers from his caustic dry humour. For some distance upwards very little alteration has taken place during the last half century, excepting that the neatness and order which once prevailed have degenerated into neglect and squalidity.

Coffee-house. A.D. 1770.

William Halliday.

A little above the coffee-house we come upon the seat

CHAP. XIII.

'Everton Toffy.'

of the manufacture for which the locality has been famous for more than a century, the far-famed 'Everton Toffy,' of which the juveniles of the present day and many who were juveniles of the past, have such pleasant recollections. Though the shop before us has long been one seat of the manufacture, it originated a little higher up the hill, where a certain Molly Bushell dwelt in a cottage about 1759. It is said that the recipe for the delicious compound was not the invention of Molly herself, but was given to her by a medical gentleman of Liverpool out of kindness. Would that his name had been handed down to posterity! Many men have had noble monuments erected to their memory for far less benefits to the human race. Be this as it may, Molly proved a worthy depositary of the secret. Her fame spread far and wide, and Everton toffy has long taken its place along with Banbury cakes and Ormskirk gingerbread as one of the classical *confitures* for juvenile delectation. The manufacture is still carried on by the descendants of Old Molly, who have so well preserved the secret that no imitations have ever yet been found which equal the original.

Molly Bushell.

Above the toffy shop may be observed a cluster of dilapidated wretched-looking cottages and buildings which seem sadly out of place in an improving neighbourhood. This was formerly a scene of busy industry, being the residence and yard of Mr. John McGeorge, for many years emphatically *the* builder of Everton. He was, as his name indicates, a Scotchman, who settled in Everton at the beginning of the present century, and by industry and enterprise realised a handsome competence.

McGeorge.

From hence to the north-west angle of the village formerly stood some of the oldest houses in the vicinity. They were metamorphosed from time to time, converted into public offices, and finally removed to make way for the Welsh Chapel which now stands on the site. This was erected in 1868 in a sort of Byzantine style of architecture, by no means unpleasing in its design.

Welsh Chapel.

It is curious to note the manner in which the different nationalities locate themselves in particular situations. In Liverpool the Irish are principally to be found clustered in Scotland and Vauxhall Wards, where Catholic churches abound, and the Tipperary brogue may be heard in all its richness. Everton is the Goshen of the Cambrian race. Its modern development is almost entirely the work of Welsh builders, several of whom, it is pleasant to record, have succeeded in amassing considerable property by their exertions. A large part of the population is from the Principality. Chapels in which the service is conducted in the Cymric tongue abound. Placards in the Welsh language may be seen on the walls and Welsh newspapers in the shop windows. The sharp click and guttural intonation of the Cambrian dialect may be heard from many a cottage door. On the whole they are an industrious, steady, sober race. Everton is now principally inhabited by the working classes, and it may be said to their honour that there is no part of the town more orderly, more free from beggary and squalid poverty, than this district. Above the chapel the village proper takes a turn to the north. This was formerly a narrow tortuous alley, lined with irregular antique-looking houses. In 1868, the road was widened and straightened, the houses on the west side being removed. Those on the east have undergone considerable change, but some still remain. I will briefly indicate the salient points.

Nationalities.

Welsh in Everton.

Improvements.

A house and garden at the south-west corner was long the residence of the family of Rice, who were old inhabitants and proprietors in the township. William Rice was one of the allottees of the common lands in 1716. The family is extinct in the male line, and the property distributed amongst the collateral branches. The house was taken down in 1868.

Rice.

A.D. 1716.

Hodson or Hodgson Street on the opposite side commemorates another Everton family. The estate of which

Hodgson.

CHAP. XIII.

Stronge.

this is a portion of the site, belonged in 1790 to Mr. John Strong or Stronge. Matthew Stronge was mayor of Liverpool in 1768, and afterwards filled the office of corporation treasurer. Mr. Strong sold the property to Mr. Thomas Hodgson. From a narrow entrance in the village, the land expanded behind into several fields, which were laid out for building about 1835, and are now covered. The house in front has been removed.

Immediately adjoining Hodson Street on the north, one of the old houses remains, a square brick building, formerly the residence of a very old Everton family,

Johnsons.

the Johnsons, who seem to have been almost indigenous to the soil. In the allotment of the Commons in 1715 no less than four persons of this name have considerable portions awarded to them. John Johnson the last of this branch of the family was a shrewd but somewhat eccentric man. Mr. Syers tells an amusing story of him. Mr. Joshua Rose, when building his mansion in Netherfield Road, about 1785, wanted an additional piece of land which belonged to Johnson, who asked for it rather

Rose and Johnson.

a high price. Mr. Rose seemed indifferent, and let the matter lie over. In the meantime, a favourite mare of Mrs. Johnson died and was buried in the field in question. When Mr. Rose applied again about the land and offered to give the price, Johnson raised his demand by fifty pounds, alleging in a sarcastic strain of sentimentality that he could not part with the remains of poor 'Smiler' for a less sum. There being no alternative, the bargain was struck, and the money paid. Johnson was in the habit of relating the story with great gusto, observing with a sly wink that he was the first man that had ever sold a dead horse for fifty pounds.

Johnson died without male issue. His only daughter

Tatlock.

was married to the Rev. Henry Tatlock, whose descendants inherited the property.

The next property on the north shows a commodious house set back some distance from the road, with an

ornamental drive, and a large garden behind. This site, with a great part of the other property in the neighbourhood, formerly belonged to the Heyes's, one of the original Everton families. By marriage this property passed to the Rowes, who resided here for some time. It was subsequently sold to Mr. James Plumpton, who about 1830 took down the old house and erected the present mansion.

Heyes. Plumpton.

The next house to the north, with stone front and mullioned windows, was the residence of the Heyes's. It bears the inscription on the front 'Thos. Heys, 1734.' This property passed by marriage to the Pykes, who also owned large property in Everton, and erected several of the houses in this immediate neighbourhood. On the west side of the road immediately opposite formerly stood a mansion erected by Mr. John Pyke, who resided there for many years.

Heyes. A.D. 1734. Pyke.

At the four lane ends we will turn westward down Rupert Lane. In 1790 the whole of the land on the north side was the property of Mr. William Harper, mayor in 1804. Soon after 1790 he erected the noble mansion which still remains, and laid out the grounds and accessories in a style of princely magnificence. Mr. Harper accumulated a very large fortune, and retired to pass the evening of his days on an estate he purchased in Cheshire, where he died in 1815. After his removal the property passed into the hands of Mr. Charles Shand, who also resided on the spot. It was subsequently sold to the Government and converted into cavalry barracks, for which the extent of its accommodation and its salubrity of position rendered it admirably adapted. The eastern part of the property has undergone considerable change. The house fronting Rupert Lane was the residence of Dr. J. P. Brandreth, an eminent physician of Liverpool. His father, Dr. Joseph Brandreth, came from Ormskirk, and settled in Church Street, Liverpool, about 1780, having succeeded to the practice of Dr. M. Dobson on his

Rupert Lane. Harper. Shand. Barracks. Dr. Brandreth

CHAP. XIII.

removal to Bath. He filled a very high place in the medical profession.

The south side of Rupert Lane has only been built on in the upper part within the last few years. On this side formerly stood the smithy of the village, with the smith's cottage adjoining. The last tenant, Mr. George Mercer, was a man of considerable intelligence. He possessed the peculiar faculty of which other instances have been adduced, of recognising the build and peculiar features of a ship at almost incredible distances. It was formerly the custom when a ship was descried in the offing for a flag to be hoisted by the keeper of Bidston Lighthouse, for which purpose poles were provided along the ridge of Bidston Hill, each merchant having his own. It is recorded that George Mercer's powers of vision, though so much further distant, frequently put to shame the vigilance of the lighthouse-keeper. His assistance in this way became so valuable that a small observatory was erected, from which he could sweep the horizon seaward at flood tide, and report the distantly approaching vessels. Mr. Mercer afterwards entered into business in a more extensive way, and realised a handsome competence, on which he retired. He died in November 1819. The site of the smithy is now covered by a row of three good houses, near the lower end of Rupert Lane.

George Mercer.

Mercer's power of vision.

Arriving at the bottom of Rupert Lane, let us turn to the north along Everton Terrace. This was formerly called Middle Lane, but about 1817 the name was changed to that which it now bears.

Everton Terrace.

The first object which arrests our attention is the chapel with two towers, standing between Everton Terrace and Netherfield Road. This belongs to the Welsh Independents, and was erected in 1867 for the Rev. John Thomas, formerly of the Tabernacle, Great Crosshall Street. The architecture is rather ambitious, partaking somewhat of the Byzantine in its character. The position is commanding, the building being conspicuous from a long distance.

Welsh Chapel.

The buildings forming the tongue between the two roads were erected about the beginning of the present century by Mr. Joseph Ellinthorp, who was originally a draper in Marshall Street, and afterwards a manufacturer in some branch of the cotton trade, which he carried on in Gildart's Gardens, Bevington Bush. He resided on these premises in Everton, where he died in 1829, at the advanced age of 88 years. Ellinthorp.

The property adjoining on the north formerly belonged to Mr. Daniel Backhouse, an eminent merchant at the end of last century and the beginning of the present. To the northward of this, Mr. George Roach, about 1810, erected a handsome villa. For the land on which it stood he paid the price, unprecedented at that time, of thirteen shillings per square yard. Both these properties were subsequently purchased by Mr. Samuel Hope, banker, in order to protect himself from annoyance, he having erected in 1828 on the summit of the hill immediately opposite a noble stone mansion. The upper house is now occupied by the 'Home' for unfortunate females. The lower houses are the seat of the Industrial Ragged Schools. Backhouse. Roach. Hope.

In this locality, on the east side of the road, formerly stood an old house and outbuildings, called the 'Throstle's Nest,' said to be the most ancient in the township. It projected inconveniently into the street, and was purchased in 1810 by Mr. Roach, who took it down, and erected the stabling which now stands on a part of the site. 'Throstle's Nest.'

Everton Terrace, as we proceed northward, consists at the present day almost exclusively of cottages. On the west side, courts and alleys descend precipitously by flights of steps and terraces to the streets below, the irregular lines of which frequently approach the picturesque. Between the piles of houses, even now, occasional peeps may be got over the vast town below to the ocean and distant lines of mountains beyond. On the east side a Cottages. View.

CHAP. XIII.

View.

number of monotonous streets climb the hill into Church Street (now Heyworth Street). Only comparatively a few years ago, this brow of the hill was lined with a series of fair and goodly mansions which dominated over the landscape, and little anticipated their coming doom. Before their memory has entirely passed away, let me put on record a few of the names and associations connected with them.

Higginson.

Beyond Mr. Hope's mansion stood two villas in a very conspicuous position, built by Messrs. Alcock & Rylance, afterwards the property of Mr. John Higginson, partner in the once great firm of Barton, Irlam & Higginson, West India merchants. Mr. Jonathan Higginson succeeded his father, and became the only representative of the firm. The failure of the concern, about 1848, threw quite a gloom over the commercial world of Liverpool. The site of these buildings is now covered by Christian Street and Samson Street.

Parke.

Adjoining Mr. Higginson's a moderate-sized villa was built by Mr. James Parke about the beginning of the present century, and occupied by him for many years. This house still remains amidst all the revolutions of the neighbourhood—

Like the last rose of summer left blooming alone.

Captain Wilson.

'Emilie St. Pierre.'

Desolate and dilapidated, it appears as if only waiting for the period of its dissolution. Its last occupant, Capt. William Wilson, was rather a remarkable man. In 1862, when in command of the 'Emilie St. Pierre,' he endeavoured to run the blockade into Charleston, South Carolina, but was intercepted and captured by the Federal war-steamer 'James Adger.' A prize crew was put on board to carry the vessel to Philadelphia, Capt. Wilson, with his steward and cook, being alone retained. By an amazing combination of stratagem and daring the whole crew were made prisoners and put in irons by Wilson and his two assistants, who, unaided, navigated

the ship and brought her in safety across the Atlantic into the Mersey, where she arrived on April 21. As might naturally be expected, Wilson received quite an ovation. By a subscription amongst the merchants he was presented with a gold chronometer, and a tea and coffee service. From the Mercantile Marine Association he received a gold medal, and from the owners the sum of 2,000*l.* The cook and steward received 320*l.* each. Capt. Wilson died in September 1868, and the house has not since been occupied.

Immediately above the house just described, a large mansion was erected before 1790 by Mr. William Clarke, banker, the head of the firm with which Mr. Roscoe was afterwards connected. William Clarke the younger, Roscoe's friend, resided here for some time after his father's death. He was a man of education and taste, and made collections in Italy, especially of manuscripts relating to the history of the Medici family, which there is reason to suppose proved useful to Roscoe in preparing his celebrated works on Lorenzo and Leo. About 1806 the villa became the property of Nicholas Waterhouse, an eminent member of the Society of Friends, and equally eminent on the Liverpool Exchange. He enlarged and embellished the mansion, and resided here until his decease in 1823. Waterhouse Street commemorates his name.

Clarke.

Waterhouse.

A little farther north stood a detached house built by a Mr. Johnson before 1790. In that year it was occupied by Mr. Peter Hope, uncle to Mr. Samuel Hope, banker. It was subsequently the residence of Mr. Thomas Tattersall, cotton-broker, a gentleman noted for good-fellowship and conviviality. In 1806 he filled the office of mock mayor of Everton, an institution to which I shall shortly have occasion to allude. Northward, again, stood a splendid mansion, enclosed in its own grounds, almost entirely rebuilt on the site of a former one, by Mr. T. F. Dyson, about 1812. It was one of the

Tattersall.

Dyson.

CHAP. XIII.

most elegant and complete of any on the hill. These sites are now occupied by the dreary alignments of Abbey Street, Hibbert Street, Stonewall Street, &c.

Proceeding still northward, there will be seen standing on an eminence, proudly looking down on the defile of St. George's Hill, two combined or semi-detached houses, with fronts of red stone. Another pair formerly stood to the south of the present ones, which have been removed, and rows of cottages erected in their stead. These four villas were erected about 1803 by Messrs. Aspinall, at that time grocers and subsequently bankers in Liverpool. They have been tenanted at various times by many men eminent on the Liverpool Exchange, but whose memory, like the houses they inhabited, is fast passing away as a tale that is told.

Aspinall.

Terrace.

The west side of Everton Terrace was never graced with villas, like the eastern side, having been kept open for the purposes of amenity as long as the neighbourhood kept its aristocratic position. A neat little old-fashioned low house still stands about midway along the road, which has survived all the mutations which have laid low its prouder neighbours, having been erected certainly previous to 1790. The six houses immediately adjoining, on the north, were the first indications of the coming change. They were erected about 1833. At various times, from 1850 onwards, the steep rocky slope which scarcely afforded foothold for a goat has been cut into terraces and crowded with ascending rows of buildings. Facing the westerly breezes and the setting sun, the locality must be of its kind one of the most salubrious in the borough.

Not to fatigue the gentle reader in our peregrinations, we will here pause to take breath, and relegate the remainder of Everton to the next chapter.

CHAPTER XIV.

EVERTON CONTINUED.

CHAP. XIV.

Netherfield Road.

Ross.

King.

A.D. 1845.

We will recommence our explorations at the south end of Netherfield Road. Acre House, at the corner, has been already noticed, with the modern erections attached. Immediately to the northward several of the original houses remain. The first was built, about 1788, by Capt. Ross. During a great storm in January 1802 a stack of chimneys was precipitated through the roof into the chambers below, carrying with it Mr. Ross, jun., who was dug out from the ruins insensible; his life was preserved by a beam having fallen across, protecting his body from injury. This house was in after-days the residence of Mr. Alfred King, for many years the engineer to the Liverpool Gas Company, a man whose eminence in his profession was only equalled by his estimable character in society and private life.

The two adjoining houses were built before 1790. All these tenements had originally large gardens, extending down the hill. From hence for some distance northward Netherfield Road was a narrow, crowded thoroughfare, filled with shops in front and small dwellings behind, but has recently been improved and widened. Let me call to mind its features twenty-five years ago. The upper side was a steep grassy slope, above which towered the mansions of Everton Terrace. On the lower or western

CHAP. XIV.

side a few villas were sparsely scattered along the front. Two of these, semi-detached, stood at the north corner of Prince Edwin Street, built in 1812, one by the Rev. Jonathan Brooks, who resided there for some years; the other by Mr. William Wainwright, who subsequently filled the office of the Liverpool agency in London.

Brooks.

Wainwright.

A little further north a handsome detached villa was erected by Mr. William Skelhorn. It was afterwards purchased and occupied by Alderman John Brown, who was mayor of Liverpool in 1782. Extensive stabling belonging to it was erected on the opposite side of the road, near the corner of Roscommon Street. Two villas were built in the early years of this century by Mr. William Robinson, the senior of a family who for many years carried on an extensive bookselling and stationery establishment in Castle Street, and whose descendants have distinguished themselves in other walks of life.

Brown.

Robinson.

On the opposite side of Netherfield Road there existed until the last few years a quaint-looking old mansion, with a detached school-room, which was occupied for many years by a succession of pedagogues, the Rev. Mr. Hadfield, Mr. Esbie, Mr. Brunner, and others, to whose fostering care many now scattered broadcast over the world owe the rudiments of a sound education.

School.

Roscommon Street was formed about the end of the last century by Mr. Joshua Rose, merchant, who resided in a noble mansion hard by, to which I shall shortly refer. He was a man of considerable enterprise. Possessing large tracts of land in the outskirts of the town, he laid out various streets, and assisted materially in the direction which the town took at that time. Rose Place and Rose Hill took their designations from him. In this immediate neighbourhood his fancy ran upon the classic poets —Great Homer, Virgil, Dryden, Juvenal, had their place in the Walhalla of his street nomenclature; and close to his own residence he admitted the Earl of Roscommon into the circle of his worthies. Though formed by Mr.

Rose.

Names of streets.

Joshua Rose, Roscommon Street owed its development to Mr. Thomas Wiatt, a solicitor in Liverpool, who built a number of commodious houses on the north side, with neat gardens in front. The uppermost house, which had attached to it a beautiful pleasure-ground and orchard, was long occupied by his widow. At the lower end, on the south side, several handsome houses were built before 1830 by Mr. John Davies. In this half-suburban condition the street long remained. About 1850 it fell into the hands of the builders, who speedily filled the interspaces with rows of houses, and left it in its present condition.

Wiatt.

Davies.

Prince Edwin Street is of somewhat later date. The first houses were built at the lower end, on the south side, from Fox Street eastward, being a row of nine goodly mansions. About 1815 a handsome detached house was built on the north side, near the east end, by Mr. Roger Adamson. This was afterwards occupied by Mr. David Hodgson, who was mayor in 1845. The house is still standing, desolate and afflicted, in the midst of cottages and squalor, waiting for the friendly hand of the builder to give it the *coup de grâce*.

Adamson.

The streets between Prince Edwin and Roscommon Streets have developed within the last twenty years. Having been built under improved sanitary regulations, they contain a superior class of artizans' dwellings, and are clean and respectable.

Let us now return to Netherfield Road. On the north side of Roscommon Street, and extending along Hill Side and Netherfield Road North, there formerly existed a beautiful villa, embosomed in umbrageous foliage, with extensive gardens and grounds. The house was erected about 1780 by Mr. Rose above mentioned. After his decease, in 1802, it was purchased by Mr. John Carson, who resided there for many years. The house was finally dismantled about 1848, and the site is now occupied by streets.

Rose.

Carson.

CHAP. XIV.

Adjoining this property, on the north, and occupying the space between Rose Vale (called after Mr. Joshua Rose) and Antony Street, stood a detached villa and gardens, built about 1805 by Mr. Bateman, and afterwards occupied by Mr. Richard Dobson, a gentleman who devoted a great deal of time and attention to the affairs of the Blue Coat Hospital.

Dobson.

Northward of this stood the mansion and grounds of Mr. William Earle, father of the late Mr. William Earle, so well known in Liverpool political affairs. It was originally built by Mr. Gill Slater and purchased by Mr. Earle, who resided there for many years. Mr. Earle was Colonel of the Liverpool Fusiliers, a volunteer regiment, raised in 1803. The site is now occupied by the streets between Earle Street and Tarlton Street. The last-named street commemorates a branch of the Tarlton family who resided in a house on this spot. Mr. John Tarlton died in July 1815, at the age of 84. The house was afterwards occupied by his daughter.

Earle.

Gill Slater.

Tarlton.

North of this house stood two noble mansions, one erected by Mr. John Mather in 1810, the other about 1792 by Mr. James France, who died soon after its erection. The latter was occupied for many years by Mr. John Cropper, who clung to the locality long after the amenity was gone and the neighbourhood had become crowded with shops and dwellings. It was finally dismantled about 1857. The site is occupied by Conway, Gordon, and Elias Streets. Seacome Street and Ellison Street are named after Mr. Seacome Ellison, who inherited a portion of the property of the Seacome family in this locality.

France.

Cropper.

Seacome Ellison.

On the site between Aughton Street and Anderson Street, Mr. Charles Horsfall erected a mansion in 1811. Mr. Horsfall was an active and prosperous Liverpool merchant, and of a liberal and generous disposition. He filled the office of chief magistrate in the year 1832–3. His eldest son, Mr. T. B. Horsfall, long filled a prominent

Horsfall.

position in Liverpool affairs. He was mayor in 1847–8, and was elected one of the representatives in 1852, on the unseating of Messrs. Turner and Mackenzie. He continued to represent the borough in Parliament until the dissolution in 1868. Mr. Horsfall's land extended westward to the line of Great Homer Street. When the estate was laid out for building, Messrs. Horsfall erected, in memory of their father, the church (Christ Church) which fronts Great Homer Street, with commodious schools behind. It was designed by Mr. Shellard, of Manchester, and is a very excellent reproduction of a parish church of the fifteenth century, with nave, aisles, chancel, west end tower and spire, executed in white stone. Although it has no claim to originality of conception, it deserves praise for the faithfulness of its detail, and the thoroughly English character of its style. We shall see hereafter that this is not the only church which owes its erection to the liberality of the Horsfall family. Mr. Horsfall's property forms the site of Aughton Street. Anderson Street, and the half of Potter Street. The latter street stands on land formerly occupied by two villas erected by Mrs. Potter about 1820. This lady was for many years the fashionable milliner of Liverpool; and at her establishment in Bold Street, and afterwards in Duke Street, she realised a handsome fortune. Her son, Mr. William Potter, became eminent in the mercantile affairs of the town. He was a man of handsome presence and courteous demeanour, and of great enterprise. He took a great interest in the development of the capabilities of Birkenhead, and invested largely in lands there, having unbounded faith in the ultimate success of the magnificent schemes propounded by Mr. Rendel, the engineer. Unfortunately, it ultimately turned out that, like Wolsey, he had cause to say—

Horsfall.

Christ Church.

Potter.

William Potter.

> I have ventured
> Like little wanton boys that swim on bladders,
> But far beyond my depth.

CHAP. XIV.

Mrs. Potter's property formed the northern termination of Everton township, on the west side of Netherfield Road.

West boundary.

Before surveying the east side, I will advert very shortly to Great Homer Street, the western boundary of Everton. The original boundary line was extremely irregular. Great Homer Street was formed by Mr. Joshua Rose at the end of last century, and carried as far as Virgil Street. A few years afterwards it was continued to Rose Vale, and so remained for many years.

Improvement Act.

By an Act passed in 1820 (1st Geo. IV., chap. 13), the Corporation were empowered to straighten the boundary between Everton and Liverpool, and to form a new street along the line. This was completed about 1833, but the road long remained a lonely, and somewhat dangerous thoroughfare; the Presbytery of St. Anthony's Catholic Church being the only building to break the monotony of the dreary route. Building commenced about 1840, and gradually and with accelerating steps the spade and pick-axe attacked the slopes of the hill side; the click of the chisel and the ring of the trowel were borne on the breeze to the villas above, giving warning of their coming fate; fashion and exclusiveness winged their way to more retired localities, and a few years witnessed the metamorphosis of a rural suburb into a densely peopled town.

Great Homer Street.

The public buildings in this district are few and far between. The Wesleyan Methodist Chapel in Great Homer Street was erected in 1839. It has a neat stone front and portico. St. Peter's, Sackville Street, was opened in 1850. It is built of red sandstone, of fourteenth century pointed architecture, with nave, aisles, and chancel; and a tower and spire at the north-west angle. There is a commodious range of schools adjoining. With these exceptions, no public buildings exist in the district we are now quitting. The streets are monotonous and dull, but cleanly and salubrious; the houses for the most part occupied by the better class of artisans.

St. Peter's Church.

Let us now revert to Netherfield Road, and commencing at the north end return southwards.

Netherfield Road.

The whole of the land on the east side of this road formed part of the Commons, and was comprised in the lease from Lady Ashburnham in 1716.

The land at the corner of Everton Valley, now covered with houses, formed part of the site of the old Cattle Market, to which I shall have hereafter to refer. This was removed in 1830. An extensive stone quarry was worked for many years on part of this land, the deep excavations of which still in part remain.

Devonshire Place.

Devonshire Place was laid out in the early part of the present century with pleasant little residences, set in the midst of gardens. It has changed less in its character than many localities, but cottages have been thrust in here and there where opportunity occurred.

Tatlock.

A little to the south of Devonshire Place a small villa (still remaining) was erected, fronting Netherfield Road, in 1812, by Mr. William Tatlock, a retired cooper. The situation at that time, and for long after, commanded a beautiful prospect, over land and sea; and in order that wayfarers might enjoy it at leisure, Mr. Tatlock constructed a commodious bench on the bank bordering the road, on the front of which he inscribed the enigmatical words, 'Head Quarters.'

Atherton.

Atherton Street (now Torr Street) commemorated the name of a gentleman to whom a large portion of the land hereabouts formerly belonged, and to whom I shall have occasion again to refer. The street was formed about 1830. It was originally intended to debouch into a crescent at the lower end, and two houses were built at the south side with the curve suiting this arrangement, which was afterwards abandoned.

Tatlock.

The site of Adelaide and Melbourne Streets belonged to the heirs of the Rev. J. Tatlock, who inherited from the Johnsons described in the preceding chapter. The streets were formed about 1854. A little to the south,

CHAP. XIV.

at the corner of York Terrace, there are some stable-like buildings fronting the road, with a row of four villas up the steep slope above. The land of which this forms a part was a portion of the St. Domingo estate purchased by Mr. John Sparling. From his trustees it passed to Mr. James Atherton, and in 1813 the buildings now under view were erected by Mr. James Holme on land purchased from Mr. Atherton. Mr. Holme was a shrewd industrious bricklayer and builder in Liverpool, who by dint of hard work and frugality realised a handsome competence. Not having had the advantage of early education himself, he was determined that his sons should not suffer from the want of it. Two of them, Messrs. Samuel and James Holme, carried on business very extensively as general contractors. Mr. Samuel Holme was for many years prominent in the town's affairs, and filled the civic chair in 1852–3. Mr. James Holme occupied the same position in 1857–8. Mr. Arthur Holme was the architect of several of the public buildings of Liverpool, and possessed of considerable scientific knowledge.

Sparling.

Holme.

York Terrace.

York Terrace was formed by Mr. Atherton in 1828, and a range of houses was erected by him on the north side.

The land south of York Terrace comprising Seville Street and Hapton Street was covered with buildings about 1862. Next follows a range of eight villas standing on a terrace with gardens in front. These were erected by various persons between 1812 and 1820. The detached house which succeeds to these was formerly the residence of Mr. Colin Campbell, a gentleman whose character stood in the highest rank on the Liverpool Exchange for commercial integrity, and who in his private capacity was foremost in every good work.

Colin Campbell.

Nicholson Street and Havelock Street were built about 1862. A little to the south, on the site of a villa formerly belonging to Mr. James Ackers, brewer, of electioneering celebrity, the hospital for infectious diseases is erected.

Ackers.

Several of the old villas about here still exist in a ruinous and dilapidated condition. From hence for a little distance southward, on both sides of Mary Ann Street, the neighbourhood is little changed. The houses, though shorn of their amenity, still nestle amongst their gardens, as the property being distributed amongst many owners prevents any united action to lay out a general plan. At one of these houses, a modest-looking residence set back in a garden, resided for some years Mr. Robert Syers, who here wrote his 'History of Everton,' a work to which I must express my obligations for the fulness and completeness of its details, throwing a light on the condition of the district, at and immediately before his time, which is to be met with nowhere else, and which is seldom to be found in works of much higher pretension. Southward of these buildings, a large field called Field Side, formerly belonging to Colonel William Earle, who lived in the mansion opposite, is now covered by High Street, Fairy Street, and St. George Street. These streets were laid out and built on from 1840 to 1850.

Syers.

William Earle.

The land south of St. George's Street forming the tongue of land at the junction of St. George's Hill and Netherfield Road was formerly the site of one of the pleasantest villas on the hill side. It was erected about 1801 by Mr. Samuel Newton, merchant, who resided in it until 1811. It then became the property of the Brooks family. Mr. Joseph Brooks and his son, the late archdeacon, lived there until the decease of the former in 1823. It then became the property of Mr. Alexander Macgregor, merchant of Liverpool, who was subsequently manager of the Branch Bank of England in Manchester. Soon after 1850, it was demolished, and the ground devoted to building. Macgregor Street, commemorates the name of the quondam proprietor.

Newton.

Brooks.

Macgregor.

We have now arrived at the point where our survey in the last chapter terminated, and will take up the clue then dropped, by the ascent of St. George's Hill, or Hill

CHAP. XIV.

Side as it was formerly called. Starting from the lofty red stone villas already described on the upper or east side, the land intersected by the street now called Cochrane Street (formerly Canning Street) was in the last century the property of Mr. William Clarke, banker, who erected a house at the east end (still remaining) for the residence of his mother. This afterwards became the property and residence of Mr. John Drinkwater. He was of a Manx family settled in Liverpool which attained considerable eminence in the mercantile world. His son George filled the civic chair in 1829–30, and was knighted on the occasion of the accession of William IV. Mr. John Drinkwater was a kind-hearted man of a social disposition. Under his auspices a sort of mock corporation of Everton was inaugurated in 1804, with officers and regalia and a quasi mayor, annually elected. As might naturally be supposed, this sort of carnival mimicry became an excuse for conviviality, and gradually degenerated into a saturnalia of rather a discreditable kind. Mr. Drinkwater soon withdrew from it, but the farce was continued for about twelve years, and was finally discontinued in 1816. Mr. Drinkwater died in 1829 at the ripe age of eighty-two. After his decease, the property passed into the hands of Mr. George Syers, who about 1835 formed a street through the land, which he called Canning Street, from his high estimation of the statesman. This was the first invasion of the speculative builder into this aristocratic region. From hence the Priory Road is now a dense mass of dwellings. Down to 1868, this was the site of several very tasteful villa residences. The southernmost was erected in 1812 by Mr. William Byrom, architect, for his own residence. Being on the side of a steep hill, he carried his chimney flues to the back of the house so that they were not visible. The ridicule cast upon the building by passers by, as a house without fires, so annoyed the owner that he actually carried up sham stacks of chimneys, to satisfy the

Clarke.

Drinkwater.

Syers.

Villas.

Byrom.

public prejudice. This villa was afterwards bought and occupied by Mr. James Heyworth. When the street was made through the adjoining land, Mr. Heyworth purchased the portion next his property, and surrounded his premises with high walls, to protect himself from annoyance, and secure the amenity of his domain. He might as well have built a wood fence to keep out the ocean. Year by year the builders advanced up the hill, street after street, in serried ranks of hard brick and mortar lines. Mr. Heyworth's villa remained for many years an oasis in the dreary waste, but at length the besiegers prevailed and the mansion succumbed to fate. The property adjoining on the north was called the Beacon Field, being part of the old copyhold lands. About 1810 it was bought by Mr. John Hind, a retired shipbuilder. The old beacon tower having been destroyed a few years before, Mr. Hind took it into his head to reproduce it as a portion of a dwelling-house. Being more accustomed to build ships than dwelling-houses, the result manifested itself in the form of a low, insignificant-looking brick tower at the corner of Priory Lane and Church Street with a cottage attached. To this he gave the absurd name of 'The Priory.' A larger mansion was subsequently built on the western portion of the land, long occupied by Mr. G. F. Dickson. The villas have been replaced by cottages, and the tower finds its successor in a corner gin-shop. One relic still remains; the breast-wall of solid hewn stone which skirted the front of the grounds still affords its support to the steep bank above on which the ranges of cottages are built.

Heyworth.

Beacon Field.

Hind.

On the north side of Priory Road stood another villa enclosed in extensive grounds, built about 1810 by Mr. Henry Orme, brewer. It subsequently became the residence of Mr. Ormerod Heyworth, the brother of Mr. James Heyworth mentioned above. About 1862 it was dismantled and built over. From Priory Lane north-

Orme.

Heyworth.

CHAP. XIV.

ward, the road was opened as far as the site of the church, about the beginning of this century. It was originally called Lodge Lane, but since the improvements hereafter described, it has taken the name of Northumberland Terrace. The land on the east side has been covered with streets and cottages. On the west side a few of the better class houses still stand in a deteriorated condition; not having land enough to render it worth while to pull them down, and yet being quite unsuitable to the altered character of the neighbourhood.

Northumberland Terrace.

At a handsome villa opposite the church now demolished and the land built over, lived James Atherton, one of the most remarkable men who have made Everton their abode. Ardent, bold and daring in his character, everything he undertook was carried out on a scale of magnificence. When in business, his transactions were gigantic in their scale, and after he had retired with a large fortune, his restless mind was never satisfied but when occupied with a variety of schemes for improvement and progress. He purchased a large tract of land belonging to the St. Domingo Estate in Everton; laid out new streets—Northumberland Terrace, York Terrace, Grecian Terrace, &c., built a number of houses and villas, and was the precursor of the rage for building in Everton which afterwards set in. He next turned his attention to the opposite side of the Mersey. From his residence near the highest point in Everton, one of the most conspicuous objects in the distance was the Black Rock Point at the entrance of the river, with the rising grounds above looking out on the open sea. His keen penetration was not long in discovering the capabilities which the locality presented for a marine suburb or watering-place, and he went into it with all the ardour which belonged to his nature. In conjunction with his son-in-law, Mr. Rowson, he purchased the land, established a ferry, laid out roads, encouraged building, and during the last few

James Atherton.

New Brighton.

years of his life devoted himself almost exclusively to the development of his pet colony of 'New Brighton.'

St. George's Church stands on the site of the ancient Beacon Tower described in the early part of the last chapter, being the highest land in the neighbourhood. The site was given by Mr. Atherton, and in 1813 the church was erected by subscription at the cost of 11,500*l*. The architect was Mr. Thomas Rickman to whom reference has already been made in chapter x. Rickman was then in the commencement of his career, and there is much about the design, taking into consideration the state of the art at that time, which is worthy of all commendation. The building exhibits an immeasurable advance upon anything in the Gothic style previously attempted in Liverpool, the tone, character, and motive of every portion being derived from careful study of ancient examples. This, however, is nearly all the merit which can fairly attach to it. As an original composition, it is stiff and feeble, the common fault of all early attempts to resuscitate an extinct style, whether in art or literature. The design, both externally and internally, is meagre and thin. This effect is doubtless heightened by the employment of cast-iron for the tracery of the windows and many of the ornamental portions. St. George's Church.

Soon after the erection of the church an hotel called 'St. George's,' was built by Mr. Atherton, adjoining the churchyard on the south-east side. It was supposed that the salubrity of the air and the extensive prospect would attract visitors, but this hope was not realised. The house was afterwards converted into a boarding-school. Hotel.

After the destruction of the Old Beacon it was thought desirable by the Government, during the French war, to establish a signal-station in the locality, which might communicate with the Lighthouse at Bidston and receive the earliest intimation of any hostile prowlers off the coast. Signal Station.

CHAP. XIV.

The structure was of wood, with a wooden cottage for the signal-master. This post was filled, from its establishment in 1804 to its discontinuance in 1815, by Lieutenant James Watson, R.N. I am not aware that his services were ever called into requisition by any alarm of an attack by sea. Singularly enough, the old veteran departed this life a short time after the declaration of peace, in 1815, his labours and life ceasing at the same time.

Lieut. Watson.

Schools.

An extensive pile of building, containing the schools attached to the church, was erected to the front of Northumberland Terrace in 1862. About 1828 the land north of the church was laid out for building by Mr. Atherton, who himself erected the houses in Grecian Terrace, in a style borrowed from the Cheltenham Villas. After Mr. Atherton left the neighbourhood, building operations became stagnant for some years. When, at a subsequent period, from about 1850, speculation revived, the day had gone by for villa erections, and Albion Street, York Terrace, and the adjoining streets became crowded with small houses and cottage property.

Albion Street, &c.

Let us now turn northwards, down St. Domingo Lane. The lands on each side as far west as Netherfield Road, and eastward to Beacon Lane, formed part of the ancient Commons, and are included in the lease for 1000 years so often referred to. About the middle of the last century Mr. George Campbell, West India merchant and sugar refiner, purchased the lands hereabout from the families of the original lessees, H. Halsall and J. Seacome. On the tongue or triangular corner between Beacon and St. Domingo Roads he erected a moderate-sized dwelling-house, with outbuildings arranged in a semicircular sweep, with a grassy lawn in front, separated from the road by posts and chains. To the estate he gave the name of St. Domingo, from his West India associations. I may here incidentally mention that the practice of giving names to the villas in the neighbourhood of Liverpool is, with rare exceptions, of quite recent

Campbell.

St. Domingo.

date. The greater part of the most magnificent mansions in the environs had no other appellation but the name of the owner. St. Domingo and one or two others are exceptions.

Mr. Campbell filled the civic chair in 1763. After his death, in 1770, the estate, containing fifty-three acres, was sold to Mr. John Crosbie for 3,800*l.*, including the house and outbuildings. This comprised all the land contained in the triangle between Beacon Lane, St. Domingo Lane, and Walton Breck Road, and the smaller triangle between Mere Lane, Breckfield Road, and Beacon Lane, with the sheet of water. Mr. Crosbie filled a respectable position as a merchant, having been mayor in 1765; but becoming unfortunate, he was unable to complete his purchase, and the contract was transferred to Messrs. Gregson, Bridge & Parke. In February 1773 these gentlemen transferred their interest to Mr. John Sparling for the sum of 3,470*l.* Mr. Sparling was a man of large means and ambitious mind. He possessed large property at the south end of Liverpool, of which the name of Sparling Street furnishes a reminiscence. It is traditionally reported that he proposed to construct the Queen's Dock at his own expense, but afterwards he sold the land to the corporation for the same purpose. He filled the civic chair in 1790–1, and during his term of office called a common hall of the freemen to assert their rights against the self-elected Council.[1] In 1793 he took down the old mansion and erected the present palatial-looking structure, which continued to be called 'St. Domingo House.' The expense was far beyond what he had calculated, and caused him considerable uneasiness. He also improved the estate, by planting and other ornamentation, rendering it in every way a noble residence. Having a great attachment to the locality, which had cost him so dear, he was anxious to attach his successors to the spot.

Crosbie.

John Sparling.

Mansion.

[1] See vol. i. p. 264.

CHAP. XIV.

He therefore bound his heirs by clauses in his will never to part with the property; and in case they should not be able to reside there themselves, that a preference should always be given to a tenant bearing the name of Sparling. He died in 1800, and the property passed to his son William, who resided in the mansion. This gentleman, who was a lieutenant in the 10th Regiment of Dragoons, obtained an unfortunate notoriety by a duel with Mr. Edward Grayson, ship-builder, on February 26, 1804, in which he mortally wounded his antagonist. The circumstances were briefly these: Lieutenant Sparling was paying his addresses to Miss Anne Renshaw, daughter of the Rev. Samuel Renshaw, one of the rectors, who resided in Bold Street. An anonymous letter was sent him reflecting on the character of the young lady's family. Although he stated on his trial that he discredited the greater part of the statements, yet enough remained to induce him to withdraw from his engagement, which he did by a letter to Mr. Renshaw. This led to a very bitter correspondence between the parties, and Mr. Sparling went abroad for some months. Whilst he was away rumour and gossip of course were rife. Mr. Grayson was the young lady's uncle, and felt the insult very warmly. He was an entire stranger to Mr. Sparling, but did not hesitate to express very strongly his opinion of his conduct, publicly branding him as a scoundrel and a villain. On Mr. Sparling's return, hearing these reports, he wrote to Mr. Grayson, and an angry correspondence took place, which ultimately resulted in a challenge being sent by Sparling to Grayson. The parties met about seven on Sunday morning, February 26, 1804, opposite the Old Chapel in Toxteth Park, and thence proceeded down the retired valley of the Dingle. Mr. Sparling's second was Captain Colquitt, R.N., of the frigate 'Princess;' Mr. Grayson's, Dr. Macartney, a physician of eminence in the town. Henry Park, surgeon, was also in attendance, but stated on the trial that he did not know for what

William Sparling.

Duel with Grayson.

purpose he was taken to the ground. At the first fire Grayson fell mortally wounded. CHAP. XIV.

Mr. Sparling gave himself up to justice, and was tried, along with Captain Colquitt, at the Assizes in Lancaster, on April 4, 1804, before Sir Alan Chambre. The result was an acquittal both for principal and second. Mr. Sparling never again resided at St. Domingo. Trial.

After his withdrawal from Liverpool the house was let to the Government, as head-quarters for Prince William of Gloucester, at that time Commander-in-Chief of the district. He took up his residence at St. Domingo in 1803, and remained in the district for several years. He was, of course, for the time being the cynosure of the neighbourhood; a live lord—not to say a prince of the blood-royal—being a *rara avis* in these parts. Some amusing stories are told by the 'Old Stager,' in his 'Liverpool a Few Years Since,' of the sayings and doings connected with his Royal Highness, who was not celebrated for his brilliancy. Prince William.

After Mr. Sparling's decease the restrictions on the disposal of the property not suiting the purposes of his heirs, they applied to Parliament, and obtained an Act (50 Geo. III., April 18, 1810) enabling them to dispose of the estate. It was then sold in portions, the whole of which subsequently became the property of Mr. William Ewart, at the price of 20,295*l*. Sale. Ewart.

The following year (1811), Government requiring a site for barracks, and being acquainted with the locality, from the residence of Prince William, a negotiation took place for the purchase of the estate from Mr. Ewart. Thereupon the inhabitants of Everton, fearful of the disturbance of their quiet, took the alarm, and on November 27, 1811, an indignation-meeting was held at the Coffee House to protest against the measure, when the following resolutions were passed unanimously:— Proposal for barracks.

'That the establishment of barracks at St. Domingo can be viewed in no other light than an enormous Remonstrance.

CHAP. XIV.

grievance, likely to be injurious to property, and destructive of the comforts of the neighbourhood.

Remonstrance.

'That immense sums have been invested in forming valuable villas near to the contemplated establishment.

'That the meeting has been assured by the proprietor of St. Domingo House and lands he was willing to forego the profit to arise unto him from the sale of that estate, and of his readiness to absolve Government from the purchase thereof.

'That the thanks of the meeting be conveyed to William Ewart, Esq., for his consistent, disinterested, and honourable conduct,' &c., &c.

A committee was formed, and an effort was made to raise a fund by subscription to purchase the property, and so to prevent the contemplated appropriation; but it proved abortive, and on September 13, 1812, Mr. Ewart conveyed the property to the Government at the price of 26,383*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*

During the progress of this agitation, which caused considerable excitement in the locality, the following *jeu d'esprit* was issued, ascribed to the pen of Mr. Silvester Richmond, searcher in the Customs, a great wit and *bon-vivant* of those days:—

Ladies' rejoinder.

THE LADIES OF EVERTON TO WILLIAM EWART, Esq.

Come forth, all ye females of Everton Hill,
Ne'er shall women be wronged and their clappers lie still;
Let us tell, one and all, these proud lords of creation,
That we cannot submit to unjust domination;
And unless they will straightway express their contrition,
Maids, widows, and wives, all will counter-petition.
A barrack, my girls, which these men think so frightful,
Is just what we want—O, a barrack 's delightful!
We shall never stir out, be it good or bad weather,
But quite certain to meet a cockade or a feather;
And these terrible men, to our husbands alarming,
So far from a bugbear, to us are quite charming:
I'd give all I'm worth in the world, girls, by jingo!
For a summer night's ramble about St. Domingo.

CHAP. XIV.

Ladies' rejoinder.

All the bands will be playing, the captains saluting,
Oh! such drumming and fifing, such fiddling and fluting!
And instead of a fusty old brown-coated varlet,
We shall have, at command, a smart fellow in scarlet.
What a difference, ye gods! from an ale-drinking clown
Who quart after quart every night guzzles down!
But the captain 's all life, full of fire and politeness,
With a beautiful hand of an exquisite whiteness,
Gives a pressure quite gentle, but full of expression,
And manœuvres his eyes and fine teeth at discretion.
Then he woos all our senses, in accents so tender,
That, delighted, our hearts we with transport surrender.
When spousy comes home, he does nothing but gorge ye
With the rise of *Sea Island* or fall of *Bowed Georgia*;
And sometimes exults—though you'd think it a quiz—
To see 'ashes looks up,' and 'because rums is riz.'
From such fograms let's turn to a prospect more dear,
Embroidered hussar, or the tall grenadier,
Who always are ready by actions to prove
That they bravely can fight, and with energy love.
Then join, all ye damsels, who feel well inclined,
Let us tell Mr. Ewart a piece of our mind,
That if any longer our wishes are crost,
In a blanket, ere long, he may chance to be tost;
For in spite of George Rowe, or the colonel [1] so brave,
A barrack we like and a barrack we'll have;
Then pray, Mr. Ewart, sit down well contented,
For women will not have their plans circumvented,
And in times like the present, believe it or not,
Five thousand good pounds [2] are not easily got.

Barracks established.

The ladies' plea prevailed, and the estate was bought by Government and barracks established, but after a short trial the scheme was abandoned. The property was offered to the former petitioners, but this time declined, and subsequently it was put up for sale in lots, and disposed of in a few years.

Streets formed.

Down to the year 1860 comparatively a small portion of the land belonging to the estate was covered with buildings; but since that date the northern portion has been intersected by streets, and to a considerable extent

[1] Mr. William Earle, colonel of volunteers.
[2] Mr. Ewart's profit by the transaction.

CHAP. XIV.

occupied. About 1854 an extensive storehouse and barracks for the militia were erected near the middle of the estate, immediately to the eastward of which, fronting Beacon Lane, a Catholic Boys' Orphanage was built in 1862.

Militia Barracks.

The mansion-house was occupied for some years as a ladies' boarding-school. About 1850 it was purchased by the Roman Catholics, and converted into an educational establishment, under the name of St. Edward's College. It is also the residence of the bishop of the Catholic diocese. A commencement has also been made towards the foundation of a cathedral by the erection of a building which is intended to form one of the chapels of the proposed structure. It is cause for congratulation that in one instance at least a noble mansion has been saved from destruction and preserved, with an ample area around it, for purposes of public utility.

St. Edward's College.

Before quitting this quarter, it may be mentioned that the north-west angle of this estate was called Headless Cross Field, a relic of the olden time having once had its place therein, to quicken the spirit of devotion, but having been allowed to fall into ruin and finally to disappear.

Headless Cross.

The eastern triangle of the St. Domingo estate, with which the mere is connected, was sold by Mr. Sparling's trustees to Mr. J. G. Geller, merchant, who erected thereon a stately mansion, planted the margin of the property, and laid out the grounds in a beautiful and artistic manner. The seclusion of this site, embowered in its thick woods, with its spacious lawn sloping to the margin of the lake, imparted a thoroughly rural aspect to the place, which continued after the surrounding lands were covered with buildings. The property was sold by Mr. Geller to Mr. William Myers, of the firm of Ewart, Myers & Co., who resided here many years. At length, however, 'the time decreed by fate' arrived. About 1864 the estate was purchased by an enterprising Welsh builder, Mr. Owen Elias; the groves were cut down, the

Geller.

Myers.

Builders.

house destroyed, and streets, and pavement, and cottages have obliterated all memory of the pleasant glades and trim parterres. The piece of water, 'St. Domingo Pit,' about an acre in extent, still remains, to what end and for what purpose it is hard to say.

I will now return to a property still remaining intact, forming the northern extremity of the township, and a part of the lands called Sleeper's Hill. It is said that this field, containing six acres, was first enclosed from the commons by a shoemaker, from which it derived the name of 'Cobbler's Close.' About the end of the last century it was purchased by Mr. Thomas Barton, the brother of Sir William Barton, who had made a fortune in the West Indies. He erected a house on the land, and called it, 'The Pilgrim,' in remembrance of a privateer of that name sailing from Liverpool, which had made a large amount of prize money. At Mr. Barton's decease it was purchased by Mr. Atherton, and by him sold to Mr. Samuel Woodhouse. About 1813 Mr. Woodhouse erected the mansion which still stands on the site, to which he gave the name of 'Bronté House,' after the district in Sicily which gave the title of duke to the hero Nelson, where Mr. Woodhouse was possessed of an estate —still held by the family—celebrated for the growth of Marsala wine. The Woodhouses have long ceased to reside on the property, which still preserves much of its amenity. The recent formation of Stanley Park, adjoining, has in this respect done good service in rescuing Bronté from the hands of the Philistines in the garb of builders.

Cobbler's Close.

Woodhouse.

Bronté House.

Let us now retrace our steps to the east end of the church. Church Street, which extends southwardly from hence to Breck Road, has very recently had its width increased, its sinuosities straightened, and its name changed to Heyworth Street. Its new phase of existence has effaced all traces of its old quiet, dreamy air, in its palmy days of aristocratic exclusiveness.

Church Street.

CHAP. XIV.

The land eastward of Church Street, extending along Mere Lane to the present Breckfield Road North, for some distance southward, formed a portion of the common land indenting irregularly into the old enclosures to the south. This portion of the enclosed lands was called 'The Mosses' from its flat, swampy character.

Mosses.

The mansions on the west side of Church Street have already been described in connection with Hill Side and Everton Terrace, most of the properties running through from street to street.

The land on the east side maintained its purely rural character down to a very recent date.

About 1804, on one of the fields called Hungry Croft, a mansion was erected by Mr. William Perry, surgeon-dentist, in a very lonely and secluded position. For many years it was the only mansion for some distance round. Mr. Perry's only daughter, who inherited the property, married Colonel Chambers, the friend of Giuseppe Garibaldi, and accompanied the hero in several of his campaigns. The house was taken down about 1865.

Perry.

About 1830 attempts were made to introduce the builders into this quarter. Christian Street, on the west side, was laid out and built on, but with little success; and for some years 'the land had rest.' Another attempt was afterwards made on the east side by the formation of Washington Street, and the erection of a row of houses fronting Breck Road.

Christian Street.

In 1829 a field opposite the Mere, called the Mere Hey, was purchased from Mr. Seacome Ellison by Mr. Charles Eyes, and laid out for detached villas under the name of Springfield and Lansdowne Place.

Springfield.

The only house in the district we are now surveying having any claim to antiquity is the one fronting Breck Road, near the corner of Breckfield Road North (formerly Hangfield Lane). It was originally a farm house, with extensive outbuildings, and went by the name of the 'Odd House,' probably from its lonely situation. It

Odd House.

belonged in 1790 to the Rogerson family, who sold it to the Rev. Henry Barton, incumbent of St. Paul's Church, with whose descendants it remained until it was purchased by the corporation in 1865 for the widening of the road. Mr. Edward Rogerson, or Neddy Rogerson, as he was more familiarly called, who previously owned the property, was a character in his day. According to Mr. Syers, he was a Lancashire diamond in the rough, his usual mode of accosting his friends being, 'Ha' dun ye? ha' dun ye? eh! ah! O! aye! aye!' with an emphasis and *empressement* all his own. His grand *métier*, however, was the cure of the jaundice, or, as he was accustomed to call it, the *janders*, for which he possessed a specific, and, legitimately or illegitimately, demanded and took his fees. After selling the Odd House, he built himself a comfortable residence adjoining, where he died in 1814, at the good old age of 82. Whether his life was prolonged by the employment of his own medicines, history recordeth not.

Neddy Rogerson.

Cure of jaundice.

The two small fields adjoining, on the westward, called the Odd House Fields, were covered with small detached houses, about 1828–30; and during the next few years the margin of the district was invaded here and there by the builder. The great building fever, however, set in about 1864–5, owing to the impulse derived from the American civil war, when it would be no exaggeration to say that miles of street were laid out between Church Street and Breckfield Road, and to a considerable extent built on.

Building fever.

The class of houses is above that of cottages, and although dull and monotonous, as all modern streets seem to be almost of necessity, they display a considerable amount of comfort. A church for the Establishment has been erected in Breckfield Road, in a neat Gothic style of architecture. Beyond this there is no public building in the district.

The road now called Breckfield Road North, was ori-

CHAP. XIV.

Anfield.

ginally Hangfield Lane. This name under the form of 'Anfield,' is now transferred to another road considerably to the eastward within the township of Walton-on-the-Hill. The lands to the eastward of the present Breckfield Road constitute the original 'Hangfields,' one of the three divisions of the old enclosures. If one might be permitted to speculate on the origin of the name, since it is quite clear that it has nothing to do with hanging or sloping, which the situation altogether precludes, it may possibly have been originally 'Langfields,' which would exactly describe the long narrow strips into which the land was divided. This district, having been demesne lands retained by the lord of the manor, never became copyhold like the other enclosures. The lands at the northern extremity north-east of Walton Breck Road called

Sleepers.

the Great and Little Sleeper, were part of the commons and are now leasehold, as are also the lands in the south part of this district next Breck Road.

About 1830 three villas with extensive grounds were built nearly opposite the Mere, by Messrs. Sanderson and Johnson. The situation was for many years one of the most quiet and secluded in the environs of Liverpool. At the south end of Breckfield Road North, corner of Breck Road, stood a large detached mansion called

Breckfield House.

Breckfield House, originally built in the last century by Mr. Green. It was afterwards enlarged and became

Case.

the residence of Mr. George Case, mayor in 1781. In October 1803, it was nearly destroyed by fire. It was subsequently purchased by Mr. William Harding, who greatly improved and embellished it. A little distance to the south, two additional villas were built by Mr. Harding. One of these was long occupied by Mr. Adam

Hodgson.

Hodgson, a gentleman of refined taste and literary pursuits. His 'Letters from America,' published about 1820, attracted considerable attention.

These villas were levelled with the ground in 1867,

and the site occupied by Rothwell Street, Harewood Street, &c.

Progress of building.

The district east of Breckfield Road North, was purely agricultural down to 1860. About that date, Beacon Lane was invaded by the builders, and its south-eastern margin built upon. The road called St. Domingo Grove, was formed about 1845, and two lodges built at the entrance, but no further buildings erected until about 1860, when the adjoining road called St. Domingo Vale was laid out and building commenced in earnest. The north side of Breck Road as far as the boundary of Everton was built on and streets formed about 1867. After building had progressed to a considerable extent, the corporation came to a resolution to widen the road, which they had declined to do when the land was clear. The front buildings had to be taken down and the line set back at an enormously increased expense.

Oakfield Road, which forms the eastern boundary of this part of Everton, was carried through to Walton Breck Road in 1868. At the junction of this road with Breck Road, a Baptist church was erected in 1866. It is a building of red brick, relieved with white stone dressings, with an arcaded porch in the front. At the time this notice is written (1872), the whole area east of Breckfield Road North, is being rapidly covered with streets and buildings. The villas opposite the Mere, long the most secluded and retired situation in Everton, have been demolished; the Hangfields are reduced to two or three narrow strips of land, and their name and memory will soon perish for ever. The last patch of greensward in the township will be speedily absorbed, and the transformation of the open rural suburb into the crowded town will be complete.

Baptist chapel.

Hangfields.

Crossing Breck Road, let us now notice the small district extending southward to Whitefield Road (formerly Roundhill Lane), and from Belmont Road (formerly Rocky

Whitefield Road.

CHAP. XIV.

Lane) westward to Breckfield Road South (formerly Brecklands). This was part of the original commons, leased in 1716. The margin of this district fronting Breck Road, between Breckfield Road South, and the present Richmond Terrace, was dotted with pleasant little villas and gardens during the first quarter of the present century. Richmond Terrace was laid out and its semi-detached villas began to be erected about 1849; Woodville Terrace about 1858. The recessed row of houses with the esplanade in front, off Belmont Road, was erected in 1856, by Mr. McKenzie, the celebrated railway contractor. From that time the vacancies have been gradually filled up until the district is nearly covered with buildings.

Breck Road, &c.

The only portion of Everton which remains to be noticed is the quarter lying between Everton Road and Boundary Road from west to east, and stretching from Breck Road to West Derby Road from north to south. Here were situated the ancient enclosures called the Whitefields; the principal part of them copyhold tenure, the remainder being demesne lands are freehold. Down to about 1840, this district, with very trifling exceptions, still maintained its rural character intact. Let me briefly sketch the outline of its description as it then stood. Everton Road, its western boundary, was partially built on the west side, with a few houses here and there dotting the east side. The Necropolis had been completed some years, and being well planted and tended and comparatively little occupied with interments, it formed a pleasant place of resort. Immediately behind, a rural road called Mill Lane, ran eastward from Everton Road and terminated in the fields. A few cottages embosomed in gardens stood near this road, 'fixed' as Mr. Syers says in his description, 'by a strange singularity of taste, in a lonely and out-of-the-way place.' A few fields' breadth to the eastward, a footpath branched off from West Derby Road and led to a small house of entertain-

Whitefields.

ment, with a bowling-green and strawberry garden extending to Boundary Road, along the south side of which ran a stile road forming a beautiful lovers' walk. The site of the bowling-green and strawberry garden is now occupied by the brewery of Messrs. Haigh & Co.

Strawberry gardens.

Previous to 1830 there were only one or two houses in the district. Whitefield House, still standing at the corner of Whitefield Lane and Boundary Lane, was built about 1810 by Mr. Thomas Bailey, a tailor and draper in Castle Street. It stood for many years very lonely and far away from any other habitation. The only other house in the quarter now under survey at that time existing was built about 1812 by Mr. Edward Mawdsley, who inherited most of the possessions of an old Everton family named Rice. The house still stands on the south side of Breck Road, a few yards to the west of Queen's Road.

Whitefield House.

Mawdsley.

This state of rural amenity was first disturbed about 1830, when Hygeia Street was formed through a field on the north side of West Derby Road. Although the goddess of health was invoked in the name of the street, the class of houses erected was of a very mean and sordid kind, which did much to stamp the future character of the neighbourhood.

Hygeia Street, &c.

About 1840 the lands to the eastward of Everton Road began to be laid out for buildings, and Spencer Street, Creswell Street, &c., were formed. Spencer Street and Steers Street take their names from Mr. Spencer Steers, a descendant of Mr. Thomas Steers, the engineer of the original Liverpool Dock, who was connected with the land in question. Creswell Street was called after Mr. Justice Creswell, who represented the borough in Parliament from 1837 to 1842. After being partially built on, this quarter remained many years unfinished and incomplete. Part of Mill Lane, narrow and tortuous as it is, was next attacked by the builders and crowded with cottages. Then followed Boundary Lane and the streets leading therefrom. Queen's Road was formed about

Mill Lane &c.

CHAP. XIV.

1862, and the land from thence westward was soon covered with buildings.

West Derby Road.

The most sudden and remarkable transformation, however, took place along the southern boundary of the township, marked by West Derby Road. In 1861 the lands beyond the Necropolis on the Everton side were open fields as far back as Mill Lane, the road being very crooked and irregular, and comparatively narrow. In that year the corporation, under the authority of an Act of Parliament, widened the road and made an entirely new cut, carrying it in a straight line as far as the Zoological Gardens. The capabilities of the land thus opened out, lying so near the populated part of the town, and fronting a leading outlet, were at once perceived. The land was purchased by speculators and retailed to builders. The front land, which was soon occupied by shops, underwent such an advance of price that what had cost wholesale two to three shillings per square yard in a short time realised, in the front lots, 20*s.* to 30*s.* and 40*s.* per yard. This completed the consolidation of the district, which has now become as populous and crowded as any portion of the outer margin of the town.

Rise in value.

After this general glance I will ask the courteous reader to accompany me through a few of the leading streets of the quarter, calling attention by the way to anything which may appear noteworthy.

We will commence at the gate of the Necropolis. Nearly opposite stands a row of good-sized houses, set back in an enclosure, called Brougham Terrace. Though West Derby Road forms for the most part the boundary between Everton and West Derby, the sinuosity of the dividing line passes behind these houses, leaving them on the Everton side. Brougham Terrace dates its origin from the stirring times of the first Reform Act, when 'the bill, the whole bill, and nothing but the bill,' was the cry of the advocates of progress. The eccentric genius of Lord Chancellor Brougham was then in the

Brougham Terrace.

ascendant, and his bust, graced with the official wig, may be seen illustrating the central pediment of this range of buildings. When the course of the road was altered, in 1861, a long, narrow, triangular plot of land was left in the middle. On this plot was erected, in 1866, and consecrated on February 15, 1867, Emmanuel Church. The entire cost of the building was defrayed by Mr. T. D. Anderson, mayor in 1859. The architect was Mr. G. E. Grayson. The building is large and imposing, standing in a prominent and detached position, visible on all sides. It is built with hammer-dressed white stone, in the 'early pointed' style, having nave and aisles, with clerestory, crossed by transepts, with large rose-windows in the gables. The chancel has an apsidal east end in five planes. The aisle windows have what is called plate tracery, in which the apertures are cut out of a flat surface. The tower is at the north-west angle, in four stages, crowned with a spire, with spirets at the angles. The style of the church cannot be pronounced exactly pure, but it is bold and effective, if a little stiff. The belfry lights in the upper storey of the tower are deeply recessed and well marked.

Emmanuel Church.

A little distance back from West Derby Road, fronting Mill Lane, stands the old Workhouse of the West Derby Union, a large brick pile, erected in 1844. The Union was formed in 1837, embracing an extensive district, consisting of twenty-three townships. Toxteth Park, possessing a large and increasing population, has since been separated from the remaining townships and formed into a separate union, with a workhouse of its own.

Workhouse.

A new Workhouse for the West Derby Union has been erected at Walton. The old building now before us has since been rented by the parish of Liverpool as an auxiliary establishment.

The south side of West Derby Road not being in Everton, any reference to it is reserved for a future page.

A few hundred yards to the east stands the old West

CHAP. XIV.

Hospital.

Derby Union Hospital, erected about 1852. It is now unoccupied, the inmates having been removed to Walton.

St. Michael's Roman Catholic Church.

Adjoining this stands the Roman Catholic Church of St. Michael, erected about 1866. The building, comparatively plain and unobtrusive in its exterior, possesses considerable merit as a design. It is a simple parallelogram in plan, with low aisles and a lofty clerestory, lighted by long lancet windows, without tracery. There are neither buttresses, cornice, nor battlement to the flanks. The church stands north and south, the principal front being towards the south, which abuts on the road. This front is narrow and lofty, flanked by bold buttresses, with set-offs at irregular intervals. The entrance portal is plain, with a tympanum prepared for sculpture. Above this is a blank arcade of seven bays, with narrow slit lights. Over this is a noble rose-window, occupying the whole breadth of the front, with a deeply recessed arch over. The gable and the buttresses are surmounted by figures of angels. The north end of the building is apsidal in three planes. The material is brick, with white stone dressings. The general effect is extremely good without pretence or flutter, but fully keeping up its character as an ecclesiastical building.

General view.

The property in this district consists principally of houses of a somewhat humble class; the streets, as usual, being laid out irregularly, without any prearranged plan. The sanitary conditions show a considerable improvement on the older parts of the town; but the limited space allotted to each tenement leaves little breathing room, and renders the open area surrounding a church or public building quite a godsend. West Derby Road has become a crowded thoroughfare, one of the leading arteries into the town, lined with shops, manifesting every appearance of prosperity.

Leaving the Catholic Church we will turn northwards along Boundary Lane. A few steps from the corner bring us to the large brewery premises occupying the site

of the old strawberry gardens, alongside of which the field through which the lovers' walk passed still remains open ground, occupied as yards. At the corner of Whitefield Lane stands Whitefield House, already alluded to. Breckfield Road South, which we now approach, was formerly called Breck Lands. It has preserved more of its amenity and rural appearance than any other part of the surrounding neighbourhood; villas, gardens, and open land still having the predominance. General view.

Turning westward down Breck Road we notice Queen's Road, which with its continuation of Caird Street now forms a commodious link of connection between north and south. At the junction with Breck Road stands a church of the United Presbyterian body. It is built of white stone in the pointed style of architecture, with an octagon tower and spire at the north-west angle. The building is suitable for its purpose, but calls for no special notice in point of architectural design. The nomenclature of the streets hereabouts is commemorative of the engineers, Newlands, Mackenzie, Brunel. Queen's Road. United Presbyterian Church.

In the latter street is situated the Everton Athenæum, a large and commodious room erected in 1862 for lectures and musical entertainments. Athenæum.

A little distance along Queen's Road we notice St. Chrysostom's Church, erected in 1854, from the designs of Mr. Raffles Brown. I have already spoken of this gentleman, and of his erratic but brilliant career in connection with the Unitarian Church in Hope Street. St. Chrysostom's exhibits unmistakable evidences of the same character of mind. It is an unpretending, but very effective and graceful design. It consists of the usual nave and chancel with transepts and low aisles, with west end tower and spire. The tracery of the windows is of the decorated flowing character in various designs, but all sparkling and lively. The east end has a complication of parts which might be confusing; but they so evidently combine to one common end, that the unity is complete St. Chrysostom's Church.

CHAP. XIV.

in the midst of multiplicity. The proportions of the tower and spire are very pleasing, combining stability with lightness of effect.

Water tower.

A little to the west of St. Chrysostom's stands the Water Tower, a lofty circular arcaded structure, which from a distance where its diameter cannot be at once ascertained, gives the idea of a Roman amphitheatre, with its arches tier above tier. It was constructed with the reservoir adjoining in 1854, by Mr. Thomas Duncan, C.E., engineer to the Liverpool Water Works.

Public baths.

Opposite the Water Works we enter Margaret Street, and notice on the west side the Public Baths erected by the corporation in 1862–3, from the designs of Mr. James Newlands, C.E., the borough engineer. When we speak of public baths, one's mind is insensibly carried away to the colossal structures erected by Caracalla, Titus, and Diocletian. Modern cities do not possess, nor are they likely to obtain, public baths on the gigantic scale of those of ancient Rome; nor with the conveniences and domestic comforts of modern days does there exist the same necessity for them. At the same time, the provision of baths by the public authorities—a measure of quite recent introduction—has been attended with results of a very beneficial character, and in every way is deserving of support and encouragement.

The present building presents a neat elevation, in a style partaking somewhat of an Oriental character. The material is white brick, with coloured dressings. The centre has a wide, deeply recessed, arched portal. The windows have colonnettes and tracery of cast-iron. The design is on the whole pleasing in its effect. The only blemish is the tent-like form of the roof of the centre building, which imparts something of flimsiness or unsubstantiality to the design.

Names of streets.

The streets hereabouts manifest the nationality of the builders who constructed them. The Welsh give us Aber, Ogwen, Lavan, and Tegid Streets; the Scotch have

left their *imprimatur* in the names of Caird, Dunkeld, Perth, and Lynedoch Streets. CHAP. XIV.

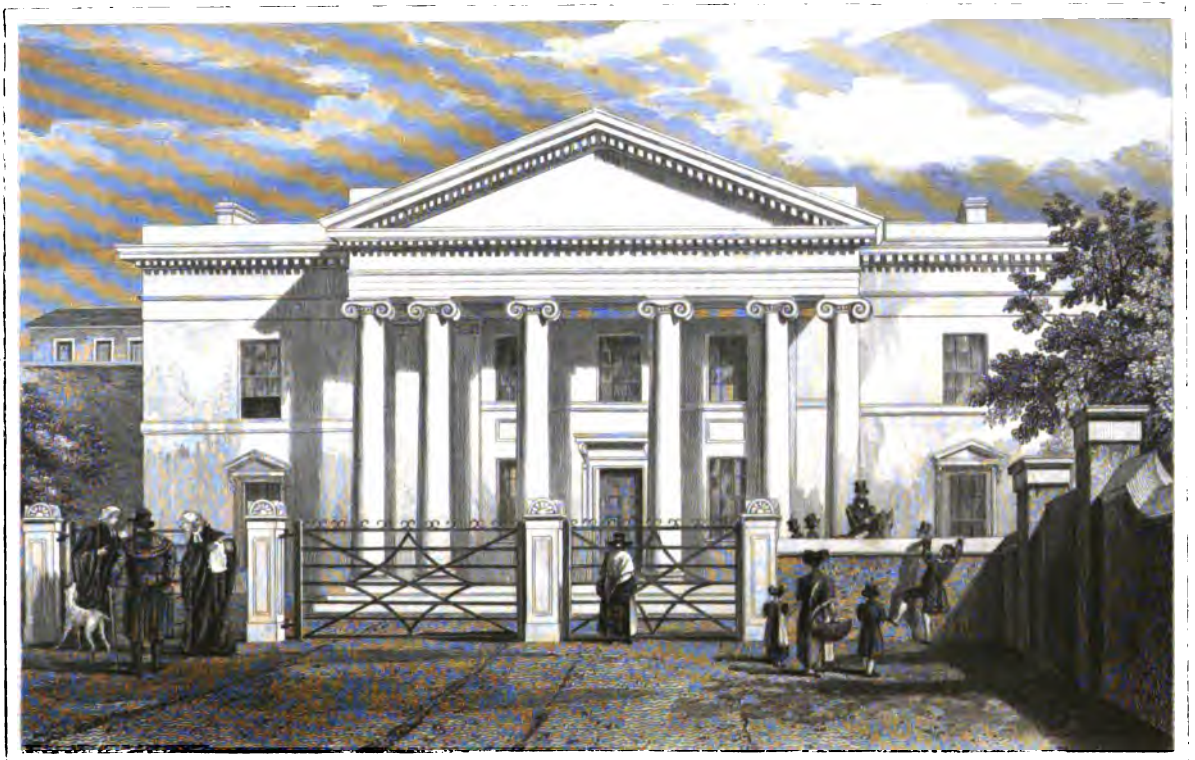
We have now returned to the gate of the Necropolis, the point from which we started, and here complete our perambulation of Everton.

I have been led into detail, perhaps some of my readers may think, to too great an extent; but it is not often that the materials exist for tracing with such minuteness the ancient condition and gradual change and development of a locality. The rapid growth of cities is a phenomenon peculiar to our own times, and nowhere has it been exhibited with greater distinctness than in the district which we have just surveyed. It may be reasonably asked, what has been the result of this steady onward march of brick and mortar, of this absorption of garden and field and meadow into the wilderness of streets and alleys which now cover the face of the township like a gigantic maze? Has the sum of human happiness been increased? Have morals and manners received an onward impulse? Or is the movement one to be deprecated and deplored? Whatever may be our views on this subject, the change is an inevitable one. This is emphatically the 'age of great cities.' Sentimentally and æsthetically we may look back with regret on the paternal relations and the picturesque aspect of feudal times, but we can no more revive them than the old man can reassume the simplicity and wilfulness of childhood. So with the bosky glades, the rural lanes, the pleasant mansions, and the retired gardens of Everton of the past generation. They are gone past recall, and the rows of cottages and dreary streets which have taken their place may appear a poor exchange. But there is another side to the picture. Modern Everton has arisen out of the commercial prosperity of Liverpool. This implies a greater demand for labour, increased population, better wages, material progress. There can be no question that, with many drawbacks, the bulk of our population has Summary.

CHAP. XIV.

General condition.

wonderfully advanced in the comforts of life and in general intelligence. The condition of Everton bears testimony to this fact. There is little of squalid poverty in the district, and a very large proportion of homely respectability amongst the artizan class which constitute the principal population. Churches, chapels, and schools are numerous, and provision is made for most of the ills which afflict humanity. If 'the greatest happiness of the greatest number' be the main object of our national institutions, the advance of the masses will always be indicative of the degree of success we have attained. In this respect the change which has come over the face of Everton is by no means to be deplored.



SESSIONS HOUSE, KIRKDALE.

TO THE LORD KELMERSDALE CHAIRMAN OF THE QUARTER SESSIONS FOR THE HONOUR OF WOLFSDEN, THIS PLATE IS HUMBLY DEDICATED

CHAPTER XV.

KIRKDALE.

CHAP. XV.

THE township of Kirkdale, since the Reform Acts of 1832 and 1835, has become an integral part of the municipal and parliamentary borough of which it forms the northern extremity. It is a small district, containing an area of 841 acres, having one of its sides abutting on the river. The land within Kirkdale is comparatively flat, rising from a level of 24 feet above the sea at the western margin to two low eminences, the summit of one being, at Blackfield Terrace, Stanley Road, 116 feet high; the other, near the Industrial Schools, rising to 120 feet. Between these two eminences a tiny stream, rising in the township of Walton, pursued its career down a gully which it had excavated for itself, forming one or two pools in its course, and finally debouched into the river, near the site of the present railway goods station at Canada Dock. Railways and docks, roads, buildings, and brickfields have almost entirely obliterated all traces of this watercourse, except a small remnant a little to the south of the County Gaol, where an old house called Dale Lodge still exists in the upper portion of the gully, and Dingle Lane indicates the access to the valley. The name Kirkdale, there can be no doubt, is of Danish origin. These hardy sea-rovers, about the end of the ninth century, under the renowned Harold the Fair-haired, conquered and settled in the Isle of Man, from which stronghold they ravaged

Site.

Elevation

Brook.

Danes.

CHAP. XV.

during the next hundred years the coasts of Cumberland and Lancashire, and gradually extended their conquests inland. On the coast of South Lancashire their settlements extended along the curved line from North Meols (Southport) to Widnes on the Mersey, and inwards to the chord line joining the two extremities. Within this limit we find the nomenclature in great part Scandinavian—Formby, Crosby, Roby, Ormskirk, Thingwall, Widnes, &c. The dale just described offered a pleasant site, with a fair stream of pure water running through its centre; and here, it would seem, when the fierce sea-rovers succumbed to the gentle influences of Christianity, they built a church, from whence the name is derived. When the church was built, where it was situated, and when it was destroyed, are all unknown. All traces of it had vanished before the Conquest, no mention being made in Domesday Book, where a reference would undoubtedly have been made, had a church then existed. The entry is as follows: 'Uctred tenebat *Chirchedale*. Ibi dimid. hida quieta ab omni consuetudine præter geld. Valebat x solid.' 'Uctred held *Chirchedale*. There is half a hide, free from all custom except land tax. It was worth ten shillings.'

Settlement.

Church.

Domesday.

The next information we obtain of Kirkdale is from the 'Testa de Neville,' which is an inquisition taken of the feudal tenures in the reigns of Henry III. and Edward I. We here read that Warin Bussel, Baron of Penwortham, one of the sub-feudatories of Roger de Poictou, had bestowed three carucates of land in Kyrkedale on one Norman, to be held by military service, and that these lands had been inherited by Quenilda, the daughter of Roger de Kyrkedale, and were held by the same service. The family of More—originally de Mora, or de la More—established themselves here early in the thirteenth century. Amongst the muniments at Knowsley which passed to the Derby family along with the Moore estates, in 1709, there is a very ancient deed, without a date, in

Testa de Neville.

Quenilda.

which the name of Quenilda de Kyrkedale is introduced. It would not be straining probability very far if we were to assume that the fair Quenilda was the channel through which the estates of Kirkdale passed to the Mores. There is no doubt that the family settled in Liverpool about the time of the creation of the borough by the charter of King John. Adam de la More was endowed with lands in Horton by Richard I., confirmed afterwards by John. The earliest of the name recorded in connection with Liverpool is John de la More, son of John de Mora, about A.D. 1200.[1] Sir John de la More lived at the Hall, in Oldhall Street, 20th Henry III. (1236). Robert de Mora held the manor of Kirkdale in the 5th Edward II. (1312). The acquisition of the Kirkdale property by the More family must, therefore, have been made between the above dates. As the 'Testa de Neville,' in which Quenilda is named as the possessor of Kirkdale, was compiled at the end of the reign of Henry III., the presumption is strongly confirmed that by this lady the manor of Kirkdale passed to the Mores. Soon after taking possession a manor-house was erected. The dale or gully above alluded to offered a favourable site, giving a plentiful supply of water, and the provision for a moat, without which means of defence no mansion in the middle ages was complete. The date of the erection of Bank Hall is assumed to be A.D. 1280, but this is by no means certain. Enfield gives it as 1282, founded upon an inscription said to have existed in connection with the armorial bearings on the entrance gateway; but this is by no means free from suspicion, as the style of architecture represented in the existing views corresponds better with that prevailing in the sixteenth than that of the thirteenth century. However this may be, the family removed here from More Hall, in Liverpool (hereafter called the Old Hall), at the latter end of the thirteenth century, and

More family.

Bank Hall.

[1] 'Moore Rental' p. 10, Chetham Society's Papers vol. xii.

CHAP. XV.

occupied a position of respectability and influence in the district for five hundred years.

More family.

A. D. 1295.

To the first Parliament summoned by the Crown (1295) Liverpool sent two burgesses, Adam Fitz-Richard and Robert Pynklow. John de la More appears as one of the sureties for the due attendance of these members

A.D. 1306.

at Westminster. In 1306 Richard de Mora and John de Mora are returned as representatives for the borough.

Frequent indications occur in the old annals of the dignified position of the Mores of Bank Hall for many

Sir Thomas.

generations. Sir Thomas de la More wrote the 'Life and Death of Edward II. and III.' Sir William de la

Sir William.

More was created Knight Banneret by Edward the Black Prince for his bravery at the Battle of Poitiers, September 1357. Mr. Gregson maintains[1] that this Sir William was the original hero of the famous ballad of the 'Dragon of Wantley'—

> Who had long claws,
> And in his jaws
> Four and forty teeth of iron,
> With a hide as tough as any buff,
> Which did him round environ.

It is true the song places the scene of the encounter at a locality between Sheffield and Rotherham; but in those days of knight-errantry the knight might have a roving commission for killing dragons and such 'small deer' in any part of the kingdom.

Sir Peter.

A.D. 1377.

Sir Peter de la More was Speaker of the House of Commons in the last year of Edward III. (1377), and was committed to Fotheringham Castle for life, at the suit of Alice Pearce, the king's mistress.

The borough of Liverpool was frequently represented in Parliament by members of the family, who also, between the reign of Edward III. and the middle of the seventeenth century, filled the civic chair no less than

[1] 'Fragments for the History of Lancashire,' p. 164.

Drawn by C. C. Pyne. Printed by W. Nicholls

COUNTY HOUSE OF CORRECTION, KIRKDALE.

TO THE REV. JONATHAN BROOKES AND THE VISITING MAGISTRATES, THIS PLATE IS RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED

forty times. The last mayor of the family was Colonel John Moore, the regicide, who filled the office in 1633, having been bailiff in 1630.

John More.

It is stated, both by Baines ('History of Lancashire') and Herdman ('Ancient Liverpool'), that John Moore represented Liverpool in 1625; and that in June 1626 he was bold enough to state in his place in the House that 'we were born free, and must continue free, if the King would keep his kingdom.' These words being reported to the King, his Majesty directed an inquiry and report to be made by the House. Moore was in the meantime committed to the Tower, but four days afterwards was released.

Although this plain speaking was quite in character with the man, yet there is here evidently a mistake. The John Moore thus spoken of could not have been the Moore of Bank Hall. The member sent up from Liverpool in 1625 was Edward Moore, the father of John. He was high sheriff of the county in 1621, and filled the civic chair in 1626.

In 1640 John Moore was elected one of the members for Liverpool in the Long Parliament, and took an active part in most of the stirring events of that turbulent period. The greater part of the gentry and landed proprietors in South Lancashire at that time were Royalists, many of them Roman Catholics, such as the Molyneuxs of Sefton, the Norrises of Speke, the Blundells of Ince and Crosby, the Gerards of Bryn, the Scarisbricks of Scarisbrick, and others. The Stanleys, though Protestants, were ardent Cavaliers.

The Moores[1] embraced the political and religious opinions of the Puritan party, and occupied the very important position of an outpost in the middle of a hostile district. Party spirit at this time ran very high. Edward Moore, the father of Colonel John Moore, as the

Edward Moore.

[1] From the seventeenth century the name took the form of Moore, having previously gone through the varieties of de Mora, de la More, and More.

CHAP. XV.

only Protestant magistrate for a considerable distance round, had the ungracious task of controlling his Catholic neighbours in religious matters, as then required by law. In 1631 he required from the churchwardens of Childwall a return of the attendances of Sir William Norris of Speke at the parish church. Sir William, a gallant and high-spirited soldier, resented this as 'ungentlemanlike dealing,' which led to a personal quarrel, each giving the other 'the lie to his throat.' Norris then drew his sword and struck Moore twice therewith. The assault on a magistrate in the performance of his duty was considered so grave an offence that it was taken up by the Star Chamber. Norris was committed to prison, fined 1,000*l.*, and made to pay 50*l.* damages to Moore.[1]

Sir William Norris.

Political opinion in Liverpool was much divided. In the short Parliament elected April 1640 two Roundheads, Lord Cranfield and John Holland, sat for Liverpool. In October of the same year the Cavaliers obtained sufficient influence to return Sir Richard Wynne, a courtier and Royalist, in conjunction with John Moore, a Puritan and republican. Moore joined the extreme party, which afterwards attained the ascendency under Cromwell. In 1642 he was appointed a deputy-lieutenant for Lancashire, and acted as one of the commissioners to organise the militia in the county. We find him in all parts of the country most industriously occupied in furthering the interests of the Parliament, searching for arms, arresting suspected persons, even overhauling 'the trunks and fardels' of the French Ambassador. In 1643 he acted on the committee of the Lancashire sequestrators. In 1644 he sent out at his own expense an armed vessel from Liverpool to assist in the defence of the coast of Ireland. Whilst in Liverpool he was engaged in raising a regiment of foot and a troop of horse. At this time Adam Martindale, afterwards an eminent Nonconformist minister, acted as his clerk. From his autobiography we

John Moore returned.

[1] See the 'Moore Rental,' Introduction, p. viii., quoted from Rushworth.

obtain a glimpse into the inner life of the Puritan leader, which is not of a very flattering character. He says: 'As he (Moore) was the only justice of the peace in that part of the country, besides his military employment, I got money under him so as might have satisfied me. But his family was such a hell upon earth as was utterly intolerable. There was such a pack of arrant thieves, and they so artificial at their trade, that it was scarce possible to save anything out of their hands. Those who were not thieves, if there were any such, were generally, if not universally, desperately profane, and bitter scoffers at piety.'

John Moore. Private life.

In November 1643 Moore was appointed Vice-Admiral of the coasts between Holyhead and Whitehaven. He was for a short period at the siege of Lathom House; but the only notice of his action there is contained in a letter to which his name is appended, inviting the ministers to pray for success to the cause. He was in Liverpool at the siege by Prince Rupert, Whitsuntide 1644, and is accused by Seacombe of betraying his trust, by giving directions to the soldiers to retreat from the works, in order to save his house and effects at Bank Hall. There seems no ground whatever for this insinuation. The works were taken by storm, and a great part of the buildings of Moore's own house, the Old Hall, were destroyed at the time.

At siege.

Colonel Moore served in the campaign in Ireland, 1646–7, and on his return sided with Cromwell in the expulsion of the one hundred and forty-three members. He was one of the commission for trying the King, and signed the death-warrant. In December 1649 he followed Cromwell to Ireland; and after assisting at the siege of Tecroghan, in Meath, he fell a victim to the plague in June 1650.

Serves in Ireland.

Death.

With all his zeal for the cause of the Parliament he managed very badly for his family and estates, leaving his affairs in a very disordered state at his decease.

CHAP. XV.

Edward Moore.

Edward Moore succeeded to the estates, burdened with a debt of 10,000*l.*, a very serious sum in those days. His father had suffered much in the cause of the Parliament, and several sums were voted towards the reimbursement of his heir, but it does not appear that anything was ever paid. He married Dorothy, the daughter of Sir William Fenwick, of Meldon, in Northumberland, the union with whom turned out a happy one. In 1667 he wrote the

Rental.

papers of advice to his son known as the 'Moore Rental,' which throw so much interesting light on the state of the town at that period. Notwithstanding all his shrewdness and greed, the fortunes of the family never seem to have revived after the death of his father. He tells us in his 'Rental' that by his wife's fortune 'I disengaged ten thousand pounds principal money of a debt contracted by my unfortunate father in the service of the Parliament in these late unhappy wars.'

In 1659, just before the Restoration, Bank Hall, with the estates, was made over to Sir John Fenwick, with power of attorney to enter into possession. This transaction would seem to have been a matter of precaution in case of confiscation of the old regicide's property, which appears nominally to have been included in the general Act for that purpose. By the influence of his wife's Royalist friends an exception was made in Moore's behalf; yet, with all these advantages, the estate never seems to have been clear of debt. The Fenwick con-

Made Baronet.

nection procured Edward Moore the offer of a baronetcy in 1660, but it was not until 1675 that it was actually conferred. In 1678 he died, and was succeeded by his

Sir Cleave Moore.

son, Sir Cleave Moore. This gentleman was a candidate for the representation of Liverpool in 1700, but failed to secure his election. In the 'Norris Papers' several letters are printed relating to this election and the petition which arose out of it. In 1706, in conjunction with the corporation of Liverpool, he promoted a bill in Parliament to supply Liverpool with water from the Bootle Springs,

which rose within his estates. The Act was passed in 1709, but lay dormant until the end of the century, when fresh powers were obtained and acted on.

Sale of estates.

The time had now arrived when the connection of the Moores with Kirkdale, which had subsisted for five hundred years, was to be dissolved. The mortgage on the estates had been transferred to Sir John Moore, alderman of London, probably no relation to the Bank Hall family, who, some time between 1709 and 1712—the authorities not being agreed as to the date—disposed of the whole of the Moore estates in Liverpool, Kirkdale, Bootle, &c., the greater part to James, the tenth Earl of Derby, for 12,000*l.*

Death.

Sir Cleave Moore died in 1729, leaving a son, Sir Joseph Edmonds Moore, who again left a son of the same name. The latter, by his marriage with Henrietta Maria, daughter of William Morris, Esq., of Farnham, Berks, had for issue the last baronet, Sir William Moore, of Stamford, by whose decease in 1810 the title became extinct.

Last Baronet.

Bank Hall.

From the family let us turn for a short time to the domicile which they inhabited. The old manor house, with its moat, and grange, and quadrangles, no doubt underwent many changes during its long occupation by the Moores. We possess three views of the building, taken at different times, which are given by Herdman.[1] The first was taken in 1754, by Mr. Blackmore, and is preserved in the British Museum. Another is dated 1770, taken by Mr. Matthew Nicholson. The third is dated 1772, just previous to its destruction, and was engraved by Thomas Chubbard. Enfield also gives a verbal description, which may be from personal observation, as the first edition of his work was published before the building was destroyed. In the second edition he describes it in the past tense. From these sources, and a careful comparison of the old maps with the locality as it

Views.

[1] 'Ancient Liverpool,' 1st series, pl. 10, 11; 2nd series, pl. 4.

CHAP. XV.

Bank Hall.

now exists, we may form a tolerably clear conception of the premises as they stood in the first half of the last century.

Site.

The brook formerly described running from east to west expanded into a small lake, which narrowed in the middle and was crossed by a bridge, approached from the south, and flanked by two large piers surmounted by obelisks. The portion on the west side had an island in the middle, with a clump of trees. This part of the lake and the island are shown on the ordnance map of 1845–9, but are now obliterated. On the north side of the bridge stood the manor house, which consisted of a large square embattled tower, in three storeys, with an archway running underneath, with gabled two-storey buildings adjoining on the eastward. These buildings ran round three

Buildings.

sides of a court, which was open to the west. The buildings on the northern side were evidently the oldest, and at the time of taking the view (1770) were partly ruinous. There is a semi-octagonal projection with a series of Gothic windows on this side, which probably formed part of the great hall. At the north-east angle of the great tower rose a circular turret carried above the battlements, capped with an octagonal cupola. The upper part of this was open to the west and north, and was evidently designed for a watch-tower or beacon. On the inner face of the tower over the gateway a shield or escutcheon is visible, which bore, according to Enfield, the achievement of the founder, as follows: 1st, Ten trefoils, 4, 3, 2, 1; 2nd, Three greyhounds courant, in pale; 3rd, A buck's head caboshed in front; 4th, A griffin rampant. Crest, a moor cock volant. Date (as stated), 1282.

Interior.

Enfield thus describes the interior: 'The great hall was a curious piece of antiquity, much ornamented with carvings, busts, and shields. It had no ceiling, but was open quite up to the roof, with various projections of the carved parts, whereon trophies of war and military habiliments were formerly suspended. On a wall between

the court and garden was a grand arrangement of all the armorial acquisitions of the family. The shields were carved on circular stones, elevated and placed at equal distances, like an embattlement. But this venerable pile has lately been demolished, and will probably soon be forgotten.'[1]

Out-buildings.

On the south side of the brook and lake stood the stables, barns, and outbuildings, part of which are still in existence. The great barn had the roof and woodwork destroyed by fire some years since, but the walls remain with their loop-holed lights and arched doorways. Adjoining this, on the eastward, ran a range of low buildings, well built in hewn stone, apparently stables. These have been raised, and additional buildings erected in the farmyard in a rougher and later style. The old hall was destroyed in 1772 by the agent of the Earl of Derby, it is said much to the displeasure of his principal. The present farm-house was built out of the materials. The spout-heads bear the crest of the eagle and child, with the date of 1773, and a cypher. The garden and yard walls bear unmistakable evidences of the old hall in the massive Gothic copings and other fragments which are worked up in their construction.

Destroyed, A.D. 1772.

Present condition

The farm-house with its group of outbuildings, at the time I write (1872), presents a singular and melancholy spectacle. Its garden remains intact; the outbuildings are ruinous, but still show the appearance of a farm-yard. A small croft, shaded by a few remaining trees, still gives shelter to a few cows, which from their sleek appearance must have some better means of sustenance than the scanty herbage on which they tread; but all around drawing nearer and nearer, like the entrenchments surrounding a devoted city, we see north an immense railway station with embankment and tunnel; eastward we hear the snort and roar of the rushing railway train; south there are enormous piles of warehouses; and west-

[1] 'History of Liverpool,' p. 113.

CHAP. XV.

ward the bustle and throng of a crowded street. Surely we may say, without irreverence, 'Old things are passing away; all things are becoming new.'

Village.

The manor house of the Moores does not appear to have attracted about it any village or hamlet. Whatever may have become of the original Danish church, no population settled about the 'dale' to which it gave the name. A cluster of houses seems to have existed from time immemorial near the great north road, forming the narrow twisted streets now called Castle Street, Back Castle Street, Whittle Street, and Morley Street. The oldest existing house is a neat-looking stone building in Castle Street, bearing the date of 1702. It is remarkable, as presenting even at that period an adherence to the mediæval traditional style, in its gabled front and stone mullioned windows.

If the church of Kirkdale was allowed to perish, its ale seems to have been duly appreciated in the good old times. In 1699, when the bill was promoted in Parliament for constituting Liverpool a parish separate from Walton, a case had to be made out. In the statement made to Parliament, amongst other reasons for the measure, the attractions of the alehouse at Kirkdale are referred to as detaining the parishioners on their way to the parish church.[1]

Cattle market.

Somewhere about the beginning of the present century, the weekly market for cattle and sheep, for which no suitable provision was made in the town, commenced to be held at Kirkdale, and introduced a considerable amount of business into the neighbourhood. This market occupied the triangular piece of land at the junction of Netherfield Road and Walton Road as far south as Zante Street, now covered with buildings. In 1830 owing to the restricted accommodation and the difficulty of enlarging it, a company was formed and a more commodious market constructed under an Act of Parliament, near the Old Swan.

[1] See vol. i. p. 171.

Progress.

The increase of Kirkdale has taken place chiefly on its eastern and western margins. The Leeds and Liverpool Canal, and the railways, with their branches intersecting the township in different directions, have interposed obstacles to the development of the middle portion. A large part of the land in the district belongs to the Earl of Derby, being the ancient demesne of the Moores. The capabilities of the locality long lay dormant. The lord of the manor was under no necessity for bringing the property into the market, and if a piece of land was occasionally leased to a favoured individual it was for lives only, and clogged with all the verbiage and feudal restrictions of the Middle Ages. Notwithstanding these disadvantages, the contiguity to Liverpool, the dryness of the soil, the salubrity of the atmosphere, and the beautiful marine view, offered powerful inducements to settlers. About 1824, Mr. William Spurstow Miller, a solicitor in Liverpool, purchased on lease a piece of land on the margin of the sea at Bootle, and erected a castellated stone mansion, long known as Miller's Castle. By the exertions of this gentleman, the road now called Derby Road, opening up the whole district, was constructed. Previous to this, there was no road to the western part of Kirkdale and Bootle, except along the margin of the shore on the west, and a most roundabout and inconvenient road, following pretty nearly the present Westminster Road, on the east. In 1827, St. Mary's Church, Bootle, was built at the expense of the Earl of Derby, which contributed materially to the development of the district, the nearest church being at Walton, two miles distant. The front to the shore next began to be fringed with marine residences. Mersey View, Brunswick Terrace, Stanley Crescent, &c., presented a series of seaside habitations on a moderate scale. And so matters might have gone on, adding year by year a little to the suburban outgrowth of the town; but events were at hand which advanced with giant strides the commercial

Miller's Castle.

St. Mary's Church.

CHAP. XV.

capabilities of the port, and gave an entirely new direction to the nascent progress of the district.

Railway, A.D. 1845.

In 1845, the Liverpool and Bury Railway (now the Lancashire and Yorkshire) was projected, to come in at the north end of Liverpool. After much opposition, the project was carried and the work commenced in 1846.

Dock extension.

Not long after this, Mr. John Bramley Moore, the chairman of the dock committee, originated a scheme of a nature and extent at which

> the boldest held his breath
> For a time.

The commerce of Liverpool had been long tied and bound for want of dock accommodation. Docks had been made as far as the limits of the borough northward would admit. In 1844, the foreshore and land belonging to the corporation up to Beacon's Gutter, had been sold by the corporation for dock purposes, but more land was still required. Lord Derby stopped the way to the northward, being lord of the soil and foreshore in Kirkdale and Bootle. Mr. Bramley Moore took upon himself the responsibility of negotiating for the purchase of his lordship's interest in the shore and lands required, without consultation with any one; and when all was arranged and ready for completion, he announced his scheme. The plan was a very simple one. Lord Derby had an enormous frontage to the sea which the dock board alone could utilise. He might hinder, but could not with advantage construct. The board could construct, but had not the land. The arrangement caused comparatively little money to pass; but the dock board, in the construction of their works, raised and formed a large quantity of land beyond what they required, which they handed over to Lord Derby as the owner in fee, and became themselves possessed of nearly two miles and a half of river frontage suitable for the construction of docks. The arrangement was thus mutually advan-

Purchase from Lord Derby.

tageous, each party supplying what the other required. As is usual in such cases, the scheme was loudly applauded in some quarters and as loudly condemned in others. The chairman was accused of truckling to aristocratic influence, and making political capital out of a commercial transaction. It was asserted that the land which was made for Lord Derby would have to be purchased back at a high price, and the whole affair was denounced as a job. On the whole the scheme was approved, and carried out under the sanction of Parliament. The result has fully justified the wisdom and foresight of the arrangement. It is quite true that the land made for Lord Derby has had to be purchased back for the sum of 90,000*l*., but it was well worth the money, whilst the grand scale on which the new works have been carried out and the ample verge given to the expansion of trade in the conception of the whole plan, are such as find no parallel in any similar works. Mr. Bramley Moore has been distinguished as the only private individual whose name has been attached to one of the docks, but it must be admitted that he has amply earned the distinction.

The arrangements just described completely changed the character of the sea margin of Kirkdale. Villas and marine residences were swallowed up as completely as the houses and churches by the Dragon of Wantley.

Changes.

There was nothing left

> But did suffer a sea-change—

and one might fairly complete the couplet—

> Into something rich and strange;

looking at the extent of the commerce and the greatness of the concomitants.

Survey.

I propose as in the previous chapters to take a general survey of the district, noticing as we go along the changes and progress which have from time to time taken place.

CHAP. XV.

Regent Road.

Starting from Boundary Street we will proceed northward along Regent Road. This was formerly the strand of the estuary, but the docks have pushed out into the deep water more than one-third of a mile beyond. On the left we have the Sandon Docks, and graving-docks, and beyond the long lines of timber-yards stretching away in almost endless perspective. Nothing strikes the eye so much as the greatness of the scale on which everything about us is pitched. The width of the road, the vast areas of the enclosures, the massive character of every construction connected with the docks, demonstrates the strong healthy character of the commerce of Liverpool. The land on the east side of the road for the most part belongs to the Dock Estate, and lies in reserve for future use, which gives this part of the township somewhat of an unfinished look; the frontage, however, is becoming occupied by offices, yards, boat-builders, block-makers, and the miscellaneous appurtenances of a sea-going community.

London and North Western goods station.

At the corner of Bankfield Street, and extending eastward the whole distance between Regent Road and Derby Road, stands the new Goods Station of the London and North Western Railway, erected 1867–8, being the terminus of the branch line from Edgehill. There is nothing which better exemplifies the prodigious expansion of Liverpool commerce than the vast increase in the railway goods stations. Forty years ago the canal, the river, and the high road sufficed to carry away into the interior all the imports, and to bring back the manufactures to distribute over the whole world; but now we find the town pervaded by lines of railway, both above and below the surface; high levels and low levels, junctions and crossings, coal staiths and turntables, meet the eye in all directions. Lines of rails extend from end to end of the dock system of quays, so that goods can be landed from the vessel, put upon the waggons, and forwarded without change to any part of the kingdom, from

Penzance to Inverness. This, however, for reasons of convenience, is not the usual practice. The goods for the most part are carted to the railway termini; and where within her Majesty's dominions will be found teams of horses to equal those which are turned out by many of the Liverpool firms? Many of them are of elephantine size, and for beauty, sleekness, and strength are a pleasure for the eye to dwell upon. The railway goods stations have assumed enormous proportions, and occupy large areas of land, both north and south; but rapidly as the accommodation has increased, it has hardly been able to overtake the demands of commerce. Even now long lines of loaded carts and waggons may frequently be seen obstructing the streets whilst waiting for admission to the overcrowded goods depôts. The station before us absorbed a considerable quantity of property in its site, amongst others the old dog-kennels of the Liverpool Hunt, which were removed about the end of the last century from the bottom of Richmond Row to this site. The building was triangular in plan, with a courtyard in the centre. It had for many years ceased to be used for its original purpose, and was converted into cottages.

Carriage.

Horses.

Kennels.

The railway leaves the station by a tunnel, passing under the road and canal, and emerging on the east side of Westminster Road.

Tunnel.

Proceeding on our walk northward along Regent Road, houses may be seen, some single, others in rows, hidden behind the yards, workshops, and offices, which skirt the east side of the road. These constitute the remains of 'Mersey View,' 'Brunswick Terrace,' &c., already described as the original erections in the locality. It is difficult to realise the fact that within a period comparatively recent these were country residences, with the tide flowing up almost to their very doors, which is now pushed back nearly half a mile. The silent and slow

Houses.

CHAP. XV.

operations of nature not unfrequently cause such reaction in the course of ages, but here the busy hand of man has effected a similar revolution in a few years.

Let us now turn to the eastward as far as Derby Road. We have approached the sacred confines of the Borough of Bootle, which we will not presume to enter, our young and vigorous municipal sister deserving a historian of her own. Let us take one glance, like Moses from the top of Pisgah, into this land of promise. The long perspective of Derby Road stretches onward to the north, displaying a crowded thoroughfare, lined with shops, manufactories, churches, and the usual accompaniment of progress, the attractive ginshop and tavern. Busy life in its various forms beats quick within her bosom. All the elements of prosperity and success are present—not the least the wide-awake shrewdness manifested in the selection of the motto for the juvenile municipality—

Bootle.

Motto.

Respice, Aspice, Prospice.

The space between the boundary of Kirkdale and Bootle, and Bankfield Street, as far east as the canal, is densely built up with shops, houses, and warehouses. The only building of a public nature is the United Presbyterian Church and Schools. The church is a large structure, built with white stone parpoint ashlar, having nave and aisles. The west front has a large six-light window, with tracery. The style of architecture is rather bald and poor, without any point or sharpness. The schools adjoining, forming three sides of an open quadrangle fronting the street, though with less pretence, are far more satisfactory in their design and detail.

United Presbyterian Church.

We return southward along Derby Road, which in this portion of its length, for the reasons already alleged, is not encumbered with buildings. Bank Hall stands in the small fragment left of its demesne, like Constantinople in the fifteenth century, bereft of its territory, beleaguered by enemies, and tottering to its fall, yet preserving a cer-

Bank Hall.

tain amount of venerable respectability in connection with its past history.

Sandhills.

Let us pause for a moment at Sandhills Road. The name sufficiently expresses the nature of the land, on the margin of the sea. The land between Sandhills Road and Luton Street, from north to south, and from the Canal to the sea-beach, from east to west, formed the precinct of a mansion called Sandhills House, a hand- House. some structure, built of stone, in the early years of the present century. A view of the house is given by Herdman,[1] who states it to have been built by Mr. Moss. I rather incline to think it was built by Mr. John Leigh, Leigh. attorney, who owned much of the land in the neighbourhood. It is certain that he was living there in 1807, when the house could only recently have been completed. After Mr. Leigh's death, in 1824, it was occupied by Dr. James Gerard (mayor in 1808), Mr. Leigh's brother-in-law. The grounds were tastefully laid out, and protected by a thick belt of trees all round. As the grounds descended to the water's edge, all direct communication northwards was stopped until the present Victoria Road was cut through, about 1835. The house was taken down about 1843, soon after which the railway Railway. embankment was carried across the estate. The branch line to the North Docks station was constructed in 1856. The intersection of the lines of railway has interfered with the laying out of the land. Between the main line and Victoria Road, Errington, Grundy, and Holmes Streets have been formed, and large piles of warehouses constructed. The Victoria Engine Works of Messrs. James Jack & Co. have been built west of Victoria Road.

St. Aidan's.

St. Aidan's Church, on the east of Victoria Road, was built in 1855–6. It is a neat, plain structure, of red stone, in the pointed style, having a nave and chancel, without clerestory, with aisles fronted with gables, and a bell gable at the west end. The ground about it

[1] Vol. ii. pl. 39.

CHAP. XV.

is unfenced, and left in a slovenly and uncared-for condition.

Sandhills Lane is now a wide, open commercial road, forming an important link of communication east and west. A number of warehouses and petroleum sheds have been erected adjoining the railway embankment. With the exception of these buildings and those described above, the land west of the canal remains unappropriated. One building only requires still to be mentioned. I have alluded in a former chapter to several successive attempts which have been made to introduce the spinning of cotton into Liverpool, and the ill success which has attended the efforts. Undeterred by previous experience, about 1840 an enterprising company purchased land from Mr. Leigh on the north side of Boundary Street, adjoining the canal, and erected extensive spinning mills. These were carried on with more or less success for a number of years, but at length were obliged to succumb to the fate which seems invariably to attend upon all such attempts in Liverpool. After remaining unoccupied for some years, the premises were purchased by another company and converted into corn and rice mills. They have been recently greatly enlarged, and are conducted on a very extensive scale, as the North Shore Flour and Rice Mills.

Warehouses.

Cotton mill.

Corn mills.

On the east side of the canal up to Commercial and Stanley Roads great changes are in progress. The irregular intersection of the canal and railways would seem to present almost insurmountable difficulties in the laying out of the land to advantage, but efforts are being made, and with considerable success. At the northern end Bank Hall Street has been formed, running from Derby Road across the canal and railway to Stanley Road. From this street, running northward, and continued into Bootle, two new streets, called Brazenose and St. John Streets, have been laid out, and are now being built on between the canal and railway. Two goodly churches have already been erected in advance of the population;

Streets.

one, a Protestant Episcopal church, dedicated to St. Paul, in Brazenose Street, has the front to the street built with stone parpoints, with a large tracery window. There is a slender tower, crowned with a bell turret at the north-west angle. The flanks of the building are in plain brick. St. Paul's Church.

At a short distance in the neighbouring street (St. John's Road) stands the new Roman Catholic Church of St. Alexander, designed by Mr. E. W. Pagin. It is a building every way worthy of notice. Though moderate in dimensions, and by no means expensively built, it is distinguished by much elegance and taste. It consists of a nave and aisles, with rather lofty clerestory. There are no transepts, but the chancel, which is very short, is marked off by gabled dormers in the clerestory. The east end is apsidal in three planes. The exterior is entirely of stone. The west front has a plain pointed arch entrance door, over which are two deeply recessed double light windows, with a canopied niche and statue between. The next stage has a large rose window, rather peculiarly treated, having heads or busts in the centre, and at the intersections of the spokes with the rim. There is a light bell turret at the north-west angle. The windows of the side aisles are in three lights, with traceried heads. The grouping and treatment of the subordinate buildings on the south side—vestries, &c.—is very pleasing. The interior is simple and effective. The ceiling of the nave is in stained wood in three planes, with incised and painted ornament. The roofs of the side aisles are also wood, but supported by arches thrown across from each pier. Altogether, the design and arrangements of this church are very satisfactory, and fully maintain the reputation of its architect. St. Alexander's Roman Catholic Church.

The middle portion of Kirkdale, east of the canal, and extending northward of Rake Lane (now Latham Street), remained until 1862 entirely undeveloped. Vauxhall Road—the old Pinfold Lane—terminated at Rake Lane, Vauxhall Road.

CHAP. XV.

Blackfield House.

where a narrow road commenced, turning over Sandhills Bridge, and conducting to the sea shore. Just at the turn of the road, stood Blackfield House and grounds, a rather imposing-looking mansion placed at a distance back from the road, near the summit of one of the highest points in the township, commanding a beautiful view seawards. I am not aware by whom the house was erected, but it was long the residence of Mr. Crawford Logan, anchor and chain cable manufacturer. After his decease it was sold about 1846, and converted into brickfields. In 1862 the land was laid out in streets and covered with buildings. About 1862 the two great lines of Stanley Road and Commercial Road were laid out by Lord Derby. The former continues Scotland Road from the point where it diverges to the north-east in a direct line to Bootle. The latter prolongs the line of Vauxhall Road until it intersects the former opposite the county gaol. These two arteries open up an extensive area of land, and are destined to become important lines of communication. The wide expanse eastward of Stanley Road has been converted into brickgrounds. These excavations, and the different railway and road embankments, have almost entirely obliterated the original features of the surface, which though not bold were pretty and picturesque. About the centre of Stanley Road, just where it is intersected by the original little dale, the site has been fixed for the Stanley Hospital. On Monday, June 6, 1870, the first stone was laid by the Right Hon. Edward, fifteenth Earl of Derby, in the presence of the mayor and corporation. The day was beautifully fine, the concourse of people large, and the whole ceremony a success. Of the fancy fair, in connection with the same undertaking, I shall have shortly again to speak.

Stanley Road.

Hospital.

Corporation stables.

Returning along Commercial Road, we pass the extensive buildings erected, in 1868, for the corporation stables. From the introduction of the Sanitary Act in 1846 down to a recent period, the Health Committee of the council

contracted with individuals for the removal of the night soil and refuse; but the arrangement not having ultimately turned out satisfactorily, the system has been changed, and the work undertaken by the corporation. For this purpose 166 horses and 179 carts are now kept; and the present stabling, which contains stall room for 32 horses, has been erected for the accommodation of the northern district. The arrangements are of the most modern and improved character, steam-power being employed in all the operations, where practicable. May Day in Liverpool may be termed, 'La fête des chevaux.' In the old mail-coach days, the various teams of the stages and mails shone forth in all the brilliancy of ribbons and garlands. Since they have been elbowed out by the rail, the observance has been transferred to the waggon and cart teams. In horseflesh of this character, Liverpool enjoys a proud pre-eminence. The procession on May Day is a sight to be remembered. The size and beauty of the animals, the silky sleekness of their coats, the polish and embellishment of their accoutrements, the evident pride and pleasure taken by the carmen and waggoners in the condition of their mute companions, combine to render the sight one of a very interesting character. Nor is it without its practical advantage. Where men can be brought to take a pleasure in their occupation it is always a means of their elevation, and lessons of humanity and kindliness are learned which tend to the profit both of man and beast. In the May Day *fêtes* the corporation teams now take an important place. After the procession, on the same or a subsequent day, the men with their wives are entertained at dinner in the sheds of the Haymarket, and the day is concluded with sports and pastimes of a suitable nature. Whatever the philosopher may say, 'cakes and ale' are an important institution in the world, and, kept under proper restraint, they may be turned to public advantage.

May-day procession.

Horse Show.

Proceeding southwards, we arrive at Rake Lane, which

Rake Lane.

CHAP. XV.

was formerly the only link of communication between east and west for a considerable distance. The north side has recently been built up, and the name of the road changed to Latham Street. There has been of late quite a crusade against the old names of streets, so many changes having been made that it is difficult to preserve one's orientation. The names of streets ought not to be lightly altered. They are historical mementoes illustrating the times and circumstances under which they were formed. If the names of Oldhall Street, Tithebarn Street, and Castle Street were obliterated from the map of Liverpool, the associations of its early history would lose much of their interest.

Changes of name.

The land on the north side of Rake Lane, east of Stanley Road, comprising Bewley Street, Vesuvius Street, Pluto Street, &c., was laid out and built upon between the years 1851 and 1858.

Streets.

I have already spoken of Stanley Road, now extended to Bootle. The southern portion of this, from Scotland Road to Great Mersey Street, was opened in 1820, and called Gore Street North. A short continuation was carried out behind Blackfield House in 1830, and a row of houses, called Blackfield Terrace, built on the highest point of the hill at the same time.

There is a little narrow street running behind Latham Street, or Rake Lane, called Pleasant Street. This was formed about 1822, or at least first built on about that time. It was a rural lane, with pleasant little gardens about the houses. One of them called Fishpond House, from a piece of water on the grounds, still exists, with very little change. Great Mersey Street was formed in 1817, and long continued a distant rural suburb, built on one side, the houses having a pleasant outlook over fields and gardens towards the town. The land opposite remained uncovered until 1862, when Lancaster Street, Major Street, &c., were formed.

Boundary Street, forming the division between Kirk-

dale and Liverpool, was formed in 1830, but long remained unfinished and desolate, surrounded by brickfields.

Development.

Crossing Scotland Road, the triangular piece of land at the intersection of Great Homer Street was built on at various times between 1832 and 1862. The outlying portion of Kirkdale, east of Great Homer Street, up to Netherfield Road, remained open fields down to 1862, since which date it has been covered with a dense mass of houses and a network of streets, deriving their nomenclature from the Grecian Archipelago; Zante, Crete, Candia, Mitylene, &c.

Welsh population.

I have already alluded in the chapter on Everton to the predominance of natives of the principality in the northern district. I may here mention that in this part of Kirkdale, within a few hundred yards of each other, three chapels exist in which divine service is conducted in the Welsh language. One, on the west side of Netherfield Road, belonging to the Calvinistic Methodists, is a commodious building in white brick, with a large three-light window in the front, something in the Byzantine style. The second, on the north side of Boundary Street East, belongs to the Wesleyan Methodists; and the third, on the south side of Great Mersey Street, is connected with the body of Independents. The two latter have nothing noteworthy in their architecture.

Welsh Chapels.

Village.

We now approach the ancient village of Kirkdale, with its little winding streets, which seem to have been constructed on the Ptolemaic principle

> Cycle and epicycle, orb on orb.

Taverns.

Fronting the main road two old hostelries—now, alas! sadly modernised, open their inviting portals to the thirsty wayfarer. The one, the Liver, on the west side, long known by the name of its landlord as 'Stretch's,' the other on the east side, called Smithfield House, in the palmy days of the Cattle Market, kept by Rachel Dale.

CHAP. XV.

Which of these two was the veritable public alluded to so feelingly in 1698 as inveigling the parishioners on their way to the parish church, we have no means of knowing; no doubt the liquor is still equally good, and let us hope, more legitimately employed.

Old mansion.

On the irregularly-shaped piece of land between Smith Street and Foley Street (formerly Castle Street) fronting the main road, stood a fine old mansion and gardens, belonging to the Earl of Derby. It was taken down about 1850, but the land was not covered until 1868.

St. Mary's.

Continuing along the Walton Road, a short distance brings us to St. Mary's Church, erected in the year 1835. It was originally a plain brick building, but in 1841, the front was rebuilt in the Gothic style by Mr. A. H. Holme. A melancholy event took place in this church in 1856.

Dover.

The Rev. George Dover, who had only recently been appointed incumbent, was struck down during the performance of divine service by heart disease, and died in the pulpit. He was a man eminently respected, and the circumstance made a deep impression on the public mind.

Cemetery.

In 1837 the land adjoining the church was formed into a public cemetery, called (though not connected with the church) St. Mary's Cemetery. The entrance faces the Walton Road, consisting of an arched gateway in the Gothic style, with the chapel and registrar's house on each side. Though small, the cemetery is rather prettily laid out.

Claremont.

From Kirkdale to Bootle there existed an ancient road called Bootle Lane, which in regard of eccentric deviations and turns, might have served for an access to the circumlocution office itself. On a bend of this road, about 1826, a hamlet called Claremont was founded, with a number of squalid-looking streets and a chapel, and along another reach of the road further north a fringe of houses was erected between 1840 and 1850.

Much about the same time another settlement of houses, rope-walks, &c., was formed along Barlow Lane at its junction with the main road. In the year 1869, by an arrangement between the corporation and the Earl of Derby, the principal landed proprietor, the tortuous road was widened and straightened by opening new lines across the angles, and the name changed to Westminster Road—not a very apt designation one would think for a road leading to Bootle. A considerable tract of land lying on both sides of Westminster Road, and extending to Walton Road, has been leased by Lord Derby to the Liverpool Land Company, who have laid it out for building and formed a number of streets, principally named after the old abbeys, Fountains, Byland, Furness, Tintern, &c. These are now rapidly being built up, and an entire change is impending over the whole district.

Westminster Road.

The most conspicuous building in Kirkdale is the county gaol, which occupies a commanding and elevated position nearly in the centre of the township. It was erected in 1821–2 at a cost of 100,000*l.*, besides the subsequent additions. The architect was Mr. Wright of Manchester. The plan is that of the radiating or panopticon principle, so strongly advocated by Jeremy Bentham, but now for the most part abandoned. It consists of a double range of buildings forming two semicircles, with an open space between. In the interval on the north side is placed the governor's house, and in that on the south side stands the Court House, rather an imposing-looking building externally, having an open advanced Ionic portico crowned with a pediment. A church has been added within the walls in a style of architecture somewhat heterogeneous with the rest, and externally a detached house has been built for the chaplain. Since the removal of the assizes to Liverpool in 1835, down to the opening of the Manchester assizes in 1867, Kirkdale was the gaol for the southern division of the county, and since that date it has been used for the hundred

County gaol.

CHAP. XV.

County gaol.

of West Derby. Since 1835, executions for capital offences have taken place here, some of them memorable ones. The commanding situation of the gaol overlooking a large extent of open ground on the west side, usually attracted on these occasions a large number of spectators of the lowest class, and scenes of ruffianism and disorder frequently took place, which the new mode of executing in a more private way has tended to prevent. It is a striking instance of the altered tone of public opinion in modern times that so radical a change as is involved in private executions, which a century ago would have roused the suspicions of the people almost to fury, should have been adopted with scarcely a single remark or comment.

Parochial schools.

Not far from the gaol stands another very extensive pile, the Industrial Schools of the parish of Liverpool. The old borough of Liverpool constituting a single parish, the whole of the arrangements for the relief of the poor require to be pitched on a gigantic scale. Although the Liverpool workhouse is probably the largest in the kingdom, it was found impracticable to provide accommodation, under a proper system of suitable classification, for the numerous pauper children. Accordingly, in 1843, measures were taken for the erection of the present building. Plans were obtained under competition, and the prize was awarded to Mr. H. F. Lockwood of Bradford, who carried out the structure. Additions have since been made, by which accommodation is provided for about 1,100 children. The building is of brick, with stone dressings, and is very suitable for its purpose.

Infant schools.

After the experience of twenty years it was found difficult to combine with advantage the charge of infants under seven years of age with the training of older children; and in 1866 a new range of buildings was commenced, more to the southward, as a separate establishment for infants, to accommodate from 500 to 700.

The architects were Messrs. Picton & Son. The principal façade fronts the south, about 300 feet in length, with a tower and lantern in the centre. From the main building the dining-hall, school-room, and play-room extend back, forming three wings. The material is brick in different colours with stone dressings. The cost was about 20,000*l.*

Walton Road.

Down to about 1856, Walton Road, beyond the church and village of Kirkdale, continued to preserve its rural aspect intact. In that year several fields belonging to Mr. Leigh at the extremity of the township adjoining Spellow Lane were laid out for building, intersected by Johnson, Newby, Salop, and Tetley Streets. An entirely new quarter has here sprung up. Spellow Lane, forming the division between Kirkdale and Walton, takes its name from Spellow House, an ancient mansion, a portion of which still exists, surrounded by the extensive nursery gardens of Mr. Skirving. Mr. E. Baines[1] states that 'Spellawe House was the residence of a family of this name in the reign of Edward III.' He gives no authority for this statement, which is somewhat apocryphal. 'Spellawe' is much more likely to have been the site of an ancient tumulus or grave mound. The lands in Walton were possessed at a very early date after the Conquest by the family of Walton or de Waleton, but became divided in the fourteenth century amongst the descendants of the original grantee. In the reign of Henry IV. Spellow House became the property of Robert Fazakerley of Fazakerley by his marriage with Helen, daughter and heiress of Robert Walton of Walton. In the early part of the last century, the property was sold to the Earl of Derby. The remainder of the Walton estates passed, in the fifteenth century, by marriage with the coheiresses of Roger Walton, to the Chorleys of Chorley and the Crosses of Crosse Hall, Liverpool.

Spellow House.

Building in this quarter has been of late greatly stimu-

[1] 'History of Lancashire,' vol. iv. p. 45.

CHAP. XV.

lated by the construction of Stanley Park in the immediate neighbourhood. Although neither this nor the cemetery adjoining are absolutely situated within the boundaries of the municipal borough, yet actually and legally they form part and parcel of its jurisdiction and privileges, and so call for mention here.

History of the parks.

It might seem very singular that Liverpool, with a wealthy corporation and a large landed estate, should until recently never have taken action in providing recreation-grounds for the people, and should have been destitute of the public parks and open fields which have been enjoyed from time immemorial by Glasgow, Edinburgh, Newcastle, Chester, Bristol, and most of the corporate towns in the kingdom. It is not very difficult, however, to account for this anomaly. Previous to the middle of the last century the town was so small that access on three sides to green fields, and on the fourth to the river, was short and easy. The large heath of several hundred acres, on the east, was free and open to all; and on the north an uninterrupted and unenclosed line of sandhills skirted the estuary for many miles. In 1767 St. James's Walk and the Mount Gardens were constructed at the public expense; but for nearly a century following nothing more was done. The town extended its borders with unexampled rapidity. Long rows of streets climbed up the hill and covered the heath; men were too busy and occupied to think of recreation; and when at length the community woke up to the necessity of some effort being made, lo! the land was gone—absorbed—built on.

Prince's Park.

The first attempt at a remedy was made in 1843, by Mr. Richard Vaughan Yates, in the construction of Prince's Park, to which I shall have again to refer. Then followed Wavertree Park, which was thrown open to the public in 1854. The Newsham House estate, West Derby Road, which belonged to the corporation, had a portion of its land appropriated to the public,

Sheil Park.

under the title of Sheil Park, in 1862. Time had brought with it a great advance in the public estimation of the necessity for parks for the people, and the flush of prosperity in the commercial world caused by the events of the American war, appeared to render the subject of expenditure a question of minor importance. It was determined by the Council in 1865 that two parks worthy of the town should be established, one at the north, and the other at the south. Of the latter I shall have hereafter to speak. The northern park was commenced by the purchase of the Walton Lodge estate, containing eight acres. The Woodlands estate followed, containing 22A. 3R. 30P. Twenty-seven acres were purchased from Mr. Leyland, of Walton Hall. Other purchases brought up the quantity of land to a little over ninety-five acres, bounded by Anfield Road and Priory Road, from east to west, and by Walton Lane and Arkles Lane, from north to south. The cost of the land was 115,566*l.*, or 1,215*l.* per acre, being about five shillings per square yard; but this amount included two detached mansions and a row of houses fronting Priory Lane. The amount expended in earthworks, planting, gates and railing, &c., was 23,141*l.* 16*s.* 10*d.*; in architectural works, 14,200*l.*; sundry expenses, 1,489*l.* 12*s.*; making the total cost of the park 154,397*l.* 19*s.* 1*d.* Part of the land will be available for buildings, and Woodlands House is let to a tenant. The planting and gardening were entrusted to Mr. Kemp, who assisted Sir Joseph Paxton in laying out Birkenhead Park. The architectural works were designed and executed by Mr. E. R. Robson, the corporation architect.

Stanley Park.

On the whole Stanley Park is laid out with considerable taste and skill. Exception has been taken to the somewhat too ornate character of the ornamental part of the grounds, and of the elaborate and expensive nature of the architectural works. It has been argued that mere green turf, with trees and paths, resembling Hyde Park,

CHAP. XV.

Stanley Park.

would have given more freedom and enjoyment to the toiling multitudes for whom the park was intended, and that the restrictions necessary under the present arrangement will be irksome and ineffectual. There is no doubt some truth in this; but there seems no reason why the public of Liverpool, to whom the park belongs, should not learn, like other communities, to appreciate the beautiful in nature and art, and to take a pride and pleasure in its preservation.

The view from the terrace is extensive and beautiful, commanding a prospect to the eastward over a wide range of country.

Stanley and Sefton Parks have been constructed under the authority of an Act of Parliament, by which power has been given to borrow 500,000*l.* on the security of a rate to be levied for the purpose, providing a sinking fund to extinguish the debt in thirty years.

Opening.

On Saturday, May 14, 1870, Stanley Park was opened to the public, being one year beyond the century after the inauguration of St. James's Walk and the Mount Gardens. The mayor and corporation attended in state. The Lord Mayor of Dublin was also present. The day was fine, and attracted a great concourse of people, and the whole proceedings passed off with *éclat.*

Fancy fair.

On Monday, June 6, after laying the foundation-stone of the Stanley Hospital, the Earl of Derby formally opened a great fancy fair, which was held in the park, on behalf of the building fund of the hospital, and continued four days. The weather was brilliant, and imparted a zest to the various entertainments—the bazaar, with its pretty stallkeepers and their blandishments to customers; the flower-show, one of the most charming collections ever brought together; the usual pony raffled for, which brought the magnificent sum of 150*l.*; the so-called Old English sports—the sack races, the greased pole with its unattainable leg of mutton; the donkey races, &c.; the youths and maidens, with their blind-

man's buff and their 'kiss in the ring,' reminding one of the time

> When Love and all the world were young.

Balloons floated on the air, and each evening concluded with a magnificent display of fireworks.

The usual omens of failure preceded and accompanied the demonstration, but were signally falsified in the result, which produced the magnificent sum of 10,000*l.* net profit to the funds of the charity, one of the largest amounts ever realised in a similar manner.

Anfield Cemetery.

On the north-east side of Stanley Park, separated from it by Priory Road, stands Anfield Cemetery, the prospective Père la Chaise of Liverpool. It may be desirable here to devote a few lines to the origin and history of an enclosure which has been and will continue to be for many generations the last resting-place of the teeming multitudes of the great town adjoining—

> The youth in life's green spring, and he who goes
> In the full strength of years, matron, and maid,
> And the sweet babe, and the gray-headed man,—
> Shall one by one be gathered side by side,
> By those who in their turn shall follow them.

Origin.

During the second quarter of the present century public attention was seriously directed to the crying evils of the practice of intramural interments and the scandalous and offensive results, in many cases outraging decency and propriety. Acts were passed by the Legislature to remedy this state of things, by closing entirely the most crowded graveyards, and by severely restricting and gradually prohibiting others. In Liverpool nearly the whole of the churchyards were closed to all but family interments, and these were permitted only by an order from the Secretary of State. It became, therefore, absolutely necessary that some action should be taken by the public. The gentleman to whom belongs the honour of taking the initiative was Mr. S. B. Jackson, at that time

CHAP. XV.

Anfield Cemetery.

a member of the Select Vestry, who, in August 1856, procured signatures to a circular convening a meeting of the parishioners to consider the subject. This was accordingly held, and resolutions passed requesting the churchwardens and overseers to call a general vestry for the purpose of putting the Burials Act into operation, by the election of a Burial Board. The vestry was held, and the Board appointed on August 26, 1856.

Considerable difficulty was experienced in procuring a piece of land satisfying all the conditions required in the provision of a cemetery. The nature of the soil about Liverpool, principally rock or stiff clay, materially limited the area of selection; a light or gravelly soil, with a dry substratum, being essential. The situation required to be open and rural, at some distance from habitations, and yet easy of access from the town. An ample area was necessary, and at a moderate price. These requisitions were found to be fulfilled in every particular by the site now before us, and purchases were made from various proprietors to the extent of 129 acres, reduced by the sale of a portion to the London and North Western Railway Company to 121 acres; bounded by the Bootle Branch Railway (running parallel with Cherry Lane) on the north-east, by Mere Lane on the north-west, and by Priory Road on the south-west.

Competitive plans and designs were advertised for. The first premium for laying out the ground was awarded to Mr. T. D. Barry; that for the designs of the buildings was gained by Messrs. Lucy & Littler, by whom they were carried out. Eventually the laying out of the cemetery was entrusted to Mr. Edward Kemp, already spoken of in connection with Stanley Park.

Opening.

The necessary preliminaries and the execution of the works occupied several years. On April 27, 1863, the Episcopal portion was consecrated by the Bishop of Chester. The Nonconformist ground was set apart on the following day, and the Roman Catholic portion was

Interments.

consecrated by Bishop Goss on May 4. The first interment took place on Tuesday, May 5, since which date they have continued as follows :—

	Interments
From May 5, 1863, to March 27, 1864 . . .	1622
For the year ending March 27, 1865 . . .	3528
" " 1866 . . .	4762
" " 1867 . . .	5791
" " 1868 . . .	4497
" " 1869 . . .	4711
" " 1870 . . .	5003
	29,914

The ground at present appropriated to interments is 70 acres, of which 34½ belong to the Church of England, 21 to the Roman Catholics, and 14½ to the other bodies. Fifty-one acres, therefore, remain unappropriated, for future use, and are at present let off as farming land, and in dwellings, which existed on the land previously.

The cemetery is laid out simply but effectively. The Episcopalian ground occupies the centre width from east to west, with a cross portion at the east end. The Roman Catholic ground is on the north, and the Nonconformist on the south. Each has its own mortuary chapel within its own borders. A portion of the land having to be raised artificially to the general level, advantage was taken of this circumstance to construct about two acres of catacombs and brick vaults.

The surface is divided into geometrical figures, the paths being raised three feet above the sunk areas.

The mortuary chapels are handsome buildings, in the pointed style of architecture. The gates and railings and all the accessories are in good taste, and built in a very substantial manner. On the whole this cemetery is worthy of the position it holds in reference to the great community to which it belongs.

The cost of the 121 acres of which it will ultimately consist was, with the law expenses, 76,431*l.* 9*s.* 9*d.*,

CHAP. XV.

being 631*l.* 15*s.* per acre, or little more than one-half the cost of the land for Stanley Park. The buildings, walls, and laying out the land cost 61,050*l.* 17*s.* 2*d.*; Parliamentary expenses, interest, and sundries, 13,178*l.* 15*s.* 10*d.*, making a total of 150,661*l.* 2*s.* 9*d.*; less by 3,736*l.* 16*s.* 4*d.* than the cost of Stanley Park, containing about three-fourths the quantity of land.

Open expanse.

The open expanse of the park and cemetery, containing together 216 acres of land, cannot but have a beneficial influence in a sanitary point of view, on the extension of the town in the northern and eastern direction.

There is not much left to notice in the township of Kirkdale. The construction of the park has given an impulse to building in its vicinity, and very shortly the open fields between Walton Road and Walton Lane will be covered with streets and houses.

Scotch Church.

In returning from Stanley Park by way of Everton Valley we pass the Scottish Presbyterian Church, erected in 1869. It is a large and rather imposing-looking building, with white stone parpoint front and white brick sides. The front has a double portal entrance-door, two double-light windows over, above which is a gable, with large rose-window. At the south-east angle rises a tower and spire, and at the south-west angle there is a lower square tower. The flanks have long double-light windows, with semicircular heads, and buttresses between. Altogether the composition is rather a pleasing specimen of a quasi round arch, Byzantine style.

We here conclude our survey of Kirkdale, and direct our attention in the next chapter to another important out-township.

CHAPTER XVI.

WEST DERBY.—MUNICIPAL PORTION.

CHAP. XVI.

Of the sixteen wards into which Liverpool is divided, four are formed from the out-townships extraneous to the old borough and parish. Two of these townships in their entirety—Everton and Kirkdale—constitute a single ward. Toxteth Park contributes two wards from a portion only of its area. West Derby ward is a portion cut off from the great township whose name it bears. The township gives its name to one of the six hundreds into which the county is divided. Its entire area is very large, being seven miles long and five broad, containing 6,203 acres, of which only 674, or little more than one-tenth, are comprised in the municipal portion.

Hundred.

West Derby was very early a point of considerable importance in this district of the kingdom. No Roman remains have been found in the neighbourhood. During the Roman dominion, and long after, South West Lancashire consisted almost entirely of forest, moor, and fen. It is to the Danes that we owe the nomenclature of West Derby, as well as Kirkdale—*Deor-by*, the place of wild beasts, which indicates its value as a hunting-ground; and *West*, to distinguish it from the eastern Derby, the capital of the county so called. The Saxon 'hundred,' as a division of the county, was called a 'Wapentake,' or Weapon-touch, by the Danes, from the circumstance that

Early history.

Name.

CHAP. XVI.

when the lord of the hundred held his court, he stuck his spear erect into the ground, and all the assembled liege men, by touching the spear with their weapons, acknowledged their fealty.[1] The name has survived down to our own times, for the old wapentake courts were only superseded by the county courts a few years since.

Saxon period.

Reminiscences of a period anterior to the Danish occupation are presented by the names of Low Hill and Brown Low Hill. The word *Low*, or *Law*, always indicates the site of a tumulus or burial mound. These were usually placed, if practicable, on a gentle eminence, whence they might be conspicuous objects. The mounds themselves have long disappeared, but the name remains indelibly attached to the localities.

Domesday.

Immediately after the rule of the Danes had passed away, we find West Derby an appanage of the Saxon monarchs. We learn from Domesday Book that King Edward the Confessor had the manor of Derbei, with six Berewicks[2] attached. There was a forest two miles long

Castle.

and one broad, and an aerie of hawks. A castle existed there from a very early period, almost certainly in the reign of the Confessor. It stood on a site still called the 'Castle Field,' a few hundred yards to the north of the church. A mound, surrounded by a moat, indicated the remains, which were removed about 1827. Some old oak timber and hewn stones were dug out. A piece of the timber was sawn up and converted into a writing-desk at the instance of a loving antiquary, who had the following inscription engraved on a brass plate: 'This desk was made from part of an oak beam that was dug out of the ruins of Edward the Confessor's castle, at West Derby, Lancashire, supposed to have been built Anno Domini 1050; executed under the direction of John McGeorge, 1827.'

Situated in the midst of a forest, one cannot conceive

[1] See Ducange, 'Glossarium ad Scriptores,' &c.

[2] A Berewick was a dependency, or a manor within a manor.

that West Derby, in its early days, could develope to any extent, yet we catch glimpses in our ancient records that it was held in considerable estimation. In the disposition of the effects of Ranulf, Earl of Chester, in 1232, it is provided, 'that William de Ferrers, Earl of Derby, and Agnes, his wife, shall receive the castle and town of West Derby, with its appurtenances.' In the 11th Henry III. (1227), a tallage, or property-tax, was levied in the principal towns in the county, in which we find the town of Liverpool assessed at 11½ marks, and the town of West Derby at 7⅓ marks.

Earl Ranulf.

No attempts were made to clear away the forests in West Derby until near the close of the thirteenth century. In the 8th Henry III. (1224), the Carta de Foresta, or Forest Charter, was extorted from the king, by virtue of which most of the forest lands were disforested and devoted to agriculture. In 1228, commissioners were sent down to Lancashire to survey and report upon the forest lands in that county. They reported (in the 'Perambulatio de Forestis'), that the whole county of Lancaster ought to be disforested, according to the tenor of the Carta de Foresta, with certain exceptions, amongst which we find the 'Wood of Derby.' By the description in the 'Perambulatio,' West Derby wood must have been very large. It is stated to extend from Thornton, near Crosby, to Blackbrook, beyond St. Helen's, a distance of about eleven miles. The breadth is not mentioned. 'Here the men of Derby had right of common, herbage, and all things necessary in the said wood of Derby.'

Forest.

A.D. 1228.

From an inquisition taken 26th Edward I. (1296), it would appear that circumstances had greatly changed, and that the forests were rapidly disappearing under the hands of the stout yeomen of the county. After various descriptions of open land, the document goes on to state that 'the tenants of Derby hold of approvement of the wastes two hundred and fifty-one acres and a half by the greater hundred, and two hundred and thirty-four acres

A.D. 1296

Forest reclaimed.

CHAP. XVI.

by the lesser hundred, with a further separate quantity of two hundred acres, all reclaimed from the forest.' The castle had by this time become ruinous, for it is only mentioned as a site, and the herbage in the ditch is valued. Another test of progress is afforded by the rents paid to the Crown. In Domesday Book it is recorded that the quit rent paid to the Crown in the reign of King Edward, amounted to 26*l.* 2*s.* At the time of the Domesday survey it had fallen to 16*l.* 12*s.* In 1225 it had again risen to 24*l.* 4*s.* 8*d.*; and in 1296, owing to the clearing of the forest lands, it had reached the sum of 76*l.* 19*s.* 7*d.* In order to bring these to the standard of modern currency, each sum must be multiplied by 15, which would make the Crown rents in West Derby, in 1296, equal to about 1,155*l.* per annum.

Crown rents.

Manor.

The history of the manor may be briefly sketched as follows: After the defection of Roger of Poictou, the manor remained in the Crown until it was bestowed with the Honour of Lancaster, some time in the reign of Henry II., on Ranulf de Bricasard, third Earl of Chester. In 1232 it passed to William de Ferrers, Earl of Derby, and was again forfeited by his son. In 1250 this and other manors were bestowed on Edmund, Earl of Lancaster, brother of Henry III. His son Thomas, the second earl, having taken up arms against the King, was defeated and beheaded at Pontefract. His possessions were forfeited to the Crown, but regranted to his brother Henry, the third earl. His son Henry, the fourth earl, was created first Duke of Lancaster by Edward III., in 1348. Dying without male issue, his daughter Blanche, having married John of Gaunt, son of Edward III., carried the Honour of Lancaster and the manors as her dowry. Henry of Bolingbroke obtaining the crown, the manors reverted to the sovereign, and so continued until the reign of Charles I. This monarch sold West Derby, Liverpool, Everton, &c., to a company of London merchants, who disposed of West Derby in 1639 to James,

Sale.

Lord Strange, afterwards the unfortunate Earl of Derby executed at Bolton. The Stanleys sold the manor to the Le Greys, from whom it passed by purchase to Mr. Isaac Green; afterwards by marriage to Bamber Gascoyne, Esq.; by marriage with whose daughter it finally became the property of the Marquis of Salisbury.

Commons.

In chapter xiii. I have alluded to the large quantity of waste or common land formerly existing in the township of Everton, and the mode in which it was leased to the copyholders in 1716 by Lady Ashburnham, the lady of the manor. An equal or a larger quantity of commons existed in West Derby, but they were dealt with in a somewhat different manner. The history of the transaction, which is rather curious, is as follows.

The district lying between West Derby Road (formerly Rake Lane) and Whitefield Road (formerly Roundhill Lane) from south to north, and between Rocky Lane (now Belmont Road) and Boundary Lane from east to west, was anciently called the 'Breck' or 'Brake,'[1] a piece of open unenclosed land used indifferently by the commoners of Everton and West Derby, being an indent of the latter into the former. After the granting of the lease in 1716, the Everton copyholders proceeded to enclose and allot these lands, but were vigorously opposed by the West Derbyites, who claimed them as part and parcel of the commons of their township. For the purpose of defending their rights the copyholders on December 1, 1718, entered into an agreement by a deed, appointing certain commissioners to act on their behalf, and reciting 'that the said owners of lands both within West Derby and Everton were willing'—like sensible people—'to have the said differences determined in a

Agreement.

[1] 'Brake' from the bracken or fern.

> Thus at the shut of ev'n, the weary bird
> Leaves the wide air, and in some lonely *brake*
> Cowers down and dozes till the dawn of day.
>
> BLAIR.

CHAP. XVI.

fair and amicable way.' It took some years, however, to effect a settlement. The arrangement finally come to was that the lands comprised in the brake should be included in the lease to the Everton copyholders, five customary acres (about eleven statute) and 200*l.* in money being handed over to West Derby, the lands still to be included in West Derby township. The deed of 1718 further empowered the commissioners to treat with the lord of the manor for enclosing the other wastes and commons in West Derby on such terms as should be 'for the publick benefitt and advantage of the inhabitants of the said township.' A treaty was accordingly entered into with Mr. Isaac Greene who had purchased the manor in 1717, to enclose the commons on the following conditions :—

Enclosures.

Appropriation.

That Mr. Greene should enclose and appropriate to his own use nine large acres (about nineteen acres statute), and also certain pits or fishponds near Club Moor, and that the remainder of the wastes should be leased and demised upon the best yearly rents which could be obtained, the proceeds to be applied 'for such publick use and benefitt of the said township as thereafter should be appointed.'

So far as the lord's interest was concerned, this agreement was promptly carried out; but it would appear that the same zeal had not been exercised on behalf of the public, for thirty years afterwards, in another and final deed in 1753, it is recited that 'although the said late Lord of the said Mannor had thus farr taken and reaped the benefit to himself of the said agreements, yet all the said intended inclosures and improvements of the residue of the said commons and Wast ground, have hitherto been neglected, and the publick or generall interest of the Freeholders and Copyholders within the said Township of West Derby hath thereby greatly suffered.'

Further deed.

This agreement, dated August 13, 1753, was made

between Miss Mary Greene, daughter and co-heiress of Isaac Greene, lady of the manor (afterwards married to Bamber Gascoyne), the two surviving trustees under the agreement of 1718, John Plumbe and Ralph Mercer, and a number of persons named as new trustees. It revived the old trusts and conditions, and provided more definitely for the terms of leasing and the application of the proceeds, which it is stated are to 'be applied and converted towards payment of the Leys and Taxes, whether to the use of the poor or highways, within the said Township, or any other legall assessments . . . or for any other publick benefitt,' to be determined from time to time by public meetings of the trustees, freeholders, and copyholders. This agreement is still in force. The quantity of land enclosed under its provisions is 231A. 2R. 10P., of which about 140 acres have been built upon.

Lease of commons.

The gross rental in the year 1868–9 amounted to 1624*l.*, which will be greatly increased in future by the lapse of leases originally granted for a term of sixty years. The entirely different mode adopted in dealing with the waste lands of the two adjoining townships of Everton and West Derby is a very curious fact, and illustrates the independent and self-asserting aspect of the English character.

Rental.

West Derby originally formed part of the parish of Walton, and constituted a chapelry with a small rude ecclesiastical edifice which had existed in the village from time immemorial. In 1848, under the authority of an Act of Parliament, it was made a separate parish, with an apportionment of the revenues. In 1853–4 a handsome new parish church was erected from the designs of Mr. Gilbert G. Scott, with a noble central tower, forming a conspicuous object in the landscape for a considerable distance round. This church, standing near the avenue leading to Croxteth Hall, combined with the entrance gates and lodge, and the new memorial

Parish.

Church.

CHAP. XVI.

cross in the village square, gives a fine architectural character to the locality.

Thus far it has been necessary to follow the general history of the township; but as the object of this work is limited to the illustration of the borough of Liverpool, in what remains I will confine myself as far as possible to the municipal portion of the township constituting West Derby ward.

Low Hill.

The earliest settled part was the district of Low Hill, where a hamlet existed from time immemorial, several venerable houses still existing, though the greater part have been taken down and replaced by more modern erections. Mount Vernon and Edgehill next followed, but few of the houses hereabouts bear a date earlier than the beginning of the present century.

Building.

Soon after that time the leading roads into Liverpool from the east—London Road, Edge Lane, and Mill Lane (now Brunswick Road)—became fringed with detached villas and pleasant gardens. From the date of about 1825, the streets of the town, creeping out eastward, overstepped the boundary of the old borough and climbed the eminence, distributing their network of houses right and left. This has gone forward in an accelerated ratio, especially since 1860. The progress, though not so rapid as that of Everton, has been such as to create a town of very considerable magnitude.

Survey.

I propose, as in the former chapters, that the reader shall accompany me in a quiet perambulation of the main streets of the district, taking notes as we go along. We will commence at the top of Islington, corner of Moss Street, the point of junction of Liverpool, Everton, and West Derby.

Brunswick Chapel.

Moss Street was opened about 1810, and named after the owner of the land through which it was cut. Brunswick (Wesleyan) Chapel was completed and opened in 1811. There is something about the design which is worthy of notice. Externally, the advanced tetrastyle Ionic portico, rising the full height of the building, gives

it rather a noble aspect, but this is sadly marred by the absurdity of placing the entrance doors outside the portico on each side, exposed to the weather, thus leaving as a mere excrescence what ought to be of the greatest utility as sheltering the access to the entrance. The detail of the work also is mangled by the omission of the architrave from the entablature over the columns. The interior is semicircular on plan, the seats rising all round, being an adaptation of the ancient classical theatre. The result is effective, but is injured by the plain low flat ceiling, and the slender columns by which the roof is supported. The building was designed by Mr. William Byrom, and cost about 8,000*l.*

Brunswick Chapel.

Brunswick Road was originally called Mill Lane, then Folly Lane. In 1812 it took the appellation of Brunswick Place, and in 1822 assumed its present name. I have already described, in the chapter on Everton, Everton House, or 'Gregson's Well,' which formerly stood at the corner of Everton Road. The next house was a large detached mansion a little to the west, built in 1803 by the Rev. Richard Formby, the incumbent of Trinity Church. It was afterwards called Brunswick House, and was occupied for some years by Mr. James Rawdon, a member of an eminent mercantile firm. The north side of the road, during the first quarter of the present century, became occupied by neat suburban villas, standing in pleasant gardens. Between 1835 and 1840, the fields on the south side, belonging to the Marquis of Salisbury, lord of the manor, were laid out and partially built on with a smaller class of property. The road, from a quiet rural lane, began to assume the aspect of a leading artery. Shops took the place of front gardens. The villas one by one succumbed to their fate, and a busy commercial thoroughfare had fully established itself about 1860. It is much to be regretted that means were not adopted in time to secure an increased width to the road. As it is, one of the main entrances into the town from the eastward, crowded with shops, is little better than a narrow alley.

Brunswick Road.

Formby.

Progress.

CHAP. XVI.

Erskine Street was laid out about 1812, and some good houses built at the lower end, but the upper end was obstructed for many years and prevented being opened out to Low Hill. The lower portion of the land between Brunswick Road and Prescot Street, extending eastward as far as Chapel Place, was built on before 1825. The upper part of the land was built on between 1850 and 1857. Near the top of Erskine Street on the north side stand the Wesleyan Day Schools, erected in 1862 from the designs of Mr. C. O. Ellison at a cost of 4,700*l.* They are built of red brick, with white stone dressings, with a tower and slated spire, in the modern adaptation of the Jacobean style, and form a pleasing and suitable structure for the purpose.

Wesleyan Schools.

Low Hill.

Proceeding a little further eastward, we arrive at Low Hill, formerly a hamlet within the township, of considerable antiquity, but now absorbed into the advancing town, with nearly all its ancient features obliterated. A long, low, old-fashioned house, with its stabling, farm buildings, and garden, on the east side, near the corner of West Derby Road, still remains. It was for many years the residence of the Plumpton family. Two of the old houses also remain between Gloucester Place and Phythian Street, and another at the south corner of Gloucester Place, with its garden attached. A little further south, we see the schools belonging to St. Jude's Church, erected about 1850. They form rather a handsome building, erected in red sandstone, in the Tudor-Gothic style, with buttresses, mullioned windows, and crenellated battlement. The site was formerly occupied by the West Derby workhouse, consisting of ranges of old dilapidated buildings, which might almost have served for Crabbe's description of the poorhouse in 'The Village.' When the West Derby union was formed, a new workhouse was built in Mill Lane, Everton, in 1844, and the old one taken down.

Plumpton.

St. Jude's Schools.

The public-house set back at the corner of Holborn

Street is built on the site of the old Coach and Horses, a very ancient hostelry, where man and beast, fatigued with toiling up the hill from the town below, were wont to pause and refresh.

Coach and Horses.

Riding the liberties.

The open space in front is memorable from its connection with the ancient custom of annually 'riding the liberties,' or what is called in some places, 'beating the bounds' of the borough. This ceremony took place during the week preceding St. Luke's Day (October 18), the day for the election of the mayor. The corporation officials turned out in all the brilliancy of gold lace bands and red plush smalls. State coaches were out of the question, as the procession was of necessity an equestrian one. The time was selected when the tide would allow of skirting the river at low-water mark. The equipage consisted of the mayor, with cocked hat and white wand of office, such of the aldermen and councillors as felt equal to the task, the flunkeys aforesaid, all mounted, and doing their best to look 'the gay cavalier.' These were usually accompanied by a flying escort of young scapegraces ready to seize any opportunity for fun and frolic. After leaving the Town-hall they proceeded along the dock side to the north shore as far as Beacon's Gutter—at the bottom of the present Boundary Street—and then turned inland. Here the fun began. The boundary to the north and north-east before the year 1830 was not marked by any roads, but was indicated by occasional mere-stones, set up here and there in the fields, each of which the mayor had to touch with his wand. A considerable portion of the route became a regular steeple-chase. The stately mayor and the portly aldermen, waited quietly for the gates to be opened, but the juveniles dashed off at a gallop over hedge and ditch pell-mell, accompanied by an admiring crowd of small boys who cut across to meet them at favourite corners, and whose great enjoyment was to raise a shout of triumph over the occasional prostration of an unlucky

CHAP. XVI.

official whose equitation was not improved by attendance at Town-hall dinners—

Riding the liberties.

> So hurry, hurry, off they rode
> As fast as fast might be

across country to Scotland Road, then along the valley near the line of the present Great Homer Street to Fox Street, along the fields behind Soho Street to Islington, and so up the brow to Low Hill, where on the esplanade before us a spacious tent was wont to be pitched and a pleasant collation spread therein, after which the company usually dispersed, leaving the southern boundaries to chance or fate.

To show the description and the cost of the entertainment provided seventy years ago on these occasions, I will quote, from Master Richard Brooke, a copy of the tavern bill, dated Low Hill, October 18, 1800.

	£	s.	d.
Eatables:			
Roast and boiled beef, Hams, fowls, and tongues, Veal pies, Pigeon pies, Potted and fresh shrimps	6	3	0
Drinkables:			
Milk punch, Rum and brandy punch, Brandy, Rum	6	9	0
Wine	0	17	6
Ale and porter	1	8	0
Sundry expenses	1	12	0
	16	9	6

With the enlargement of the municipal borough under the Act of 1835, the custom died out. The necessity for some periodical examination of the boundaries has since been demonstrated by the fact that a portion of the division line between Liverpool and West Derby was for

some time in dispute and is even now far from being accurately settled.

Phythian Street and Gloucester Place leading eastward from Low Hill, were laid out in 1811–13, with moderate-sized houses standing in gardens. After the lapse of nearly sixty years, their quiet semi-rural appearance is not altogether destroyed.

West Derby Road.

In pursuing the course of West Derby Road to the eastward, the division line between Everton and West Derby runs irregularly in the rear of Brougham Terrace and the row of houses to the eastward, then follows the south side of the road as far as the municipal boundary between Every and Division Streets.

I have noticed in a previous chapter the improvement in the road and the rapid development of building since 1861 in this district. Another improvement has more recently been carried out by the Corporation, in extending a new road called Boaler Street in a straight line from the western part of West Derby Road eastward to Sheil Road, forming a fine wide avenue about 1,000 yards in length.

Licensed Victuallers.

At the angle formed by the bifurcation of the road stand the Licensed Victuallers' Association Asylum and Schools, erected in 1852–4. The plan is curved, in the form of a crescent. The building is of very pleasing aspect, built with red brick and white stone, in the Tudor style. The centre building, containing the school-rooms, master and secretary's residence, board-room, &c., is three storeys high, with two curved and stepped gables. The wings, two storeys in height, with dormers, contain twelve cottages or almshouses, each providing accommodation for a married couple. The architect was Mr. William Daish.

Zoological Gardens.

A little beyond, on the south side of the road, between Farnworth Street and Butler Street, formerly stood the Zoological Gardens. These gardens were established by Mr. Thomas Atkins, who was in his day very celebrated for his travelling menagerie. In 1832 he obtained a lease

CHAP. XVI.

Zoological Gardens.

from Mr. James Plumpton of about nine acres of land, which he enclosed, planted, and laid out very tastefully, and erected suitable buildings for his extensive collection. For many years the gardens were very successful, being a pleasant resort in themselves, besides the interest attaching to the zoological collection. Gradually, however, it became clear that science and natural history of themselves would not pay, and it was necessary to supplement them by attractions of a more popular character, such as fireworks, performances of various kinds, and exhibitions. Ultimately the concern was formed into a limited liability company. By degrees it fell lower and lower in the scale, until the gardens became notorious for the low, dissolute company which resorted thither. In 1863, the lease being out, the place was dismantled, the land was sold, and soon covered with building.

Blondin.

Many celebrities have here from time to time attracted public attention, amongst others the far-famed Blondin, who performed many marvellous feats on a rope stretched at the height of ninety feet above the ground, such as wheeling a barrow blindfold, hanging by one foot from the rope, &c.

We have now arrived at the boundary of the municipality in this direction, and, in strict adherence to the principle I have laid down, I ought to go no further. There is no rule, however, without its exception, and there are no special reasons why a little transgression may not here be permitted. The parks have become so important a feature in Liverpool, that it would be unpardonable to omit them in any memorial of the town. I must therefore crave permission to step over the boundary, to take a survey of Newsham Park, as we have already done in the case of Stanley Park.

The Breck.

A few objects on the way are deserving of notice. The land on the left now covered with building, and forming an integral portion of the town, is the old 'Breck,' or Brake, the cause of so much contention between Everton

and West Derby a hundred and fifty years ago. The streets with which it is intersected have rather a peculiar nomenclature. Some are named from the nature of the soil, as Grey Rock, Red Rock, White Rock Streets. Others go in for the nationalities: Goth, Celt, Saxon, Lombard, have each a street dedicated to their memory. The class of houses varies considerably, but on the whole the neighbourhood has been constructed with due regard to the demands of sanitary science and the comfort of the inhabitants. The Breck.

The only public buildings standing on the 'Breck' are the Wesleyan Chapel, in Whitefield Lane, and Norwood Congregational Chapel, in West Derby Road. The former is built of white stone, in the pointed style, with a handsome five-light window in the front, with flowing tracery head. There are two transepts, with a rose-window in each. The establishment is very complete, having suitable vestries and school-rooms attached. It was erected in 1867–8. Norwood Chapel was built in 1862. The walls are red sandstone, with white stone dressings, in the pointed style. The front has a double portal, over which is a four-light window, with geometrical tracery head. The flanks have tracery windows, in two lights. Schools and vestries are built behind. The architects were Messrs. Poulton & Woodman of Reading. Chapels. Wesleyan. Norwood Chapel.

On the south side of the road two detached villas, formerly standing alone in the midst of fields, still remain, imbedded in the surrounding bricks and mortar. One of them has been destroyed by fire, and its blackened walls will be speedily removed. The other, also doomed to destruction, is worthy of notice, as having been for many years the residence of Mr. William Lassell, the distinguished President of the Royal Astronomical Society. His observatory stood immediately adjoining, and here many of his most valuable researches and discoveries were made. Villas. Lassell.

A little farther eastward, set back some distance from

CHAP. XVI.

Breck House.

Abduction of Miss Turner.

the road, stands Breck House, formerly a part of the Newsham Estate, now belonging to the Corporation of Liverpool. In 1826 this was the scene of a singular transaction, which created a considerable sensation at the time. The house was occupied as a ladies' boarding-school by Miss Margaret Daulby, who had under her charge the only daughter of Mr. Turner, of Shrigley Park, Cheshire, a young lady about seventeen years of age. The affair was wrapped up in considerable mystery, which was never entirely cleared away; but it appears that a scheme was laid by a Mr. Edward Gibbon Wakefield, a person of education and apparent respectability, to carry off the lady, who had great expectations, and to entrap her into a Gretna Green marriage. Miss Daulby was deceived by a forged letter, intimating that Miss Turner's mother was dangerously ill, into allowing her ward to leave in the company of Wakefield. The pretext was then changed, and she was informed that her father was in difficulties, which would be removed by her consenting to the marriage with her conductor. The poor inexperienced girl, terrified and confused, submitted to anything that was required of her. They travelled post over the Border; and after the ceremony went south to London, and thence to Calais, where they were found by her father, who, on the receipt of the strange intelligence, had instantly started in pursuit. Wakefield was tried at Lancaster, on March 23, 1827, for the abduction, and sentenced to three years' imprisonment. The sentence would have been more severe, but it was proved on the trial that—probably repenting of his rash undertaking—he had treated the young lady with every respect and forbearance. He afterwards emigrated to Australia, and was found so intelligent and useful that he ultimately filled a post under Government of considerable responsibility. He also turned his attention to the subject of emigration and colonial administration, on which he wrote several works, which were at the time highly

Wakefield.

valued. Miss Turner soon after became the wife of Mr. Thomas Legh, of Lyme Hall, Cheshire, M.P. for Newton. She died in 1831, after giving birth to a son— the present Mr. Legh, sometime M.P. for South Lancashire. A monument to her memory is erected in Winwick Church, in the chapel belonging to the family. Legh.

We have now arrived at Sheil Park, Sheil Road, and Newsham House and Park, which will deserve a somewhat detailed notice.

Newsham Estate.

The Newsham Estate forms part of a tongue of land in the township of Walton, lying between West Derby and Everton, and intruding for some distance into the former township, together with other lands in West Derby. The name Newsham, or Neusum, is very ancient. In the inquisition known as the 'Testa de Neville,' taken in the reigns of Henry III. and Edward I., we find it recorded that 'Henry de Waleton held fourteen bovates of land in Walton, Wavertree, and *Neusum*, which had been given to his grandfather by William, Earl of Boulogne, to be held by serjeantry of the wapentake,' which I take to mean serving the writs and executions issued by the court. The property continued in the Waleton or Walton family until the reign of Edward IV., when it became the property of William Chorley, of Chorley, by marriage with one of the co-heiresses of Roger Walton. It passed by regular descent to Richard Chorley, who, with his son Charles, joined the rebels in 1715; and after the surrender at Preston was tried at Liverpool by the special commission and convicted of high treason. The father was executed at Preston, and the son died in prison. The estates were confiscated and sold. They were purchased by the Molyneuxs (not the Molyneuxs of Croxteth), a family long settled in the neighbourhood. Newsham House was built towards the latter end of the last century by Mr. Thomas Molyneux. It was a commodious, well-built, red brick mansion, standing in a commanding position overlooking the estate. In 1846, owing

CHAP. XVI.

to commercial reverses, the estate was offered for sale and purchased by the Corporation of Liverpool for the sum of 80,000*l.* The Yellow House Estate—so called from the colour of the old farm-house—was subsequently bought, in 1850, making the total area of the property 351 acres, at a cost of 100,000*l.* For some years the estate lay dormant, the mansion and estate being let on lease to Mr. R. C. Gardner, who filled the civic chair in 1862–3; but in 1862 a movement was made, and the noble avenue called Sheil Road, after an old and respected member of the Council, was opened, forming a long-desired link of communication from north to south. At the same time the piece of land cut off on the west side by the new road, containing about fifteen acres, was formed into a public park, called Sheil Park. Soon after this the mania for parks had taken such hold of the public mind, that after steadily resisting for many years the application of the ratepayers' money to such a purpose, the Council, in deference to public opinion, not only determined on the formation of Stanley Park, at the north; Sefton Park, in the south; Prince's Park, Wavertree Park, and Sheil Park, already existing in the east, but resolved that a large proportion of the Newsham Estate should be devoted to a similar purpose. Concurrently with these proceedings other circumstances took place, which materially affected the position and development of the property. The Judges of Assize, when holding their courts in Liverpool, had to be provided with suitable lodging at the expense of the Corporation. A large house in St. Anne Street had hitherto sufficed for this purpose; but the lease having expired and the neighbourhood become deteriorated, it was considered no longer befitting the dignity of the judges nor the honour of the town. After much inquiry and deliberation it was determined that Newsham House should be enlarged and altered for the purpose. This was accomplished at a cost of about 6,000*l.*, besides furniture costing 5,317*l.* 19*s.* 1*d.*

Yellow House Estate.

Sheil Park.

Newsham Park.

Judges' lodgings.

Newsham Park.

additional. The house, standing in its own pleasant grounds, containing nearly three acres, undoubtedly affords the best accommodation for the judicial representatives of royalty of any to be met with in the three kingdoms.

The Bootle branch of the London and North-Western Railway, in passing through the estate, has taken nearly twenty-seven acres, and other outlying portions of the property have been sold to the extent of about seventy-three acres. After allowing for the land occupied by roads there remain in the hands of the Corporation about 247 acres, which are thus disposed of:—

	Acres.
In Sheil Park	15½
Judges' lodgings	3
Newsham Park	111
Building land connected with the park	46
Building land, east side railway	71½
	247

The 111 acres of park proper have been tastefully laid out and planted, with roads, paths, and avenues formed. It was originally intended that the fringe of land fronting the West Derby Road should be sold for building shops and dwellings in a continuous row, thus shutting off the park entirely from the road; but after strong remonstrances against such an act of Vandalism, better counsels prevailed, and it was determined to plant the margin of the land, and dispose of the part between the plantation and the public park for villas. The lodges, entrances, and balustrading of this park are neat but economical, offering in this respect a striking contrast to the extravagance displayed at Stanley Park for the same objects.

Church.

Before quitting the neighbourhood, we will take a glance at the church recently erected at the corner of Belmont Road (formerly Rocky Lane). It was built at the expense of Mr. William Preston, of Ellel Grange, near Lancaster, mayor in 1858–9, whose town residence, Rock House, is in the immediate neighbourhood, at a cost of

CHAP. XVI.

Church.

about 14,000*l.* The architects were Messrs. W. and G. Audsley. The style of architecture is that class of Gothic imported from Italy within the last few years, and somewhat modified for English use. The material is common grey brick, with coloured arches, strings, and cornices. The plan is a Latin cross, with a square gabled tower rising at the intersection. The nave has side aisles flanked by buttresses, and lighted by windows in groups of three single lights. The clerestory has rose windows inserted in recesses with semicircular arched heads. The west end has a deeply recessed portal, with large rose windows over. The transepts are short, without aisles. The ends are gabled, with rose windows above and double light windows with tracery heads below. The east end is apsidal in five planes with lancet windows. The tower has noble bellchamber windows, two on each side.

The interior is finished with red stock brick with black bands. The piers are polished red granite shafts. The roof is open, in six planes, boarded and intended for decoration.

Difference of opinion may exist as to the particular style adopted, but there can be none as to the taste displayed in the design, and the fertile imagination in the details and decoration.

Leaving Newsham Park by Sheil Road, and skirting the railings of Sheil Park, we arrive at the end of Boaler Street. Opposite this road a straight avenue with a double line of trees has been formed across the park, terminating in a castellated structure originally intended for a railway bridge, but not now required. This avenue is about 1,000 yards in length. When the trees are grown, and the houses erected, the effect of the entire vista, a mile and a half in length, will be second to few of its kind.

Avenue.

The land opened up by Boaler Street and the neighbouring streets is being rapidly covered with buildings. The district extending westward to Low Hill, formerly intersected only by Gloucester Place and Phythian Street,

is now covered with a network of streets and houses, principally erected since 1858.

Progress eastward.

We will now return to the foot of the hill, and, commencing at the top of London Road, continue our survey eastward.

In the early years of the present century, from near Camden Street eastward, scarcely a house or building existed in London Road, with the exception of the Gallows Mills, a little above the site of Monument Place. By the year 1823 the lower part of Prescot Street was built on both sides, and a few houses higher up on the north side. Between that year and 1845 the street was lined with houses on both sides, as far as Low Hill.

Office buildings.

Near the bottom of the street, on the south side, stands the office of the Royal Liver Friendly Society, rather an imposing-looking stone-fronted building of three storeys, in the Italian Renaissance style, with a *soupçon* of the Gothic in the shafts, mouldings, and details.

Eastward from Low Hill, after passing the old cottages of the ancient hamlet, we come to a row of houses set back in gardens. These were once pleasant suburban residences, but are now surrounded on three sides by the pressure of cottage property. The open fields beyond are now being laid out in streets, with the builder busily at work. Eastward of these fields we come to a series of villas and gardens, which have on the whole pretty well preserved their amenity. They were built in the early years of the present century. To the eastward of this row of villas formerly stood 'Gilead House,' the residence of Doctor Samuel Solomon. I have already spoken of this gentleman in chapter ix., *apropos* of his residence in Brownlow Street. I may merely mention here that Gilead House and grounds were kept in beautiful order as long as the doctor lived. In the old coaching days, Dr. Solomon's was the first house greeted in approaching Liverpool, and its trim parterres and close-shaven lawns were grateful to the eyes as a harbinger of home after a

Gilead House.

CHAP. XVI.

long and tedious journey. The house was dismantled, and the land sold for building about 1846. The streets laid out on the land take their names from the great legal dignitaries, Cottenham, Denman, Coleridge, Weightman, Patteson, Rolfe, Coltman, and Pollock.

Kensington.

The road eastward of Low Hill took the name of 'Kensington' about 1804, at the time when Gilead House and the neighbouring villas were erected. It was previously called Prescot Lane. The south side of Kensington still remains open fields with the exception of a hamlet opposite the site of Gilead House, consisting of Gilead Street, Balm Street, &c., erected about 1864–5. Most of the land belongs to Colonel Plumbe Tempest, who is maternally descended from the family of Plumbe, who were considerable owners of land in this district. Vernon's Hall, an ancient mansion situated at the south-east corner of the estate belongs to the family, but why so named, or when erected, I have not been able to discover.

Reservoir.

To the west of the hamlet just spoken of stands the Kensington reservoir, erected in 1845–6. This is a gigantic work containing nearly 6½ acres of water space, all vaulted over. The summit of the vaults is covered with soil, with grass, lawns, and walks, and forms a very pleasant elevated promenade. The reservoir is the receptacle for the water from the Rivington source of supply for the town.

Christ Church.

At the corner of the road leading to the reservoir stands the newly erected Christ Church, the cost of which, including the land about 10,000*l.*, was defrayed by a bequest from the late Miss Colquitt, of Green Bank. The design is from the pencil of Messrs. Audsley, the architects of the church in West Derby Road, already described. The style is a variety of the same school. The material is brick, with coloured bands and dressings; but the effect is not quite so *recherché* as that of its sister edifice, owing probably to more restricted funds. The

plan is a Latin cross, with square east end. The nave has aisles and clerestory, with plain semicircular-headed lights. Like the other church, the transepts and west end are ornamented with rose windows. The leading feature of the building is a bold detached tower rising at the north-west angle, with three plain stages below, and a bold lofty bell-chamber, each face having large two-light windows, united under an embracing arch. The tower has a slated spire, with dormers or *lucarnes* on each face. The west face of the tower has a handsome portal.

Christ Church.

The interior is lined with red brick, with black bands. The pier arches are semicircular, springing from polished granite shafts, with richly sculptured capitals, almost Runic in their character. The rose-windows being designed on the principle of what is called plate tracery, where the apertures are pierced in a flat surface, produce a very sparkling effect internally. The church was consecrated on July 21, 1870.

Returning westward, we will again commence at the corner of Moss Street, and look over the district south of Prescot Street. The triangular plot lying between Prescot Street, Boundary Street, and Fairclough Lane in 1803 had not a house or building upon it. It belonged to the Gascoyne family, being a part of the nine large acres of commons appropriated by the deed of 1718 to the lord of the manor. About 1809 a few houses were built at the bottom of Prescot Street. A small street behind was called Jubilee Street, from the jubilee of the reign of George III. celebrated in that year. Nothing further was done until the erection of St. Jude's Church, which was built in 1831, from the designs of Mr. Thomas Rickman. I have already spoken of Mr. Rickman and the character of his works in a previous chapter. St. Jude's exhibits the same peculiarities as those already described—a knowledge of the mediæval style, with feebleness and timidity in carrying it out. The fact is the public mind was not then prepared to give practical

St. Jude's.

CHAP. XVI.

effect to the revival, at that time in its infancy. Hence the horrors of cast-iron tracery, mouldings run in cement, stucco façades, and galleried and ceiled interiors. Yet 'the cloth of gold' of the present day would do well to mitigate the smile of contempt at the 'homely frieze' which preceded it. Each have had their day, and may probably only be the harbingers of something nobler and grander than either. Between 1835 and 1845 streets were laid out and the land covered. Cecil, Hardwick, Montague, and Hyde Streets are named after the Salisbury family and their connexions. West Street commemorates Lady Mary West, daughter of Earl De la Warr, married to the Marquis of Salisbury, and afterwards to the Earl of Derby. Sherwood Street takes the name of the surveyor who laid out the land.

Salisbury Estates.

Common lands.

The land fronting West Derby Street (formerly called Pembroke Road) is part of the commons of West Derby, and is let on building leases of sixty years, at a ground-rent, under the Commissioners. Building was commenced about 1830, but the whole was not covered until about 1860.

Mount Vernon.

The slope of the eminence above is called Mount Vernon. It was first so designated about 1804, when a few villas were built between Minshull Street and Mason Street, probably from the vicinity of Vernon's Hall. Turning along Mount Vernon Street, we see on the west side a range of substantial buildings, which carry us back in imagination to the mediæval period when the convents of the Black Benedictines, the White Augustinians, and the Grey Cistercians constituted the finest part of the buildings in the town. The group of buildings before us compose the Convent of the Sisters of Mercy, which, from a humble, modest commencement in 1843, with a single ordinary dwelling-house, still remaining, has attained its present extensive development.

Convent.

The object of the Sisters is to administer to the wants of the poor in every department, by aiding the infirm,

visiting the sick, educating children, and training up girls for domestic service. The spirit which prompts such self-denying, laborious efforts will find a response in every earnest heart. The sturdiest opponent of Popery witnessing the unostentatious self-sacrifice of the gentle Sisters might unite in the sentiment of our Laureate :— Convent.

> Her faith through forms is pure as thine,
> Her hands are quicker unto good;
> Oh sacred be the flesh and blood
> To which she links a life divine.

The neighbourhood has become densely covered with cottages. At the northern extremity a house and garden still exist erected by Mr. George Yates in 1795. One adjoining, built about the same time, by Mr. George Venables, merchant, has been taken down and built over.

The land on the east side of Mount Vernon Street, extending to Hall Lane (originally Mount Vernon), was for several years the Volunteer parade-ground, and witnessed many a gay display of martial ardour in the early days of Volunteering. In 1864 it fell into the hands of the Welsh builders, and was soon covered with neat rows of cottages. Whether it be a sort of protest against the convent below I know not, but the streets are all, with one exception, named after sound Protestant divines—Warburton, Tillotson, Horsley, Bengel, Bunyan, Doddridge, Binney. The only doubtful case is Ambrose Street, which may possibly be dedicated to Ambrose, Bishop of Milan; but much more likely it commemorates Isaac Ambrose, the Puritan preacher of Preston, in the reign of Charles I. The Volunteer parade-ground has been removed to the open fields further eastward. Mount Vernon.

The only building of a public character in this block is the Welsh Baptist Chapel, Hall Lane, built in 1869. It is a brick building, in the pointed style. The front has a three-light window, the mullions of which are neatly moulded in brick. Baptist Chapel.

The summit of the hill is crowned by the Church of

CHAP. XVI.

Edge Hill.

St. Mary, usually called Edge Hill Church. The height of the hill above the sea-level is about 230 feet, which, with the exception of the site of Everton Church (250 feet), is the highest point about Liverpool. The name Edge Hill is not, like Low Hill, an ancient appellation. In Yates and Perry's map of 1769 it is called 'Chetham's Brow.' I have not been able to trace the name further back than the latter end of last century. The probability is, that, being the termination of Edge Lane, which has been so called from time immemorial, the brow or hill has naturally taken the same name, when the common lands were enclosed.

St. Mary's, Edge Hill.

The church was commenced in 1812, and opened in the following year. Placed on the highest pinnacle of the hill, overlooking the town below, the tower of this church is visible for many miles on every side. The site was one to have stimulated mediocrity into genius, and to have prompted the founders and the architect to put forth every effort to produce something which should be worthy of the occasion; but, alas! there was no responsive voice to the call. The opportunity was lost, never to be recalled. A plain brick parallelogram, with pseudo-Gothic windows and square brick tower, lifts its audacious front and publishes in the most conspicuous manner the state of the arts in Liverpool at the date of its erection.

The land above the church remained a rocky knoll, open and unenclosed, down to about 1830. Holland Place and Clare Terrace and the neighbouring houses were built soon after that date.

Edge Lane.

Edge Lane is one of the original roads leading into Liverpool from the east. In 1769 the north side of the road was thinly sprinkled with houses between Vernon's Hall and Fairfield. The commodious-looking house opposite the end of Marmaduke Street (formerly Duke Street North) was for some years the residence of Mr. Ottiwell Wood, who built it in 1815. He was a gentleman who took an active part on the Liberal side in politics at a

Ottiwell Wood.

period long anterior to the Reform Act of 1832. His son, Mr. John Wood, represented Preston in Parliament, and subsequently filled for many years the office of Chief Commissioner of Stamps and Taxes. Mr. Ottiwell Wood's name, so full of double consonants, was often the subject of a joke. On one occasion, having to give evidence in a court of justice, the judge in taking down his name asked him to spell it. He did so—'O, double t, i, double u, e, double l, double u, double o, d.' The judge threw down his pen in despair, saying, 'I never heard such a name in my life.'

Ottiwell Wood.

The neat villas fronting the road east of Mr. Wood's were built in the first quarter of the present century. The house opposite Botanic Road, with the fine trees in front, was built by Mr. William Durning about 1804. He was the owner of a considerable quantity of land in the neighbourhood. Mr. George Holt, to whom reference has been made in connection with the Mechanics' Institution, married one of his two daughters, and inherited a considerable part of his property.

Durning.

The red stone Gothic house at the corner of Botanic Road was built by Mr. James Ryley in 1830.

Ryley.

The land from a little west of Deane Street, extending eastward, formed part of the Fairfield Estate, which was purchased, soon after the middle of last century, by Mr. Edward Falkner, merchant, who previously resided in Oldhall Street. The house which he erected, called Fairfield Hall, from some fancied peculiarity in its design was popularly known by the name of 'Teacaddy Hall.' Mr. Falkner filled the office of High Sheriff of the county in 1788. In 1796 he aided in raising a troop of Volunteer cavalry, of which he took the command. He was also appointed Receiver-General of the Land Tax for the county, an office of considerable emolument. He married the sister of General Sir Banastre Tarleton, sometime M.P. for the borough. After Mr. Falkner's decease, about 1825, his son, Mr. E. D. Falkner, laid out a large

Fairfield Estate.

Falkner.

CHAP. XVI.

part of the estate for building. Deane Street and Beech Street were formed about 1833, and have been partially built on, but not to the same extent as the more eastern parts of the estate, Holly Road, Laurel Road, &c., which are beyond the boundary of the borough.

Jewish Cemetery.

In 1836 a Jewish cemetery and mortuary chapel were constructed on the west side of Deane Street.

Free Church.

A church in connection with the Presbyterian Free Church was built on the east side of Beech Street in 1864. It is a neat stone-fronted building, with a small tower and spire at the north-west angle.

Botanic Gardens.

The Botanic Gardens are situated on the south side of Edge Lane, on the verge of the municipal boundary, occupying about 11¼ acres of land. In chapter ix. I have already recorded the establishment of the original gardens in Mount Pleasant in 1802, and their removal to the present site in 1836. In 1841 they were transferred to the public under Mr. Ewart's Museum and Libraries Act, the Corporation undertaking to pay the sum of 3,800*l.*, borrowed by the proprietors. The reputation of the Liverpool Botanic Gardens has greatly increased under the management of the late curator, Mr. Tyerman. In addition to the scientific arrangement of the collection of plants under glass and in the open air, the popular taste was annually gratified by the beauty of the flowers in the parterres, which for elegance in laying out and the rich combination of colour displayed, might vie with those of any gardens in the kingdom.

Wavertree Park.

Wavertree Park, which has proved an inestimable boon as a recreation ground for the people, owes its existence almost to an accident. The site was formerly occupied by an old-fashioned mansion, surrounded by a grove of noble elms, a few of which yet remain, nearly destroyed by the sulphureous fumes of the neighbouring gasworks. The house was called Plumbes Hall from the family which occupied it. It was subsequently tenanted by Mr. Charles Lawrence, mayor in 1823–4. Mr. Law-

Plumbes Hall.

rence was one of the originators of the Liverpool and Manchester Railway, and filled for some years the office of chairman, at a time when the duties were most arduous and the difficulties almost insuperable. It was by the efforts of him and a few others of a similar stamp, that the genius of George Stephenson obtained a clear stage and fair play for its grand conceptions. Afterwards the house was occupied by Sir Joshua Walmsley, Knt., mayor in 1839–40, and some time M.P. for Leicester.

Plumbes Hall.

It was purchased by the Corporation in 1843 as a site for a new borough gaol. After taking down the mansion, the situation was judged unsuitable by the government authorities, and the land remained a tangled wilderness for some years. About 1854, a strong feeling began to prevail in the public mind in favour of establishing parks for the people. The land in question lying idle, it was determined by the Council, as an experiment, to lay it out, at a moderate expense, as an adjunct to the Botanic Gardens, for public use. In 1856, this was accomplished, and never was an experiment more successful. Compared with the other parks, Wavertree Park is small, containing only twenty-four acres, and of very humble pretensions in its embellishment, but the crowds by which it is frequented, particularly on Thursday evenings in summer, when the band of the South Corporation School frequently plays, testify to its value in public estimation. By the way, its name is a misnomer, as no part of the land is situated within Wavertree, the boundary line running along its eastern margin.

Purchase.

Park laid out.

We have now arrived at Wavertree Road, at present a somewhat unsightly entrance into Liverpool from the east, flanked with shops and dwellings of an inferior class. Down to 1830 this road was a beautiful avenue lined with tall trees on each side, whose umbrageous foliage meeting overhead, imparted a grand and solemn character to the vista. The construction of the railway crossing the road at first on the level, and the subse-

Wavertree Road.

CHAP. XVI.

Wavertree Road.

quent construction of the bridge with its long approaches made the first inroad; the gradual appropriation of the land for building has done the rest. Just where the railway crosses the road, stood a farm-house and orchard, called Bridge House from a bridge over the brook forming the division between the townships. About half-way from Edgehill stood an old picturesque cottage, originally called the 'Pump House,' but subsequently converted into a tavern called the Halfway House, with a tea-garden and skittle-ground.

Rake Lane.

Rake Lane (now Durning Road) is an ancient road. The villas lining the east side were built at various times during the early years of the present century, on land purchased from Mr. Durning. Sir John Bent, mayor in 1850–1, who was knighted on the occasion of the visit of the Queen and the Prince Consort, resided here. Another villa was erected and occupied by Mr. George Holt, who succeeded to a portion of Mr. Durning's property. The corner of Rake Lane and Wavertree Road was occupied by a commodious villa and grounds long tenanted by Mr. John Timothy Swainson, Collector of Customs, whose son Mr. C. L. Swainson was for many years incumbent of St. Mary's, Edgehill. In 1864–5, the house was demolished, and the gardens and grounds covered with houses and streets—Dodge, Byford, Wynne Streets, &c.

Swainson.

Salisbury Estate.

The land on the south side the road, belonging to the Marquis of Salisbury, including Speke, Ryder, Ash, and Arrow Streets, was built on about 1856–7.

Tunnel Road, as the name implies, is coeval with the construction of the railway, so far as it leads thereto. Its continuation southwards into Smithdown Lane was only completed in 1867, forming with Rake Lane (recently widened) and Lodge Lane, a valuable link of communication north and south.

Railway.

A large proportion of the land east of Tunnel Road between Wavertree Road and Smithdown Lane is occupied by the Edgehill Railway Station, which contains

Drawn by J. Austin.

Engraved by W. Le Petit.

WOOD HOUSE HALL,

THE SEAT OF CHARLES TARBUTT, ESQ.

London, J. S. & Co. London 1829.

about twenty acres within the municipal boundary, with at least an equal quantity immediately adjoining external to the borough. The accommodation for the traffic has been gradually developing to its present gigantic dimensions from the memorable September 15, 1830, when by the opening of this line a new era of commercial enterprise dawned upon the world. The conception and grandeur of the event were rendered more solemn and even awful by the sacrifice of the life of a statesman of great efficiency and still greater promise, William Huskisson, M.P. for the borough.

Railway.

The web of life is of a mingled yarn and the most solemn occasions are frequently mixed up like one of Shakespeare's tragedies with an element of the comic. On the opening day of the railway, of course every point and 'coign of vantage' from whence the procession could be best seen was eagerly availed of. A tolerably high chimney had recently been built on the railway ground, affording a sufficient platform on the scaffolding at the top for the accommodation of two or three persons. Two gentlemen connected with the engineer's department took advantage of this crowning eminence to obtain a really 'bird's eye view' of the whole proceedings. They were wound up by the tackle used in hoisting the bricks, and enjoyed the perspective from their airy height to their hearts' content. When all was over they of course wished to descend, and gave the signal to be let down again, but alas! there was no response. The man in charge, excited by the events of the day, and, confused by the sorrowful news by which it was closed, and, it may be, oblivious from other causes, had utterly forgotten his engagement and gone home. Here was a prospect. The shades of evening were gathering, the multitudes departing, and every probability of being obliged to act the part of St. Simeon Stylites very involuntarily. Despair added force and strength to their lungs, and at length

Opening day.

CHAP. XVI.

their condition and difficulty having attracted attention, they were relieved from their unpleasant predicament.

East of the railway station and adjoining the grounds of the Liverpool Cricket Club, famous in the history of the noble craft, stands a hamlet little known and seldom visited except by its inhabitants, which is a curiosity in its way.

It lies almost as secluded as the Valley of Rasselas. There is no thoroughfare through its quiet precinct, and the rattle of carts and carriages is never heard. Each house has its pleasant garden in front, blooming with flowers laid out in multifarious variety as suits the taste of the occupants, with here and there a little glazed projection for a conservatory.

Spekefield Cottages.

What is the name, asks the wondering reader, of this suburban Eden? Where can such a 'rus in urbe' be found? Kind sir, it is not far to seek. It is called the 'Spekefield Cottages,' consisting of about seventy-five houses, the greater part of them forming three sides of a quadrangle, the gardens in the intermediate space intersected by an avenue. They were commenced about 1846 by Mr. J. S. Leigh, to whose successor the greater part of them still belong, principally for the accommodation of the railway workmen, though they are by no means confined to that class. The quiet retirement of a locality so near the town, and the pretty effect of the cluster of gardens in the summer, blooming with flowers, render the little hamlet well worthy of a visit.

We will now return to the foot of the hill, at the point whence so many streets radiate, the lower end of West Derby Street. Pembroke Chapel, which occupies a conspicuous position at the acute angle, was built in 1839, owing to a difference of opinion arising in the Baptist congregation in Byrom Street, as already described. It is a commodious building of white stone, with a tetrastyle Ionic portico and pediment in front, the sides plain ashlar. The architect was Mr. Joseph Franklin, for some

Pembroke Chapel.

years surveyor to the Corporation. The row of houses above the chapel, set back from the street, extending to Minshull Street, were built about 1815, after which the neighbourhood remained stationary for many years. The land above Minshull Street, belonging to Lord Salisbury, containing Hatfield Street, Cranbourne Street, and Parron Street, was laid out and built on between 1847 and 1849. A pleasant villa and garden formerly stood fronting Paddington at the corner of Minshull Street, which was demolished for building about the same time. The land immediately below, extending to Crown Street, Little Woolton Street, Green Street, &c., also belonging to Lord Salisbury, was built on about 1844–5.

Pembroke Chapel.

Paddington was first so named in 1805. There seems to have been a *penchant* about that period for imitating in our streets the names of Metropolitan districts. Islington and Kensington were so called a little before that date.

Paddington.

The original settlement of Edgehill took place about the beginning of the present century, and comprised the district between King Street (now Kinglake Street) and Smithdown Lane from east to west, and between Paddington and Clarence Street from north to south. Much of this land, however, remained unbuilt on for many years. Mason Street was the first developed. It took its name from Mr. Edward Mason, timber merchant, who had his domicile and business establishment, as far back as 1766, in Mason Street, Wapping, then a new street, to which he gave the name. About 1800 he built a mansion at Edgehill, near the north end of the present Mason Street. The gardens and grounds were very extensive, reaching the whole length of Paddington as far as Smithdown Lane. Mr. Mason died at a ripe old age in 1814. His daughter, Miss Mason, continued to occupy the house until her decease in 1833. After her death the property was sold, and about 1844 the house was dismantled and the grounds built over.

Edgehill.

Mason.

CHAP. XVI.

Mason.

The land south of Mr. Mason's, extending to Grinfield Street southward, and to Smithdown Lane westward, formed part of the waste lands of the township, and was leased by the Commissioners in 1796 and 1797 for sixty years. Soon afterwards eight detached houses of rather superior character were built thereon. The subsequent history of this locality is connected with the name of a man of eccentric habits and extraordinary character,

Joseph Williamson.

Mr. Joseph Williamson. This gentleman was a tobacco manufacturer, in Parr Street, Liverpool. He succeeded Mr. Thomas Moss Tate, whose daughter he married. His name first appears in the Directory in 1804, Mr. Tate having died just previously. In 1806 he purchased the property in question, and came to reside in Mason Street. About 1818 he retired from business, and from that time until his decease in 1841, he employed himself in some of the most extraordinary operations which can be conceived. He filled up the vacant spaces between the houses in Mason Street with buildings of the strangest and most uncouth character, literally answering Gray's description of—

> Windows that exclude the light,
> And passages that lead to nothing.

Projections and recesses in irregular disorder, storeys of all heights, some rooms without windows, others apparently all window, some buildings run up by working night and day, others left unfinished for years. The building constructions were, however, utterly outdone by his excavations and earthworks. The land standing on the side of a hill, there was a natural temptation to construct terraces and vaults. This led to quarrying for stone. This again caused the construction of more vaults, until the whole hill-side became honeycombed, excavated, and pervaded by caves, vaults, and yawning chasms utterly without meaning, plan, or object. Some of these vaults were of enormous size and solid construc-

tion, 30 or 40 ft. wide and 50 ft. in height. His manners were as eccentric as his conduct. Of noble exterior and courtly bearing when he chose to practise it, his usual costume was mean and slovenly, and his manner to strangers offensive. Being a widower without family, his singular mode of expenditure injured no one but himself, though there is no doubt that his means were considerably straitened in the latter part of his life. The simplest explanation of his extraordinary proclivities is that, as the Scotch say, he had 'a bee in his bonnet,' or, in plain English, that his mind was off its balance. The land reverted to the West Derby Commissioners at the expiration of the leases in 1856–7. It has since been disposed of in various ways. A portion is occupied as stabling for the scavenging department of the town, with provision for about fifty horses. Another part is the site of the ventilating tower of the railway tunnel which passes under the land. Here the vaults and caverns of Mr. Williamson have proved of service, a 50-horse engine and boilers with the huge ventilating fan being lodged in these underground constructions. With this exception the excavations have been filled up, and nothing external remains to indicate the site of such whimsical and misdirected ingenuity, the results of which have passed away like an uneasy nightmare.

Joseph Williamson.

The land between Smithdown Lane and Crown Street, belonging to the Marquis of Salisbury, comprising Bamber Street, &c., was laid out and built on between 1845 and 1849.

The Church of St. Stephen the Martyr, at the corner of Crown and Mildred Streets, was opened in 1851. It is built of red sandstone in the thirteenth-century pointed style. It has a nave and aisles without clerestory, a five-light west window with geometrical tracery, a south porch, and a bell turret between the nave and chancel. The architecture is correct enough in point of style, but the general result is somewhat heavy in effect.

St. Stephen the Martyr.

CHAP. XVI.

Smithdown Lane.

Manor of Esmedune or Smithdown.

Smithdown Lane is probably the most ancient road about Liverpool, and is the only relic of the 'Esmedune' of Domesday Book. That Smithdown or Smeatham Lane was the road to the Manor of *Esmedune* there can be no question, but it is rather difficult to determine where the manor was situated. There is reason to believe that the boundaries of West Derby and Toxteth Park have been altered since the Conquest. We should naturally look for the site of Esmedune within the limits of the parish of Liverpool. The Domesday record states that the manor was held by one Edelmund, and contained 'one carucate of land worth thirty two pence.' A carucate was such a quantity as could be kept in tillage by a single plough drawn by eight oxen. Ducange estimates this at 180 acres, which seems to modern ideas rather excessive. 180 acres is about one-tenth of the area of the parish of Liverpool, which contains 1858 acres, and looking at the quantity of marsh land in the Mosslake, and the wide expanse of the great heath, a rocky common covered with whin bushes and fern, 180 acres of cultivated land seems quite as much as could be expected in the locality at that early period.

In a writ of inquiry of the 5th Henry III., the town or place of *Shinthedun* is mentioned, which, it is stated, King John had wasted by the Hey or enclosure of Toxtethe. In an escheat of the 25th Edward I., we find that amongst the possessions of Edmund Crouchback, Earl of Lancaster, was a place called the Earl's *Smitheden*, in connection with the forest of West Derby. In 1316, Thomas, Earl of Lancaster, granted *Smithedun* along with Toxteth to the Abbey of Whalley. Even so late as the reign of Charles I., receivers of crown rents were appointed, amongst other places, for 'Toxteth, *Smithdon* Moss, and Letherpoole.' Some further information on this subject will be found in the chapter on Toxteth Park.

Returning up the hill to Mason Street, from which we

have been diverted by Mr. Williamson's 'whims and oddities' I would notice that the last house but one at the southern end, on the west side, was long the residence of the Rev. T. Raffles, LL.D., who has been mentioned in a previous chapter. The house was roomy and convenient, with a large garden behind, raised up on a high terrace, considerably above the level of the street. Many of the most eminent public men both of England and America have here, at one time or another, been the doctor's guests. His company was much sought after. His genial flow of conversation, full of anecdote and fun; his inimitable dramatic power in telling a story, set off by his portly presence and the silver tones of his voice; his extensive collection of autographs and relics, many of them unique, which he delighted to exhibit, and to bring out their points to the best advantage—rendered a visit to Mason Street something to be stored up in the mind for future pleasant reminiscence.

Dr. Raffles.

Mason Street was an ancient road, and the original houses were of a superior class. High Street (now Highgate Street) was a new street laid out before 1800. The first houses built were of a respectable class, set back in gardens; but, before many years had elapsed, the street was invaded by a low class of property, in courts and narrow streets extending back to Mason Street, which deteriorated the character of the neighbourhood, even before Mr. Williamson began his operations. Sidney Place, Clarence Street, Myers Street, and Edge Vale were commenced about 1815, with a class of neat small houses set back in gardens.

High Street.

The row of large houses called Grinfield Terrace, with garden plots in front, looking over Smithdown Lane westward, was commenced about 1818.

Grinfield Terrace.

The introduction of the London and North Western Railway, with its goods station and ranges of coal yards along Crown Street, which commenced in 1831, has done much to change the character of the neighbourhood.

CHAP. XVI.

White's Mill. Adjoining the railway yard stands one of the four windmills yet remaining in the borough, where a century ago they might have been counted by scores. Each of them has to be eked out by steam, and before many years they will become things of the past.

Duke Street, &c. Duke Street (now Marmaduke Street) and King Street (now Kinglake Street) were laid out about 1806. The continuation of the latter, called Queen Street, was first built on about 1821. Lord Street, the continuation of Duke Street, remained open ground until 1832. The narrow dense cross streets connecting the two were filled up with building from 1850 to 1860.

Chatham Place. The fine row of houses called Chatham Place was built about 1820. The chapel immediately opposite, with long lancet windows and porch, was built in 1861 by the New Connexion Methodists. In 1868 it was transferred to the Independents or Congregationalists.

The schools belonging to St. Mary's Church, on the west side of King Street, were built in 1861. The building is of white stone, in a neat style of mediæval architecture, from the designs of Mr. Denison Jee.

St. Anne's Roman Catholic Church. On the east side of Lord Street stands the Roman Catholic Church of St. Anne, erected in 1844. It is a red stone Gothic building, with nave, aisles, and chancel, and a boldly marked west-end tower, intended, at some future, period to carry a spire. The window tracery is of the fourteenth-century geometrical character. The building as a whole possesses considerable merit, but, from its unfortunate position, it is hardly possible to see any portion of it, except the west end.

Down to the year 1847, the land between Lord Street and Tunnel Road, extending from Wavertree Road to Smithdown Lane, with some trifling exceptions, was open fields, belonging to Mr. William Chadwick and the Earle family. About that time an impulse was given to building which resulted in carrying through the useful thoroughfare of Chatsworth Street, from Wavertree Road to

Chatsworth Street, &c.

Smithdown Lane, and the filling up of the large block between this and Lord Street. Between Chatsworth Street and Tunnel Road the colonisation has been at a later period. An influx of Welsh builders invaded Messrs. Earles' fields about 1863, and in a few years the whole surface north of the railway was covered with houses. The land south of the railway was developed at a later period, commencing with the opening out of Tunnel Road in 1867. By the year 1870 nearly the whole of the land west of Tunnel Road was occupied by crowded streets.

Tunnel Road.

St. Catherine's Church, situated on the west side of Tunnel Road, near the railway, is a plain brick structure, intended as a working man's church. To criticise it severely would be unfair, the object of the structure being so laudable; but we shall see a little further on what may be done under the same circumstances in an architectural point of view.

St. Catherine's.

An open piece of ground at the south end of Chatsworth Street, corner of Smithdown Lane, was occupied for some time as a public gymnasium, which was afterwards transferred to the opposite side of the road, and subsequently discontinued. Several of these gymnasia were established from 1858 to 1860, at the expense of a benevolent gentleman of the town, and afterwards transferred to the Corporation, to be maintained at the public expense. It cannot be said that they have been a success. Their object and purpose was doubtless praiseworthy; but, in a large and mixed community, it too frequently happens that public facilities of a recreative kind are taken possession of by the 'roughs,' leading to disorderly gatherings injurious to the neighbourhoods where they are placed. So it has been found in the present instance, which has led to their discontinuance.

Gymnasium.

The block of land east of Crown Street, as far as Smithdown Lane, between Falkner Street and Upper Parliament Street, consisted of open fields down to 1834.

CHAP. XVI.

It was then laid out for building, and became rapidly covered with a dense mass of narrow streets laid out very irregularly, owing to the form of the original divisions of the land, which have been followed in all their tortuous ramifications. The Patent Safe Works of Messrs. Milner and Son, which are situated in this block, have obtained a world-wide reputation. Originally established in Cable Street, they were removed to Smithdown Lane in 1853, and have been annually increasing in extent and power. They are carried on with great spirit, employing on the spot several hundreds of workmen. The Foundry and Engine Works of Messrs. Hamilton & Co. (limited), formerly situated by the side of the railway, within a short distance, were established originally in 1847 by Messrs. Smith & Willey, who also carried on the works now occupied by Messrs. Milner & Son. They came into the hands of Messrs. Hamilton & Co. about 1859, and gradually grew up to a very large extent, but have recently been removed to Garston.

Milner's works.

Foundry.

Within the block I have just been describing, in a low and crowded locality, which it would give a stranger some difficulty to find, at the corner of Pine Grove and Dinorben Street, stands the Church of St. Nathaniel, erected in 1868–9. This building is an excellent example of the effect which may be produced by the skilful use of common materials. It is essentially a poor man's church, with nothing pretentious about it. The walls are common brick; the windows of the nave and aisles are mere plain lights with square sinkings. The roof is finished at the eaves with common iron spouts, and yet there is something about it noble, dignified, and effective. The plan has nave and aisles with clerestory. The east end has a semicircular apse. The tower at the north-west corner is bold and good, with a handsome portal of moulded brick below, and large well-proportioned bell-chamber lights, three on each face above. The west front has two double-light windows, with geo-

St. Nathaniel's.

metrical tracery heads embraced under a bold arch, containing a circular cuspated light, which produces a fine bold effect. Altogether the design is one of very satisfactory character for its purpose. The architect was Mr. David Walker.

Proceeding along Smithdown Lane, without venturing for the present to intrude into the region of Toxteth Park, at Tunnel Road we arrive at the boundary of the Spekelands Estate, which extends to the limit of the township and borough, which are here conterminous. *Speke*, and *Speke-lands* are, in all probability, derived from *spic*, bacon; *spican*, to fatten; as being covered with beech or other woods furnishing 'mast' for feeding swine.

Spekelands.

The estate was purchased, near the close of the last century, by Mr. Thomas Earle, who had previously lived in Hanover Street. At first he resided at the Brook farm-house, which still stands on the property. About 1804–5 he erected the present Spekelands House, a large square building of white stone, where he resided till his decease in 1822. It was occupied by his widow for some years, and subsequently let to various persons.

The estate is now ripe for the builder, and will doubtless before long be covered with a labyrinth of brick and mortar.

At this point terminates our somewhat lengthy survey of West Derby.

CHAPTER XVII.

TOXTETH PARK: MUNICIPAL PORTION.

CHAP. XVII.

Site.

THE township of Toxteth Park, which adjoins the original borough and parish of Liverpool on the south, contains 2,352 acres, of which 1,056, or nearly one-half, are included in the municipal district, constituting two of the wards into which the municipality is divided.

Contour.

The surface is for the most part covered with clay, overlying the new red sandstone, moderately undulating in its contour, rising at its north-eastern extremity, at the Waterworks, Lodge Lane, to an elevation of 190 feet above the sea-level. The frontage to the estuary of the Mersey from the Queen's Dock to Otterspool is a little above three miles. About midway the outcrop of the sandstone at Dingle Bank presents a bold promontory projecting into the river, and exercising an important influence on the current and direction of the tides. The watercourses at the Dingle and Otterspool have scooped out two picturesque little valleys, which have been planted and laid out with considerable taste by their respective owners.

Domesday.

For the earliest specific information respecting Toxteth Park, we must, as usual, turn to the Domesday Survey. From this we learn that at the date of the record the manor was divided between two thanes, Bernulf and

Stainulf, each of whom held one virgate and half a carucate of land, at the rent of four shillings.[1]

Name.

The name in Domesday Book is spelled *Stochestede*, which points pretty clearly to its origin and meaning, 'the wooden station.'[2]

Esmedune.

Toxteth is so mixed up in its early history with the extinct and enigmatical manor of Esmedune, or Smithdown, that it is necessary to couple the two together during a considerable period. At the time of Domesday, Esmedune was held by Edelmund, with one carucate of land, worth thirty-two pence. Here is distinct evidence of a separate manor, with a quantity of land, according to the usual computation, of about 180 statute acres. That this must have been immediately contiguous to Toxteth Park will be evident as we proceed.

Manor.

The manor of Toxteth having formed part of the grant after the Conquest to Roger de Poictou, was by him con-

[1] A carucate was the quantity which could be kept in cultivation by one plough and eight oxen. The virgate, or A.-S. '*gyrdland*,' is uncertain as to quantity, but as it was measured by a staff, it was probably only applied to land of superior quality.

[2] I may here throw into a note a few philological memoranda, which could not so well find a place in the text.

Mr. E. Baines ('Hist. of Lancashire,' vol. iv. p. 190) gives the etymology of Toxteth as 'the woody place; *stoc* a wood, and *stæthe*, *staithe* or *sted*, a station, a place.' Mr. Joseph Boult, in a paper read in 1867, before the Archæological Society of Liverpool, analyses the name into *stoc*, a stem or trunk, and *stædth* a shore, or river bank, signifying therefore, 'the wooded shore,' or, as he puts it in a note, 'the stocks on the river's bank.'

On these derivations I have to observe that A.-S. *stoc* is never used for growing timber. Its primary meaning is 'a log of wood.' In composition it is of very common occurrence, employed to indicate constructions in wood as contradistinguished from those in stone. Thus, there is a Stockbridge (wooden bridge), Hants; Stanbridge, Essex, Stanford or Stamford, which means a stone bridge in place of a ford (six times). Stockbury, Kent; Stainborough, York; Stockton, the wooden town (eight times); Stanton, Stainton, Staunton (thirty-six times); so, Stanstead, the stone settlement (six times); and here Stockstead, the wooden settlement.

Mr. Boult has confounded the suffix *stede*, a clearing, a station, with *stæth* (modern English staith), a landing-place, which is an entirely different word. Out of the hundreds, if not thousands of English names ending in *stead*, such as Hampstead, Wanstead, Plumstead, Worstead, &c., the vast majority have nothing to do with either rivers or landing-places.

CHAP. XVII.

Molyneux.

King John.

ferred on his trusty follower, William de Molines, the founder of the family of Molyneux of Sefton. When King John, early in his reign, took a fancy to the locality and founded the town and port of Liverpool, he determined, like the Corporation 650 years later, to enclose and form a park on the south side of the town for his amusement and recreation. To accomplish this he purchased from the Molyneuxs the manor of Toxteth, giving in exchange a manor to the north of Liverpool—it is supposed, Litherland. This is referred to by an entry in the 'Testa de Neville,' where the exchange is mentioned.

Hunting staff.

From the Sheriff's accounts in the latter part of John's reign it would seem that a large hunting establishment had been already formed. Charges are made for the expenses of the master huntsman and forty-nine men, ten horses, two packs of dogs, fifty-two spaniels, 2,000 hand-nets, and 260 cocks. John was an eager sportsman, and his vacillating character appears nowhere so much in earnest as when issuing instructions about the treatment of his hawks and hounds, as in the following specimen: 'We send to you three gyr-falcons, and Gibbun, the gyr-falcon, than which we do not possess a better, and one falcon gentle, commanding you to receive them and place them in the mewes, and provide for their food plump goats, and sometimes good hens, and once every week let them have the flesh of hares, and procure good mastiffs to guard the mewes.'

Notwithstanding this promising commencement, Toxteth Park, as a sporting establishment, found no favour in the eyes of the successors of King John, nor does it appear that it ever received the honour of a royal visit.

John died in 1216. Nine years afterwards, in consequence of the wide-spread discontent with the forests, parks, and game preserves of the Plantagenet kings, the 'Carta de Foresta' was granted by Henry III., enacting that all the forests which had been made by the three

Carta de Foresta.

previous monarchs should be destroyed and thrown open, except those formed on their own demesnes. Of the 'Perambulatio de Foresta,' arising out of this charter, I have already spoken in chapter xvi., so far as relates to the Forest of West Derby. In relation to the forests of Lancashire generally, the Commissioners report: 'Quod totus comitatus Lancastriæ debet deafforestari secundum tenorem cartæ de foresta preter boscos subscriptos.' Amongst the excepted forests was that of Toxteth Park. They then proceed to define the boundaries of the park or forest. Of this document there are two copies; one inserted in one of the volumes called the 'Testa de Neville,' deposited in the office of the Queen's Remembrancer, in the Court of Exchequer; the other in the coucher-book or chartulary of the Abbey of Whalley. Of the former Mr. Baines gives an English translation—it is to be presumed preserving the orthography of the names; the latter is given in the original form in the tenth volume of the publications of the Chetham Society. As the results are very curious, and as the documents differ, I will give them both. The English translation from the 'Testa de Neville' runs as follows: From 'where Oskelesbrok falls into the Mersee, and following the course of Oskelesbrok to the park of Magewom, and from the park to Bromegge, and following Bromegge to the Brownlowe, and thence crossing to the ancient turbaries between the two meres up to Lambisthorn, descending to the Waterfall of Stirpullhead, and following Stirpull in its descent to the Mersee.' The Latin original from the coucher-book reads thus: 'Per has divisas, scilicet, sicut ubi Oskelesbrok cadit in Mersee, sequendo Oskelesbrok in ascendendo usque ad pratum de Magewom, et de prato usque ad Brounegge, sequendo de Brounegge usque ad Brymeclogh, et inde ex transverso usque ad veteres turbarias inter duas maras usque ad Lambesthorn, et de Lambesthorne in descendendo usque

'Perambulatio.'

Report.

Boundary.

CHAP. XVII.

ad Waterfall Capitis de Oterpol, sequendo Oterpol in descendendo usque in Mersee.'

Boundaries.

Watercourses.

In endeavouring to identify the boundaries as given above, one point is perfectly clear, that the line along the Mersey terminates at each end with a watercourse or pool. Now, between the outfall of Otterspool, on the south, and the old pool of Liverpool, on the north, there has never existed any watercourse which would at all answer the description in the text. The dell of the Dingle and that through St. Michael's Hamlet are out of the question, as being too far south. There formerly existed a small brook taking its rise about the Parliament fields, crossing the Park Road near the Old Mill, where it formed a dam, and descending into the river near the south end of the Queen's Dock. This has long been obliterated, and must at its best have been a very tiny stream. *Primâ facie*, then, there is evidence that the limits of Toxteth Park in the thirteenth century along the seaboard lay within the two *embouchures* of Liverpool and Otterspool. Let us now trace the landward boundaries. I suppose Oskelesbrok must be identified with Otterspool, though it is singular that the name of *Oterpull* should be given in the coucher version to the watercourse at the other extremity. *Oska* in Old Norse, *Onskelig* in Danish, signify pleasant, desirable. Mary Oskatel is the name of the heroine in the legend of the Eagle and Child, from which the Stanleys derive their crest.

The southern boundary along the brook, usually called the River Jordan, running by the farm called Jericho, is very clear until we arrive near the large pool at Green Bank, when the boundary diverges and encloses a considerable quantity of land eastward of the brook. This answers precisely to the position of the 'pratum de Magewom' of the report. It would be easy to manufacture a meaning out of the word, but I am inclined to think it is a mistake of the transcriber, and that the term is a contraction of some expression to which we want the

clue. From Magewom along the Broom edge or Bromegge there is no difficulty. The boundary still runs parallel with Smithdown Lane, which was the border between the enclosed lands ('Wœrtreo,' the enclosure of trees—now Wavertree) and the Forest of Toxteth. Some of the common lands along this line were not enclosed until the beginning of the present century. Following the line of Smithdown Lane, we are brought very near the site of the Brownlowe or Brymeclogh, the eminence about the Workhouse, now considerably reduced in height.

Boundaries.

Brownlowe.

If my reader will take a map of Liverpool with the contour lines marked thereon, he will find a large flat district extending between Parliament Street and Brownlow Hill, being the site of the ancient Moss Lake. To the north of this he will find a smaller flat district, at the top of Pembroke Place, Crown Street, and Boundary Place, descending towards Daulby Street. These two areas are connected by a narrow strip of flat land along Crown Street. The smaller area, at the corner of Moss Street, is in immediate contiguity with the course of the brook which fed the Liver—pool. Taking its rise a little distance beyond the Necropolis, this ran a somewhat devious course, passing behind Brunswick Road, forming the division between Everton and West Derby; then along Moss Street to near the corner of Daulby Street, recurving from thence and descending the hill in an oblique direction to the bottom of Richmond Row, and so along Byrom Street and Whitechapel. At the point in its course just indicated this brook received the superfluous waters of the Moss Lake.

Moss Lake.

Brook.

If we now refer to the valuable record in the 'Moore Rental' of the state of the locality in 1667, we find Sir Edward Moore advising his son that there was a 'common watercourse, over which there is an ancient plate of stone, lying in the highway to the town of Liverpool, which is stopped so that your moss is drowned.' After

'Moore Rental.'

CHAP. XVII.

'Moore Rental.'

expatiating on the advantages of this watercourse, he proceeds: 'Truly God and nature hath made all the places between the pool and the stone plate so convenient for raising excessive great dams . . . . and so great a fresh from off the Moss Lake . . . . that I am confident that God Almighty . . . . hath ordained this to be the greatest good for this town.'

Brook.

Now, the 'Perambulatio' speaks of the 'waterfall capitis de Stirpull (or Oterpol) in descendendo usque ad Mersee.' The syllable *Stir*, in Stirpull, is indigenous in every Indo-European tongue, and is of very common application to rivers in every part of Europe, as the Stour, the I-ster, Al-ster, Ul-ster, &c. It is the root of *stir*, *storm*, meaning violent motion. In the present instance, the brook having a fall of 120 feet in about 1,100 yards of its course, must have been rapid enough to deserve the name.

Boundaries.

To sum up, then, we find the boundaries of Toxteth Park given in the document, along the line of Garston, Wavertree, and West Derby to the junction with Liverpool, the same as at the present time. Following the line of Smithdown Lane along the margin of West Derby, we are led to the 'Brownlow,' which can now be identified. This brings us to the top of Brownlow Hill. The short length from thence to the foot of West Derby Street, along Crown Street, answers to the 'inter duas maras usque ad Lambisthorne,' probably a well-known old tree at the foot of the ascent; and the length 'in descendendo usque ad Waterfall,' exactly corresponds to the gentle slope from Pembroke Place to London Road, where we find the 'Waterfall' represented in Moore's time by the 'ancient stone plate' or dam in the highway.

Limits of Manor, A.D. 1228.

I cannot see any escape from the conclusion that at the time of the perambulation and report in 1228 the portion of Liverpool south of the pool was included in the manors of Toxteth and Smethedon. At the close of the report on Toxteth Park the Commissioners add these words: 'Juxta has divisas dominus Johannes rex posuit Smethedon cum

pertinentibus suis in foresta, et dedit Tyngwelle in excambium cuidam pauperi homini, se invito, et inde fecit dominus Rex voluntatem suam.' 'Along these boundaries the lord King John placed Smethedon, with its appurtenances, in the forest, and gave Thingwell in exchange to a certain poor man against his will; and so the king carried out his purpose.' The name of this 'poor man' we learn from an entry in the 'Testa de Neville,' where it is recorded that 'Richard, the son of Thurstan, held one carucate of land in Thingwalle as a manor in exchange for his hereditament in *Snoddon*, which the King had taken into his forest.'

Site of Smethedon.

It has been commonly supposed that when King John founded and chartered the borough and lordship of Liverpool the manor of Esmedun or Smethedon was absorbed into it. The documentary evidence tends to a different conclusion. It was rather absorbed into the royal forest or park of Toxteth, but is mentioned separately in various documents, to which I shall shortly refer, down to the seventeenth century. This fact also accounts in some measure for the dispute respecting the Great Heath between Lord Molyneux and the corporation in 1672, which led to its acquisition by the town. If the Great Heath had formed part of the lordship of Liverpool it would have passed by the conveyance from Charles I. to the merchants of London, from whom Lord Molyneux deduced the title to the lands in Lord Street, &c., which was undisputed. It is clear, therefore, that there must have been a difference between the two cases, which is easily intelligible, if the great heath was claimed by prescription as part and parcel of the manor of Toxteth and Smethdown, against which the corporation set up the prescriptive rights of the burgesses.

Great Heath.

Amongst the close rolls there is a return to a writ of inquiry, 5th Henry III. (1221), in which the town of *Shinthedun* is mentioned as having been wasted by the Hey or enclosure of Toxtethe. In the 25th Edward I.,

CHAP. XVII.

1297. (1297), we find in the Escheat Rolls an entry, that Edmund Earl of Lancaster held the forest of West Derby and a place called the Earl's *Smitheden*. In 1316 Thomas Earl of Lancaster executed a grant to the abbot and monks of Whalley of 'illum locum integrum qui vocatur Tocstath tam intra clausturam quam extra, et *Smethedon*, qui prius teneri solebat in defenso.' We learn from this document that Toxteth and Smethedon were still inseparable, and that part was enclosed and the remainder open. The enclosure, there can be little doubt, followed the line of Smithdown Lane, where Lodge Lane still indicates the site of the entrance, and continued down the line of Parliament Street to the river, leaving the great heath and the Moss Lakes unenclosed. The monks after all preferred remaining at Whalley, and Toxteth reverted to the earl, who subsequently granted it to Sir Robert de Holland. In 1346 the park was seven miles in circumference, and was let to the Molyneuxs for 17*l.* per annum. It continued in possession of the crown until the reign of Henry VI., when the chief forestership was bestowed on Sir Richard Molyneux and his heirs, the park being stated to be well stocked with deer.

Smitheden.

A.D. 1316. Earl Thomas's grant.

Holland, A.D. 1346.

Molyneux.

Stanleys rangers. The rangership during the troublous times of the wars of the Roses must have passed from the Molyneuxs to the Stanleys, for in the Act of Resumption passed in the 1st year of Henry VII. a reservation is made on behalf of Sir Edward Stanley of the office of 'Master Forester of our forests of Symonswoode, Toxstaght, and Croxstaght.' In 1529, King Henry VIII. by letters patent appointed Sir Thomas Butler chief forester of Simondswood, Croxtete, and Toxteth, and parker of Toxteth and Croxtatt, with their herbage and parkage.

A.D. 1529.

A.D. 1561. Disputes. The Stanleys would appear to have again entered into possession, for in 1561, a dispute having arisen between the corporation of Liverpool and the Earl of Derby respecting certain port dues arising from ships driven in

by stress of weather, his lordship retaliated by forbidding the burgesses their privilege of pasturing their cattle within the park of Toxteth, which they had been accustomed to enjoy on payment of a score or ley. This brought out a very humble supplication from the mayor and burgesses, in which they state that 'now perceiving your good lordship hath conceived displeasure with them, which to them is no small grief, meaning never to offend your lordship, except it were for lack of knowledge, humbly desiring your good lordship to accept their good wills, which by God's grace shall never change at any time against your good lordship. . . . In tender consideration whereof, may it please your good lordship to have an remorse unto them of the same; and that it may please your honour to direct your honourable orders unto your lordship's officers, so as your said beseechers and poor suppliants may have their cattle to skoore, taken within your lordship's said park of Toxteth in like manner as heretofore they have had, wherein your good lordship bindeth them daily to pray for you in honour long to continue and endure with much increase of virtue.' This humble petition proved effectual, for by an entry attached it is stated that 'upon the said supplication heard with my lord, skoore in the park was granted to all the town, excepting them that were at the doings aforesaid about the said ship, that is to wit, Mr. Mayor (Robert Corbett) the two bailiffs and two others.'

A.D. 1588.

In 1588 Lady Stanley had a royal warrant to take wood from Toxteth to build her house at Liverpool.

A.D. 1591.

Proposal to dispark.

In 1591 it appears from the town's records, that the intention of the crown to dispark the ancient enclosure had been published. Under the above date it is stated 'Mr. Maior did make known unto the whole assemblie that the parke of Toxteth is to be disparked, and that my lord, the earle of Darbie's pleasure is y^t^ one hundred acres thereof or thereaboute, shall be reserved for the inhabitants of this towne of Liverpoole, such as will

CHAP. XVII.

endeavoure themselves to take the same, or such portion as they can convenientlie deale with, after the rate as his lordship letteth the residue.'

This intention was not carried out in the manner proposed. When James I. succeeded to the crown, he or his advisers made the most of the property thereto appurtenant. The claims of the Stanleys were set aside, and

A.D. 1604. Disparked.

in 1604 Toxteth Park was disafforested and granted to certain citizens of London, who conveyed it in the following year to Sir Richard Molyneux. It would seem that some fee-farm rent was still reserved to the Crown,

A.D. 1641.

for in the 16th Charles I. (1641) certain persons are named as receivers of the crown rents in Toxteth, *Smithdon* Moss, and other places. This is the last we read of Smithdon, which undoubtedly passed to the Corporation of Liverpool; but the precise channel and date are matters of considerable uncertainty.

A.D. 1671. Enclosure.

In 1671 the enclosing park wall still existed, as is evident from an entry in the town's records of that year, describing the boundaries of the borough, which in this part is stated to run 'from the Mosslake to a place called Hollin hedge, and thence straight to the Parke wall, and all along the Parke wall, and through two crofts to Booth's Mill, and soe to the sea side.'

Molyneux family.

Toxteth Park has remained in the possession of the Molyneux family down to the present generation, having by the progress of events become a mine of wealth for building and commercial purposes.

Extra-parochial.

Toxteth Park although locally within the parish of Walton is legally held to be an extra-parochial place, not subject to any tithe rent charge or church rate. It is usually supposed that this exemption arises from its having been a royal demesne, but this is by no means clear, as West Derby, which was equally a royal preserve, enjoys no such exemption. Nor has it always been so with Toxteth. In

A.D. 1461. Tithes.

1461 the tithes of Toxteth along with others were assigned to the church of Lancaster. In 1643, on the sequestration

of the tithes of Walton by the Long Parliament, a return was made by which it appears that the tithes of Toxteth amounted to 45*l.* per annum, which were received by the officiating minister of the chapel at the Dingle. The question of exemption remained in abeyance during a great part of the last century, but in 1835 it was brought to an issue by a suit at law when the non-parochiality was established by the verdict of a jury, and has not since been disputed.

Exemption.

A.D. 1835.

Down to the year 1770, Toxteth Park continued to preserve its exclusively rural character. In 1771, a farm, occupied by Thomas Turner, containing 52 acres, adjoining the boundary of Liverpool, was laid out for intended streets by the Earl of Sefton, who in 1775 obtained an Act of Parliament, enabling him to grant building leases. The district so laid out on paper embraced the whole of the land west of Mill Street, between Parliament and Northumberland Streets. The person who took the most active part in carrying out the scheme was an enterprising builder, named Cuthbert Bisbrown, residing in Paradise Street, and afterwards in Sparling Street. The original design was to form a new town, which some proposed to call New Liverpool, but finally Harrington was the name fixed upon, in compliment to Isabella, first Countess of Sefton, daughter of the second Earl of Harrington. The muse of poetry was called in to give *éclat* to the enterprise. Mr. J. Shewell, jun., in Williamson's 'Advertiser,' of August 10, 1775, thus apostrophises the nascent town:

A.D. 1771.

Building.

Bisbrown.

Harrington.

Poem.

From small beginnings if great cities rise,
And raise their lofty turrets to the skies,
Sure Harrington beneath th' auspicious care
Of Sefton, shall her spacious fabric rear;
And as she rises in the lists of fame,
Th' illustrious founder to the world proclaim.
Let Liverpool, still like a faithful friend,
Her infant sister from each wrong defend.
Here be the sacred olive's boughs displayed,
To both the kindred towns a peaceful shade;
So shall their riches from their union grow,
As streams with rivers joined, more copious flow.

CHAP. XVII.

The prophecy has been substantially fulfilled beyond the expectations of the seer, but not precisely in the way he anticipated. The name of Harrington has disappeared, as applied to the district, and is only perpetuated in the name of one of the streets.

Laying out land.

In laying out the land a grave error was committed, the results of which have been very serious, and will operate injuriously for ages to come. The leading lines of street were laid out judiciously enough at right angles, and of ample width; but the interior of the blocks so divided was left to be arranged as chance or cupidity might direct. Hence arose subdivisions of mean, narrow streets, filled with close, gloomy courts, into which as many dwellings as possible were packed, irrespective of light and air. The result has been the impression of an inferior character on this quarter of the town, which it has never been able to recover.

Parliament Street.

Parliament Street, in its lower portion, is an ancient road, and took its name at the time of Lord Sefton obtaining the Act for laying out the land in the neighbourhood. In 1790 there were in the street only four houses, with twenty-one inhabitants. Down to 1807 the road terminated at the Quarry, behind St. James's Walk, where stood an ancient windmill, the counterpart to two others which stood at the north end of the walk. In that year the road was continued under the name of Upper Parliament Street, forming the boundary between Liverpool and Toxteth Park, as far as the junction with West Derby.

St. James's Church.

The first public building erected in the new settlement was St. James's Church. The land was given by Lord Sefton, and the church was built by twenty-seven shareholders at a cost of 3,000*l*. It was commenced in 1774, and opened for divine service on June 4, 1775. It is a plain brick building, altogether out of the pale of criticism. Its square tower, and the small semicircular-

headed windows by which it is lighted, give something of a quaint Norman character to the structure.

Progress.

Toxteth Park, as a suburb, was somewhat slow in its development. Wide open streets were laid out, but very little building erected down to the early part of the present century. The extension of the docks southwards, by the enlargement of the Queen's Dock in 1812, and by the construction of Brunswick Dock in 1830, contributed largely towards bringing out the latent capabilities of the locality. The foreign timber trade settled here early in the century, and was long the staple of the district, until its partial removal to the north end in 1859. In the meantime various manufactures had found a local habitation in the township, and attracted population around them; but more than all, the outward pressure from the heart of the borough, with its enormous rapidity of increase overflowing in every direction, gave an impulse to building which during the last half-century has converted the ancient rural glades of the royal 'park' into a large, dense, and important town.

Docks.

Manufactures.

Survey.

In prosecuting our survey we will start from St. James's Church, the most important point of junction between the old and new towns.

Mill Street.

Mill Street, the leading business avenue of the district, takes its name from the mill still standing near the south end of the street. This is not of very ancient erection, dating from about the end of the last century. It was at first called the New Mill to distinguish it from the older mills in the Park Road. The name of Mill Street is first met with in the Directory of 1803. Down to 1823, the buildings did not extend much beyond Hill Street southward. The construction of the Brunswick Dock in 1830, and the development of the timber trade, gave a great impulse to building in this direction. In 1835 the buildings had advanced beyond Northumberland Street, with gaps here and there. Before 1849 the street was continued southward to its present extent in Wellington

CHAP. XVII.

Road. Similar progress was being made in the streets east and west of this line; but Mill Street, maintaining its character as the leading line of communication, in a marvellously short space of time became lined with long ranges of thriving shops. Mill Street is not rich in public buildings. A humble-looking edifice, called Toxteth Hall, used for public meetings and concerts, is the only attempt in this direction. A building formerly existed at the corner of Warwick Street, the history of which is rather curious. About the year 1829 the Wesleyan Methodists of Plymouth, and other parts of Devonshire, made an attempt to evangelise that neighbourhood by preaching in large tents, carried about from one locality to another. The success of the plan led to its extension to other towns, and it eventually reached Liverpool, where it created a certain amount of excitement. After a while, owing probably to some irregularities, the authorities of the body began rather to restrain the zeal and activity of their followers in this particular direction. This led to a secession, the members of which very soon struck their tents, and endeavoured to establish tabernacles of a more permanent description. A young preacher of considerable intelligence, named George Smith, connected with this movement, settled in Liverpool, and for his ministrations a place of worship, called Hanover Chapel, was built at the corner of Mill Street and Warwick Street in 1830. Mr. Smith afterwards removed to Poplar, at the east of London, where he has been since widely known as an eminent Congregationalist minister. Hanover Chapel became connected with the Independent body, with which it continued associated until it was accidentally burnt down June 1, 1855. The chapel was not re-erected, the congregation removing to a new building in Berkeley Street. The only relics of the old building are a few forlorn tomb-stones in a joiner's yard, forming part of the old site.

Toxteth Hall.

Chapel.

Fire.

Bedford Street.

Beaufort Street (formerly Bedford Street) runs parallel

with Mill Street, and has progressed *pari passu*. The Welsh Calvinistic Chapel, on the east side, was erected in 1805, enlarged in 1840, and is now discontinued. Another Welsh Chapel (Independent) was built on the west side in 1837, and is also discontinued. The congregations have removed to more favourable localities. Chapels.

Grafton Street and Caryl Street (formerly Harrington Street) are also parallel. They are principally devoted to the timber trade, with large storing yards. Under an Improvement Act, Grafton Street has been continued northward from Parliament Street to strike St. James Street near the Railway Station. When this is completed, the street from the junction with St. James Street to Park Hill Road will have a length of about a mile and three quarters. Grafton Street, &c.

Sefton Street, running along the margin of the docks, occupies the site of the quondam 'south shore.' On this line, extending from the bottom of Warwick Street, southwardly, across Northumberland Street, and including part of the Brunswick Railway Station, formerly stood the tide-mill and reservoirs commonly called 'Jackson's Dam.' I have already alluded to a small stream which ran from the fields east of Park Road and emptied itself into the river not far distant from the site in question. This stream had a watermill and dam near its *embouchure*. About 1773, the source of this stream becoming exhausted, the mill was discontinued, and a lease was taken from Lord Sefton by Mr. Charles Roe for a term of eighty years of a piece of land and foreshore on which he erected a mill and constructed the reservoirs. The latter consisted of two portions; the larger containing about 8½ acres and the smaller about 1½ acres of water space. The flood tide filled the reservoirs twice in every twenty-four hours, and the outflow turned the machinery of the mill. The small reservoir being kept empty until the water outside rose above the level, enabled the machinery to continue working until Sefton Street. Tide-mill dams.

CHAP. XVII.

the tide again fell. The mill continued in use until the year 1827, when the property was taken under an Act of Parliament for extending the docks. The case was tried before a jury on June 15, and excited considerable interest, Mr. Henry Brougham (afterwards Lord Brougham), then in the zenith of his fame as an advocate, having been brought down on behalf of the claimant. A verdict was given for 49,400*l.* The Brunswick Railway Station, which occupies part of the site of the old tide-mill dam, was constructed in 1864 for the accommodation of the Manchester, Sheffield, and Lincolnshire and other associated lines. Previous to this time the railway stopped at Garston, passengers having to be conveyed from town in omnibuses. A further extension is now in progress, to communicate by a tunnel with a passenger station in Ranelagh Street. An extensive enlargement of the Brunswick Station has been made to the east and south of the present erections.

Inquiry

Railway Station.

Mersey Iron Works.

On the west and east sides of Grafton Street, adjoining the railway, stand the extensive works of the Mersey Steel and Iron Company. This was originally established as a private forge for the manufacture of iron from scrap. After a long career of success, it was ultimately formed into a joint-stock company under its present title. The iron manufactured is of admirable quality. By means of the Nasmyth steam-hammer, some of the heaviest shafts and cranks in existence have been forged at this establishment.

As an evidence of the remuneration which skill of a special order will command, it is worthy of mention that, in some evidence given by Colonel Clay, the then manager of this concern, before a Committee of the House of Commons, it was stated that two of the workmen employed in connexion with the great forge hammer were paid at the rate of 20*l.* per week each.

When Mr. Cuthbert Bisbrown laid out the new town of Harrington about 1775, it was proposed to establish

a direct ferry communication with the opposite shore of Cheshire. A ferry station was made on the shore and a lofty house built for a tavern. This stood near the line of the present Sefton Street, nearly opposite the Harrington Dock, and being a conspicuous and isolated object, was long known by the name of the 'Tall House.' The scheme of the ferry was before its time, and it soon had to be abandoned. The building was used at one time as a ladies' school, subsequently as a tavern, and was finally taken down about 1844. The ferry station has been revived within the last few years, and a landing-stage has been constructed not far from the site of the Tall House, where the steam-boats for New Ferry call on their passage up and down.

South Ferry.

'Tall House.'

The streets running east and west between Park Road and Sefton Street are wide and open, but have nothing remarkable in their character. The gradient is somewhat steep, rising about 90 feet in 700 yards, or 1 in 23. In a sanitary point of view, these circumstances are favourable, the west winds from the river having a clear course to sweep away the miasma generated in the close confined courts and alleys with which the interiors of the blocks are filled.

Streets.

A few public buildings in this quarter may here be noticed. The Church of Holy Trinity, south side of Parliament Street, was built in 1858 with schools behind in Ashwell Street. The front is plain brick, hemmed in between the houses. Hard by, in Beaufort Street, is an institution called the Domestic Mission, having schools, and a room for meetings and lectures. A Welsh Baptist Chapel was erected on the north side of Stanhope Street in 1834, taken down in 1870 for the purposes of the Railway Tunnel.

Holy Trinity Church.

Chapel.

The Church of St. Matthew, Hill Street, was built in 1848–9, the first stone having been laid by the Earl of Sefton, March 21, 1848, and the church consecrated on October 7, 1849. It is a red stone Gothic building,

St. Matthew's.

CHAP. XVII.

standing north and south, having nave and aisles, and an unfinished tower at the south-west angle. The chancel window facing the street has five lights with geometrical tracery head. On the whole, the architectural effect is somewhat heavy.

Southern Hospital.

The New Southern Hospital, the first stone of which was laid by the fourteenth Earl of Derby, October 23, 1867, occupies a large area in Hill Street and Caryl Street. The building is of brick with white stone dressings, without much architectural pretension. The entrance front to Caryl Street has a two-storey central building, the wings three storeys with heavy dormers. The general effect is harsh and unpleasing. A cheerful look and pleasing aspect are very desirable in a hospital, the associations in other respects being sufficiently painful. This is very generally recognised at the present day. The new St. Thomas's Hospital on the bank of the Thames forms one of the finest architectural groups in the metropolis, and many of the '*Maisons Dieu*' in France are the handsomest buildings in their respective towns.

St. Thomas's Church.

The Church of St. Thomas in the Fields, corner of Warwick and Grafton Streets, was erected in the year 1840. It stands north and south, and is built with red sandstone with a single span roof with a tower, square below and octagonal above. The style of architecture is plain and poor.

The original scheme for laying out the town of Harrington terminated southwards with Northumberland Street. All south of this is of very modern growth.

Park Street.

Park Street was opened out in 1826. A tract of land adjoining, and extending from Mill Street to Park Road was laid out soon after this by a Welsh physician, John Hughes, M.D., who made extensive purchases from the

Dr. Hughes.

Earl of Sefton. The present plot comprised Essex, Prophet, Hughes, and Dooley Streets, which were speedily crowded with a dense mass of houses of a very low class.

The same gentleman also constructed a series of low buildings surrounding a quadrangle, which he designed for a public market, but the scheme was stopped by the Corporation, who possess by their charter the exclusive right of markets within the borough and its vicinity. Wellington Road was opened about the close of the French war, soon after the battle of Waterloo, when the country was ringing with the fame of the great captain.

Wellington Road.

The land in Northumberland and Park Streets was gradually covered with buildings down to about 1850. Wellington Road was partially settled and built on in 1830. Harlow Street (formerly Egerton Street) was not opened through until 1866. The interval between Park Street and Wellington Road has been gradually built on from 1850 to 1870. A few open spaces are still left, especially round the windmill, one of the last structures of the kind still remaining in the neighbourhood.

Progress.

At the bottom of Wellington Road, turning west from Grafton Street, a row of ten old cottages may be seen, standing on a steep bank, apparently out of keeping with everything about them. These cottages have a history. They are the last remains of the once flourishing settlement of the Herculaneum Pottery, the extensive works of which stood immediately below, on a promontory projecting into the river. The site was originally taken by Mr. Charles Roe on a lease for eighty years from May 1772. A small copper work was the first structure erected, which was carried on by Messrs. Roe & Co. In 1794 the property was purchased by Messrs. Abbey and Graham, and converted into a pottery. In 1796, their interest was transferred to a joint stock company, formed by Messrs. Worthington, Humble, Holland, and others, under the style and title of the 'Herculaneum Pottery Company.' At this time the pottery business which had risen so rapidly to importance in Liverpool, and had as rapidly declined, was almost extinct in its original seat

Herculaneum Pottery.

CHAP. XVII.

Herculaneum Pottery.

in the town, but the facilities of water carriage for the materials, and the vicinity of a good market for their wares, seemed to promise success to the new company. Extensive buildings were erected for the manufactory, and a hamlet consisting of several rows of cottages, of which these before us are the last remains, was built on a very picturesque eminence overlooking the water, far distant from any other habitations. The operatives were brought from Staffordshire, and came in a body, accompanied by their wives and families, by water down the river from Runcorn. They landed in the new colony on November 11, 1796, and were met by a large concourse of people, and escorted into the works with a band of music. The potters long continued a separate and isolated people, preserving their own manners and customs, and retaining their Mercian dialect. Being principally of the Wesleyan Methodist persuasion, a small chapel was erected for their use by the proprietors, where Dr. Adam Clarke, Jabez Bunting, Robert Newton, and many other eminent men of the denomination have occasionally officiated. Blue printed ware was the first manufacture, to which, in 1800, China ware was added. The stores and show rooms were first established at the Duke's Dock, and subsequently removed to the bottom of Duke Street. The concern was carried on until 1833, when the company was dissolved, and the works sold to Messrs. Lace, Holme, and Tomkinson for the sum of 25,000*l*. The pottery was afterwards let to Messrs. Case and Mort, and subsequently to Messrs. Mort and Simpson, until 1841, when the premises were dismantled for the purpose of carrying out the proposed Herculaneum docks.

The extensive tract of land between Beresford Road and Park Hill Road now used as brickfields, was until recently a farm connected with the old Pine Apple public house in Park Road.

St. Cleopas's Church.

The Church of St. Cleopas, standing alone on a portion of this land, was erected in 1867. It is built with stone

parpoints in three aisles without a clerestory. The aisle windows have three lights with flowing tracery heads There is a portal at the west end with a five-light window over. At the north-east angle rises a tower in two stages crowned with a spire. A little west of the church, schools have been recently erected in brick with stone dressings, of good design.

Park Hill. Park Hill Road was opened in 1824, and South Hill Road soon afterwards. They were at first dotted with pleasant villas, some of which yet remain, but the speculative builder has invaded the precinct, and 'where once the garden smiled' long rows of neat cottages present their two-storey brick fronts and bow windows to the view of the passenger. The nomenclature of the streets is of a miscellaneous character. Menzies Street takes its name from a former owner of the land. Bowring Street is called after the late chairman of the Health Committee. Beloe Street commemorates the chairman of the Water Committee. Homer and Nestor have two small streets dedicated to their memory. The Congregational Chapel in South Hill Road was built in 1833. It has nothing distinctive in its architecture, and has recently been deserted for a new church erected at the corner of Aigburth Road and Ullet Lane.

Chapel.

The land between South Hill Road and Dingle Lane has not yet been invaded by the speculative builder. It is chiefly occupied by villas and gardens, the most conspicuous of which open to a verdant avenue called South Hill Grove, formed in 1833. The western part of the tract we are now surveying is occupied by the Park Hill House Estate.

Park Hill House.

The house is a large mansion situated on an eminence commanding a fine marine view, the grounds and fields extending to the foreshore of the river. By whom the house was built, and the date of its erection, I am unable to ascertain. It was occupied from about 1812 to 1827 by Mr. John Garnett, and subsequently purchased and

CHAP. XVII.

inhabited by Mr. John Rowden Freme, to whose heirs it still belongs. Situated close to the Herculaneum Graving Docks it forms the boundary between rurality and commerce, to the insatiable encroachments of the latter of which it is probable the former must ere long succumb.

We have now reached the southern boundary of the municipality, and strictly speaking we ought not to step over it, but there are a few localities lying a little beyond our limit which it would be almost unpardonable to pass by

Dingle.

without notice. Such a locality is 'the Dingle,' situated immediately to the south of the borough boundary, which, though limited in extent, is one of the most lovely bits of scenery in the neighbourhood of Liverpool. In the olden time a tiny stream rising somewhere about the high land, not far from the High Park Coffee House, ran its little course down the line of Park Road, past the old chapel, and debouched into the river by a deep gully behind a rocky promontory. The sources of this stream have long dried up, and the little valley no longer echoes to the tinkle of the waters. About 1808 the estate, of which this forms a part, was purchased by the Rev. John

Yates.

Yates, then the minister of the Unitarian Church, Paradise Street. A house already existed on the land, on the site of Dingle Head, now the residence of Mr. Charles Turner, M.P. for South West Lancashire. This house was occupied in 1768 by Dr. Kennion or Kenyon, a connection of Lord Kenyon's, and a great collector of antiquities. Mr. Yates was capable of appreciating the beauties of his purchase, and in addition to building several houses for members of his family, he improved the natural capabilities by judicious planting, laying out walks, and opening out the best points of view. About 1821 he sold the western part of the property to Mr.

Cropper.

James Cropper, who also built several villas overlooking the river. The proprietors of this little 'Vallombrosa' have for many years kindly and liberally thrown open the grounds to the public on two evenings in the week.

William Roscoe resided for some time in the immediate neighbourhood, and has left on record a charming little poem on the absence of water in the Dingle Vale, which I will venture to transcribe:—

Roscoe's Poem.

Stranger, who with careless feet,
Wanderest near this green retreat,
Where, through gently bending slopes,
Soft the distant prospect opes;

Where the fern in fringèd pride
Decks the lonely valley's side;
Where the linnet chirps his song,
Flitting as thou treadst along;

Know, where now thy footsteps pass
O'er the bending tufts of grass,
Bright gleaming through th' encircling wood,
Once a Naiad rolled her flood.

If her urn, unknown to fame,
Poured no far-extended stream,
Yet along its grassy side,
Clear and constant flowed the tide.

Grateful for the tribute paid,
Lordly Mersey loved the maid:
Yonder rocks still mark the place,
Where she met his stern embrace.

Stranger, curious, wouldst thou learn,
Why she mourns her wasted Urn?
Soon a short and simple verse,
Shall her hapless fate rehearse.

Ere yon neighbouring spires arose,
That the upland prospect close;
Or ere along the startled shore,
Echoed loud the cannon's roar;

Once the maid, in summer's heat,
Careless left her cool retreat,
And by sultry suns oppress,
Laid her weary limbs to rest;

Forgetful of her daily toil,
To trace each tract of humid soil,
From dews and bounteous showers to bring
The limpid treasures of her spring.

CHAP. XVII.

Roscoe's poem.

Enfeebled by the scorching ray,
She slept the sultry hours away;
And when she ope'd her languid eye,
She found her silver urn was dry!

Heedless stranger, who so long
Hast listened to an idle song,
Whilst trifles thus thy notice share,
Hast thou no urn that asks thy care?

Railway, A.D. 1863.

In 1863 the Garston Railway was carried across the valley. As it enters by a tunnel, crosses by an ornamental arch, and disappears in a deep cutting, the aspect of the landscape is very little injured by its interference.

Although so near the smoky town, the Dingle up to the present time has preserved its amenity intact. There are symptoms, however, of deterioration. By some unhappy fate a portion of the land has fallen into the hands of the land speculators, and on the utilitarian principle will shortly be devoted to 'the greatest happiness of the greatest number.' The facilities also presented by the form of the valley for the construction of docks must at some time, nearer or more remote, lead to its absorption for industrial purposes.

Returning to St. James's Church, I will now ask the courteous reader to accompany me in a walk along the

Park Road.

Old Park Road. This road, with Smithdown Lane, Lodge Lane, and the eastern part of Ullet Lane, down to 1775 were the only roads in the township. The house and outbuildings at the corner of Stanhope Street—now greatly metamorphosed—were built in 1775, about the time when Harrington was planned out. They were long the residence of Lord Sefton's land-agent. In 1803 three houses had been built on the west side, near the corner of Mill Street. With this exception, and one or two shortly to be mentioned, no houses existed in the entire length of the road.

The lands eastward of St. James's Place began to be occupied by buildings during the first decade of the pre-

sent century. Previous to this, about 1794, a large brewery had been erected in Blair Street by Messrs. Brooke & Owen, which was carried on for many years. About 1826 the brewery was dismantled, and the site soon afterwards sold to Mr. Joseph Boumphrey, who covered it with courts and cottages. Chester Street was formed about 1815; Windsor Street was partially formed in 1823, but was not named until 1829.

Brewery.

Chester Street, &c.

About 1826 the land between Upper Stanhope Street, Upper Hill Street, Chester and Windsor Streets was purchased from Lord Sefton by several gentlemen of the Wesleyan Methodist persuasion, who in laying out the streets commemorated their founder, and some of their leading ministers, in Wesley, Fletcher, Clarke, and Newton Streets. In 1827 the Wesleyan Chapel, in Upper Stanhope Street, was built on a portion of the ground so purchased. It is a neat stone-fronted building, in the best type of the conventicle style; and being situated in an open area, surrounded by streets and the ground planted with trees, has an aspect of space and repose not often possessed by such structures.

Wesleyan Chapel.

The Roman Catholic Church of St. Patrick, Park Place, was built 1821–3, and opened in the latter year. It is a large, plain brick building, with transepts, in the re-entering angles of which two absurd Greek Doric porticoes are placed. In front of the building stands a well-executed effigy of St. Patrick, in his episcopal robes, in the attitude of benediction. This statue originally adorned the front of the offices of the St. Patrick Insurance Company, in Dublin, and on the winding up of the company it was presented to the church by Mr. James Brancker.

St. Patrick's Roman Catholic Church.

A little beyond Warwick Street, on the east side of the road, formerly stood a lofty windmill, with its appurtenances. This was originally the site of a water-mill, having a large dam behind. The stream ran across the road, and descended to the river by the course previously

Mill.

CHAP. XVII.

Mills.

described. Two windmills stood on the opposite side of the road, which are shown on Yates and Perry's map of 1768. When the land west of the road became laid out for building, about the end of last century, the water-power was no longer practicable, and the windmill was erected. The dam, however, remained as a sheet of water to the present time. The windmill was burnt down in 1866. A large tract of land was held by lease along with the mill, which restricted building operations between Warwick Street on the north, and Northhill Street on the south. The lease having expired, building operations have already commenced, and in no very long period of time the land will be absorbed into the town.

Welsh Chapel.

A little to the southward, fronting Park Road, stands a Welsh Congregational Church, erected 1866–7. This large and commodious building, with others of similar character, testify to the progress and prosperity of the natives of the principality settled in Liverpool. Preaching in a strange tongue can only be kept alive by constant immigration. The descendants of the original settlers soon lose the language of their fathers and merge into the general population. The number and increase of the Welsh churches, therefore, indicates unmistakably the continual influx of the Cymry into the Eldorado of Liverpool, and their success.

The building now before us is a large and imposing structure, the walls of white stone parpoints, with bands of red introduced. The roof is in a single span, with transepts on each side. The front is a pleasing design, having a gabled centre, with deep square-set buttresses at each side, and portals with stair-turrets on the flanks. The arrangement of the windows is good—six single lancets below, above which are two double lights, with plate tracery, and a rose-window in the gable. There is a wooden *flèche* in the centre of the roof.

The land southward of this, fronting Park Road, as far as Northhill Street, was a part of the tract purchased by

Dr. Hughes in 1826, and was long occupied by stone-quarries. It has been gradually covered with buildings, between 1848 and 1865.

St. John Baptist.

On the west side of Park Road, immediately opposite, stands the Church of St. John the Baptist, erected in 1830–32, consecrated September 30, 1832. It was built by subscription, on land granted by the Earl of Sefton. The total cost was 6,000*l.*, of which 3,000*l.* was defrayed by a Parliamentary grant. It is a large building, with nave, aisles, transepts, tower, and spire, in red sandstone. The design, though not absolutely contemptible, is heavy and gloomy, a mere *caput mortuum*, without a spark of life.

Reservoir.

Park Road here rises rapidly, and passes over the skirt of a rather lofty knoll, which reaches its culminating point—188 feet above the Old Dock Sill—at the site of the water-reservoir in High Park Street. Not far from the summit, by the road-side, stands an old house, a low, rambling structure, which tradition has handed down as one of the lodges or residences of the park-keepers in the olden time. It was long known as the 'Peacock' tavern, but has for some time been occupied as a private dwelling, and will doubtless before long disappear.

Peacock Tavern.

Some of the streets hereabouts running eastward from Park Road, North Street (now Northhill Street), High Park Street, and South Street, are comparatively of old formation, having been laid out in 1812. Several good houses and villas were erected, but for some unexplained reason the neighbourhood was not popular, and it is only recently that it is gradually becoming filled up.

Public Offices.

The Toxteth Park Public Offices, High Park Street, were erected in 1866, and present a neat stone front, in the Italian Renaissance style. The water-reservoir and tower were constructed in 1855.

St. Silas's Church.

St. Silas's Church, High Park Street, was erected in 1865 (consecrated in September). It is built with white stone parpoints. The plan is somewhat peculiar. The nave has a single span roof, with transepts in double

CHAP. XVII.

aisles, and a short chancel. The west end is apsidal, in three planes, with a tower and spire at the north-west angle. The window tracery is of the decorated period, both geometrical and flowing in pattern. The general effect is good, but the detail is scarcely up to the mark of purity. The tower and spire want spring and lightness. There are large school buildings adjoining, erected in brick, in a style every way suitable and satisfactory.

Pine Apple Tavern.

Proceeding along Park Road, and descending the slope, we notice on the west side the old Pine Apple Tavern. This was originally a farm-house with an extensive tract of land attached, which is still to a great extent vacant, converted into brick-fields. On the opposite side a hamlet was formed, and several streets (Peel Street, Miles Street, &c.) laid out about 1830; but it is only since the completion of Prince's Park that the neighbourhood has been fully developed. The district is now covered with a labyrinth of small streets and cottage houses.

Pursuing our route to the extremity of Park Road, we notice at the foot of the hill a plain stone structure at the corner, with a small grave-yard attached, very neatly planted and in trim order. This is usually designated the 'ancient' chapel of Toxteth Park, and has a story to tell.

Ancient Chapel.

Puritanism.

In the latter part of the reign of Elizabeth, Puritanism began to spread in South Lancashire, probably as a reaction against the influence of Popery, which was very strong in the district. It did not exhibit itself as tending to separate from the Church, but rather as a protest against ritualistic forms and ceremonies. In the reign of James I. the Puritan influence grew stronger, and displayed itself in a resistance to the King's 'Book of Sports.' Toxteth Park, then very thinly inhabited, was almost entirely Puritan; the family of Aspinwall, who possessed landed property in the district, being strong supporters of the cause. In the early part of King James's reign, a

schoolmaster was wanted for a school recently established in Toxteth Park; and a youth from Lowton, near Winwick, named Richard Mather, only fifteen years of age, who had been educated at Winwick Grammar School, was recommended and appointed to the office. His education had been by no means of a Puritan character; but when brought under the influence of the learned and pious Mr. Aspinwall, under whose roof it would seem he resided, he embraced the religious views of his patron, and was sent to Brasenose College, Oxford. A meeting-house appears to have been erected about this time on the site of the present chapel—possibly identical with the school-house. The young probationer having displayed considerable talent as a preacher, he was urged, without completing his college course, to return to Toxteth and become the minister of the congregation. Puritanism at this period was not exactly Nonconformity, and the young divine applied to Morton, Bishop of Chester, (1618–20) for ordination. As the strict church principles of the bishop were known, there was some apprehension of a difficulty; but the prelate readily assented to the application, and expressed a desire to speak with Mather in private after the ordination. Instead of a lecture on the irregularities of Puritanism, as he had expected, the bishop expressed an earnest entreaty to be remembered in his prayers; for, said he, 'the prayer of a good man availeth much.'

Richard Mather.

After some years of active clerical life, his ministrations were disturbed by the authority of Neile, Archbishop of York, who sent down a commission into Lancashire to inquire into the conduct of the Puritanical clergy, who refused to wear the surplice, or to make the sign of the cross in baptism, and who administered the sacrament to the communicants in a sitting posture. By this commission Mather was silenced, and threatened with fine and imprisonment if he again ventured to officiate without giving security for his conformity.

Persecution.

CHAP. XVII.

Tradition has handed down the memory of nocturnal assemblages in the valley of the Dingle hard by, where the Puritans met by stealth to listen to the exhortations of their beloved pastor; but when Archbishop Laud came into the ascendant, a few years subsequently, his vigilant emissaries let nothing escape them, and even the seclusion of Toxteth Park was no security. Harassed and persecuted, Mather turned his longing eyes towards America, where the 'May Flower' had already landed her precious cargo, the pioneers of a new world of thought and progress. After consultation with his friends, he travelled in disguise to Bristol, where, in the spring of 1635, he set sail for Boston. Here he was received with open arms, and settled at Dorchester, Massachusetts, where he long exercised his ministry with a large amount of influence among the New England churches. His son, Increase Mather, and his grandson, Dr. Cotton Mather, both became celebrated in their day as authors and divines.

Laud.

Mather's escape.

Ancient Chapel.

It must be observed that Toxteth Chapel was never consecrated; but, in the first instance, no objection appears to have been raised by the bishop to allowing an ordained clergyman to officiate. After the removal of Richard Mather, a regularly ordained Episcopal clergyman was appointed. In the return of the sequestrators, under the Long Parliament in 1643, it is reported that 'Mr. Huggin, an episcopal minister, received the tithes of Toxteth, valued at 45*l.* a year; that he also obtained 10*l.* from the rector of Walton; and that Toxteth Park ought to be made a parish.' After the Restoration, notwithstanding the Act of Uniformity, the chapel continued to be occupied by two Nonconformist ministers—Messrs. Crompton and Briscoe—without molestation, during the whole time of the persecutions under Charles II. and James II. The reason of this, no doubt, was the connivance of Lord Molyneux, a Roman Catholic, from whom the lease of the chapel was held. In Bishop Gastrell's 'Notitia Cestrensis,' there is the following note,

Crompton.

under the year 1718: 'Park Chapel, in Tocksteath Park, near Childwall, supposed to be extra-parochial . . . possessed by Dissenters, held by a lease from Lord Molyneux, and given in as a house belonging to his lordship by his agents when they registered his estates. There is a tradition that an Irish bishop has preached several Sundays in this chapel.' Ancient Chapel.

About the year 1738, William Harding, a farmer from Cheshire, supposed to be endowed with the gift of preaching, was appointed minister, and assumed a very dignified and clerical bearing; but it was soon found that his gifts and graces were not acceptable, and he had to unite with his ministerial labours the business of a dairy farmer, his daughters attending the Liverpool market with the milk and butter. He continued, however, attached to the chapel thirty-seven years. Previous to his decease the chapel was rebuilt in 1774. Harding.

Soon after this time, some difference arose as to the appointment of a minister. Mr. Hugh Anderson had the votes of a majority, but a considerable minority were dissatisfied with the doctrines he maintained. To their remonstrances he replied that, 'if the people would only agree about their doctrine, and let him know what it was, he would gladly preach it.' Discontented with these very broad church principles, a number of the congregation withdrew, and erected a chapel at Newington, Renshaw Street, which has already been described in a former chapter. The ancient chapel has since been connected with the Unitarian body. Anderson. Secession.

Turning the corner of the chapel, a few steps bring us to the south-west entrance of Prince's Park. All honour to the man whose benevolence devised and whose perseverance carried out the scheme. His memory deserves to be held in grateful remembrance. Down to the year 1843, with the exception of the very limited area of the Mount Gardens, there was not an open space about Liverpool free to the public for fresh Prince's Park.

CHAP. XVII.

R. V. Yates. Prince's Park.

air and recreation. In that year Richard Vaughan Yates, son of the Rev. John Yates, to whose purchase of the Dingle estate I have previously adverted; a man who had distinguished himself by benevolence and liberality in the cause of education, took upon himself the task of initiating a better order of things. In that year he purchased from the Earl of Sefton a tract of land containing about ninety acres, which he laid out with considerable taste, with a large sheet of water, plantations, shrubberies, walks, and drives. The central portion was thrown open to the public; the margin all round was devoted to buildings of a superior class. The first houses erected were a row on the east side, carried out by a company formed on the principle of a tontine, in which the survivor of the nominated lives ultimately takes the property. The original idea of Mr. Yates appears to have been that the sale of the surplus lands would ultimately repay to a large extent his outlay on the undertaking. This, however, did not immediately take place. The times were not propitious. The sales were at first very limited and the expenses great, about 70,000*l.*, it is said, having been laid out on the property. During Mr. Yates's lifetime, the returns were very inadequate, but more recently the neighbourhood has become fashionable and the land much sought after. Altogether the Prince's Park forms a very agreeable suburb. Houses of a high class nestle amongst the plantations. Bright green undulating lawns sparkle in the sun, and within the same distance from a crowded town it would be difficult to find a pleasanter locality. Near the entrance lodge at the north-eastern corner, a polished red granite obelisk has been erected, standing on a pedestal of five steps with two drinking fountains. On the obelisk is the following inscription:—

Yates's monument.

To the Memory of
RICHARD VAUGHAN YATES,
The enlightened and philanthropic
Founder of Prince's Park.
Erected by Public Subscription,
1858.

St. Paul's Church.

There are a few public buildings round the park. The most prominent of these is St. Paul's Church, of which Dr. Hugh McNeile, formerly of St. Jude's, subsequently Dean of Ripon, was long the incumbent. It was erected in 1848, from the designs of Mr. A. H. Holme. The building is large, with a nave and transepts in one span each, with a short chancel and west end tower and spire. The material is red sandstone, the style Perpendicular Gothic, so far as any style can be recognised. The masonry is well executed. The architect was a pupil of Thomas Rickman, and the detail displays the faults of that school in its thinness, vagueness, and want of decision.

Presbyterian Church.

A little distance from St. Paul's, on the west side of Belvidere Road, stands Trinity Church, belonging to the Presbyterian Church in England, erected 1861. It is a neat white stone building. The front to the road has a rose window with geometrical tracery in the gable, and four single light lancet windows below. A slender tower surmounted by a slated spire stands at the north-east angle.

Wesleyan Church.

St. John's Wesleyan Church, situated at the north-western entrance to the park, erected 1862, is a building of a much more ambitious character. It is a large building in white stone in the Gothic style. The front is flanked with two octagonal towers and spires. The windows have geometrical tracery heads. The plan is that of a nave and transepts with single span roofs. The general effect is good. The adjoining schools are extensive, and group well with the church. The whole arrangements are very complete.

CHAP. XVII.

Before returning northward to complete our survey of the municipal portion of Toxteth Park, we will take the liberty of extending our observations into the rural district southward, to notice a few points of interest.

St. Michael's Hamlet.

St. Michael's Hamlet is situated not far from what is called Dickenson's Dingle, a small stream which has scooped out a dell, falling into the river a few hundred yards beyond Yates's Dingle. A church was built here in 1815, designed by Thomas Rickman, a great part of the detail of which is in cast-iron; Mr. Cragg, an eminent iron-founder, having been concerned in the structure, and possessing property in the neighbourhood. A cluster of houses grew up around, which have preserved their amenity to the present time.

Church.

Sefton Park.

Sefton Park is too closely connected with the history of local affairs to be omitted in any general account of Liverpool. In the chapter on Kirkdale I have alluded to the circumstances under which the parks were projected in the year 1865. In that year an estate of 387 acres was purchased from the Earl of Sefton, extending from Ullet Lane to Aigburth Vale from north to south, and from Smithdown Lane to Aigburth Road from east to west.

Cost of site.

The cost of this was 250,000*l.* Additional purchases increased the quantity to about 400 acres, not far from the size of Hyde Park, London. The land in its natural formation was admirably adapted for its purpose, being undulating in surface, and intersected by a small stream, called the river Jordan, which ran into the Mersey at the farm of Jericho. These names, whether truly or not, are popularly ascribed to the Puritan inhabitants of the sixteenth century. These natural beauties, however, did not suffice for the municipal authorities.

Some demon whispered, Visto, have a taste!

Laying out.

Designs were procured from various quarters for the laying out of the park, and one was selected which it was

alleged would cost the sum of 80,000*l.* to carry out. It is not my intention or desire to attach blame to any particular quarter, but it was discovered in the course of a short time that the 80,000*l.* was likely to expand to 200,000*l.*, a large portion of which was expended in effacing the natural features of the ground, and creating a minor Bois de Boulogne with its rock-work cascades, temples, &c. As the amount authorised to be borrowed fell far short of the requirements, dire was the confusion and bitter the recrimination of the parties concerned. In the end the whole affair was broken up, the contracts cancelled, and the council proceeded, saddened but grown wiser by experience, to complete the works on a much more contracted and inexpensive scale. A considerable portion of the margin of the land is appropriated for building sites, and a Ladies' Mile or Rotten Row is provided for equestrians. Whatever may have been the mistakes in carrying out the intention, there can be no doubt that ultimately Sefton Park will be a great boon to the inhabitants, providing fresh air, green sward, trees and flowers for those 'in populous city pent,' and giving a taste and enjoyment of the beauties of nature to the toiling multitudes.

Cost.

Works.

It would be unpardonable to quit this neighbourhood without some notice of a young man whose brilliant genius has shed lustre on his place of birth, and whose untimely removal was a heavy loss to the cause of scientific inquiry.

Jeremiah Horrox was the son of a small farmer, who occupied a house called the Lower Lodge, near the *embouchure* of Otterspool Brook into the Mersey. The house was taken down a few years since on the construction of the Runcorn Railway, the site being occupied by the Otterspool Station. The year of his birth is usually given as 1619, but there is reason to believe that it really took place in 1617. The Puritan influences to which I have alluded were at that time very strong in

Jeremiah Horrox.

Birth.

CHAP. XVII.

Jeremiah Horrox.

the district; but the bent of Horrox's mind was in an entirely different direction. It is stated by his biographers, that he received his early education under a country schoolmaster. As the dates correspond so accurately, there is every reasonable probability that this 'country schoolmaster' was Richard Mather, already alluded to, who filled the office of pedagogue in Toxteth Park at this juncture. However this may be, the early bent of his mind was in the direction of mathematics and astronomy. Whilst still very young, he had studied the Latin treatises of Lansbergius, Tycho Brahe, and Kepler, and had made great proficiency in the higher mathematics. In 1632, being then fifteen years of age, he entered as a sizar, Emmanuel College, Cambridge. In the course of his astronomical studies, he entered into an

Crabtree.

intimate correspondence with Mr. Abraham Crabtree of Broughton, Manchester, and Mr. Samuel Foster, Professor of Geometry at Gresham College, London. After leaving college, he entered into orders, and was appointed to the curacy of Hoole, a village about eight miles from Preston.

Finding the astronomical tables of Lansberg and even of Kepler very incorrect, he set himself to work with what astronomical instruments he could procure, to make his own observations and to construct his own tables, and in this way was led to the discovery which is the main foundation of his fame. This is not the place to enter upon astronomical disquisitions, but a few words of ex-

Transit of Venus.

planation may to some readers not be unacceptable. The planet Venus, as well as Mercury, whose orbits lie within that of the earth, occasionally pass between the earth and the sun, and so appear to travel across the sun's disk. Venus being the largest planet, the appearance is in her case the most conspicuous. The phenomenon is of very rare occurrence, having only taken place three times in the last 200 years. The importance attached to it by astronomers arises from the facilities it gives for calcu-

lating the distance of the sun from the earth by means of what is called the sun's parallax; or, in other words, it affords the data for calculating a triangle, the base of which lies between two points on the earth's surface, and the apex a point on the sun's disk. The famous Kepler had previously called attention to the importance of the observation, but in his tables he had predicted that the transit of Venus would take place in the year 1631. Horrox detected the errors in Kepler's calculations, and fixed the date for November 24, 1639. He had communicated with his friend Crabtree, and anxiously requested his co-operation. His preparations for making the observations were very simple and effective. He admitted the sun's image into a darkened room upon a screen which he had prepared, on which he had described a circle 6 inches in diameter, divided into 120 equal parts, the circumference of which was also marked off into 360 degrees, so placed that the sun's rays should at the time fill the whole circle.

Jeremiah Horrox.

Astronomical observations.

The 24th November happened to be Sunday. Horrox was too conscientious to neglect his clerical duties; and what with the anxiety about the weather, and the difficulty of reconciling the celestial observations with his pulpit ministrations, the good man's perplexities may be imagined. The morning rose dull and beclouded, but in the afternoon the clouds dispersed, and at a quarter past three his most sanguine wishes were realised. The calculations which had cost him years of toil were found true to the letter; the dark shadow of the planet glided slowly across the light disk of the sun giving him the opportunity of noting the exact time of coincidence, and the fame of Jeremiah Horrox was established. We may conceive the impatience of the congregation in the village church, waiting for the parson, and his reluctance to tear himself away from the realisation of all his hopes.

He proceeded to prepare a memoir of the observations, which was not published until after his decease, and first

Memoir.

CHAP. XVII.

saw the light (strange to say) at Dantzig, and is entitled as follows: 'Venus in Sole visa, anno 1639, d. 24 Novemb. st. v. Liverpoliæ, a Jeremia Horroxio, nunc primum edita, notisque illustrata. Dantzig. Fol. 1662.'

Jeremiah Horrox.

Works.

Several other important astronomical works were prepared by him, and ultimately published by Dr. Wallis, Savilian Professor of Astronomy at Oxford in 1673, and again in 1678.

But his career was drawing to a close. After a year of hard work he paid a visit to his native place, and here, when about to set out on a journey to see his friend Crabtree, he was suddenly cut off on January 3, 1641, in the 24th year of his age. His body was interred within the precincts of the Ancient Chapel, Toxteth Park, but no memorial is there erected to his memory.

Death.

Monuments.

In the Church of St. Michael in the Hamlet a marble memorial tablet was erected in 1826 at the expense of Mr. Holden, astronomer, of Preston, with a suitable inscription. At the Parish Church of Hoole where he acted as curate, a small chapel with a memorial window has been erected, with a long and somewhat turgid inscription in his honour. Sir Isaac Newton held Horrox in great esteem as a genius of the very first rank, not only as the earliest observer of the transit of Venus, but as the discoverer of several important laws relative to the motion of the heavenly bodies.

After this short excursus beyond our limits we will return by Aigburth Road to Prince's Park; on the east of the road we pass Parkfield, formerly the residence of Charles Tayleure, Esq., an eminent Liverpool merchant. The estate was laid out for building in 1858, when Parkfield Road was cut through, and a number of commodious villas erected. The impulse given by Mr. Yates in Prince's Park has had a very favourable effect on the locality, a large proportion of the houses being large and respectable.

Parkfield.

CHAP. XVII.

A church has recently been erected (1870) at the expense of Mr. George Horsfall, a member of a family who have perhaps done more than any other in Liverpool to promote church extension. It is in the 'Gothic decorated' style, in white stone, with tower and spire. A Congregational Church has been recently erected at the corner of Ullet Lane and Aigburth Road.

Church.

Making the circuit of Prince's Park by Belvidere Road, Devonshire Road, and the pleasant glades of Sunny Side, overlooking the expanse of the Park, everything appears '*couleur de rose*.' The cosy comfort of an English home shines out clearly in the burnished plate-glass windows, the trim garden plots, and the well-swept walks; whilst peeps within of ormolu tables, walls lined with pictures, well furnished sideboards, and damask curtains give evidence of competence if not of wealth. Alas! that there should be such a reverse to the picture; that there may be found in the same town districts where fever is ever hovering, marking out its daily victims, where the murky alley and squalid court poison with their fetid atmosphere the wretched occupants who huddle together for shelter.

Prince's Park.

Despair and fell Disease and ghastly Poverty!

The contrasts of modern society are a fruitful theme for speculation, and demand the earnest attention of the statesman and philanthropist. More than an incidental allusion would be here out of place.

Completing our circuit we come out at the south-east corner where Lodge Lane and Ullet Lane meet. The large barn with the house and out-buildings, belong to what was once the 'Lodge Farm,' and with the 'Lower Lodge' near Otterspool, where Jeremiah Horrox was born, afford reminiscences of the period when Toxteth Park was a royal preserve, enclosed and protected from vulgar intrusion. Lodge Lane of course derives its name from the same source. It is an ancient road, and was

Lodge Lane.

CHAP. XVII.

very early formed into a pleasant suburb. Perry and Yates's Map of 1768 show seven villas then existing along the road; most of which still exist, very little changed.

Croxteth Road, &c.

The influence of Prince's Park has extended beyond its immediate circuit, and Croxteth Road, Green Heys Road, and Bentley Road debouching on Lodge Lane are filled with pleasant detached villas and gardens. Croxteth Road was formed in 1846, Green Heys Road in 1850; Bentley Road was not opened until 1862. On the east side of Lodge Lane a pleasant little hamlet was commenced about 1852 called Grove Park, forming a *cul de sac* lined with semi-detached houses and gardens.

Roscoe's house.

In a modest brick-house in Lodge Lane near the end of Bentley Road, William Roscoe passed the evening of his days, and there died June 29, 1831, in the 80th year of his age.

Several rope-walks were established in Lodge Lane about 1825 to 1835, which led to the erection of cottages and the deterioration of the neighbourhood.

Water-works.

The Waterworks and Pumping Station were constructed about 1846 by the Liverpool and Harrington Waterworks Company, a little before the companies were bought up by the Corporation.

Immediately adjoining the Waterworks a tract of land was laid out for building about 1860, and has since been covered with small houses. The names of the streets are taken from the rivers. The Thames, Solway, Eden, Liffey, Exe, Cam, Alt, Dove, are here commemorated. The stream of human life daily pours down their channels, if not so pure, certainly quite as lively as any of their prototypes.

Windsor.

About 1822 a piece of land was purchased and laid out as a new district in Upper Parliament Street and Lodge Lane by Mr. Joseph Dawson, solicitor, to which the name of Windsor was given. It extended westward as far as Crown Street, and southward to Upper Stan-

hope Street (now Beaumont Street). A row of good houses was erected to the front of Upper Parliament Street, but the back part of the land has been densely packed and irregularly built. Windsor.

St. Clement's, Windsor, was built in 1841. It is a rather humble-looking, but commodious building, in red sandstone, in one span, with semi-octagonal apse and bell gable. St. Clement's Church.

The lands westward of Windsor extending to Prince's Road are known as Parliament Fields, the property of the Earl of Sefton. Attempts have been made at different times to obtain the use of them for the public, but the expense of the purchase has always neutralised the effort. In the meantime the public have taken the matter into their own hands. Every measure, severe and gentle, has been adopted to keep out trespassers, but all in vain, until the blockade has been given up in despair. The advance of building will ere long very summarily dispose of the question. Parliament Fields.

At a house at the corner of Lodge Lane and Smithdown Lane long lived and died Mr. Edward Rushton, stipendiary magistrate, whose career has been previously mentioned. The house has been much altered and part of it converted into a tavern. The land adjacent—Snowdon, Danube, Avon Streets, &c.—was laid out in 1861. The buildings erected are a very neat assemblage of moderate-sized houses. Edward Rushton.

About a quarter of a mile westward along Smithdown Lane stands Toxteth Park Cemetery, opened in 1856. It occupied originally thirty acres, but was subsequently enlarged by further purchases of about ten additional acres. It is pleasantly situated and laid out with taste. The chapels and entrance lodges are considerably above the average of similar structures. It is curious to observe the tide of fashion which sets from time to time in different directions in the style of tomb-stones and monuments. At one period ornamental head-stones are all Toxteth Cemetery.

CHAP XVII.

Toxteth Cemetery.

the rage, then flat rectangular tombs predominate. The present taste seems to run towards obelisks, very frequently of polished granite, red and grey, than which no material seems so suitable for a mortuary memorial. It is a cause of satisfaction that the hideous iron railings with which formerly every tomb of any pretence was environed, have either by order or by common consent been banished out of sight, and the contemplative philosopher may meditate amongst the tombs without danger of being impaled, and the virtues of the departed may be ascertained and taken to heart without gazing at them through prison bars.

We now turn westward down Upper Parliament Street, formerly the line of enclosure of the Royal Park. A few good houses have been built towards the lower end; the remainder of the land is still vacant.

Prince's Road.

Prince's Road was opened out in 1846, soon after the formation of Prince's Park, though the northern portion had existed some time previously. It is a noble avenue 1,100 yards in length from Parliament Street to the Park entrance, and twenty-five yards in width. Building has not developed with any great rapidity, but what has been built is of very good quality. Recently an impulse has been given, resulting in the erection of several blocks or terraces of commodious and handsome houses. If completed in a similar style, Prince's Road will be probably the most dignified boulevard the town has to boast.

Several buildings of considerable merit are dotted along the road.

Greek Church.

At the entrance from Parliament Street stands the Greek Church, erected in 1867, from the designs of Mr. Henry Sumners. The Greeks in Liverpool form not a very numerous, but a very enterprising and prosperous mercantile body. For a long period they held their worship in a private house in Sandon Terrace, but their increasing numbers and importance led to the erection of the present structure.

Greek Church.

The building is large and imposing, and very well placed, at the junction of three streets. The principal front faces Berkeley Street, on the west. It consists of a centre compartment, with an arched portal, having columns, embraced in a kind of stone panel, with mouldings and a semicircular light over. The flanks have each two semicircular lights to correspond, with two double-light windows below, and very flat pediments over. The plan is rather a Latin than a Greek cross, in three aisles, with no projection west of the transepts. The eastern arm has five bays, lighted by semicircular-headed windows, in recesses. The eastern end has a semioctagonal recess, lighted by a window on each face, with stilted arches. The style is, of course, Byzantine; the material brick, with white stone dressings, and courses of stone introduced, alternating with the brick. There are three domes along the west front, and one in the centre of the eastern arm. The interior, though not so magnificent as St. Isaac's, at St. Petersburg, nor so grand as St. Sophia, at Constantinople, is nevertheless handsome and well-designed. On the whole it may be said that the architect has produced a very characteristic building according to the model prescribed; but the style is not one to attract the Western nations to follow in its wake. In cases of this kind association is everything.

St. Margaret's Church.

Nearly opposite stands a building of a very different stamp, the Church of St. Margaret, the head-quarters of the Ritualistic or Anglo-Catholic School of the Church of England, built in 1868–9. It was erected at the expense of Mr. Robert Horsfall, and intended for the incumbency of Mr. Clarke, vicar of Taunton. After the living was declined by this gentleman, it was conferred on the Rev. Charles Parnell, previously the incumbent of St. James the Less.

However opinions may differ as to the tenets and practices of this branch of the Church, all must admit that in

CHAP. XVII.

St. Margaret's Church.

the matter of architecture they are thorough and successful. 'Carpenter's Gothic,' plaster mouldings, cast-iron tracery, wooden galleries, are abominations in their eyes. All is truthful, honest work, frequently severe, but always earnest and suggestive. The present church is a very faithful illustration of this. The material is common brick, with red stone dressings and red brick cornices; the detail is of the simplest description, and it cannot be said that the general external aspect is pleasing, at least at first sight; but the longer you gaze the more appropriateness you perceive, the better the detail comes out, and you arrive at the conviction that truth—*i.e.*, architectural truth and earnestness—are visible in every line.

The plan is a long parallelogram, in three aisles, without clerestory or transepts. The division of the chancel is only marked externally by a small dormer on each side. There is a wooden *flèche* or belfry in the centre of the roof, with a slated spire. The tracery of the side-aisles is very simple. The west front has a portal to each aisle, with a rose-window over. The nave has three projecting buttresses, the centre one crowned with a niche and statue, and a rose-window in the gable.

Internally the church is much more effective. The piers have polished marble shafts, carrying an arcade in red stone. The roof of the nave is of oak, boarded in four planes, with ribs, apparently intended for pictorial decoration. The roof of the chancel is already partially decorated. The east window is large, in five lights, with 'geometrical' tracery head. The reredos of the altar is very rich with marble, gilding, and sculptural decoration. The font is of polished marble. The pulpit is of stone, of good design.

Welsh Church.

Further south, at the corner of Upper Hill Street, stands the church of the Welsh Calvinistic Methodists, who have recently adopted the title of Welsh Presbyterians. The gradual advance of this denomination from small meeting-houses to large conventicles, and from

thence by one bound overcoming prejudice, and erecting a church of almost cathedral-like splendour, with a lofty tower and spire, is a very remarkable indication of progress both in taste and in material prosperity. The architects were Messrs. W. & G. Audsley; the designs selected after a severe competition. The building was erected in 1867. The material is Yorkshire parpoints for the walling, with white stone dressings. The plan is a Latin cross, the roofs in one span; the style, 'early geometrical' with plate tracery. The side windows are in two lights with rose cusped heads. The front and transept windows are triple, with deeply recessed mouldings and rose heads. The steeple is at the north-east angle, and stands out boldly, detached from the body of the building. The tower is in three stages; a deeply recessed double portal below. The belfry windows are bold double lights of large proportions. The tower has bold square set buttresses at the angles, rising into shafted pinnacles and spirets at the four corners. The spire is of good form and proportion, with two stages of spire lights, the lower ones shafted. There is a ventilator in the centre of the roof which might have been made an ornamental feature, but is not. Altogether the building is very creditable both to the architect and to the body which built it.

Welsh Church.

A little further to the south, near the top of Warwick Street, a small chapel in simple brick gives indications of genuine mediæval feeling.

The land between Prince's Road and Windsor Street began first to be built on about 1830, and by 1850 was nearly covered as far south as Upper Hill Street. From thence to Upper Warwick Street, the land was built on between 1864 and 1868.

Progress of building.

The Congregational Chapel in Berkeley Street was erected in 1856 in lieu of a former chapel standing in Mill Street, burnt down in 1855. It is in the pointed style, built with parpoints. The front has a double

Chapel.

CHAP. XVII.

Chapel.

portal with a five-light window above. The buttresses on each side rise into crocketted pinnacles above. The sides have each five double light windows with gables over. A small stone chapel was built in 1853 on the east side of Windsor Street for the English worship of the Welsh Presbyterians.

This chapter brings our topographical survey to a close. If the reader has persevered thus far, I thank him for his patience, and make my *congé*, trusting to his favourable consideration:

> For when good will is show'd, though 't come too short,
> The actor may plead pardon.

APPENDIX

CONTAINING A LIST OF THE PUBLISHED WORKS RELATING TO THE HISTORY OF LIVERPOOL, AND OF OTHER SOURCES WHENCE COLLATERAL INFORMATION MAY BE DERIVED.

THE following pages comprise all the works directly bearing on the subject so far as known to me, with notices of a few others in which Liverpool men and things are indirectly illustrated. The latter class might have been extended indefinitely, since it is difficult to determine exactly where to draw the line. The list will I trust be found of use to those who feel an interest in Liverpool affairs, and will lessen the labour in searching for authorities on any special subject of inquiry. APPX.

I will first call attention to the published works.

The Itinerary of John Leland, the Antiquary, in 9 volumes, published by Mr. Thomas Hearne. Printed from Mr. Hearne's corrected copy in the Bodleian Library. 1st edit., 1710. 3rd edit., 1770. Oxford: printed at the Theatre for James Fletcher in the Turl, and Joseph Pote at Eton College. A.D. 1540 (circa).

The copy in the Liverpool Free Library formerly belonged to Owen Salisbury Brereton, Recorder of Liverpool from 1742 to 1797.

The information relating to Liverpool is contained in vol vii., p. 47.

Camden's Britannia. The first edition of this work was published in 1586. Several other editions were issued during the lifetime of the author: the last, which received his final corrections, in 1607. The original work is in Latin. A.D. 1586.

In 1611 an English translation was published by Dr. Philemon Holland. Many editions have been issued since, with

APPX. extensions which have almost rivalled Camden's original work. The principal translations are, one by Dr. Edmund Gibson, successively Bishop of Lincoln and London, 1 vol., fol., 1695 and 1722; and one by Dr. Henry Gough, 3 vols., fol., 1789, extended to 4 vols. in 1806. Camden's short notice of Liverpool will be found on p. 790 of Gibson's 1st edition, with a further note by the editor on p. 802.

A.D. 1667. *The Moore Rental*, edited by Thomas Heywood, F.S.A., printed for the Chetham Society, 1847. Sm. 4to. Introduction, pp. iii. Text, pp. 158.

This forms vol. xii. of the Chetham Society's publications. It is a print of the MS. rent-roll and instructions to his son of Sir Edward Moore, Bart., of Bank Hall. There is no publication which throws such light on the condition of the town at the period. I have quoted largely from this document in the present work.

A.D. 1673. *Britannia, or a geographical description of the kingdom of England, Scotland, and Ireland.* London: printed by Thomas Roycroft for the Undertaker, Richard Blome. 1673. Fol. Pp. 464.

At p. 233 there is a description of Lerpool or Leverpoole.

A.D. 1700 (circa). *A Tour through the whole Island of Great Britain*, divided into circuits or journeys, containing a description of the principal cities and towns, their situation, government, and commerce.

This work was originally begun by Daniel Defoe, and continued by Richardson, author of 'Pamela,' &c. It passed through many editions, with additions from time to time. My copy is the 7th edit., in 4 vols., post 8vo., 1769.

The description of Liverpoole is in vol. iii., pp. 255–262.

A.D. 1695–1707. *The Norris Papers*, edited by Thomas Heywood, F.S.A., printed for the Chetham Society. 1846. Sm. 4to. Introduction, pp. xxxiii. Text, pp. 190.

This forms vol. ix. of the Chetham Society's publications. The collection consists of a series of letters to and from members of the family of Norris, of Speke Hall, respecting Liverpool affairs at the latter end of the seventeenth and beginning of the eighteenth century. I have made free use of these in the present work.

A Letter from Mr. Joseph Clegg (mayor in 1748–9) to the Members of the Council, on the subject of the application for a new Charter, and the reply of the Mayor, Bailiffs, and the majority of the Council thereto. Pp. 23. Liverpool, no date. APPX. A.D. 1750 (circa).

Letters written from Leverpoole, Corke, &c. By Samuel Derrick, Esq., Master of the Ceremonies at Bath. London: printed for L. Davis and C. Reymers. 1767. 2 vols. 12mo. Pp. 132 and 152. A.D. 1767.

This little work is extremely scarce. It is dedicated to the Duke of Northumberland in a fulsome panegyric. The letters are descriptive of a journey to Ireland by way of Chester and Liverpool. They are addressed to the Earl of Cork, Lord Southwell, the Earl of Pomfret, James Boswell, and others. The references to Liverpool are contained in the third, fourth, and fifth letters, and are very interesting as shewing the aspect which the town presented to a stranger about the year 1760.

An Essay towards the History of Leverpool, drawn up from papers left by the late Mr. George Perry, and from other materials since collected, by William Enfield, with views of the principal public structures, a chart of the harbour and a map of the environs. Warrington: printed, 1773. Sm. fol. Pp. 116. A.D. 1773.

A list is given of 529 subscribers, which, considering the population of the town at the time—not more than 34,000 inhabitants, demonstrates the degree of interest felt in the local history. The price to subscribers was 12*s*. The whole of the first edition was immediately sold, and a second edition was issued within twelve months, with a few slight alterations and additions. This bears the imprint 'London: printed for Joseph Johnson, No. 72, St. Paul's Church Yard, 1774.' The first edition is scarce; the second is often to be met with in the market.

The information in this volume is meagre; no reference being made to any documents illustrative of the rise of the town or of its ancient history. It contains, however, two very valuable maps, one a chart of the harbour with the soundings and banks taken in 1771, which exhibits in a striking manner the changes which have taken place in the rivers Mersey and Dee in the course of a century.

The other is a map of the environs taken by William Yates and George Perry in 1768. From Mr. Perry's well-known

APPX. accuracy, this may be relied on as a faithful representation at that date of the neighbourhood within a radius of six miles from Liverpool on the Lancashire side.

Of Dr. Enfield the author, or rather editor, I have already spoken in a previous section.[1]

The Liverpool Free Public Library possesses a valuable copy of this work, which formerly belonged to Matthew Gregson, the antiquary, having very extensive MS. additions in his own hand. It is also enriched with a large number of additional prints, maps, and cuttings. It was purchased in 1871 for 25*l.*

A.D. 1784. *A Familiar Medical Survey of Liverpool*, addressed to the inhabitants at large; containing observations on the situation of the town; the qualities and influence of the air; the employment and manner of living of the inhabitants; the water, and other natural and occasional circumstances whereby the health of the inhabitants is liable to be particularly affected, &c. By W. Moss, Surgeon, Liverpool. Liverpool: printed by H. Hodgson, and sold by T. and W. Lowndes, London. 1784. Post 8vo. Pp. 130.

The author was a medical man residing in Duke Street. The work contains many sanitary hints which might be useful, even at the present day.

A.D. 1793. *A Letter Commercial and Political*, addressed to the Right Hon. William Pitt, in which the real interests of Britain in the present crisis are considered, and some observations are offered on the general state of Europe. The second edition corrected and enlarged. By Jasper Wilson, Esq. London: printed for G. G. & J. Robinson, Paternoster Row. Postscript, dated July 25, 1793.

The real author was Dr. Currie of Liverpool, of whom and of whose work I have spoken already.[2]

A.D. 1794. *The Liverpool Guide*, including a sketch of the environs, with a map of the town, by W. Moss.

This is by the same author as the Medical Survey mentioned above.

The description of the town at the period is curious. The apology for the Slave Trade, of which the author is evidently himself ashamed, is very characteristic of the time.

[1] Vol. ii. p. 107. [2] Vol. i. p. 272.

There were four editions of this work issued between 1794 and 1801, and another in 1808. 2nd edit., 1797, pp. 164, with map. 4th edit., 1801, pp. 192, with map. APPX.

A General and Descriptive History of the Ancient and Present State of the Town of Liverpool; comprising a review of its Government, Police, Antiquities, and Modern Improvements; the progressive increase of streets, squares, public buildings, and inhabitants, together with a circumstantial account of the true causes of its extensive African trade; the whole carefully compiled from original Manuscripts, Authentic Records, and other warranted authorities. Liverpool: printed by J. McCreery, Houghton Street. No date. 8vo. Pp. 301, with a map. A.D. 1794 (circa).

This work, which is anonymous, and now not readily met with, is written with considerable spirit and ability. The remarks on the public buildings and on the manners and customs of the inhabitants are racy, but somewhat cynical.

There is much information respecting the commercial progress of the town, which is not to be found elsewhere.

A Description of the Country from Thirty to Forty miles round Manchester; the materials arranged, and the Work composed by J. Aikin, M.D., embellished with seventy-three plates. London: printed for John Stockdale. 1795. 4to. Pp. 624. A.D. 1795.

The author is well known in the literary world, as the brother of Mrs. Barbauld, and the joint author with her of the 'Evenings at Home.' He resided for some time in Warrington, where his father was the Principal of the Warrington Academy. He afterwards settled at Yarmouth.

The portion of the Work relating to Liverpool is contained in pp. 331 to 383. The information is commonplace and of very little value, not being derived from original sources.

The Rise, Progress, and Proceedings of a Corps of Volunteers, shewing how thirty republicans have endeavoured to make five hundred loyal gentlemen truly laughable. To which is added, a letter addressed to the Republicans only; giving them advice how they may manage matters in future as not completely to expose themselves. By a Loyal Volunteer. A.D. 1799.

Magna est Veritas, et prævalebit.

London: printed for the author. 1799.

APPX. The author was Mr. Bryan Blundell, a private in Lieut.-Col. Case's Company of Volunteers, who was drummed out of the regiment for insubordination on October 9, 1798.

His case is further stated in another pamphlet entitled:

Four Letters for the consideration of all loyal Britons, and particularly for the attention of all loyal Volunteers, shewing how Republicans act when in power; and what underhand meannesses they are guilty of. By Bryan Blundell of Islington. Liverpool: 1799.

This pamphlet is embellished by a folding frontispiece, containing a caricature of the Volunteers in the style of Gillray.

A.D. 1799. *Dancing Masteriana;* a biographic sketch for an inquisitive public; being the true style of a Dancing Master exhibiting his pupils by an elegant ball; to which are added five letters, none of which have anything to do with the Dancing Master's ball. London: printed for the Author. 1799.

This contains letters to Thomas Leyland, the Mayor; John Courtney, Esq.; H.R.H. the Duke of York; Robert Greenham, Esq.; and a grotesque account of a Corporation Ball.

The author was Mr. Bryan Blundell. The subject is his differences with the Volunteers; and with the Corporation about some property taken down to enlarge the area of Derby Square.

A.D. 1804. *The Trial at large of William Sparling, Esq., late Lieutenant in the tenth Regiment of Dragoons*, commanded by His Royal Highness the Prince of Wales; and Samuel Martin Colquitt, Esq., Captain of His Majesty's Ship 'Princess;' on an indictment for the murder of Mr. Edward Grayson of Liverpool, Ship-Builder, before Sir Alan Chambre, Knt., one of the Judges of the Common Pleas, at the Assizes held at Lancaster on Wednesday, April 4, 1804. Liverpool: printed by and for W. Jones, 56 Castle Street. Sold also in London by Vernor and Hood. 1804. Pp. 76.

A.D. 1804. *Proceedings of the General Court Martial in the Trial of Alexander Grant Carmichael, Captain and Adjutant of the Liverpool Fusileers*, on a charge exhibited against him by William Earle, Esq., Lieut.-Col. Commandant of that Regiment. Liverpool: printed by William Jones, No. 56 Castle Street. 1804. Pp. 97.

APPX. A.D. 1808.

Considerations on the Causes, Objects, and Consequences of the present War, and on the Expediency or the Danger of Peace with France. By William Roscoe, Esq. London: printed by J. McCreery, Fleet Street, for T. Cadell and W. Davies, Strand. January, 1808. Pp. 135.

The Trial of Charles Angus, Esq., on an indictment for the wilful murder of Margaret Burns, at the Assizes held at Lancaster on Friday, September 2, 1808, before the Hon. Sir Alan Chambre, one of the Justices of His Majesty's Court of Common Pleas, taken in short-hand by William Jones, No. 4 Union Court, Castle Street. A.D. 1808.

A Vindication of the Opinions delivered in evidence by the medical witnesses for the Crown in a late trial at Lancaster for murder. A.D. 1808.

This bears the names of James Gerard, M.D.; John Rutter, M.D.; John Bostock, M.D.; Thomas Fairfax Hay. Liverpool: printed by and for W. Jones, Union Court, Castle Street. 1808.

Remarks on a late Publication, entitled 'A Vindication of the Opinions,' &c. By James Carson, M.D. Liverpool: printed by W. Jones, Union Court, Castle Street. 1808. A.D. 1808.

An Exposure of some of the false statements contained in Dr. Carson's Pamphlet, entitled 'Remarks,' &c., in a letter addressed to that gentleman. By James Dawson, Surgeon. Liverpool: printed by W. Jones, No. 4 Union Court, Castle Street. 1809. A.D. 1809.

Reflections occasioned by the perusal of a Pamphlet, entitled 'A Vindication of the Opinions,' &c. By D. Campbell, M.D. Liverpool: printed by W. Jones, No. 4 Union Court, Castle Street. 1809. A.D. 1809.

The circumstances which led to the publication of these pamphlets are detailed in vol. ii. p. 358.

The Stranger in Liverpool, or, an Historical and Descriptive View of the Town of Liverpool and its Environs. Liverpool: printed and sold by T. Kaye, Castle Street. A.D. 1809 (circa).

This work, one of the most useful of the kind ever published, went through many editions. The third is dated 1812; the tenth 1833. The ninth edition, issued in 1829, appears the

APPX. fullest and most complete, having an appendix attached, containing extracts from the Town's Records.

Mr. Kaye, the publisher and editor, was the original publisher of the Liverpool 'Courier.' He paid, during a long life, considerable attention to local history and antiquities. 3rd edit. 1812. 12mo. Pp. 206, with map and cuts. 9th edit. 1829. Foolscap 8vo. Pp. 288, with Appendix, map, and cuts. 10th edit. 1833. 12mo. Pp. 302, with map and cuts.

A.D. 1810. *The History of Liverpool*, from the earliest authenticated period down to the present time, illustrated with views of the principal buildings in the town and its vicinity; a map of the town and one of the adjacent country. Liverpool: printed and sold by William Robinson, Castle Street. 1810. 4to. Pp. 389.

The author, whose name is not on the title page, was Mr. Thomas Troughton, a bookseller in Ranelagh Street. The early history is written in a most credulous and uncritical spirit; the existence of the town before the Conquest, and the pretended Charter of Henry II. being recorded as accepted facts. The volume is handsomely printed by R. and W. Dean, Manchester. There are numerous woodcuts, which, though a little rough in execution, are very spirited and telling; and have become valuable as giving representations of many buildings long past away, and of localities entirely changed.

It is sad to relate that the author was nearly ruined by the expense of these plates and the unremunerative character of the undertaking.

There is a copy of this Work in the Liverpool Free Public Library in 2 vols., 4to., with a few MS. notes and a large number of inserted illustrations collected from all quarters. It was purchased in June 1858 for *5l.* 10*s.* at the sale of the library of Mr. Meigh, of the Staffordshire Potteries.

A.D. 1817. *Portfolio of Fragments relative to the History and Antiquities of the County Palatine and Duchy of Lancaster.* By Matthew Gregson, Esq., embellished with engravings and woodcuts, and a lithographic portrait of the author. Liverpool: printed by G. F. Harris's widow and brothers. 1817. Fol. Pp. 302, with Appendix i. to cviii.

A so-called second edition was issued in 1824. This included some additional illustrations, but the letter-press was the same, with new title and contents, and the insertion of a few extra leaves marked by an asterisk.

The portion of the work relating to Liverpool and the neighbourhood is contained in Part II. pp. 153–220. This is not of much value, but the work as a whole is a curious medley of shreds and patches of antiquity. It contains a copy of the Testa de Neville and other mediæval inquisitions, and many interesting details of the genealogies of Lancashire families. APPX.

A prospectus was prepared in 1823 for the issue of a fourth part in addition to those already published, which was not carried out, owing to the decease of the author.

A new edition was published in 1870, edited by John Harland, F.S.A.

History, Directory, and Gazetteer of the County Palatine of Lancaster, with a variety of commercial and statistical information, illustrated by maps and plans. By Edward Baines. The Directory department by W. Parsons. 2 vols. 8vo. 1824. Liverpool: published by William Wales & Co., 'Advertiser' Office, 68 Castle Street; sold also by Longman, Hurst & Co., London, and all other booksellers. A.D. 1824.

This is a very useful compendium of information relating to the County Palatine, and was the precursor of the larger work on the history of the county, subsequently published by Mr. Baines. The portion relating to Liverpool was considerably expanded in the later work.

Liverpool, its Commerce, Statistics, and Institutions, with a History of the Cotton Trade. By Henry Smithers. Liverpool: printed by Thomas Kaye. 1825. Demy 8vo. Pp. 461. A.D. 1825.

The author was a mathematical teacher in Liverpool. He states in the preface that 'the principal object of the following work is to exhibit a view of the rise and progress of the commerce and various public institutions of Liverpool.'

Historical facts are only incidentally introduced, and then with extremely little regard to accuracy.

The most interesting feature of the work is the Appendix, containing biographical notices of Liverpool worthies; which have every appearance of authenticity. The statistics seem to have been compiled with care, and there is a useful Index to the contents.

The History of Everton, including familiar Dissertations on the People, &c., with map, plates, and woodcuts. By Robert Syers. Liverpool: published by G. and J. Robin- A.D. 1830.

APPX.

son, Castle Street, and D. Marples, Lord Street. 1830. Post 8vo. Pp. 480.

The author was a worthy gentleman, who resided many years in Everton in its semi-rural and palmy days. His work was written just previous to the radical transformation which has since taken place.

The historical information is valuable, and the contemporary account of the locality and people is charming, from the *bonhomie* and minuteness of the picture. I know very few topographical works which equal it in this respect.

A.D. 1833. *A Report of the Proceedings of a Court of Inquiry into the existing state of the Corporation of Liverpool;* held in the month of November, 1833, before two of His Majesty's Commissioners. Parliamentary Blue Book. Fol. Pp. 554, with an Appendix, pp. cxxviii.

For historical information respecting the affairs of the municipality this report is invaluable.

The Appendix contains the actual text of most of the charters.

A.D. 1834. *The Picture of Liverpool; or, Stranger's Guide.* Liverpool: printed and published by Thomas Taylor, Castle Street and Church Street. 1834. 12mo. Pp. 236, with a map.

There is nothing special to remark in this little work.

A.D. 1835. *Report of the Proceedings of the Associated Merchants of Liverpool* who have recently resisted the payment of the Town's Dues. London: printed by Charles Whittingham, Took's Court, Chancery Lane. 1835. Demy 8vo. Pp. 67, with Appendix, pp. xcix.

The proceedings here recorded are referred to above (vol. i. p. 676).

A.D. 1836. *History of the County Palatine and Duchy of Lancaster.* By Edward Baines, Esq., M.P. Fisher, Son & Co., London, Paris, and New York. 4 vols. 4to. 1836.

The part of this work relating to Liverpool will be found in vol iv. pp. 55–189. It is industriously compiled, but contains many inaccuracies.

A new edition appeared in 1870, edited originally by Mr. John Harland, F.S.A., and after his decease by the Rev. Brooke Herford.

Liverpool as it is; or, a Guide for the Stranger and the Resident, &c. Liverpool: Edward Howell, Church Street. Foolscap 8vo. Pp. 153, with a map and engravings. APPX. A.D. 1840.

Various editions of this guide-book have been issued from 1840 downwards. It contains the usual information.

Smith's Stranger's Guide to Liverpool, its environs, and part of Cheshire for 1843. By Alexander Brown, A.M. Liverpool: printed and published by Benjamin Smith, South Castle Street. Foolscap 8vo. Pp. 257, with engravings. A.D. 1843.

Pictorial Relics of Ancient Liverpool, accompanied with Descriptions of the Antique Buildings, &c. By William Gawin Herdman, member of the Liverpool Academy. 1st series. London: Henry Graves & Co. Liverpool: William Holden. 1843. Fol. Pp. 104, with 49 lithographed plates. A.D. 1843.

In 1856 a second series was issued, published by the author. Liverpool, 1856, fol., pp. 107, with 48 lithographed plates.

These two works are very valuable illustrations of ancient Liverpool, and contain much original information.

Pictorial Liverpool: its Annals, Commerce, Shipping, Institutions, Public Buildings, Sights, Excursions, &c., &c.; a new and commodious Handbook for Resident, Visitor, and Tourist. With a new outline map and 50 illustrations. Published by Henry Lacey, Repository of Art, Bold Street, and sold by all booksellers. Foolscap 8vo. Pp. 282. No date. A.D. 1844 (circa).

The author's name is not given, but there is little doubt that it is from the pen of Mr. James Stonehouse, superintendent of the Liverpool markets.

There is a large amount of useful and valuable information in this little work.

History of the Commerce and Town of Liverpool, and of the rise of Manufacturing Industry in the adjoining counties. By Thomas Baines. London and Liverpool. Royal 8vo. Pp. 844. 1852. A.D. 1852.

This is the most valuable repertory ever published of information relative to the early history of the town and of its commercial progress. Mr. Baines was the first to appreciate and use original documents instead of information at second hand.

APPX. The *coup d'œil*, however, is rather too exclusively commercial, to the neglect of the parliamentary, municipal, and social history. The want of an index is a great drawback from the usefulness of the work, rendering it very difficult to refer to the contents.

The author was for some years editor of the Liverpool 'Times,' and is well known as an accomplished antiquary.

A.D. 1852. *Liverpool a Few Years Since*, by an Old Stager. London: Whittaker & Co. Liverpool: Deighton & Laughton. 1852. Crown 8vo. Pp. 159.

This work was published anonymously, but the authorship is acknowledged to be that of the Rev. James Aspinall, M.A., sometime Incumbent of St. Luke's, Liverpool, and afterwards Rector of Althorpe, Lincolnshire. The reminiscences are life-like and graphic. Every page sparkles with liveliness and wit. It is to be regretted that the exercise of so rare a talent should have been circumscribed within so narrow a limit. A second edition was issued in 1869.

A.D. 1853. *Liverpool*, as it was during the last quarter of the eighteenth century, 1775 to 1800. By Richard Brooke, Esq., F.S.A. Liverpool: J. Mawdsley & Son, Castle Street. London: John Russell Smith, 36 Soho Square. 1853. Royal 8vo. Pp. 558, with illustrations.

This work contains a considerable amount of interesting matter relative to the period of which it treats, but rather inartistically put together.

It consists principally of the recollections of the author's father, who died on June 15, 1852, in the ninety-second year of his age.

A.D. 1854. *Liverpool Churches and Chapels*: their Destruction, Removal, or Alteration; with notices of clergymen, ministers, and others. By David Thom, D.D. Liverpool: Edward Howell, Church Street. 1854. Foolscap 8vo. Pp. 154.

This little work contains a large amount of curious and valuable information, the result of diligent inquiry and research. References to the author's history will be found in vol. ii. p. 278, of the present work.

A.D. 1854 (circa). *History of the Town and River, &c.* By Hugh Gawthrop, Esq., M.C.P. London: W. Kent & Co., Paternoster Row. Liverpool: R. H. Fraser, Cable Street (no date). Foolscap 8vo. Pp. 301.

There is nothing very special about this work. It is a fair guide-book of the period. The author was a schoolmaster at Birkenhead. APPX.

The Stranger's Vade Mecum; or, Liverpool described: a guide to every object of interest in the town and its vicinity. By David P. Thomson, M.D., Edin. Liverpool: H. Greenwood, Canning Place. London: Ward and Lock (no date). 12mo. Pp. 196, with a map and steel engravings. A.D. 1854 (circa).

The author was a physician practising for some years in the town.

The information is of the ordinary commonplace character.

Report of the Parliamentary Committee on Local Charges on Shipping. 1856. Parliamentary Blue Book. Fol. Pp. 702. A.D. 1856.

There is much information respecting the History of the Port in the evidence here presented.

Corporate Tradition and National Rights. Local Dues on Shipping. By Harriet Martineau. Issued by the Association to obtain the right appropriation of the Liverpool Town Dues. London: Published by George Routledge & Co., 2 Farringdon Street. Manchester: Thomas Dinham & Co., Corporation Street. Demy 8vo. Pp. 161. A.D. 1857.

This consists of five letters addressed to Mr. Whitworth, Secretary of the Association mentioned above, who had obtained the aid of the powerful pen of Miss Martineau in support of a measure introduced into Parliament in 1857 for the repeal or transfer of the Town Dues. It contains a large amount of information in a small compass, and is written in the vigorous, incisive style so characteristic of its author.

The Proceedings before Parliament on the Mersey Conservancy and Docks Act. Sess. 1857. Parliamentary Blue Book. A.D. 1857.

A large mass of valuable historical information is contained in the record of these proceedings, which led to the transfer of the Town Dues from the Corporation to the Mersey Dock and Harbour Board, and the formation of the latter into a separate trust.

The Architectural History of Liverpool: a series of Papers read before the Liverpool Architectural and Archæolo- A.D. 1858.

APPX.

gical Society. By J. A. Picton, F.S.A. Liverpool: privately printed. 1858. 4to. Pp. 71.

The substance of these papers is incorporated into the present Work.

A.D. 1863. *Recollections of Old Liverpool.* By a nonagenarian. Liverpool: J. F. Hughes. 1863. Foolscap 8vo. Pp. 255.

This work contains a large fund of agreeable gossip about Liverpool from 1770 downwards, supposed to be related by a venerable inhabitant. It was published anonymously, but the authorship is ascribed to Mr. James Stonehouse.

A.D. 1863. *A List of the Local Acts affecting Liverpool*, chronologically arranged with ample notes, &c. Compiled by L. P. Stubbs. Liverpool: printed by George McCorquodale & Co. 1863.

This is a very useful aid in the search for information on Liverpool History.

A.D. 1864. *Views in Modern Liverpool, by William Herdman;* with Introduction and descriptive letterpress by J. A. Picton, F.S.A. Liverpool: David Marples. 1864. Fol. Pp. 49, with 37 plates in chromo-lithography.

A.D. 1865. *A Lecture on the Rise and Progress of Liverpool.* By James M. Walthew. Liverpool: G. G. Walmsley, 50 Lord Street. 1865. Post 8vo. Pp. 57.

This lecture presents an interesting synopsis of the leading events in the history of the town.

A.D. 1868. *Whitty's Guide to Liverpool, &c.* Liverpool: 'Daily Post' Printing Office. 1868. Post 8vo. Pp. 231, with a map and engravings.

This is a useful little compendium.

A.D. 1870 (circa). *The Streets of Liverpool.* By James Stonehouse, no date. Post 8vo. Pp. 230.

This little work contains an interesting collection of anecdotes and associations connected with the streets.

A.D. 1871. *Liverpool Table Talk a hundred years ago.* By James Boardman. Liverpool: Henry Young, South Castle Street. 1871. Post 8vo. Pp. 52.

This consists of reminiscences of the author, with subsequent additions after his decease.

The Tourist's Picturesque Guide to Liverpool and its environs, with Town plan, and illustrations. Liverpool: W. Gilling. London: The Graphotyping Company (Limited), 7 Garrick Street, W.C. (no date). Foolscap 8vo. Pp. 176. APPX. A.D. 1871 (circa).

In addition to the above special works; the 'Encyclopædia Britannica,' 8th edit. (1857); the 'Penny Magazine' (1839); and 'The Land we live in' (1848) have each articles on Liverpool which may be perused with advantage.

The volumes of the published Transactions of the Historic Society of Liverpool, 1849–1872, contain many papers of interest in relation to Liverpool and its history.

The series of Gore's Directories commencing in 1766 contain a mine of information open to the diligent enquirer.

The Liverpool Free Public Library possesses a collection of local newspapers extending from 1756 to the present time which is valuable and probably unique.

The 'Kaleidoscope,' a local weekly publication conducted by the late Mr. Egerton Smith, of which thirteen volumes were issued between 1818 and 1831, will be found to contain many articles illustrative of local history, manners, and customs.

Amongst the unpublished sources of information the following may be mentioned:—

The municipal records of the Liverpool corporation are complete from the year 1551. They are contained in a series of volumes in the muniment room of the Public Offices. Those relating to the reign of Elizabeth and the time of the Civil War are remarkably interesting, but require a little practice in ancient MS. writing to decipher them.

The Free Public Library possesses a series of MS. collections towards the 'History of Liverpool' made by Mr. John G. Underhill. These consist of three volumes in Manuscript, beautifully written, and entitled 'The Liver,' bearing the date of 1831, besides other detached memoranda.

The historical information contains nothing specially original, but the third volume, consisting of biographical notices of Liverpool men and local families, has been carefully and laboriously compiled, and may be consulted with advantage.

The work was unfortunately left incomplete. The author died young. After his decease, his papers were purchased by Mr. Joseph Mayer, F.S.A., and presented along with the splendid collection of Art Treasures to the Free Library and Museum.

In the Free Public Library will also be found the 'Binns

APPX. Collection of Illustrations of the History and Topography of the County Palatine of Lancaster.'

This collection, the most valuable in relation to its subject ever brought together, was the recreation of the lifetime of its compiler. Mr. Thomas Binns was a member of the Society of Friends, residing at Mount Vernon in the suburbs of Liverpool. During many years he made it his study to bring together every illustration bearing upon the history of the county.

The labour and expense involved in such an undertaking can only be appreciated by those who have carefully examined the mass of matter thus brought together. The result is contained in twenty-nine large folio volumes, twenty-eight being illustrations, and one, Mr. Roscoe's great work on 'Monandrian Plants.' Vol. ix. and x. relate exclusively to Liverpool, and vol. xi. to the environs. They consist of maps, plans, views prints, and cuttings of every description. Ten of the other volumes consist of portraits of persons connected with the county.

After Mr. Binns's decease the collection was purchased (in 1854) from his representatives for 300*l.*, with the understanding that it should be kept together and bear the name of the collector.

Since the date of this purchase a large number of additions have been made, which are kept distinct from the original collection, and are easily accessible.

The Library of the Athenæum, Church Street, contains an interesting collection of maps, plans, prints, drawings, pamphlets, trials, &c., relating to Local History.

INDEX.

ABA

ABATTOIRS, ii. 251
Academy of Painting, i. 237, 238, 332; ii. 182
Ackers, Jas., ii. 46, 422
Acre House, ii. 391
Adamson or Fitzadam, Wm., ii. 61
Addresses to the Crown, i. 152, 184, 246, 274, 301, 329, 373, 390, 417, 433, 466, 485, 509, 514, 532, 536, 575, 601
African Missions, public meeting on, i. 620
Aikin, Edmund, ii. 239
Aitken, Revd. Robt., ii. 264
Alabama cruiser, i. 622
Albert, Prince, visit, i. 589
Albert Dock and Warehouses, i. 660, 697
Alert Packet, loss of, i. 445
Almshouses, ii. 211, 288, 497
America (United States), Revolt and War with, i. 240–1, 337
— — disputes with, i. 326, 336
— — peace with, i. 368
— — steam navigation to, i. 571
— — civil war, i. 621
Amiens, peace of, i. 299
Amphitheatre, ii. 193
Amusements, i. 210
Ancient Chapel, Toxteth Park, ii. 554–7
Anfield, ii. 438
Anglo-Saxon period, i. 6
Angus, Charles, trial of, ii. 358
Anti-slavery agitation, i. 254, 461, 477, 519, 520
Arcade, ii. 231
Architecture, i. 198, 209, 236
Arms of Liverpool, i. 281
Army, subscription for, i. 371
Arthur, Prince, visit of, i. 633
Ashton, Nicholas, i. 311; ii. 166, 191
Ashurst, Henry, i. 140
— Thomas, i. 201
Asiento Company, i. 221

BAS

Aspinall, Jno. Bridge, ii. 312
— Revd. Jas., ii. 276
Assheton, Col. Ralph, i. 98, 105, 106
— Sir Ralph, i. 98, 151
Assizes, removal of, i. 445, 549
Aston, Sir Thos., i. 201
Athenæum, ii. 184
Atherton, James, ii. 426
— Nicol. de, i. 37
— Sir Rd., i. 151, 153, 154, 168
— Thomas, ii. 68
Atherton Street, ii. 156
Atlantic Cable, i. 612, 627
— steamers, i. 408
Austrian Archdukes, visit of, i. 372
Aynsargh, Rd., de, first recorded mayor, i. 31; ii. 61

BACKHOUSE, Danl., ii. 411
Bacon, Francis, Lord, i. 77
Baffin Street, ii. 337
Bailiffs, i. 19, 25
Baker, Peter, i. 275
Ballot, discussion on, i. 496
Banister, Revd. Robt., ii. 368
Bank of England, ii. 27, 171
— Clarke & Roscoe, ii. 24
— Gregson, Parkes & Clay, ii. 143
— Heywood's, ii. 20
— Leyland & Bullins, ii. 159
— Mercantile & Exchange, ii. 27
— Smyth & Caldwells, ii. 166
— Union, ii. 109
Banks, stoppage of, i. 268, 459, 626
Bankers to the Corporation, i. 541
Banking, joint stock, introduced, i. 497
Bank Hall, ii. 451, 457, 466
Barnes, Zechariah, ii. 343
Barracks, cavalry, ii. 409
— St. Domingo, ii. 431
Bartley, Capt., of the Motley Coats, i. 68
Barton, Sir Wm., i. 373, 383; ii. 311
Basnett Street, ii. 190

BAS

Bastille, taking of, celebration of, i. 266
Bathing on the shore, ii. 51
Baths, i. 694; ii. 47, 224, 315, 446
Bath, floating, i. 373
Batteries and forts, i. 245, 301, 461, 673; ii. 48
Bavand, Thomas, i. 70
Beacon, Everton, ii. 387
Beacon's Gutter, ii. 57
Beaufort Street (Bedford Street), ii. 540
Bellingham, John, i. 338, 342; ii. 312
Benett, John, M.P., i. 495, 498, 499, 527
Benn, James, ii. 157
Benn's Garden, ii. 107
Bentley, Thos., ii. 158
Benson, Moses, ii. 314
— Ralph, ii. 314
Bethel Union, established, i. 437
Berlin decree, i. 324
Berry Street, ii. 320
Bickerstath, Robt., i. 37
Bickersteth family, ii. 279
Bicksteth, Thos., i. 107, 179
Birch, Colonel John, i. 115, 139
— Colonel Thos., i. 97, 101, 114, 123, 144
— Sir Jos., Bart., i. 263–5, 272, 280, 295, 298
— Sir Thos. Bernard, Bart., i. 593
Birchfield, ii. 360, 391
Birkenhead, i. 409
— Docks, i. 586, 662, 666, 668, 674, 679
— Dock Company, i. 668, 674
Birrell, Revd. C. M., ii. 352
Bisbrown, Cuthbert, ii. 537
Bixteth Street, ii. 76
Black Death, i. 32
Blackburne, John, ii. 171
— family, i. 124
— House, ii. 291
Blackfield House, ii. 470
Blackmore, Thos., i. 123, 124, 137
Blacow, Revd. Rd., i. 430; ii. 317
Blind Asylum, ii. 215, 218, 283
Blome, Rd.—account of Liverpool, i. 147
Blondin, ii. 498
Blue Coat Hospital, i. 185, 195; ii. 168
Blues (Liverpool Regiment), i. 203, 205, 206, 244
Blundell of Ince Blundell, i. 174
— Bryan, i. 194
— Lieutenant-Colonel Bryan, i. 270, 276
— Henry, i. 270, 280
Blundell-Hollinshead, Jonathan, i. 400, 414
Blundell Street, ii. 337
Boaler Street, ii. 504

BRO

Bold, Peter, i. 157
Bold Street, ii. 265
Bolton, Colonel John, i. 263, 282, 300, 352, 394, 558; ii. 312
Bonham, Sir Saml. George, i. 669
Booth, Sir George, i. 197
Booth, Langham, i. 196, 199
Bootle, borough of, ii. 266
Bootle Water Works, i. 185
Bootle, Sir Thomas, i. 199, 202
Borough Gaol, ii. 49, 51
Borthwick, Peter, i. 521
Bostock Street, ii. 375
Botanic Garden, i. 286; ii. 257, 512
Boundary Lane, Everton, ii. 444
Boundary Street, Kirkdale, ii. 472
Boundaries of the Port, i. 196
Bounties for seamen, i. 246, 274
Bragg, Revd. Jos., ii. 149
Bramley-Moore Dock, i. 669
Brandreth, Dr., ii. 409
Breck, the, ii. 498
Breck House, ii. 500
— Road, ii. 540
Breckfield House, ii. 438
— Road, North, ii. 437
— — South, ii. 445
Bretherton, Bartholomew, ii. 129
— Thomas, i. 162
Brereton, Owen Salisbury, i. 200, 275
Brereton-Salisbury, Thomas, i. 199, 200, 201, 202, 213
Bridge, widow, ii. 15
— Street, i. 696; ii. 331
Bridge's Alley, ii. 99
Bridgman, Edwd., i. 94
— Orlando, i. 94
Bridgwater Canal, i. 235, 645
Bridle for scolds, i. 111
Briggs, Joseph, i. 179
Bristol Slave Trade, i. 221
British Association Meetings, i. 571, 607
Brontë House, ii. 435
Brooke, Sir Jas. (Rajah of Sarawak), i. 615
Brooks family, ii. 151, 173, 266, 423
— Archdeacon, ii. 402, 416
— Major, duel with Bolton, ii. 153
— Square, ii 151
— Street, ii. 44
Brougham, Henry, Lord, i. 328, 343, 346, 350, 351, 353, 359, 361, 467, 497, 545, 615, 616, 621; ii. 293
Brougham Terrace, ii. 442
Brown, Henry, i. 263, 284
— John, refuses to serve as mayor, i. 250
— Raffles, ii. 290
— Sir Wm., Bart., i. 523, 618
Brown Low, the, ii. 529, 531

BRO

Browne, George, ii. 310
Brownlow Hill, i. 6; ii. 239
Brunswick Dock, i. 654, 700
— Road, ii. 399, 493
— Street, ii. 108
Building, summary of, i. 565
Bucknell, Sir Wm., i. 140, 145, 149
Bullbaiting, ii. 13
Bullin and Molyneux, contest for mayoralty, i. 437
Bullock's Museum, ii. 165
Bunnel, James, ii. 70
Burdett, Sir Francis, Bart., i. 404
Burgages, i. 12, 31, 41, 80
Burgesses, i. 30, 232, 249
Bushell, Molly, ii. 406
— Wm., ii. 99
Butler, Dame Isabella, i. 39
— Sir Thos., ii. 534
Byrom, Wm., ii. 425
— Street, ii. 351
Byron, Col. Lord, i. 109, 113

CALDERSTONES, i. 3
Caledonian Schools, ii. 274
Cambridge, Duke of, visit of, i. 599, 610
Camden, William, i. 75
Camden Street, ii. 361
Campbell, Colin, ii. 422
— George, ii. 428
— Thomas, i. 405
Camperdown, victory of, i. 281
Canada Dock, i. 680, 687
Canals; Leeds and Liverpool, i. 238; ii. 42, 86
— Sankey, i. 214
— Bridgwater, i. 235
Canning, Rt. Hon. George, i. 317, 341, 343, 347, 351, 355, 361, 369, 374, 376, 378, 393, 394, 401, 402, 418, 420, 425, 433, 440, 447, 466, 471
— Statue of, i. 471
— Dock, i. 642, 696
— Street, ii. 295
Canterbury Street, ii. 393
Cardwell, Rt. Hon. Edwd., i. 593, 603
Caroline, Queen, i. 427, 429
— — Procession, i. 430
— — Blacorn's Libel on, i. 430
Carson, Jas., M.D., ii. 232, 358
Caryl Street, ii. 541
Case, George, i. 267, 280, 282
Castle, the, i. 12, 175, 183; ii. 2–10
— ditch, ii. 13
— hey, ii. 140
— hill, ii. 103
— orchard, ii. 140
— Street, ii. 1, 14–28
Catalani, Madame, i. 48

CHU

Catholic emancipation, i. 317, 455, 481
Cattle Market, i. 485; ii. 72, 460
Cave, Sir Ambrose, i. 63
Caxton Printing Offices, i. 435; ii. 224
Cazneau Street, ii. 367
Cemetery, Ancient, i. 4
Cemeteries; Anfield, ii. 481
— Baptist, ii. 399
— Jewish, ii. 323, 512
— Necropolis, ii, 401
— Parish, ii. 288
— St. Mary's Kirkdale, ii. 474
— St. James's, i. 465; ii. 298, 301
— Toxteth, ii. 567
Cemeteries closed, i. 605
Chadwick Street, ii. 53
Chaffers, Richd., ii. 341
Chalmer, Francis, i. 295, 298
Chancellor of the Duchy, i. 63
Channel Fleet, visit of, i. 634
Chantries, i. 54, 79; ii. 63, 64
Chapel Street, ii. 71–73
Charles I., i. 102
— conveyance from, i. 94, 133
Charles II., address to, i. 152
Charlotte, Princess, death of, i. 390
Charters, i. 12, 13, 28, 34, 36, 58, 90, 149, 154, 163, 190, 211, 328
Charters, spurious, i. 8
Chatham Place, ii. 522
Chatsworth Street, ii. 522
Cheapside, ii. 81
Cheesemongers of London, i. 164
Chester, disputes with, i. 73, 85
Chetham Humphrey, i. 95
China, opening of trade to, i. 483, 484, 530
Cholera, i. 518, 599
Choral Society, ii. 354
Chorley, Rd., executed, i. 190
Chorley Street, ii. 99
Christian, Philip, ii. 342
Christian, Prince and Princess, i. 628
Christian Street, ii. 350
Churches and Chapels; Established—
St. Aidan's, ii. 467
All Saints', ii. 368, 378
All Souls', ii. 87
St. Andrew's, ii. 273
St. Anne's, ii. 354
St. Augustine's, ii. 394
Blind, Church for the, ii. 216
St. Bride's, ii. 297
St. Catherine's, Temple Court, ii. 120
— Abercromby Square, ii. 261
— Edgehill, ii. 523
Christ Church, Hunter Street, ii. 353
— — Everton, ii. 419
— — Kensington, ii. 506

CHU

Churches and Chapels; Established—
St. Chrysostom's, ii. 445
St. Clement's, Windsor, ii. 567
St. Cleopas, ii. 546
St. Colomba's, ii. 250
St. David's, ii. 241
Emmanuel, ii. 443
St. George's, ii. 11
— Everton, ii. 427
Holy Trinity, St. Anne Street, ii. 357
— — Parliament Street, ii. 543
St. James's, ii. 538
— — the Less, ii. 87
St. John's, ii. 210
— — the Baptist, ii. 553
St. Jude's, ii. 507
St. Luke's, ii. 274
St. Mark's, ii. 316
St. Mary's, Harrington Street, ii. 149
— — Edgehill, ii. 510
— — Kirkdale, ii. 473
— — Bootle, ii. 461
St. Margaret's, ii. 569
St. Martin's in-the-Fields, ii. 87
St. Matthias's, ii. 53
St. Matthew's ii. 76, 377
— — Hill Street, ii. 543
St. Michael's, ii. 328
— — Toxteth Park, ii. 560
St. Nathaniel's, ii. 524
St. Nicholas's, i. 33, 54; ii. 58–70
St. Paul's, ii. 44
— — Prince's Park, ii. 559
St. Peter's, ii. 173
— — Everton, ii. 420
St. Philip's, ii. 281
St. Saviour's, ii. 297
St. Silas's, Pembroke Place, ii. 363
— — High Park Street, ii. 553
St. Simon's, ii. 218
St. Stephen's, ii. 351
— — the Martyr, ii. 519
St. Thomas's, ii. 323
— — Warwick Street, ii. 544
St. Timothy's, ii. 398
West Derby, ii. 491
— — Road, ii. 503
Roman Catholic—
St. Alban's, ii. 56
St. Alexander's, ii. 469
St. Anne's, ii. 522
St. Anthony's, ii. 376
St. Augustine's, ii. 56
Eldon Street, ii. 87
St. Francis Xavier, ii. 396
Holy Cross, ii 136
St. Joseph's, ii. 372
St. Mary's, ii. 77

COB

Roman Catholic—
St. Michael's, ii. 444
St. Nicholas, ii. 241
St. Patrick's, ii. 551
St. Peter's, ii. 319
St. Vincent de Paul, ii. 331
Greek Church, ii. 568
Nonconformists—
Baptist, ii. 195, 214, 250, 286, 351, 352, 359, 366, 396, 399, 439, 516
Friends' Meeting, ii. 115, 353
Independents, ii. 87, 218, 223, 271, 330, 398, 499, 522, 540, 547, 571
Jewish Synagogues, ii. 195, 319
Presbyterian, ii. 87, 218, 238, 273, 277, 287, 296, 361, 377, 445, 466, 484, 559
Unitarian, ii. 167, 272, 289, 554
Wesleyan, ii. 47, 87, 239, 260, 324, 492, 499, 551, 559
Wesleyan Free Church, ii. 378
Apostles, Church of, ii. 296
Benn's Garden, ii. 107
Cockspur Street, ii. 81
Octagon, Temple Court, ii. 120
Russell Street, ii. 248
Sir Thomas's Buildings, ii. 123
Welsh (various denominations), ii. 260, 393, 406, 410, 473, 509, 541, 543, 552, 570
Zion, ii. 190
Church Street, ii. 164, 173
— — Everton, ii. 435
Church Lane, ii. 177
Church rates, meeting on, i. 559
— — abolished, i. 605
Churchstile House, ii. 70
Churches, endowment for, i. 542
Circus, Olympic, ii. 350
— Street, ii. 350
City of Dublin Steam Packet Co., ii. 302
Claremont, ii. 474
Clarence, Duke of (William IV.), visit of, i. 308
— Dock, i. 654, 691
— Street, ii. 247
Clarke, Wm., ii. 413, 424
Clay, Henry, i. 306, 308
Clayton, Wm., i. 168, 173, 175, 176, 177, 181, 185, 186; ii. 8
— Square, ii. 191
Cleveland, John, i. 179, 180, 186
— Wm., i. 192, 196
— Square, ii. 322
Clyde steamers, i. 408
Coal, shipment of, i. 131; ii. 691
Cobbett, Wm., i. 412, 483
Cobbler's Close, ii. 435
Cobden, Rd., i. 579
Coburg Dock, i. 651, 699

COC

Cockpit, i. 65
Cockshutt, John, i. 179, 212
Cockspur Street, ii. 80
Coffin, Sir Isaac, i. 311
Colchester, Richard, Lord, i. 148, 158, 160, 162
— Thomas, Lord, i. 148, 159
College, Shaw Street, i. 575, 584; ii. 394
— Lane, ii. 169
Collingwood executed, i. 190
Collingwood Dock, i. 669
Colquitt, John, ii. 171
— Captain Samuel Martin, R.N. i. 490, 511, 512, 516; ii. 430
— Street, ii. 319
Commerce, summary of, i. 565
Commercial crises, i. 458, 560, 625
— excitement, i. 458, 622
Common Council, i. 81, 90, 107, 109, 110, 116, 117, 118, 134, 145, 152, 157, 191, 263
Common Hall, i. 91, 264, 452, 481
Compton House, ii. 177
Concentric Society, i. 404
Conservative Association, dinner, i. 556
Contributions in aid of Government, i. 281
Convents, ii. 264, 509
Cook, Richard, i. 44
Copperas Hill, ii. 226
Coppock, Revd. Thomas, i. 205, 206, 207
Corbett, Robert, i. 60, 62, 67
Corn Exchange, i. 329; ii. 108
Corn Laws, public meetings on, i. 456, 465, 579, 588
Corporation, income of, i. 75
— notes, i. 269
Corporation and Test Acts, repeal, dinner, i. 478
Corporate Reform Petition, inquiry and report, i. 524
Cotesworth, William, i. 201
Cotton trade introduced, i. 237
Cotton factories, ii. 85, 224, 468
Council Reform proposed, i. 265
— first reformed, elected, i. 549
— Radical, dismissed, i. 582
County meetings, i. 100, 385
'Courier' Newspaper, ii. 18
Court of Requests, i. 208
Covent Garden, ii. 94
Crabtree, Abm. ii. 562
Crabtree Lane, ii. 291
Cragg, John, ii. 82
Cranfield, Lord, i. 96
Creevey, Thos., i. 342, 343, 351, 361
Cressingham, Hugh de, i. 22
Creswell Creswell, i. 570, 581, 583
Crimean war, i. 608
— peace rejoicings, i. 611

DER

Crompton, Dr., i. 385, 418
— Revd. Thos., ejected, i. 124
Crookenden, Revd., ii. 250
Cropper, Jas., ii. 548
— Benson & Co., ii. 167
Crosse family, i. 25; ii. 62, 124
— John, i. 66, 67, 68, 74; ii. 126
— Hall, i. 197; ii. 126, 127
Cumberland, William, Duke of, ii. 305
— Street, ii. 124
Cunliffe, Sir Ellis, Bart., i. 202, 213, 228, 233, 235
— Foster, i. 213
Currency, gold, i. 406
Currie, Jas., M.D., i. 255, 272
— Wm. Wallace, i. 476
Customs, inspection, i. 177
Custom House, old, ii. 92, 156
— — new, ii. 161
Cymric period, i. 4

DALE STREET, ii. 112
— — view in 1794, ii. 114
— — — in 1804, ii. 115
Daltera, Jos., ii. 172
Danish settlement and names, i. 6; ii. 449
Dannett, Revd. Henry, ii. 215
Daulby, Danl., ii. 362
— Street, ii. 362
Dawson, Capt. Jas., i. 204
— Col. Pudsey, i. 282, 285; ii. 280
Deacon, Dr., i. 204, 207, 208
Deaf and Dumb Institution, i. 464; ii. 260
Deare, John, ii. 180
Dearness of provisions, and distress, i. 286, 329, 331, 335, 383, 414, 573, 583, 608, 621
Declaration, loyal, i. 386
Defence, preparations for, i. 102, 106, 189, 203, 219, 246, 279, 300
Defoe, Danl., i. 182
Denmark, George, Prince of, visit, i. 160
Denison, Rt. Hon. Jno. Evelyn, i. 490, 495, 503, 512
Denison Street, ii. 49
Dennison, Churchwarden, i. 391
Depression of trade, i. 268, 285, 333, 406, 459, 484
Derby, William de Ferrers, Earl of, i. 20
— Earls of, (Stanleys)—
Edward, 3rd Earl, i. 58, 63, 66; ii. 534
Henry, 4th Earl, i. 70, 74
James, 7th Earl, i. 94, 100, 101, 103, 104; ii. 91

DER

Derby, Earls of, (Stanleys)—
Charles, 8th Earl, i. 123, 140, 141, 148
William Richard George, 9th Earl, i. 151, 160, 175
James, 10th Earl, i. 183, 201
Edward Geoffry, 14th Earl, i. 607, 619, 671
Derby road, ii. 466
Derrick, Saml, letters of, i. 2.5
Devonshire Place, ii. 421
Dicky Sam, origin of sobriquet, ii. 1
Dingle, ii. 548
Diorama, ii. 270
Disfranchisement Bill, i. 517, 527
Dispensaries, ii. 87, 180
Dobson, Matthew, M.D., ii. 149
— Richd., ii. 418
— Townclerk, i. 92
Docks, i. 185, 209, 523, 566
— history of the, i. 636–686
— general view, i. 686–704
Dock Acts of Parliament, i. 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 647, 648, 652, 654, 655, 660, 662–671, 672, 673, 674, 677
— Estate, frauds on, i. 451
— rating by Parish, i. 682–686
Dock Trust, original, i. 640
— alterations in, i. 648, 673, 677
Dock warehouses, i. 656
— — report on, i. 657
— — controversy, i. 659
Dockyard, i. 699
Dog kennels, ii. 364, 465
Domery, Charles, ii. 50
Douglas, Sir Howard, Bart., i. 522, 537, 563
Douglas River made navigable, i. 192
Drew, Saml., ii. 226
Drinkwater, Jno., ii. 424
Drury Lane, ii. 100
Dry bridge, ii. 97
Dryden Street, ii. 375
Dry dock, i. 642
Dublin Street, ii. 54
Dubois, John, i. 151
Ducking stool, i. 245; ii. 255
Duke Street, ii. 304
— — Edgehill, ii. 522
Dunbar, Sir Geo., Bart., i. 280; ii. 188, 236
Dutton Street, ii. 49
Dyson, T. F., ii. 413

'EARL MOIRA' steamer lost, i. 436
Earle, John, i. 180
— Thomas, ii. 525
— Col. Wm., ii. 418, 423
— William, ii. 273

EWA

Earle, Willis, ii. 261
— Street, ii. 39, 44
East India Co.'s Charter, i. 266, 367
— — trade opened, i. 367, 371
Eaton, Revd. Robt., ejected, i. 124
Edgehill, ii. 517
Edge Lane, ii. 510
Edinburgh, Alfred, Duke of, visit, i. 627
Edmund, Earl of Lancaster, i. 22
Edmund Street, ii. 44
Edward I., i. 22
— II., i. 24, 25; ii. 5
— III., i. 25, 28, 29
— VI., i. 57
Election of deputy mayor and others, i. 155
Elections, Parliamentary, i, 23, 24, 57, 62, 67, 77, 88, 90, 94, 97, 123, 137, 148, 151, 154, 158, 160, 162, 166, 168, 173, 176, 181, 185, 186, 187, 192, 196, 199, 201, 202, 228, 236, 240, 247, 250, 258, 275, 295, 309, 318, 341, 374, 393, 418, 444, 461, 475, 485, 489, 500, 511, 521, 537, 570, 580, 583, 593, 603, 604, 609, 612, 617, 626, 628
Election dinners, i. 344, 363, 402, 425, 494, 512, 538, 571
Election squibs, i. 229, 259, 276, 296, 310, 320, 345, 347, 358, 363, 377, 396
Elgin, Earl of, visit, i. 608
Ellames, Peter, ii. 307
Ellesmere Basin, i. 696
Elliott Street, ii. 123, 191
Elmes, Harvey Lonsdale, ii. 200, 395
Elphinstone, Howard, i. 570
Embargo on ships, i. 307
'Emilie St. Pierre,' (ship) ii. 412
Enfield, Wm., LL.D., ii. 107
Erskine, Lord, eulogy on Liverpool, i. 703
Escheats, i. 107, 117
Esmedune, Manor of, ii. 520, 527
Essex, Earl of, i. 68
'Etna' steamer, i. 397
Evans, Eyre, i. 664
Everard, Wm., ii. 119
Everton, ii. 381
— Coffee House, ii. 405
— Crescent, ii. 390
— Road, ii. 399
— Terrace, ii. 410, 414
— Toffy, ii. 406
— Village, ii. 387, 404
Ewart, Wm., i. 490, 495, 500, 521, 537, 560, 571
— and Denison, election, i. 490
— — — petition against, i. 495
— — — report upon, i. 498

EWA

Ewart, Jos. Chris., i. 603, 609, 612, 617, 626
Exchange, i. 329; ii. 35
Exhibitions of Art, i. 239, 332

FABIUS, Danl., M.D., ii. 351, 399
Fair, Liverpool, ii. 25
Falkner family, ii. 297, 511
— Square, ii. 256, 296
— Street, ii. 291
Fancy balls, i. 482, 529
— fairs, i. 597; ii. 480
Fawcett, Wm., ii. 327
Fazakerly family, ii. 38
— Street, ii. 38
Fee Farm leases, i. 20, 21, 30, 35, 36, 37, 42, 43, 44, 45, 55, 57, 87
Fenwick, Dorothy, ii. 97
— Street, ii. 97
Ferrers, William de, Earl of Derby, i. 20; ii. 487
— Robert de, Earl of Derby, i. 21
Ferries, i. 695, 702; ii. 543
Festivals, musical, i. 251, 286, 448, 489, 529, 557; ii. 175
Fires, i. 299, 446, 543
Fish market, ii. 106
Fitzadam, Wm., i. 35; ii. 61
Fitzmaurice, Lord Thos., ii. 188
Fitzwarine, Henry, i. 10
Flashes, the, i. 229; ii. 83
Fleet Street, ii. 319
Floating bath, i. 373
'Florida' cruiser, i. 622
Fogg, Revd. Jno., ejected, i. 124
Folly, the, ii. 347
— fair, ii. 347
Fontenoy Street, ii. 134
Foresta, Carta de, ii. 487, 528
— Perambulatio de, ii. 529
Forged notes, meeting respecting, i. 392
Formby, Mrs. Margery, i. 136
Forts. *See* batteries.
Forum, the, ii. 189
Foster, John, i. 652
— Jno., jun., ii. 238
— Thos., Townclerk, i. 534, 541, 551
Fox, George, i. 147
Fox's India Bill, i. 250
France, war with, i. 215, 242, 267, 300
Franceys, S. & T., ii. 242
Free Library and Museum, ii. 344
— — — — first stone laid, i. 612
— — — — opened, i. 620
Freedom of borough, sale of, i. 191, 249
Freemasons' Hall, ii. 270
Freemen, meeting of unbribed, i. 500
French prisoners, i. 281; ii. 50
— Revolution (1789), i. 257

GOV

French Revolution (1830), i. 485
— — (1848), i. 594
Froude on Henry VIII., i. 50
Fry, Mrs. Eliz., i. 480
Fulwood Moor, county meeting on, i. 100
Furnesis, Gilbert de, i. 10

GALLOWS MILLS, ii. 361
Gambier Terrace, ii. 295
Gaol, Borough, i. 252, 335; ii. 49, 51
— County, ii. 475
Garrison, i. 120
Gascoyne, Bamber, i. 247
— Bamber, jun., i. 247, 248, 251, 258, 261, 275
— Gen. Isaac, i. 275, 279, 295, 298, 312, 314, 319, 341, 343, 351, 394, 401, 418, 463, 486, 498, 502, 521
Gas lighting, i. 372, 404; ii. 134, 315, 366
Gee, Edmund, i. 55
Geological formation, i. 2
George III., recovery of, i. 256
— jubilee, i. 331
— death, i. 414
— statue, i. 331
George IV., proclamation, i. 416
— coronation, i. 435
— decease, i. 485
George's Dock, i. 643
— — Basin, i. 693
— Street, ii. 39
Gerard, Sir Thos. (temp. Mary), i. 58
— (temp. James I.), i. 90
— Street, ii. 351
Gibraltar Row and Street, ii. 49
Gibson, John, R.A., ii. 242
Gildart, Francis, i. 202
— James, i. 202; ii. 307
— Richd., i. 202
Gilead House, ii. 505
Gill Street, ii. 252
Girlington, Sir John, i. 99
Gladstone, Sir John, i. 347, 361, 450, 453, 466, 483, 514; ii. 280.
— Right Hon. Wm. Ewart, i. 361, 584; ii. 281
Gleave, Dr., ii. 403
Gloucester Place, ii. 497
— Prince William of, i. 304; ii. 431
Gold currency, opposition to, i. 406
Golightly, Thos., i. 264
Goore, Charles, ii. 231
Gore, John, ii. 23
Goree warehouses, i. 643
— fire at, i. 299; ii. 93
Gothic Hall, ii. 188
Government aid granted, i. 286, 333, 336

GRA

Gradwell Street, ii. 318
Grafton Street, ii. 541
Graham, Right Hon. Sir Jas., i. 606, 677
Grammar school, ii. 63
Grants from Parliament, i. 119
Graves, S. R., i. 626
Graving Docks, i. 681, 700
Grayson, Edwd., duel with Sparling, ii. 430
— Street, ii. 336
Great Crosshall Street, ii. 135
'Great Eastern,' steamer, i. 621
— George Square, ii. 329
— George Street, ii. 333
— Homer Street, ii. 420
— Howard Street, ii. 49
'Great Liverpool' steamer, i. 572
— Mersey Street, ii. 472
Greece, public meeting on behalf of, i. 451
Green, Isaac, i, 247
— Guy, ii. 149
Greenland Street, ii. 337
— whale fishery, i. 698; ii. 337
Gregson family, ii. 400
— Matthew, i. 239; ii. 16, 356, 365
Gregson's well, ii. 399
Grenville's Act (1747), i. 194
Griffith, Alice, i. 45
— David, Ap. i. 45
Grinfield Terrace, ii. 521
Guild, merchant, i. 14
Gymnasium, ii. 287, 523

HABEAS CORPUS ACT, suspension, i. 386, 388
Hacking, John, ii. 74
Hacking's Hey, ii. 75, 115
Hall, Peter, i. 179
Halsall family, ii. 392
Hamilton, Lady Emma, ii. 99
Hanse, i. 15
Hardman family, ii. 212, 281
Hargreaves, Jas., ii. 80
Harper, Wm., ii. 409
Harringtons of Huyton, i. 174
Harrington Dock Co., i. 661
— proposed new town, ii. 537
— Street, ii. 147
Harris, Revd. Raymond, i. 255; ii. 77
Harrison, Capt. drowned, i. 620
Hartley, Jesse, i. 652
Harvey family, ii. 82
Hatton Garden, ii. 83, 134
Havannah frigate, i. 334
Haven, i. 61, 637
Haymarkets, ii. 195, 258, 379
Headless cross, ii. 434
Heath, the Great, ii. 196, 346, 533

HOS

Hemans, Mrs. Felicia Dorothea, ii. 309
Henry I., i. 8
— II., i. 8
— III., i. 13
— IV., i. 36
— V., i. 37
— VI., i. 38
— VII., i. 44
— VIII., i. 45
Herculaneum Dock, i. 681, 702
— Pottery, ii. 545
Hesketh, Sir Thos., i. 63
Heyes of Everton, ii. 409
Heywood, Revd. Nathaniel, ejected, i. 124
— family, i. 263, 311; ii. 19, 171
Heyworth family, ii. 425
Higginson, Jon., ii. 412
High Cross, i. 13
— level bridge, ii. 346
— school, ii. 294
— Street, ii. 28
— — Edgehill, ii. 521
Hilton, Wm. R.A., ii. 12
Hinrichsen tragedy, ii. 331
Hobhouse, Sir J. C. (Lord Broughton), i. 413
Hockenhall Alley, ii. 131
Hodgson, Adam, ii. 438
— David, ii. 417
— of Everton, ii. 407
Holcroft, John, i. 96, 116
— Thomas, i. 55
Holland, Col. Rd., i. 103, 107
— Sir Robert de, i. 27; ii. 534
Holme, Saml., i. 531, 556, 559, 571; ii. 238
— family, ii. 422
Holmes, Jno. and Henry, ii. 390
Holt, George, ii. 291, 511
Hongfields, ii. 386, 439
Hope, Saml., ii. 411
— Hall, ii. 263
— Street, ii. 284
Horrox, Jeremiah, ii. 561
Horse races, i. 65
— show, ii. 471
Horses, Liverpool, ii. 465
Horsfall, Charles, ii. 418
— George, ii. 565
— Robert, ii. 569
— Thos. Berry, i. 604, 612, 617, 626; ii. 419
Hospitals—
Children's, ii. 287
Lying-in, ii. 287
Northern, ii. 56
Southern, ii. 544
Stanley, ii. 470
Hospital Sunday, i. 630

HOT

Hotels, Inns and Taverns (noteworthy)—
Adelphi, ii. 228
Angel, ii. 118
Bates's, ii. 142
Black Horse and Rainbow, ii. 113
Bowling Green House, ii. 233
Boyd's, ii. 403
Brown Cow, ii. 142
Bull, ii. 134
Bull and Punchbowl, ii. 116, 117
Castle, ii. 142
Coach and Horses, ii. 495
Cross Keys, ii. 114, 117
Crown, ii. 107
George and Dragon, ii. 115
Golden Lion, ii. 115
Liverpool Arms, ii. 25
Liver, Kirkdale, ii. 473
Merchants' Coffeehouse, ii. 69
Mersey, ii. 70
Mill Stone, ii. 25
Peacock, ii. 553
Pine Apple, ii. 554
Ranelagh House, ii. 232
St. George's, ii. 427
Saracen's Head, ii. 128
Star and Garter, ii. 167
Waterloo, ii. 231
White Bear, ii. 131
Howard, John, i. 245, 252; ii. 91
Howe, Lord, great victory, i. 270
Hughes, John, M.D., ii. 544
Hundred Court, i. 13, 57
Hunter Street, ii. 351
Huskisson, Rt. Hon. Wm., i. 444, 459, 475, 485
— — — — presentation of plate to, i. 460
— — — — death, burial, and monument, i. 489; ii. 300
Huskisson Dock, i. 673
Hutchinson, Capt. Wm., i. 217
Hyde, Col. Robt., i. 108
Hygeia Street, ii. 441

IBRAHIM PACHA, visit of, i. 588
Illuminations, i. 364
Improvement Acts, i. 253, 457
— — expenditure on, i. 569
Indian Famine, public meeting on, i. 621
— Mutiny, i. 612, 614
Infirmary, new, i. 436; ii. 254
— old, ii. 198
Inquisitions, i. 26, 27, 30; ii. 4, 487
Institute, Liverpool, ii. 292
Ireland, Sir Gilbert, i. 123, 138, 140, 142, 148
— family, i. 123, 247

KIN

Irish Clergy, meeting on, i. 549, 569
— Church, meeting on, i. 531
— distress, meetings on, i. 439, 528
— Rebellion, i. 107, 282
— repeal meetings, i. 595
Iron foundries—
Mersey, ii. 82
Forrester's, ii. 85
Fawcett's, ii. 324
Hamilton's, ii. 524
Irving, Revd. Edwd., i. 454; ii. 278
Islington, ii. 360
— Terrace, ii. 350

JAMES II., letter from, i. 154
— — order from, i. 156
James, Mrs. Isabel, ii. 104
— Roger, ii. 104
— Street, ii. 104
Jamsetjee Jeejeebhoy, Sir Cursetjee, i. 620
Japanese Ambassadors, i. 623
Jeffery, J. R., ii. 178
Jeffries, Judge, i. 153
Jermyn, Harry, i. 94
John, King, i. 9; ii. 4
— — visits Lancashire, i. 11
— — hunting staff, ii. 528
John of Gaunt, i. 33, 36; ii. 62
John Street, ii. 118
Johnson, Revd. Jno., i. 206; ii. 366
— Joseph, ii. 23
— Thos., senr., i. 128, 136, 163, 165, 173; ii. 122
— Sir Thomas, i. 165, 173, 174, 176, 177, 178, 179, 181, 184, 185, 187, 192, 213; ii. 8, 174
— Thomas (mayor 1767), i. 235
Johnsons of Everton, ii. 408
Jones, Paul, i. 243, 246
Joseph Ellas, ii. 142
Jubilee Street, ii. 586
Judges' Lodgings, ii. 502
Juggler Street, ii. 28, 30

KALEIDOSCOPE, ii. 146
Kaye, Thos., ii. 18
Kean Edmund, i. 371, 432
Kemble, Jno. Philip, i. 381
Kensington, ii. 506
Kent, Richard, ii. 313
— Street, ii. 313
Kenyon's steps, ii. 12
Key Street, ii. 76
King Alfred, ii. 415
— Street, ii. 158
King's Dock, i. 644
— Rentally (1533), i. 46

Kinnear, Jno., trial of, i. 407
Kirkdale, ii. 449
— Dock extension, ii. 462
— Village, ii. 460, 473

LADIES WALK, Oldhall Street, ii. 40
— — Duke Street, ii. 307
Lancaster, Earls of, i. 22, 24, 25, 26; ii. 488, 534
— Dukes of, i. 30, 32
Lancelot's Hey, ii. 72
Land, comparative value of, i. 49
Landing Stage (George's), i. 670, 694
— — Prince's, i. 680, 692
Lane, Sir George, i. 139
Langham, Sir John, i. 142
Lardner, Dr. Dionysius, i. 571
Lassell, Wm., F.R.S., ii. 499
Lathorn, Richd., i. 54
— Sir Thomas, i. 42; ii. 88
— House, i. 104; ii. 455
Lavater, Jno. Caspar, ii. 237
Lawrence, Chas., i. 449; ii. 512
Leece Street, ii. 276
Leeds and Liverpool Canal, i. 238
Leeds Street, ii. 46
Legh, Sir Piers, i. 58, 66
— Thomas, i. 154
Leigh, John, ii. 54, 124, 190, 467
— Roger, i. 320, 322
Leland, John, i. 54
Levies, i. 85, 160, 274, 301, 303
Lewis, T. D., ii. 97, 188
Leyland, Thos., i. 310, 374, 380, 418, 433; ii. 106, 159, 308
Liberties, riding the, ii. 495
Library and Museum. *See* Free Library.
Licensed Victuallers' Institution, ii. 497
Liddell, Hon. H. T., i. 604
Lifting, i. 292; ii. 347
Lightholder, Thos., ii. 44, 210
Lighting street, i. 123
Lighthouses, opposition to, i. 145
— erected, i. 472, 644
Lilburne, Col. John, i. 122
Lime Street, ii. 213
Linaker, Mrs., ii. 254
Lind, Jenny, i. 597
Litherland, Peter, ii. 176
Liver Theatre, ii. 184
Liverpool, Earl of, i. 281, 341
— Institute, ii. 293
— Library (Lyceum), ii. 119
Livingstone, David, LL.D., i. 614
Lodge, Adam, i. 417
— Lane, ii. 565
London, City of, trial with, i. 282
— Road, ii. 505
Long Parliament, i. 97
Lord Street, ii. 141
Lordship, sale of, i. 94
'Lottie Sleigh' (ship), explosion of, i. 625
Louis XVI., execution of, i. 267
Love Lane, ii. 48, 53
Low Hill, i. 6; ii. 492, 494
Lunatic Asylum, ii. 200
Lyceum, ii. 268
Lyme, Oliver, i. 156, 161

MACCLESFIELD, Earl of, i. 160, 175
McAvoy, Miss, i. 388
McGeorge, John, ii. 406
MacGregor, Alexr., ii. 423
MacGuffie, Jno., ii. 21
Mackenzie, Forbes, i. 603
McNeile, Rev. Hugh, D.D., i. 536, 552, 557, 559, 571
Machinery, prohibition of export of, i. 334
Mackworth, Sir Digby, Bart., i. 593
Maiden's Green, ii. 42
Mail Coaches, i. 252; ii. 129
Malibran, Madame, i. 529, 557
Manchester, i. 101, 105, 107, 188, 204, 207
— Basin, i. 646
— Street, ii. 123, 127
Mandamus against Councillors, i. 201
Manesty's Lane, ii. 170
Mann's Island, i. 696
Manners, Lord John, i. 593
Manufactures, i. 209
Map of the town, first, i. 197
Mardyke Fort, ii. 72
Marine parades, i. 690
Markets, i. 198, 210, 439; ii. 10, 27, 35, 192, 252, 333, 379
Marshall Street, ii. 150
Martineau, Rev. James, ii. 168
Martindale, Adam, ii. 454
Mary, Queen of Scots, i. 67
Marybone, ii. 157
Mason, Edwd., ii. 517
— Street, ii. 517
— — Edgehill, ii. 521
Mather, Revd. Rd., ii. 555, 562
Maudit, Jasper, i. 162, 166, 179
Maule, Right Hon. Fox (Earl of Dalhousie), i. 587
Maury, James, ii. 280
May Day procession, ii. 471
Mayer Museum, ii. 346
Mayor first mentioned, i. 31; ii. 61
Mayoralty, contested elections for, i. 281, 369, 412, 437, 472
Meadows Street, ii. 367
Mechanics and Apprentices' Library, i. 460

Mechanics' Institute, i. 456, 545; ii. 292
Medley, Rev. Saml., ii. 351
Medical Institution, ii. 262
Meldrum, Sir Jno., i. 113, 116
Members, payment of, i. 87
Mercer, George, ii. 410
Merchants' Coffee House, ii. 69
'Mercury' Newspaper, ii. 145
Meredith, Sir Wm., Bart., i. 228, 231, 233, 234, 236, 240, 247, 248, 251
Mersey, River, i. 2, 4, 7
— — upper, made navigable, i. 166
— and Irwell made navigable, i. 192
— bowmen, ii. 373
— Steel and Iron Works, ii. 542
Milan decree, i. 325
Milehouse Rocks, ii. 52
Mill Lane (Great Howard Street), ii. 53
— — Everton, ii. 440–1
Mill Street, ii. 539
Miller's Castle, ii. 461
Milner's Patent Safe Works, ii. 524
Minister appointed, i. 120
Minerva Newsroom, ii. 189
Molines, William de, ii. 528
Molyneux family, ii. 534, 536
— Mrs Anne, ii. 212
— Caryl, Lord. i. 103, 112, 132, 160, 169
— — — disputes with, i. 132–6
— Laurence, i. 43
— Lord (3rd Earl of Sefton), i. 394, 401, 510, 516
— Sir Richard (temp. Henry VI.), i. 38
— Sir Richard (temp. Ed. VI.), i. 57, 58, 63
— Mr. Richard (temp. Eliz.), i. 63
— Sir Richd. (temp. Jas. I.), i. 85, 87
— Sir Richard, Viscount Maryborough (temp. Chas. I.), i. 94, 100, 105, 106, 113
— Sir William (temp. Ed. III.), i. 30
— Sir William (temp. Henry VIII.), i. 55
— William (temp. Eliz.), i. 66
— William, 4th Viscount, i. 175, 183
Monasteries, Suppression of, i. 52
Money, comparative value of, i. 47
Monmouth, Duke of, i. 139, 152
Moores or Mores of Bankhall, i. 93; ii. 37, 451
More, Sir Wm. de la, (temp. Ed. III.), i. 30
Mora, Jno. de, (temp. Ed. III.), ii. 112
More, John, (temp. Ed. VI.), i. 57
More, Thomas (temp. Mary), i. 57, 59
Moore, John (Regicide), i. 96, 97, 98, 106, 109, 111, 112, 116; ii. 453
Moore, Sir Edward, Bart., i. 112, 129, 144, 151; ii. 456
Moore, Sir Cleave, Bart., i. 151, 173, 174, 185; ii. 456

Moore Rental, i. 126; ii. 14, 71, 81, 93, 98, 102, 113, 122, 154, 229, 531
Moore, Jno. Bramley, i. 597, 604; ii. 462
Moorfields, ii. 79
Moor Street, ii. 102
Morrall, Cyrus, ii. 315
Morris, James, i. 537
Moss Lake, ii. 228, 256, 534
— Street, ii. 362
Mount Gardens, ii. 298
— Pleasant, ii. 228, 233
— Street, ii. 292
— Vernon, ii. 509
Mulock, Thomas, ii. 19
Municipal Offices, ii. 130
— inquiry, i. 529, 540
Murray, Lord Henry, i. 262
— Street, ii. 190
Music Hall, ii. 267
Musical Society, ii. 354
Musters of Soldiers, i. 58, 66

NAME of Liverpool, i. 19
Napier, Admiral Sir Chas., i. 579
Negroes, sale of, i. 225
Nelson Dock, i. 669
Nelson's Monument, i. 307, 365
Netherfields, ii. 386
Netherfield Road, ii. 415, 421
New Brighton, ii. 426
— quay, ii. 47
Newsham Estate, ii. 501
Newton, Revd. John, ii. 22
Nichol, Jno., M.P., i. 527
Nicholas, Grand Duke (Emperor), i. 385
Night alarm, i. 304
Night Asylum, i. 484
Nile, battle of, i. 282
Norris, Alexr., i. 162
— Edward, M.D., i. 169, 187, 235
— Richd., i. 163, 166, 179, 181, 185, 186, 201, 213
— Thomas, i. 158, 159, 160, 163, 164, 166
— Sir William (temp. Mary), i. 57
— Sir William (temp. Charles I.), ii. 454
— Sir William, Bart. (temp. Anne), i. 164, 166, 168, 173
Northumberland Terrace, ii. 426
Nurse's Institution, ii. 254

OBSERVATORY, i. 692
'Ocean Monarch,' loss of, i. 596
O'Connell, Danl., i. 556
Odd House, ii. 436
Offices, sale of, i. 87

OLD

Old Dock, i. 639, 640, 649, 650
— Fall Well, ii. 193
— Hall, ii. 36, 43
— Ropery, ii. 99
Oldhall Street, ii. 37
Oldham Street, ii. 273
Omnibuses introduced, i. 505
Onslow, Arthur, ii. 191
Orange, Prince of, i. 620
— meeting, i. 536
— riots, i. 408
Orders in Council, i. 325, 337
Orleans, Duke of, i. 528
Ormond, Duke of, i. 160
— Street, ii. 39, 78
Orphan Asylum, ii. 259
Oswald, King, i. 8

'PACIFIC,' steamer, lost, i. 611
Paddington, ii. 517
Paddy's Market, ii. 137
Paganini, i. 515
Palatine Club, ii. 265, 269
Palmer, John, death of, ii. 187
Palmerston, Lord, i. 581; visit of, i. 611
Paradise Street, ii. 165
Parish constituted, i. 170
Park, Henry, ii. 191, 269, 430
— Hill, ii. 547
— — House, ii. 547
— Lane, ii. 322
— Road, ii. 550
— Street, ii. 544
Parks, i. 568, 628
— Newsham, ii. 501
— Prince's, ii. 557
— Sefton, ii. 560
— Sheil, ii. 479
— Stanley, ii. 479
— Wavertree, ii. 512
Parkfield, ii. 564
Parliament Fields, ii. 567
— Street, ii. 537
Parr Street, ii. 318
Patten, Thos., i. 166
Pauperism, public meetings on, i. 427, 432
Pavement, improvements in, i. 403
Peace rejoicings, i. 368
— friends of (society), i. 272
Peel, Rt. Hon. Sir Robt., i. 479, 580, 594
Penal Laws relaxed, i. 154
Peninsular and Oriental Co., ii. 302
Pennant Rd., Lord Penrhyn, i. 235, 236, 240, 247, 248, 251, 258, 262
Penningtons (Potters), ii. 342
Perceval, Rt. Hon. Spencer, shot, i. 317, 338

PRO

Perry, George, i. 236; ii. 324, 325
— Sir Erskine, i. 604
Peterloo massacre, i. 410
Philharmonic Hall, ii. 284
Phythian Street, ii. 497
Pinfold Lane, ii. 84
Pitt Street, ii. 324
Plague, the, i. 60, 121, 124
Plumbe Street, ii. 79
Plumbe's Hall, ii. 512
Plumpton, James, ii. 403, 409, 494
Poictou, Roger de, i. 8
Pole, Charles, i. 213, 214, 228, 231
— Wm., i. 201
Police, (1799), i. 292
— proposals for, i. 539
— established, i. 550
— courts, ii. 131
Pool, the, i. 2, 19; ii. 3
— — bridge, ii. 637
— — brook, ii. 530, 532
Pool House, ii. 154
— Lane, ii. 164
Poole of Poole Hall, i. 39
Population, i. 24, 41, 64, 190, 209, 236, 252, 333, 434, 506, 562
Port, boundaries of the, i. 196
Porter, Thos. Colley, ii. 356
— and Robinson, contest for mayoralty, i. 472
— Street, ii. 53
Portugal, King of, visit, i. 605
Post Office, i. 404; ii. 118, 183
Pothouse Lane, ii. 307
Potter, Wm., ii. 419
Potteries, ii. 340, 342, 365
— Herculaneum, ii. 545
Pottinger, Sir Henry, i. 587
Powder magazines, ii. 247
Pownall Square, ii. 80
— Street, ii. 336
Preeson, Thos., ii. 11
Preeson's Row, ii. 11, 106
Prescott, James, i. 157
'President' steamer lost, i. 578
Pressgang, i. 243, 271, 306
Preston, i. 100, 104
Prices, comparative, i. 48
Prince's Dock, i. 373, 435, 650
— Road, ii. 568
'Princess' frigate, i. 304
— Royal, marriage of, i. 615
Printing on Pottery, ii. 148
Prior's Academy, ii. 177
Priory Road, ii. 425
Prison Wient, ii, 58
Privateers, i. 216, 220, 241, 243, 267
Prizes, i. 268, 271
Protestant Association meeting, i. 571
Provident District Society, i. 484

Prussia Street, ii. 44
Pumpfields, ii. 85
Puritanism in Toxteth Park, ii. 555
Pyke family of Everton, ii. 409

QUAKERS' Meeting-House, ii. 115
Queen Victoria. *See* Victoria.
Queen's College, i. 614
— Dock, i. 644, 650, 698
— Hall, ii. 266, 270
— Road, ii. 445
— Street, ii. 39, 43
Quenilda de Kyrkedale, ii. 450
Quo Warranto Writs, i. 45, 265

RADLEY, Jas., ii. 232
Raffles, Revd. Thos., D.D., ii. 272, 330, 521
Railway, Liverpool and Manchester, i. 486
— — — opening, i. 488; ii. 515
— — — Tunnel opened, i. 557
— Liverpool and Bury, ii. 54
— Stations, ii. 55, 76, 209, 231, 339, 464, 542
Rake Lane (Durning Road), ii. 514
— — Kirkdale, ii. 469, 471
Rainford's Garden, ii. 150
Ranelagh House, ii. 232
— Street, ii. 232
Rankyn d'Ipres, i. 33
Ranulf, Earl of Chester, i. 20; ii. 487
Rathbone, Jos., ii. 325
— Wm. 1st, i. 254
— Wm. 2nd, 330
— Wm. 3rd, i. 388, 412, 483, 490, 496, 508, 556; ii. 306
— Wm. 4th, i. 629
Rating of the Docks, i. 682
Rawlinson, Henry, i. 248; ii. 308
Rebellion (1715), i. 187
— (1745), i. 203
Rebels, trial of, i. 189
Receipt Stamps, meeting on, i. 533
Redcross Street, ii. 106
Reeves, Sims, ii. 184
Reform Bill, i. 497, 498, 501, 510, 515, 517
— in Parliament, meetings on, i. 495, 500, 510, 511, 513, 516, 521
Regent Road, ii. 53, 464
Rendal, C.E., i. 668
Rentals, i. 26, 46, 59
Renshaw Street, ii. 270
Revenue Buildings, i. 478, 650; ii. 161
Rice family, Everton, ii. 407
Richard II., i. 34
— III., i. 43
Richmond, Revd. Legh, ii. 46
— Silvester, i. 313, 321, 350, 424
Richmond Sylvester, M.D., i. 156, 161, 211
— fair, ii. 373
— Row, ii. 364, 389
Rickman, Thos., ii. 83, 282
Rigby, Alex., i. 98
— Street, ii. 46
Riots, i. 208, 298, 314, 318, 335, 408, 439, 544, 583, 609, 696; ii. 334
Rivers, Earl, i. 159, 162, 175; ii. 7
River Craft Dock, i. 699
Rivington Water Works, i. 597; ii. 222
Roach, George, ii. 411
Roads, want of, i. 210, 234
Robinson, Nicholas, i. 472, 482
Rodney Street, ii. 276
Roger de Poictou, i. 8
Rogers, Captain Henry, trial, i. 613
Rogerson, Neddy, ii. 437
Roman Catholic meeting, i. 570
— roads, i. 4
Roperies, ii. 192, 230, 251
Roscoe, Wm., i. 239, 254, 257, 258, 266, 272, 306, 309, 314, 318, 321, 327, 330, 342, 352, 363, 366, 505; ii. 234, 242, 257, 320, 360, 548, 566
Roscommon Street, ii. 416
Rose, Joshua, ii. 408, 416, 417
— Hill, ii. 365
— Place, ii. 365
Roskell, Robt., ii. 176
'Rothsay Castle' steamer lost, i. 506
Rotunda, ii. 269
Roughsedge, Revd. R. H., ii. 237
'Royal Charter' steamer lost, i. 618
— Institution, i. 366, 405; ii. 321
Royalist rising, i. 122
Rumford Street, ii. 73
Runcorn, proposed bridge at, i, 381
Rupert, Prince, i., 111, 112; ii. 387
—— Cottages, ii. 404
Rushton, Edwd., sen., ii. 166, 215
— — jun., i. 375, 376, 426; ii. 567
Russell, Lord John, i. 616
— Street, ii. 247, 248
Rutter, John, M.D., ii. 355
Ryley, Saml. Wm., i. 321; ii. 189

SAC and Soc, i. 15
Sadler, John, ii. 147, 343
Said Pacha, i. 623
Sailor's Home, i. 589; ii. 163
St. Anne Street, ii. 355 8
St. Domingo House, ii. 428
— — Lane, ii. 428
St. Edward's Roman Catholic College, ii. 434
St. George's Hall, i. 558, 602, 606; ii. 200-208
St. George's Hill, ii. 423

SAI

St. James's Street, ii. 336
St. Joseph's Roman Catholic Church, accident at, ii. 372
St. Michael's Hamlet, ii. 560
St. Paul's Square, ii. 39, 45
St. Peter's Church-yard, trial respecting, ii. 185
Sale, Sir Robert, visit, i. 587
Salisbury Dock, i. 669, 691
— Estates, ii. 508, 514
— Street, ii. 392
Salt House, i. 697; ii. 334
— — Dock, i. 642
Salt Trade, i. 392
Sandbach, Saml., ii. 356
Sandhills House, ii. 467
— Road, ii. 467
Sandon, Lord, i. 503, 511, 512 521, 537, 570, 580, 607
— Basin, i. 689
— Dock, i. 672
Sankey Canal, i. 214
Saxony, King of, visit, i. 587
Scarborough, Collector of Customs prosecuted, i. 178
Scarisbrick of Scarisbrick, i. 174
Schools—
Crescent, ii. 397
Parish Industrial, ii. 476
St. Augustine's Industrial, ii. 397
St. Francis Xavier's, ii. 397
St. George's, Everton, ii. 428
St. Jude's, Everton, ii. 494
St. Mary's, Edgehill, ii. 522
Wesleyan, Edgehill, ii. 494
School Board Election, i. 630
Schools, Corporation, disputes concerning, i. 552
School Lane, ii. 168
Scolds, bridle for, i. 111
Scoresby, Capt. (Rev. Wm.), i. 607, 699
Scotland Road, ii. 374
Sea Brow, ii. 108
Seal, common, i. 16, 111
Seamen's Hospital, ii. 199, 212
Seel Street, ii. 171, 318
— Thomas, ii. 171
Sefton, Earl of, i. 311, 393, 394, 401, 411; ii. 537
— Park, i. 628, 633
— Street, ii. 541
Sekerston, Ralph, i. 60, 62, 65, 67
Sessions House, i. 480; ii. 73
Shand, Charles, ii. 409
Shaw, family of Everton, ii. 392, 404
— Samuel, ii. 341
— Thomas, ii. 341
— Street, ii. 392
Shaw's Alley, ii. 336
— Brow, ii. 340, 344

STA

Sheil, Rd., ii. 504
Shepherd, Revd. Wm., L.L.D., i. 324, 348, 376, 405, 478, 590
Shipbuilding, i. 237
Ship Money, i. 95
Shipping. *See* Trade Returns.
Ships, impress of, i. 29
— saluting, accident, i. 285
Shuttleworth, Rd., ii. 98, 104
Siamese Ambassadors, i. 615
Sidney, Sir Henry, ii. 125
Sieges, i. 106, 111, 113
Signal Station, Everton, ii. 427
Silkhouse Lane, ii. 75
Silver Cradles, i. 596, 615, 627
Sir Thomas's Buildings, ii. 122
'Sirius,' first steamer to America, i. 571
Slater, Gill, ii. 418
Slave Trade, i. 221, 223, 253, 316
Sleeper's Hill, ii. 438
Smith, Egerton, i. 484; ii. 145
— Revd. Geo., ii. 540
— James (Printer), ii. 282
Smithdown Lane, ii. 520
Smitheden manor, ii. 520, 527, 533
Social Science Congress, i. 616, 621
Soho Street, ii. 359
Solomon, Dr., i. 394; ii. 253, 505
Soult, Marshal, visit, i. 573
Southgate, Wm., murder of, i. 534
South Castle Street, ii. 154
— Hill Road, ii. 547
Spain, public meeting on behalf of, i. 447
Spanish Armada, i. 77
— colonies, i. 451
Sparling, John, i. 263; ii. 311, 422, 429
— Wm., ii. 430
— Street, ii. 337
Spellow House, ii. 477
Spekefield Cottages, ii. 516
Spekelands, ii. 525
Spence, Ben., ii. 246
— William, ii. 245
Spencer, Revd. Thos., i. 334; ii. 271
Stables, corporation, ii. 470
Stafford Street, ii. 361
Stage coaches, i. 234; ii. 128
Stanley, Lord (14th Earl of Derby), i. 575, 607
— — dinner to, i. 619
— Sir Edwd. (temp. Henry VII.), ii. 534
— Sir Edwd., (temp. Eliz.), i. 66
— Sir John (temp. Henry IV.), i. 37; ii. 88
— Thomas (temp. Henry VI.), i. 38
— Thomas (temp. Charles I.), i. 94
— Sir Thomas of Bickerstaffe (temp. Charles I.), i. 98, 101
— Hon. Major Thomas (1778), i. 244

STA

Stanley Hon. William (temp. Charles II.), i. 124, 137
Stanley Dock, i. 669
— Street, ii. 121
— Road, ii. 470
Staniforth, Thos., ii. 231
Statham family, ii. 118, 402
Statues—
Canning, i. 471
Huskisson, i. 489
George III., ii. 363
Queen Victoria, ii. 208
Prince Albert, ii. 208
Wm. Roscoe, ii. 320
Steamers, Atlantic, i. 408, 471
— Clyde, i. 408
— Dee, i. 387
— Mersey, i. 369, 370, 387
Steam tugs, i. 373
Steers, Thomas, i. 639; ii. 11
Stewart, John, i. 664; ii. 237
Stipendiary magistrate appointed, i. 551
Stocks market, ii. 13
Storms, i. 60, 271, 285, 438, 573, 618
Strange, William, Lord, i. 148
Streets, i. 28, 197, 236, 238, 290
Street improvements, i. 252, 288
Stretton, Revd. Thos., ii. 248
Strikes of workmen, i. 446
Stythe, Revd. Robt., i. 195
Submarine Forest, ii. 52
Subsidies, i. 30, 88
Sugar trade, i. 129; ii. 116
Sunday Protection, public meeting, i. 610
Sunday schools established, i. 352
Sweating sickness, i. 56
Syddall, Thos., senr., i. 188
— Thos., junr., i. 204, 206, 207
Sydenham, Captain of the Blue-coats, i. 67
Syers, George, ii. 45, 424
— Robert, ii. 389, 423

TALL HOUSE, ii. 543
Tarleton, Gen. Banastre, i. 244, 251, 258, 275, 277, 278, 279, 295, 298, 309, 313, 318, 343, 351, 352; ii. 95
Tarleton, Clayton, i. 264, 267, 272
— Edward, i. 153; ii. 70, 95
— John, i. 263, 275, 279; ii. 95, 418
— Thos. Smith, ii. 96
Tatlock, Col., ii. 212
Tatlocks of Everton, ii. 408, 421
Taxation returns, i. 121
Telegraphs, i. 305
Temple Bar, ii. 12

TYL

Temple district, ii. 20
— Sir Wm., i. 141
Testa de Neville, ii. 450, 529, 533
Theam, i. 15
Theatre, Drury Lane, ii. 100
— Williamson Square, ii. 102, 187
— — — alarm at, i. 371
— — — riots at, i. 439; ii. 188
— Alexandra, ii. 209
Thol, i. 15
Thom, Revd. David, D.D., ii. 278, 279
Thomas, Earl of Lancaster, i. 24
Thompson, George, i. 521
Thornely, Thos., i. 503, 505, 511, 522; ii. 292
Throstle's Nest, ii. 411
'Thurot, Mons.' i. 217, 218
Tide Mill Dam, ii. 541
Timber Trade, i. 680, 688, 700; ii. 338
Tithes sequestered, i. 119
Tithe Barn, ii. 74
Tithebarn Street, ii. 73
Tobacco Box, corporation, i. 137
— trade, i. 176; ii. 337
— warehouses, i. 646, 698; ii. 338
Tobin, Sir John, i. 418
— Thomas, ii. 266
Tower, the, i. 103, 413; ii. 89, 90
Tower Buildings, ii. 92
Town Dues, history of, i. 675
— — purchase of, i. 136, 137
— — meeting to support, i. 611
— — transferred to Dock Estate, i. 677
Town-hall, i. 52, 225, 432; ii. 28–35
Town's plate, i. 111
Toxteth Park, ii. 526
— — boundaries of, ii. 529–532
— — hunting staff of King John, ii. 528
— — manor, ii. 527, 533
— — grant to Whalley Abbey, ii. 534
— — disparked, ii. 536
— — first building, ii. 537
Toxteth Dock, i. 701
Trade regulations, i. 53
— returns, i. 75, 88, 209, 235, 237, 252, 274, 287, 334, 338, 365, 406, 565, 643, 644, 647, 651, 655, 670 673
Trafalgar, battle of, i. 306
— Dock, i. 656
Trafford family, i. 151
Traill, Thos. Stewart, M.D., ii. 356
Travelling, ii. 116, 128
Tunnel under the Mersey, i. 454
Tunnel Road, ii. 514, 522
Turner, Charles, i. 475, 603, 612
— Miss, abduction of, ii. 500
Tyldesley, Sir Thos., i. 100, 101, 105, 122

UNI

UNION DOCK, i. 651
— Newsroom, ii. 308
— Street, ii. 39, 43

VANDRIES, ii. 52
Vauxhall Road, ii. 84, 469
Venus, transit of, ii. 562
Victoria, Queen, proclaimed, i. 561
— Coronation Day, i. 572
— marriage, i. 574
— visit, i. 599; ii. 201
Victoria Dock, i. 656
— Street, ii. 121, 127
Virginia Street, ii. 39
Volunteers (Old), i. 220, 250, 280, 282, 285, 287, 295, 300, 301, 307
— (New), i. 617, 618, 628

WAGES, comparative rate of, i. 49
Wagner, Paul Benedict, ii. 310
Wainwright, Wm., ii. 416
Wakefield, Edward Gibbon, ii. 500
Wales, Prince of (George IV.) visit, i. 307
— (Albert Edward), marriage, i, 623
— Prince and Princess of, visit, i. 626
Walker, John, i. 102, 107
— Richard, i. 264, 265, 267; ii. 305
— Roger, i. 60
Walls and ramparts, ii. 38
Walmsley, John, ii. 321
— Sir Joshua, i. 560, 571, 575, 581; ii. 238, 321, 513
Walton Road, ii. 477
Wapentake court, i. 13, 37
Wapping, ii. 336
— Dock, i. 698
Warbrick Richd., ii. 212
Ward, Abraham, ii. 79
— Robert, ii. 245
Warine, Fitz Gilbert, i. 10
Warrington, i. 100, 105
Warwick, Earl of, i. 106
Water Supply, i. 185, 281, 282; ii. 219, 321, 446, 506, 553, 566
Water Tank, bursting of, i. 587
Water Street, ii. 88, 94
Waterford and Wexford, disputes with, i. 86
Waterhouse, Nicholas, ii. 413
Waterloo Dock, i. 655, 691
— Road, ii. 53
Watson, Lieut., ii. 428
— Revd. Rd., ii. 19
Watt, Richard, ii. 105, 305
Wavertree Road, ii. 513

WOO

Weaver, River, made navigable, i. 192
Wellington, Duke of, i. 476, 488
Wellington Monumental Column, ii. 208
— Dock, i. 670, 690
— Road, ii. 545
— Assembly Rooms, ii. 238
Welsh population, ii. 407, 473
Wentworth, Richard, i. 151
— Wm., i. 151
West, Revd. Geo. Montgomery, ii. 250, 359, 369
West Derby, ii. 485
— castle, ii. 486
— commons, ii. 489, 508
— forest, ii. 487
— manor, i. 8; ii. 2, 486, 488
— parish, ii. 491
— Road, ii. 442, 497
— workhouse, ii. 443
West Indies, trade with, i. 194
Westminster Review on Henry VIII., i. 50
Westminster Road, ii. 475
Westmoreland Place, ii. 375
Whale fishery, i. 698; ii. 337
Whalley, fight at, i. 104
— Abbey, grant to, ii. 534
Wharton, Humphrey, i. 138
Whitechapel, ii. 194
White-cross, i. 13; ii. 38
White-fields, ii. 386, 440
Whitefield House, ii. 441
— Road, ii. 439
Whitemill Street, ii. 219
Whitmore, Mr., M.P., i. 483
Wiatt, Thos., ii. 417
Wigan, i. 103
Wigan Lane, battle of, i. 122
William III., i. 157, 158, 160; ii. 7
William IV., proclamation, i. 485
— — coronation, i. 508
Williams, Col., i. 302, 319, 385, 419, 486, 517
Williams, Charles Wye, ii. 301
Williamson, Joseph, ii. 518
— John (mayor 1643), i. 108
— Robt. (mayor 1634), i. 95
— Robt. Castle Street), ii. 21
— Square, ii. 186
— Street, ii. 186
Wilson, Thos., ii. 267
Wilson, Capt. Wm., ii. 412
Windmills, ii. 52, 196, 219, 351, 361, 522, 551
Windsor, ii. 566
Wolstenholme Square, ii. 318
Wood, Ottiwell, ii. 510
— Street, ii. 319
Woolfield's Bazaar, ii. 183

WOR

Workhouse, ii. 169, 254
Wright, Capt. Fortunatus, i. 217
Writs suspended, i. 24
— re-issued, i. 56
Wyatt, James, ii. 15
Wycherley Wood, ii. 52
Wyke, John, ii. 132
Wyke's Court, ii. 131
Wynne, Sir Rd., i. 97

ZOO

YANIEWICZ and Weiss, ii. 177
Yates, Revd. Jno. ii. 76, 168, 548
— Rd. Vaughan, ii. 558
York Street, ii. 307
— Terrace, ii. 422

ZOOLOGICAL Gardens, ii. 497

LONDON: PRINTED BY
SPOTTISWOODE AND CO., NEW-STREET SQUARE
AND PARLIAMENT STREET

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
3 9015 01142 2568

Filmed by Preservation 1987

DO NOT REMOVE
OR
MUTILATE CARD